

# CHRISTIAN DOCTRINES

---

THIRD EDITION

*Jeffery Addicott*

*Imprimatur  
Press*



# CHRISTIAN DOCTRINES

**3rd Edition**

## **Bible Doctrine Ministries**

Dr. Jeffrey F. Addicott, BA, JD, LLM(2), SJD,  
Lieutenant Colonel (US Army, Ret.)  
&  
Professor of Law

The Bible Doctrines set out in this study guide are designed to accompany the Bible classes taught by Dr. Jeffrey F. Addicott. Certain Bible Doctrines herein are compiled from the author's personal notes, taken from Bible lessons taught by R. B. Thieme, Jr., as Pastor of Berachah Church, Houston, Texas (1959-2002). Specific theological terms, vocabulary, and graphics are used by permission from R. B. Thieme, Jr., Bible Ministries. All rights reserved.

***What think ye of Christ?***

Matthew 22:42 (KJV)

# *ImPrimatur* *Press*

8111 LBJ Freeway  
Suite 1325  
Dallas, Texas 75251

Telephone: (800) 811-6725  
Facsimile: (214) 879-9939

E-mail: [Books@ImprimaturPress.com](mailto:Books@ImprimaturPress.com)  
[www.ImprimaturPress.com](http://www.ImprimaturPress.com)

Copyright © 2024  
by  
Dr. Jeffrey F. Addicott

Printed in the United States of America

ISBN 978-1-60503-159-0

---

## — ABOUT THE MINISTRY —

Established in 2009, Bible Doctrine Ministries is a non-denominational grace ministry composed of Believers in the LORD Jesus Christ and is open to any serious student interested in learning the categorical Bible Doctrines of Christianity – “*the mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:5-6]. Bible classes are taught by Dr. Jeffrey F. Addicott, Lieutenant Colonel (US Army, Ret.), Professor of Law, BA, JD, LLM(2), SJD. Apart from his own studying and teaching, Addicott has over 30 years of academic doctrinal training under the ministry of Pastor/Teacher, R. B. Thieme, Jr.

## — STRUCTURE OF MATERIALS —

The Bible Doctrines herein are categorical in nature – set out and arranged by individual topics – and cross referenced with other Bible Doctrines as applicable using the “@@@” symbol for each individual doctrine. Unless otherwise indicated, the New American Standard Version of the Bible is used throughout. Selected Greek and Hebrew words are color coded in “purple,” along with their definitions which are taken primarily from *Thayer’s Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament: Coded with Strong’s Concordance, and Brown-Driver-Briggs’* and *The Interlinear Bible: Hebrew Greek English, Jay P. Green, Sr. Translator*. In addition, the author has added commentary to certain words and passages as indicated in “orange.” Finally, selected Bible verses cited with individual Doctrines are not exhaustive.

## — FINANCIAL POLICY —

There is no financial charge for any materials associated with Bible Doctrine Ministries, to include this book which is available upon request (as well as the hyper-linked electronic format of *Christian Doctrines*). Bible Doctrine Ministries is a grace ministry and we operate entirely on voluntary contributions [2 Cor. 9:7-8].

Anyone who desires companion verbal Biblical teachings can download the associated Bible lessons taught by Dr. Addicott at the Bible Doctrine Ministries website: [BibleDoctrineMinistries.com](http://BibleDoctrineMinistries.com). Please send your access request to Teresa Addicott, email: [odadgumit1214@gmail.com](mailto:odadgumit1214@gmail.com) or [jaddicott@stmarytx.edu](mailto:jaddicott@stmarytx.edu); cell phone (210) 887-0429.

---

## — DEDICATION —

The author acknowledges with great thanks those who assisted in editing, reviewing, and organizing these materials. This book is dedicated to all those **Winner** Believers on positive [+P] volition who have faithfully performed their duty before the LORD by advancing to spiritual maturity and “holding the high ground” as commanded.

### JEREMIAH 9:23-24

Thus says the LORD, “Let not a wise [*chakam*] man boast of his wisdom, and let not the mighty man boast of his might, let not a rich man boast of his riches; but let him who boasts boast of this, that he understands and knows [*yada* (to learn to know)] Me [God as revealed in @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** will propel the adolescent Believer to spiritual @@@ **MATURITY**], that I am the LORD who exercises lovingkindness [*chesed* (mercy) – @@@ **GRACE in action**], justice and righteousness [the two attributes of His Holiness as revealed in the @@@ **TRINITY**] on earth; for I delight in these things [because God is only impressed with Divine Good, the Believer who produces Divine Good by reaching spiritual maturity glorifies God],” declares the LORD.

### 2 PETER 3:18

But grow [*auxano* (to cause to grow) – the positive [+P] volition Believer must reach spiritual @@@ **MATURITY**] in the grace [*charis* – @@@ **GRACE**] and [*grow in the*] knowledge [*gnosis* (the deeper more perfect and enlarged knowledge) – understanding the full realm of @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**] of our LORD and Savior Jesus Christ. To Him *be* the glory [*doxa*], both now and to the day of eternity. Amen.

---

---

## — DOCTRINAL STATEMENT —

- We believe in the absolute verbal and plenary inspiration of the @@@ BIBLE, the mind of Christ and word of God, by God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT – Heb. 4:12; 2 Tim. 3:16; 2 Pet. 1:20-21; Jn. 6:63.
- We believe in God's absolute Perfect character of Holiness consisting of His Righteousness [+R] and Justice and in the co-equality of the three members of the God-head: God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit as set out in the @@@ TRINITY – Rev. 1:4-6; 2 Cor. 13:14; Matt. 28:19.
- We believe in the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE which resides in all humans and the total depravity of man who is born into the status of spiritual @@@ DEATH, an enemy of God and under His wrath and curse – Rom. 5:12; Matt. 25:41.
- We believe in the primacy of human free will, but that the Directive Will of God in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD is for all humans to receive @@@ SALVATION and spend eternity with Him in @@@ HEAVEN – 2 Pet. 3:9.
- We believe in @@@ SALVATION by @@@ GRACE and that no human can gain or achieve relationship with Perfect God by means of any system of @@@ RELIGION, merit, morality, ritual, deed, or works of human @@@ GOOD – Eph. 2:8-9; Rom. 11:6.
- We believe in the efficacious work of the LORD Jesus Christ, the God/man in @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION, who suffered the unique substitutionary spiritual @@@ DEATH on the @@@ CROSS for the @@@ SIN of all mankind – past, present, and future – thereby satisfying the Perfect Righteousness and Justice of God under @@@ SOTERIOLOGY and providing @@@ SALVATION to all those humans on positive [+P] volition who believe in Him by means of a single non-meritorious act of @@@ FAITH alone in Christ alone, such exhale of faith made efficacious for salvation solely by the work of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT – Jn. 3:16, 18, 36; Acts 4:12; Eph. 2:8-9; 1 Tim. 4:10.
- We believe in the bodily @@@ RESURRECTION of Jesus Christ from the grave, His accession and @@@ FOOTSTOOL session at the right hand of God the Father, His future @@@ RAPTURE of the Church, His 2nd Advent to the earth, and His Millennium reign – 1 Cor. 15:20; Lk. 20:42-43; Acts 1:11.

- We believe in the @@@ **ETERNAL SECURITY** of the Believer now and in eternity, and the certainty of the Great White Throne @@@ **JUDGMENT** for the unBeliever who rejects Jesus Christ as his Savior – Rev. 20:11-15; Ps. 1:5.
  - We believe in the @@@ **REBOUND** technique as the @@@ **GRACE** means for the Believer to gain Fellowship, Filling, and temporal spirituality with God the @@@ **HOLY SPIRIT** – 1 Jn. 1:9; 1 Cor. 11:30-31; Ps. 32:5.
  - We believe in @@@ **DISPENSATIONS** as established by God and in the @@@ **MYSTERY** doctrines of the Church Age where all Believers are Royal Ambassadors to the @@@ **WORLD** in @@@ **WITNESSING**, who respect the @@@ **PRIVACY** and @@@ **FREEDOM** of all fellow humans, and Royal Priests who represent themselves before God – 1 Pet. 2:9; 2 Cor. 5:20.
  - We believe in the ongoing @@@ **ANGELIC CONFLICT** and Satan’s rulership of the @@@ **WORLD**, all under the fact that God controls @@@ **HISTORY** but allows human volition to operate and @@@ **SUFFERING** to occur in the context of the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD** – Eph. 6:12; 1 Cor. 10:13.
  - We believe that the @@@ **CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE** requires the Church Age Believer to glorify God in the @@@ **ANGELIC CONFLICT** by advancing to spiritual @@@ **MATURITY** and receiving @@@ **REWARDS** at the Judgment Seat of Christ by means of learning and applying @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**, the mind of Jesus Christ, through the teaching of a prepared @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHER** – 2 Pet. 3:18; 1 Cor. 2:16; 3:10-15; 5:12; 1 Tim. 4:16.
-



---

— TABLE OF CONTENTS —

<b>INTRODUCTION</b>	13
<b>ADULTERY/FORNICATION</b>	17
<b>ANGELS</b>	20
<b>ANGELIC CONFLICT</b>	30
<b>APOSTLES</b>	45
<b>AUTHORITY</b>	49
<b>BAPTISM</b>	54
<b>BIBLE</b>	60
<b>BIBLE DOCTRINE</b>	71
<b>BLOOD OF CHRIST</b>	83
<b>CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE</b>	88
<b>CHRISTOPHANY</b>	106
<b>CIRCUMCISION</b>	109
<b>CORNERSTONE</b>	113
<b>COSMIC SYSTEMS</b>	117
<b>COVENANTS</b>	124
<b>CROSS</b>	127
<b>CUP</b>	140
<b>DEATH</b>	144
<b>DEMONISM</b>	156
<b>DISPENSATIONS</b>	165
<b>DIVINE DYNASPHERE</b>	178
<b>DIVINE GUIDANCE</b>	179
<b>DIVINE INSTITUTIONS</b>	186
<b>DIVORCE</b>	194
<b>DRINKING &amp; EATING</b>	198
<b>EDIFICATION COMPLEX OF THE SOUL</b>	203
<b>EMOTION</b>	207
<b>ENEMY</b>	209

<b>ETERNAL SECURITY</b> .....	211
<b>FAITH</b> .....	222
<b>FEAR</b> .....	230
<b>FOOTSTOOL</b> .....	236
<b>FORTY THINGS AT SALVATION</b> .....	240
<b>FREEDOM</b> .....	247
<b>GIFTS</b> .....	250
<b>GIVING</b> .....	254
<b>GOOD</b> .....	259
<b>GRACE</b> .....	275
<b>HAPPINESS</b> .....	283
<b>HEATHENISM</b> .....	288
<b>HEAVEN</b> .....	296
<b>HELL</b> .....	302
<b>HISTORY</b> .....	310
<b>HOLY SPIRIT</b> .....	314
<b>HYPOSTATIC UNION/CHRIST</b> .....	326
<b>INDWELLING OF CHRIST</b> .....	342
<b>JEALOUSY</b> .....	346
<b>JUDGMENT</b> .....	349
<b>LEAVEN</b> .....	355
<b>LIFE</b> .....	357
<b>LOVE</b> .....	364
<b>MANNA</b> .....	374
<b>MARRIAGE</b> .....	376
<b>MATURITY</b> .....	386
<b>MEMORY</b> .....	394
<b>METAMORPHOSE</b> .....	398
<b>MIRACLES</b> .....	401
<b>MONEY</b> .....	409
<b>MOSAIC LAW &amp; JEWISH HOLY DAYS</b> .....	414

---

<b>MYSTERY</b> .....	422
<b>NEW SPECIES</b> .....	430
<b>OLD SIN NATURE</b> .....	432
<b>OPEN DOOR</b> .....	441
<b>OPERATION Z</b> .....	444
<b>OVERVIEW</b> .....	451
<b>PASTOR/TEACHER</b> .....	452
<b>PIVOT</b> .....	466
<b>PLAN OF GOD &amp; DIVINE DECREES</b> .....	473
<b>POVERTY</b> .....	485
<b>PRAYER</b> .....	487
<b>PRIVACY &amp; JUDGING</b> .....	495
<b>PROBLEMS</b> .....	500
<b>PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES</b> .....	504
<b>RAPTURE &amp; SECOND ADVENT</b> .....	514
<b>REBOUND</b> .....	522
<b>RELIGION</b> .....	536
<b>REPENT</b> .....	544
<b>RESURRECTION</b> .....	547
<b>REVERSIONISM</b> .....	558
<b>REVOLUTION</b> .....	567
<b>REWARDS</b> .....	568
<b>RUNNING</b> .....	582
<b>SABBATH</b> .....	584
<b>SALT</b> .....	587
<b>SALVATION</b> .....	589
<b>SEPARATION</b> .....	605
<b>SIN</b> .....	609
<b>SIN UNTO DEATH</b> .....	617
<b>SLEEP</b> .....	623
<b>SOTERIOLOGY</b> .....	626

<b>SOUL &amp; SPIRIT</b> .....	639
<b>SUFFERING</b> .....	656
<b>THANKSGIVING</b> .....	671
<b>THEOPHANY</b> .....	674
<b>TIME</b> .....	678
<b>TRINITY</b> .....	687
<b>UNION WITH CHRIST</b> .....	713
<b>UNLIMITED ATONEMENT</b> .....	716
<b>WALKING</b> .....	721
<b>WAR</b> .....	728
<b>WATER</b> .....	733
<b>WEeping</b> .....	736
<b>WITNESSING</b> .....	739
<b>WORDS</b> .....	744
<b>WORLD</b> .....	747

---

---

## — INTRODUCTION —

*“What is truth?”*<sup>1</sup>

God does not “hide the ball,” and yet, in the brief sojourn of mankind seven major religions have set out in writing their beliefs about the plan, purpose, and will of “God.” Specifically, these works are Hinduism’s *Mahabharata*, Judaism’s *Tanakh*, Confucianism’s *Analects*, Taoism’s *Tao Te Ching*, Buddhism’s *Dhammapada*, Islam’s *Koran*, and Christianity’s *New Testament*.

Religious writings are not for the study of life sciences or history, but rather books that claim to reveal the truth about God and His plan and purpose for mankind. In this regard, Hindus, Muslims, Confucians, Taoists, Buddhists, Christians, and Jews, each claim that their book best reveals God(s) and offers the correct answer to the meaning of life. Such being the case one can hardly help but to pose the ultimate question: Which religion, if any, is correct? In other words: *What is the truth?*

Surprisingly, the predominating factor one encounters in studying the matter of truth revolves around the astonishing amount of apathy that exists—most people simply have no desire to challenge themselves to even frame the question. Content to incorporate as their own whatever religious system they were born into—no matter how illogical or ill-conceived—independent thinking has little, if anything, to do with how the mass of humanity comes to personalize a belief about God. For instance, you are a Hindu for no other reason except that your parents are Hindus.

Nevertheless, all people possess free will and in each generation there are those who find this follow-the-leader approach wholly unsatisfactory. These are the *truth-seekers*—men and women who base their personal beliefs about God not on the happenstance of their cultural birthright or other social factors such as religious conversion due to marriage, but on a foundation of intrinsic truth. Indeed, there is absolutely no subject more important to which the human mind can address itself. Furthermore, unlike the Roman governor Pontius Pilate who disingenuously asked Jesus of Nazareth, *“What is truth?”* and then refused to intellectually consider the answer, the truth-seeker is not discouraged by the fact that various world religions compete for validity. Of necessity, truth-seekers embrace honest scrutiny.

---

<sup>1</sup> John 18:38. *Pilate said to Him, “What is truth?” And when he had said this, he went out again to the Jews, and said to them, “I find no guilt in Him.”* Pontius Pilate was the Roman Procurator of Judea, A.D. 26-36. He personally found Jesus of Nazareth not guilty of any crime against Rome, and yet ordered Jesus to be executed.

So, what can be said about the origin of religious ideas? As long as humans have looked out into the night sky, it is axiomatic that truth-seekers have given a great deal of thought about what constitutes the true nature of their Creator. However, because no amount of human intellect or reason can do more than acknowledge the existence of God, by necessity His person and plan must be revealed directly by God to the truth-seeker. Accordingly, if one accepts the premise that God exists, it is entirely reasonable to assume two essential follow-on points. First, God makes sense, He does not “hide the ball.” Second, in a fashion compatible with the language and culture of a particular historical time frame God purposefully reveals Himself to those individuals who desire to know Him—the truth-seekers—anyone exercising positive [+P] volition in their soul towards God.

Unfortunately, from a historical perspective, much of this God-directed activity to the truth-seeker is difficult to chronicle as the vast majority of human experience vis-à-vis the true God is based on oral traditions, leaving few traces of record. We can only say with certainty that archeological discoveries associated with some of the earliest human living sites demonstrate a belief in an afterlife—evidence of animal sacrifices, burial goods, and the like. However, the specific beliefs various people held about God is unknowable. When they sacrificed an animal, for example, what meaning did they attach to the ritual? Therefore, meaningful information about God’s revelations can only be found in the historic period, when people developed writing and recorded things, an era that did not begin until a mere 5,000 years ago in the Euphrates River valley.

As stated, seven major religions have produced written records to stand for consideration about the person and plan of God. While these religions may share basic themes in form and function, in the context of the ultimate concern—how to obtain an eternal relationship with God in the afterlife—all religions fall into one of two fixed and diametrically opposed categories which can be labeled as either “**works-religion**” or “**grace-religion**.”

Before describing the two opposing sides—**works** or **grace**—it is efficacious to list what all religions share as commonalities. While anyone who has taken the time to engage in the study of comparative religion knows, it is nearly impossible to catalog all the many sub-groupings that reside in each of them. There are, however, certain bright-line generalities that emerge in comparing the mainstream tenants. Thus, apart from all the things that can be said about Hinduism, Buddhism, Confucianism, Taoism, Islam, Judaism, or Christianity, when one boils each of them down to their bottom lines, to their core beliefs, four central themes are shared:

1. All major religions agree that the basic nature of man either is or becomes tainted with “sin,” rendering mankind morally flawed and unacceptable to the superior essence/being of God[s].
2. All major religions embrace the same moral laws for how one should behave. Thus, all religions prohibit such wrongs as murder, larceny, lying, brawling, and hatred while encouraging love, self-discipline, charity, and helping the less fortunate.
3. All major religions have a system of overt rituals specifically designed to assist the adherent with understanding and learning the tenants of the belief system.
4. All major religions hold that the primary goal of the belief system is for the human soul to obtain an eternal union with God(s) in the afterlife [Heaven], and to avoid an afterlife that is separated from God [Hell].

The real issue that sharply and forever divides the various religions rests in point #4, the mechanics of how one fulfills the goal of obtaining a union with God in time and in the forever afterlife. This is called *salvation*, the delivering of the adherent from the realm of mortal life on earth to an eternal union with God in Heaven—the Kingdom of Heaven. As previously stated, in this regard there are two, and only two, diametrically opposed answers for how this is achieved: (1) by a system of human morality and deeds to gain the approbation of God, called *human works*; or (2) through a system of God’s solo action for salvation, called *grace*. Note: Religious beliefs that advocate a mixture of human work with Divine work as a means of salvation still fall under the first classification of human works.

In short, those religions that teach that the method by which man achieves eternal union with God is via human morality, rituals, and good works are properly termed *works-religion*. Because all the major religions of the world, except Christianity, ignore or reject the premise that God is Perfect, they seamlessly slip into this extraordinarily large work camp. In contrast, Christianity rejects the concept that man can achieve relationship with God based on any man-made system of morality or human effort—Perfect God cannot “waive” sin. Instead, Christianity rests solely on the person and work of the God/man Jesus of Nazareth, the Messiah/Christ, who alone by His independent work on the cross provided free and equal opportunity for every human that ever lived to have eternal union with Perfect God.

In summary, Biblical Christianity [*Tanakh* and *New Testament*] holds that an irrevocable relationship with God is automatically achieved when anyone personally *accepts* the work of Christ who, by His substitutionary spiritual death on a Roman cross in circa A.D. 30, suffered God's righteous and just penalty for *all* human sins—past, present, and future—thereby breaking down the barrier between Perfect God and imperfect man and providing equal opportunity for all humans to be reconciled to their Creator simply by a single non-meritorious act of belief. In other words, with human sin now forever removed as a barrier between Perfect God and imperfect man, at the moment of faith alone in Christ alone, Perfect God imputes His own Perfect Righteousness [+R] to the now born again Believer, instantaneously and irrevocably putting him into the family of God and eternal life in Heaven.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:21

He [God the Father] made Him [Jesus Christ] who knew [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] no sin [*hamartia* – Jesus never committed a @@@ SIN and had no @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] to be sin [He took the judgment for all sin while on the @@@ CROSS] on our behalf [*hyper* (as a substitute for)], so that we might become the righteousness [*dikaiosisune* – God's Perfect Righteousness [+R] is imputed to the Believer at @@@ SALVATION making him acceptable to the Perfect @@@ TRINITY] of God in Him.

As previously delineated, the materials set out in this book are designed to assist the serious Believer student of the Bible who desires to reach maturity by means of acquiring the basic and then advanced “*knowledge of our LORD and Savior Jesus Christ*” [2 Pet. 3:18]. While one decision in a moment of time from a truth-seeker to believe in the Messiah/Christ Jesus results in eternal salvation—“*everyone who is of the truth hears My voice*” [Jn. 18:37]—it takes thousands of disciplined decisions on a consistent basis over time for a Believer to “*grow in grace*” [2 Pet. 3:18] and reach spiritual maturity, by learning and applying accurate Bible teaching.

## 1 PETER 2:2

Like newborn babies [*brephos*], long for the pure milk [*gala*] of the word [*logikos* (spoken word) – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], so that by it you may grow [*auxano*] in respect to [learning about] salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – deliver the positive [+P] volition Believer from the state of a baby Believer to the state of adulthood at spiritual @@@ MATURITY].



## @@@ ADULTERY/FORNICATION

- (1) **Definition.** Adultery/Fornication [A/F] refers to one who engages in sexual relations with a member of the opposite sex outside the parameters of the @@@ MARRIAGE bond.
- (2) **An Overt Sin.** The @@@ BIBLE prohibits the @@@ SIN of both adultery and fornication – “*You know the commandments, “Do not commit adultery”* [Lk. 18:20]; Ex. 20:14; Deut. 5:18; Heb. 13:4; Rom. 2:22; Ezk. 16:32.

### EZEKIEL 16:32

You adulteress wife, who takes strangers instead of her husband!

### EXODUS 20:14

You shall not commit adultery [*napah (unlawful sexual intercourse with the wife of another man)*].

### HEBREWS 13:4

Marriage *is to be held* in honor [*timios (as a great price)*] among all, and the marriage bed [*koite (the place for having sexual intercourse)*] *is to be* undefiled [*amiantos (unsoiled)*]; for fornicators [ *pornos*] and adulterers [*moichos*] God will judge [*krino – Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING*].

- (3) **A Mental Attitude Sin.** Mental A/F [lusting for sexual intercourse] is a @@@ SIN – Matt. 5:27-28; Job 31:9-12. It comes from succumbing to temptations from the lust pattern of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE. Note: Appreciation of beauty in the opposite sex is not equivalent to sinful “lust.”

### MATTHEW 5:27-28

You have heard that it was said, “You Shall Not Commit Adultery [*moicheuo (unlawful sexual intercourse with another man’s wife) – the @@@ MOSAIC LAW*]”; but I [*Jesus*] say to you that everyone who looks at [*blepo (to gaze upon)*] a woman [*gune*] with lust [*epithumeo (to covet; to lust after; to desire)*] for her has already committed adultery [*moicheuo – a mental attitude @@@ SIN*] with her in his heart [*kardia*].

**JOB 31:9-12**

If my [Job] heart [leb] has been enticed [pathah] by a woman, or I have lurked at my neighbor's doorway, may my wife grind [tachan (to grind in sexual intercourse like a concubine)] for another [his wife now desires sex with another man], and let others kneel down over her [have sexual relations with his wife]. For that [if Job held the mental attitude @@@ SIN of adultery] would be a lustful [zimmah] crime; moreover, it would be [if Job did commit the physical act of adultery] an iniquity punishable by judges. For it would be fire that consumes to Abaddon, and would uproot all my increase.

- (4) **Source of Suffering.** A/F causes “scar tissue” on the human soul which can result in permanent damage to one's capacity to enjoy sexual relations – Prov. 6:32; Eph. 4:19; 5:3. Left unchecked, it is a source of self-induced @@@ SUFFERING. The Believer must “flee” [1 Cor. 6:18] from this temptation.

**PROVERBS 6:32**

The one who commits adultery [naaph] with a woman is lacking [chaser (in need of)] sense [leb]; he who would destroy [shachath (to ruin; to corrupt)] himself does it.

**1 CORINTHIANS 6:18**

Flee [pheugo (to run away quickly)] immorality [porneia (illicit sexual intercourse)]. Every other sin [hamartema] that a man commits [poieo (to do)] is outside the body [soma], but the immoral [porneuo (to prostitute one's body to the lust of another)] man sins against his own body [the capacity for normal @@@ LOVE is destroyed].

- (5) **Restoring Capacity.** Only @@@ REBOUND and the intake of maximum amounts of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE over time can restore the capacity for normalcy for those Believers who regularly engaged in A/F.
- (6) **Cause for Divorce.** Adultery is a legitimate cause for @@@ DIVORCE as the mental and emotional consequences can destroy the @@@ MARRIAGE relationship – Matt. 5:32; 19:9; Lk. 16:18. In particular, as the leader/initiator, the husband is extremely vulnerable in his role if he discovers that his wife, the responder, has committed adultery. See @@@ AUTHORITY.

- (7) **Describes Apostasy.** A/F is used in the @@@ BIBLE to describe spiritual apostasy against God and @@@ REVERSIONISM, particularly in the context of the @@@ PIVOT Client Nation to God going astray from @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE. “*But come here, you sons of a sorceress, offspring of an adulterer and a prostitute*” [Isa. 57:3-10]; Hos. 1:1-3; Jer. 2; 3:8-10; Ezk. 16:20, 23:37, 39-43; 32:24-28; Rev. 17:1-5.

### JEREMIAH 3:8-9

And I saw that for all the adulteries [*naaph (to commit adultery)*] of faithless Israel, I had sent her away and given her a writ of divorce [*the Northern Kingdom of Israel was completely destroyed by the Assyrians in 721 B.C.*], yet her treacherous sister Judah [*the Southern Kingdom of Judah*] did not fear [*yare*]; but she went and was a harlot [*zanah (to commit fornication)*] – Judah also rejected @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] also. Because of the lightness of her harlotry, she polluted the land and committed adultery with stones and trees [*the heathen worship of idols included sex orgies and human sacrifices conducted generally at altars in the open natural environment*].

### EZEKIEL 16:20

Moreover, you [*Southern Kingdom of Judah*] took your sons and daughters whom you had borne to Me [*God’s Client Nation*] and sacrificed them to idols to be devoured. Were your harlotries so small a matter?

- (8) **Avoiding Adultery/Fornication.** Faithfulness to God, i.e., concentrated @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE circulating in the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT, avoids actual, mental, or spiritual A/F. Just as a normal wife responds in respect to her husband, all Believers are supposed to respond to God with respect and @@@ LOVE. See Rom. 7:2-6; Isa. 54:5.

### ISAIAH 54:5

For your husband [*baal (to marry; to rule over)*] – God is the husband and the Jews are the wife] is your Maker [*awah*], whose name is the LORD of hosts [*tsaba (an army)*] – Jesus Christ; and your Redeemer [*gaalos (to redeem by payment)*] – Jesus Christ’s work on the @@@ CROSS] is the Holy One of Israel, who is called the God of all the earth.

## @@@ ANGELS

- (1) **Definition.** When the Greek word *aggelos* (messenger) is translated it refers to a communicator/messenger, as in identifying the seven human @@@ PASTOR/TEACHERs heading the seven major churches in Asia Minor – Rev. 2-3. However, when the word *aggelos* is transliterated it refers to literal *angels*, a special class of created beings with free will which were brought into existence by God sometime in the distant past. Other terms used to describe angels in the @@@ BIBLE include: “*stars*” or “*morning stars*” [Rev. 12:4; Ps. 148:3; Job 38:7; Jdg. 5:20]; “*sons of god*” or “*god*” [Gen. 6:2; Job 1:6; 38:7; 2 Cor. 4:4]; “*spirits*” [1 Tim. 4:1; Lk. 10:20; Job 26:5; 1 Sam. 16:14; Rev. 1:4; 3:1]; “*rulers*,” “*world forces*,” or “*powers*” [Eph. 6:12]; “*princes*” [Dan. 10:3; Eph. 2:2]; “*chariots of God*” [Ps. 68:17]; and “*sons of the mighty*” [Ps. 89:6].
- (2) **Number of Angels.** The @@@ BIBLE mentions angels extensively. Although the amount of angels that God created is unknown there are incredible numbers of them – “*and the number of them was myriads of myriads, and thousands of thousands*” [Rev. 5:11 cf. Ps. 68:17]; Dan. 7:10; Lk. 12:13; Jer. 33:22; Matt. 26:53; Ps. 148:2, 5.

### JEREMIAH 33:22

As the host [*tsaba* (the army of angelic beings)] of heaven cannot be counted and the sand of the sea cannot be measured, so I [God] will multiply the descendants of David My servant [Jews] and the Levites who minister to Me.

### PSALM 148:2, 5

Praise Him [God], all His angels [*malak*]; praise Him, all His [angelic] hosts [*tsaba* (armies of angelic beings)]! ... Let them [angels] praise the name of the LORD, for He commanded [*tsavah* (to give orders)] and they [many angels] were created [*bara* (to build)].

- (3) **Superiority of Angels.** Angels are far superior in form and function to Believers in @@@ TIME but not in eternity – Ps. 8:3-5; Heb. 2:7-8; 2 Pet. 2:11. In fact, some angels travel at unfathomable speeds across the universe to include going to and from the Third @@@ HEAVEN during the ongoing @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT – Job 1:6-12. *See infra* (9).

## HEBREWS 2:7-8

You [God] have made him [Jesus as well as all Believers in their physical bodies] for a little while [on earth in the physical body] lower than the angels [aggelos]; You have crowned him with glory [doxa] and honor [time – Jesus and the potential for the Believer reaching @@@ MATURITY], and have appointed him over the works of Your hands; You have put all things in subjection under his feet. For in subjecting all things to him, He left nothing that is not subject to him. But now [in @@@ TIME] we do not yet see all things subjected to him [the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT continues].

- (4) **Saved and Fallen.** All angels divide into one of two categories – Saved or Fallen. At the start of the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT, long before the creation of man, angels exercised their free will and split into two camps with huge numbers following a senior angel’s rebellion [Lucifer/Satan]. Once the rebellion was put down and a trial held to judge the Fallen angels, all angels were distinguished and set into an eternal state of being – Saved and Fallen [aka Unsaved]. See Rev. 12:4, 7; Heb. 1:4-14; 2:16; Col. 1:20; 2:14-15. The sentence from the trial of the Fallen angels [Matt. 25:41] will be carried out at the future Great White Throne Judgment [Rev. 20:10] and they will be cast into the “*Lake of Fire*” where they reside forever. See @@@ JUDGMENT.

## HEBREWS 2:16

For assuredly He [God] does not give help [epilambanomai (to secure one from peril)] to angels [aggelos – @@@ ANGELS are already fixed in place for their eternal state as either Saved or Unsaved], but He gives help [epilambanomai – unBeliever humans can still accept @@@ SALVATION] to the descendant of Abraham [a metaphor, all humans on positive [+P] volition will receive @@@ SALVATION].

- (a) **Saved Angels.** Saved angels are also termed as “*holy angels*” [Mk. 8:38] and “*elect angels*” [1 Tim. 5:21].
- (b) **Fallen Angels.** Unsaved angels or Fallen angels are subdivided into **Confined demons** [2 Pet. 2:4; Jude 6; Gen. 6:1-9] and **Operational demons** [1 Tim. 4:1; Mk. 5:1-20; 1 Cor. 10:20-21]. See Heb. 2:2. Both groups are under Satan’s control, but only Operational demons are currently allowed to participate in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.

## HEBREWS 2:2

For if the word spoken through angels [*aggelos* – @@@ ANGELS taught @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE to humans in past @@@ DISPENSATIONS] proved unalterable [*bebaios* (stable; firm) – Bible Doctrine is Perfect], and every transgression [*parabasis* (the breach of a ratified law)] and disobedience received a just penalty [*misthapodosia* (payment of wages due) – God’s @@@ JUDGMENT on angels in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT].

- (5) **Command Structure.** There is a command and rank structure for Saved and Fallen angels – 2 Pet. 2:10-11; Ps. 91:11-12; Matt. 13:41; Rev. 7:2. Fallen angels are under Satan’s control and Saved angels are under Jesus Christ.
- (6) **Types of Saved Angels.** Saved angels are divided into two broad subgroups: the **Army Group** [Job 19:12; Judg. 5:20; Rev. 12:7] and the **Heralds** [Messenger] **Group**. Both operate under strict orders from the LORD Jesus Christ and operate to: (1) oppose Satan; (2) assist in controlling @@@ HISTORY as God directs; and (3) serve various needs of Believers.

### (a) **The Army Group.**

1. **LORD of Hosts.** In the Old Testament, Jesus Christ is called in Hebrew *Jehovah tsaba* (LORD of the armies), generally translated as the “**LORD of Hosts**” – e.g., Isa. 6:3; 1 Sam. 17:45. However, the phrase should be translated: “LORD of the Armies.” He is the Commander in Chief of the Army Group of Angels.
2. **Archangels.** These are the highest in rank of the Elect angels and are called *seraphim* (six wings) – Rev. 4:8; 12:7; Isa. 6:2; Dan. 8:16; 9:21; 10:21; 12:1; Jude 9; Lk. 1:19, 26. The wings are a designation of their supreme rank. The Bible identifies two: Michael and Gabriel. Michael, called the “**Prince of Israel**” [Dan. 10:21], commands an army of angels who defend Israel against Satanic forces. Michael also fought with Satan over the body of Moses [2 Pet. 2:11; Jude 9] and will defend Israel in the Tribulation [Dan. 12:1; Rev. 12:7]. Gabriel explained to Daniel the vision of the Ram and the He-Goat [Dan. 8:16]. Gabriel was also sent to both Zacharias and Mary to announce respectively, the birth of John the Baptist and Jesus of Nazareth [Lk. 1:19-38].



3. **The 24 Elders.** These are General Staff Officer angels stationed in the Third @@@ HEAVEN – Rev. 4:9-11; 5:6.
4. **Strong Angels.** These are other high-ranking angels – Rev. 5:2.
5. **Rank and File Angels.** These are the most numerous and are generally called the “*hosts*” [*tsaba* (army of angelic beings) – Jos. 5:15; Ps. 103:21; 148:2; Lk. 2:13; Heb. 1:14]. The *tsaba* are without wings [lower rank] and participate in combat operations with Fallen angels on earth and other locations. Some destroyed Sodom and her sister cities at God’s direction [Gen. 19:1, 13], others will gather and throw unBelievers into @@@ HELL at the 2nd Advent of the LORD Jesus Christ [Matt. 13:49-50].
6. **Patrol/Watcher/Killer Angels.** High-ranking angels directed by the Holy Spirit, these “*watcher*” [Dan. 4:23], “*patrol*” [Zech. 1:9-11], and “*killer*” [Num. 22:33] angels directly participate and assist in the control of human history under strict instructions in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD. They are often involved in “battle” with Fallen angels. See Ezk. 1:4-25; 9:2-11; 10:3-22; Zech. 6:1-8; Dan. 10:13; Rev. 12:7.

### EZEKIEL 1:11-15

Such were their faces [four Patrolling @@@ ANGELS]. Their wings were spread out above; each had two touching another *being* [each have four wings; the two touching wings indicates coordinated movement], and two covering their bodies [indicates strict obedience to superior orders]. And each went straight forward; wherever the spirit was about to go [@@@ HOLY SPIRIT directs action], without turning as they went [strict obedience to God’s orders in @@@ HISTORY]. In the midst of the living beings [*chay* (living thing) – angels] there was something that looked like burning coals of fire, like torches darting back and forth among the living beings. The fire was bright, and lightning was flashing from the fire [the fire represents the Perfect @@@ PLAN OF GOD which is set and unalterable]. And the living beings ran to and fro like bolts of lightning. Now as I [Ezekiel’s vision] looked at the living beings, behold, there was one wheel on the earth beside the living beings, for each of the four of them [the wheels represent the movement of history in time as it unfolds under the Directive, Permissive, and Overruling Will of God].

## ZECHARIAH 1:9-11

Then I [Zechariah's vision] said, "My lord [*adon* (lord; master) – a communicating angel], what are these?" And the man who was standing among the myrtle trees [Jesus Christ in a @@@ THEOPHANY] answered and said, "These are whom the LORD [*Jehovah* (the self-existing one) – the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] has sent to patrol [*halak*] the earth." So they answered the angel [*malak*] of the LORD [*Jehovah* (the self-existing one) – Jesus Christ] who was standing among the myrtle trees and said, "We have patrolled the earth, and behold, all the earth is peaceful and quiet [these reconnaissance and combat Patrolling @@@ ANGELS directly engage in controlling @@@ HISTORY and opposing Satanic forays directed against Believers and unBelievers]."

## (b) The Heralds [Messenger] Group.

1. **Angel of the LORD.** Jesus Christ as the "*Angel of the LORD*" is also the Commander in Chief of the Heralds Group of Angels.
2. **The Living Creatures.** Called "*beasts*" in Rev. 4:6 and following in the King James version of the @@@ BIBLE, but correctly denominated as "*living creatures*" in most modern translations. The Living Creatures are also high-ranking *seraphim* – Rev. 4:6-8; 5:2, 5; 8:3-5; Isa. 6:1-10.

## ISAIAH 6:1-10

:1-2

"*death*" – This would be circa 740 B.C.

"*six wings*" – These are the senior saved angelic high-ranking general officers per Rev. 4:6-8.

"*face*" – Covering of the face is a sign of humility.

"*feet*" – Covering the feet recognizes superior @@@ AUTHORITY.

"*flew*" – Mobility to communicate certain @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE and perform other duties as assigned.

:3

"*Holy*" – Consists of the Righteousness and Justice of God. However, each repetition of "Holy" here refers to the LORD Jesus Christ. See Rev. 4:8.



:6-7

“*burning coal*” – Angelic communicator tells Isaiah to keep communicating. Symbolic of @@@ REBOUND which cleanses Isaiah for service, the burning coal from the altar is the place of judgment for @@@ SIN.

3. **Cherubim** [*cherubim (four wings)*]. Other high-ranking angels. Ps. 18:10; Gen. 3:24; Ezk. 1:4-9; 10:22; 2 Sam. 22:11.
4. **Rank and File.** These are messenger angels – Gen. 19:13; Ezk. 9:1; 10:6; Rev. 7:1; 8:6; Ps. 103:21; Heb. 1:14. There were also various “ministering” angels included amongst all the angels that passed in review when Jesus Christ was born – Lk. 2:13.

- (7) **Appearance of Angels.** Angels are generally invisible to humans, but some appeared in the Old Testament and the Apostolic era of the early Church Age as humans – Col. 2:18; Heb. 13:2; Gen. 6:2. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.

## HEBREWS 13:2

Do not neglect [*epilanthanomai (to forget; to neglect)*] to show hospitality to strangers [*philonexiato*], for by this some have entertained [*xenizo (to receive as a guest)*] angels [*aggelos*] without knowing it [*lanthano (to be hidden)*].

- (8) **Teaching Angels.** Some angels taught @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE to a few people in the Old Testament and to @@@ APOSTLES in the early Church Age – “*the word spoken through angels*” [Heb. 2:2]; Deut. 33:2; Ps. 68:17; Dan. 8:16; Acts 7:38, 53; 10:3-19; 11:5-18; Gal. 3:19.

## ACTS 7:53

You who received the law [*the @@@ MOSAIC LAW*] as ordained [*diatage (a disposition)*] by angels [*aggelos*], and yet did not keep it.

- (9) **Positional Superiority.** All Believers in the Church Age are “positionally” superior to angels based on the future fact that the Believer will have a @@@ RESURRECTION body in eternity far above the body structure of all angels [as well as all Old Testament Believers] – 1 Jn. 3:1-2; Lk. 10:20; 1 Cor. 6:3; Phil. 3:21. In addition, certain Winner Believers will also be in command of angels. See @@@ REWARDS.

## LUKE 10:20

Nevertheless do not rejoice in this, that the spirits [@@@ ANGELS] are subject [*hupotasso*] to you [the Believer in his @@@ RESURRECTION body will have a superior position], but rejoice that your names are recorded [*eggrapho* (to engrave) – in the @@@ SALVATION Book of Life for @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY] in heaven [*ouranos*].

## 1 CORINTHIANS 6:3

Do you [Believers] not know that we will judge [*krino*] angels [*aggelos*]? How much more matters of this life?

- (10) **Observed Jesus Christ.** Angels closely observed every move of Jesus Christ while He was on the earth – 1 Tim. 3:16.

## 1 TIMOTHY 3:16

By common confession [*homologoumenos* (by consent of all; without controversy)], great is the mystery of godliness [*eusebeia* – the @@@ MYSTERY doctrines of the Church Age]: He [Jesus Christ] who was revealed [*phaneroo* (to make manifest)] in the flesh, was vindicated [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] in [by] the [Holy] Spirit, seen by angels [*aggelos*], proclaimed [*kerusso* (to publish)] among the nations, believed on [*pisteuo*] in the world [*kosmos* – some in every generation will accept the free gift of @@@ SALVATION], taken up [*analambano* – @@@ RESURRECTION and acceptance of Jesus Christ by God the Father per Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL] in glory [*doxa* – essence of the @@@ TRINITY].

- (11) **Observe Believers.** Angels – both Saved and Unsaved – watch Believers with intense interest, but for different reasons – “*we have become a spectacle to the world, both to angels and to men*” [1 Cor. 4:9]; 1 Tim. 5:21; 1 Pet. 1:12; Rev. 12:10; 1 Cor. 6:3; 11:10. Saved angels have “*joy*” when any human accepts Christ as his Savior and is thereby entered as an exhibit in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT appellate trial – Lk. 15:7-10. In addition, Saved angels observe and track all positive [+P] volition Believers as they move towards @@@ MATURITY. Interestingly, Saved angels also sit in on @@@ BIBLE classes conducted by certain @@@ PASTOR/TEACHERS to see “*things into which angels long to look*” [1 Pet. 1:12]; Eph. 3:10-11.

## 1 PETER 1:12

It was revealed to them [the Old Testament prophets who wrote the many @@@ BIBLE predictions concerning the Coming Messiah under the inspiration of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] that they were not serving themselves, but you, in these things which now have been announced to you through those [Peter and other Believers] who preached the gospel to you by the Holy Spirit sent from heaven [*ouranos*]*—*things into which angels [*aggelos*] long [*epithumeo* (to have a desire for)] to look [*parakupto* (to stoop over a thing to look carefully)] – Saved @@@ ANGELS have an intense interest in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD].

## 1 CORINTHIANS 4:9

For, I [Paul] think, God has exhibited [*apodeiknumi* (to prove what kind of person anyone is)] us apostles last of all, as men condemned to death [*epithanatos* (doomed to death)]; because we have become a spectacle [*theatron* (a place in which games and dramatic spectacles are exhibited)] to the world, both to angels and to men [their deaths confirmed the truth].

- (12) **Demons Oppose Believers.** Under Satan’s own command and control system demons track, oppose, and accuse Believers in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT – “*schemes of the devil*” [Eph. 6:10-17]; “*snare of the devil*” [2 Tim. 2:26]; 1 Pet. 5:8-9; Lk. 22:31; Rev. 12:10. See @@@ DEMONISM.

## 1 PETER 5:8-9

Be of sober *spirit*, be on the alert [*gregoreuo* (to give strict attention)]. Your adversary [*antidikos* (an opponent in a lawsuit)] – in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT, the devil, prowls [*peripateo*] around like a roaring [*orumi* – Satan uses @@@ FEAR as a tool of attack] lion, seeking someone to devour [*katapino* (to swallow up; to destroy)] – Satan wants all Believers in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS]. But resist [*anthistemi* (to set one’s self against)] him, firm in your faith [*pistis* – apply @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], knowing [*heneka*] that the same experiences of suffering [*pathema* – Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing to the positive [+P] volition Believer] are being accomplished [*epiteleo* (to bring to an end)] by your brethren who are in the world [*kosmos* – Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD but he cannot stop the positive [+P] volition Believer from reaching @@@ MATURITY].

## EPHESIANS 6:10-17

Finally, be strong [*endunamoo* (endure with strength)] in the LORD and in the strength of His might. Put on the full armor [*panoplia* (complete military battle gear)] of God, so that you will be able to stand firm [*histemi*] against the schemes [*mehodeia*] of the devil [Satan is the ruler of the @@@@ WORLD]. For our struggle [*pale* (to wrestle) – in the @@@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT] is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers [*arche* – officer demons], against the powers [*exousia* – rank and file demons], against the world forces [*kosmokrator* – senior officer demons] of this darkness [*skotos* – the @@@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], against the spiritual forces of wickedness [*ponera*] in the heavenly [*epouranios* (existing in heaven)] places. Therefore, take up the full armor of God, so that you will be able to resist [*anthistemi*] in the evil day, and having done everything, to stand firm [*histemi*]. Stand firm therefore, having girded your loins [*osphus* (the hip)] with truth [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], and having put on the breastplate of righteousness [*dikaiosune* – God’s Righteousness [+R]], and having shod your feet with the preparation of the gospel [*euaggelion* (good news)] of peace [*eirene* – @@@@ SOTERIOLOGY]; in addition to all, taking up the shield of faith [*pistis* – @@@@ FAITH/Rest] with which you will be able to extinguish [*sbennumi* (to quench)] all the flaming arrows of the evil one. And take the helmet of salvation [*soterion* (he who embodies this salvation) – Jesus Christ provided @@@@ SALVATION], and the sword [*machaira*] of the [Holy] Spirit, which is the word of God.

## REVELATION 12:10

Then I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying, “Now the salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – the @@@@ PLAN OF GOD will soon be completed], and the power, and the kingdom of our God and the authority of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren [all Believers are accused by Satan] has been thrown down [Satan is cast out of @@@@ HEAVEN at mid-point of the Tribulation], he who accuses [*kategoreo* (to make an accusation before a judge)] them before our God day and night.”

## LUKE 22:31

Simon, Simon [Jesus speaking to Peter], behold, Satan has demanded permission to sift [*siniazo*] you like wheat [Divine Discipline].

- (13) **Guardian Angels.** Each Believer has a Saved guardian angel [Zech. 1:9-10; Heb. 1:14; Ps. 34:7; 91:11]. Described as a “*wall of fire*” [Zech. 2:5] or “*hedge ... on every side*” [Job 1:10], they protect the Believer from harm in normal activities over the course of his life – Ezk. 9:3-5. In fact, the guardian angel is assigned at the Believer’s birth, as God always knew in eternity past every person that would “*believe in the LORD Jesus Christ*” [Acts 16:31] – “*the LORD knows those who are His*” [2 Tim. 2:19]. See Matt. 18:10, 19.

### MATTHEW 18:10

See that you do not despise one of these little ones [*children then around Jesus who are or would be Believers*], for I say to you that their angels [*aggelos*] in heaven [*ouranos*] continually see the face of My Father who is in heaven.

### PSALM 91:11

For He [*God*] will give His angels charge [*tsavah (to give orders)*] concerning you [*the Believer*], to guard [*ashamar (to keep watch)*] you in all your ways.

### EZEKIEL 9:3-5

Then the glory of the God of Israel [@@@@ **THEOPHANY**] went up from the cherub [*one of the Patrolling @@@@ ANGELS that Ezekiel sees in a vision*] on which it had been, to the threshold of the temple. And He called to the man clothed in linen [*Patrolling angels*] at whose loins was the writing case [*symbolic of God’s control of @@@@ HISTORY*]. The LORD [*Jehovah*] said to him, “Go through the midst of the city [*Jerusalem*], and put a mark on the foreheads of the men who sigh and groan over all the abominations [*Believers where protected and spared*] which are being committed in its midst. But to the others [*Patrolling angels*] He said in my hearing, “Go through the city after him and strike; do not let your eye have pity and do not spare [*Jerusalem was obliterated by the Chaldeans in 586 B.C.*].”

- (14) **Church Angels.** Every Church has a senior guardian angel assigned for protection and oversight. They report directly to God in @@@@ HEAVEN. For example, in Rev. 1:4; 3:1, each of the major seven churches in Asia Minor had an angel [*pneuma (spirit)*] with specific oversight responsibilities.
-



## @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT

- (1) **Definition.** At some point in the distant past [before the creation of humans], the most senior ranked angel in @@@ HEAVEN, Lucifer, committed the @@@ SIN of arrogance and led over one third of all angelic creatures in a revolt against God. The revolt was quashed and the Fallen angels were tried and sentenced to separation from God in a place called the “*Lake of Fire*” [Rev. 20:10]. Lucifer objected to the sentence and God granted an appeal. The revolt and the continuing appellate process is named the Angelic Conflict – 2 Pet. 2:4; Rev. 12:4. Currently, Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD.

### REVELATION 12:4

And his tail [*Lucifer, called the dragon*] swept away [*suro (to draw; drag)*] a third of the stars [*the Fallen @@@ ANGELS*] of heaven [*ouranos*] and threw [*ballo*] them to the earth [*ge (the land mass of the earth) – these Fallen @@@ ANGELS are no longer identified with @@@ HEAVEN, although they are still allowed to enter until the middle of the Tribulation when @@@ HEAVEN is closed to them*]. And the dragon stood before the woman who was about to give birth, so that when she gave birth he might devour her child [*Satan devoted great effort to stopping the incarnation of Jesus Christ*].

### 2 PETER 2:4

For if God did not spare [*pheidomai*] angels [*aggelos*] when they sinned [*hamartano – the demons that had sex with human women and produced the half human/half angel Nephilim*], but cast them into hell [*tartaroo (the abode of the wicked) – Tartarus is a compartment of @@@ HELL*] and committed them to pits of darkness [*zophos (used of the darkness of the nether world)*], reserved [*tereo (guarded)*] for judgment [*karsis (a trial) – the final @@@ JUDGMENT and sentence execution at the Great White Throne Judgment*].

- (2) **Lucifer.** When @@@ ANGELS were created in eternity past a top angel named Lucifer, a *cherubim (four wings)*, was appointed by God as the chief guardian at the very throne of God in the Third @@@ HEAVEN. Currently, Lucifer remains as the highest-ranking demon angel with the added titles of Satan [*ha satan (adversary)*] or the Devil [*diabolos (slanderer)*] – Jn. 8:44-45. Satan is limited by God in what he can do. He does not possess all power, nor can he be everywhere at the same time, or know or see what will happen.

- (3) **The Lake of Fire.** When Satan sinned he lost his high position in @@@ HEAVEN and along with all Fallen angels in the wake of his squashed revolt, he was tried and sentenced to an eternal state of complete separation from God in the “*Lake of Fire*” [Rev. 20:10-15] – “*the ruler of this world has been judged*” [Jn. 16:11]; Matt. 25:41; Jn. 16:8-11; Rom. 16:20.

### MATTHEW 25:41

Then He [Jesus Christ] will also say to those on His left [unBelievers in the Tribulation], Depart from Me, accursed ones [*kataraoimai* (to curse)], into the eternal [*aionios* (without end)] fire [*pur* – the Lake of Fire] which has been prepared [*hetoimazo* (to make the necessary preparations) – although the sentence was given to demons long before human @@@ HISTORY, it has not yet been executed pending the conclusion of the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT] for the devil [*diabolos* (the slanderer) – Satan] and his angels [*aggelos* – Fallen @@@ ANGELS].

### JOHN 16:8-9, 11

And He [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT], when He comes [at the start of the Church Age], will convict [*elegcho* (to tell a fault)] the world [*kosmos*] concerning sin [*hamartia*] and righteousness [*dikaiosune* (righteousness; the condition acceptable to God; the doctrine concerning the way in which a man may attain a state approved of God)] and judgment [*krisis* (a judicial ruling)]; concerning sin, because they do not believe in Me [the unpardonable @@@ SIN is disbelief in Christ] . . . and concerning judgment [*krisis*], because the ruler [*archon* (commander)] of this world [*kosmos* – Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD] has been judged [*krino* (to put asunder) – Satan was judged at his pre-historic trial and the @@@ CROSS sealed his fate].

- (4) **Satan Appeals.** Satan objected to his sentence. A reconstruction of Satan’s objection to God’s just trial and sentence to the Lake of Fire can be drawn from Ezk. 28:11-18; cf. Jn. 8:44-45 and 1 Jn. 3:8. In short, Satan stated: “*How can a loving God send His creatures to the Lake of Fire?*” In the objection Satan ignores the attributes of the @@@ TRINITY regarding God’s Perfect Holiness [consisting of His Righteousness [+R] and Justice] and seeks to distort and lie about what God’s @@@ LOVE really entails. Later, when man was created and committed @@@ SIN, Satan amended his appeal with: “*Why weren’t fallen Adam and Eve also sentenced to the Lake of Fire?*”

## JOHN 8:44-45

You [Jesus was speaking to the unBeliever religious leaders of His day] are of *your* father [*pater*] the devil [*diabolos* (slanderer) – Satan], and you want to do the desires [*epithumia* (to crave)] of your father. He was a murderer [*anthropoktonos* (manslayer)] from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own *nature*, for he is a liar [*pseustes*] and the father of lies [human @@@ GOOD; @@@ RELIGION]. But because I [Jesus] speak the truth [Bible Doctrine], you do not believe Me.

- (5) **Appeal Granted.** God granted Satan's appeal and the Angelic Conflict entered its appellate stage. God now provides countless rebuttal witnesses in two categories: (1) all Believers are entered as basic witness exhibits; and (2) those few **Winner** Believers who reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY are entered as subject matter expert witness exhibits. Both groups testify of God's @@@ GRACE which unequivocally refutes Satan's false objection about His fairness and lack of @@@ LOVE – Isa. 43:10, Job 1:8. In truth, under the @@@ PLAN OF GOD, God desires @@@ SALVATION for all and the @@@ TRINITY did *all the work* to make it a reality. **The Bottom Line:** Volitional creatures go to @@@ HELL because they reject God's grace.
- (6) **Man Created.** As part of the Angelic Conflict, man, an inferior creature to @@@ ANGELS, was created to resolve Satan's false objection [Col. 2:15]. While large categories of animal and plant life existed on the earth before mankind was created only human beings were given a living soul with free will – Ps. 8:3-5; Heb. 2:5-7. Satan, a finite being, quickly recognized this factor – humans were like @@@ ANGELS in the possession of a volition – and targeted Adam and his wife in the perfect environment of the Garden of Eden to get them to @@@ SIN against God. *See* Job 1:8. Accordingly, the @@@ BIBLE reveals that man was created for two reasons:
  - (a) **Resolve Satan's Objection.** *See supra* (4) and (5); *see, e.g.,* Job 1:8.
  - (b) **Share God's Happiness.** In "*bringing many sons to glory*" [Heb. 2:10], God in His absolute Sovereignty desired to share His eternal life and @@@ HAPPINESS with Believers. *See* Isa. 43:7; Ezk. 18:23. *See* @@@ REWARDS; @@@ PLAN OF GOD.



## EZEKIEL 18:23

“Do I have any pleasure in the death of the wicked,” declares the LORD God, [the Directive Will of God is that all people should receive @@@ SALVATION] “rather than that he should turn from his ways and live?”

## HEBREWS 2:10

For it was fitting [*prepo* (to stand out)] for Him [God], for whom are all things, and through whom are all things, in bringing many sons to glory [*doxa* – all Believers], to perfect [*teleioo* (to make perfect)] the author [*archegos* (the chief leader) – Jesus Christ] of their salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN] through [*dia* (by means of)] sufferings [*pathema* – the @@@ SUFFERING of Jesus Christ under spiritual @@@ DEATH for the @@@ SALVATION of all humans].

## ISAIAH 43:7

Everyone [the Believer] who is called [*qara* (to call out)] by My name [God’s Righteousness imputed to the Believer], and whom I have created [*bara* (to make something out of nothing) – the human being] for My glory, whom I have formed [*yatsar* (formed) – biological @@@ LIFE], even whom I have made [*awah* (to make; to fashion) – the human being].

(7) **Human & Angelic Volition.** Human volition is now tested in the same manner as angelic volition was tested, i.e., when Fallen @@@ ANGELS were given their opportunity to be saved prior to the sentencing set out in Matt. 25:41. Since all angels are forever locked into their permanent status of Saved and Fallen the issue has shifted to “human volition” and the continued supremacy of God’s @@@ GRACE solution for @@@ SALVATION.

- (a) **Start in Perfection.** Both man and angels started off in perfection.
- (b) **Spiritual Death.** Both man and Fallen angels suffered spiritual @@@ DEATH through negative [-N] volitional choices.
- (c) **Salvation.** God provided the opportunity for salvation for both humans and angels by non-meritorious positive [+P] volition. Note: The grace mechanics for angelic redemption is not revealed [Heb. 2:2; Col. 1:20].

## COLOSSIANS 1:20

And through [*dia* (by means of)] Him [Jesus Christ] to reconcile [*apokatalasso* (to bring back a former state of harmony) – the barrier between God and man is removed under @@@ SOTERIOLOGY] all things to Himself, having made peace [*eirenoipoieo* – between Perfect God and imperfect man] through the blood [*amia* – @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST] of His cross [*stauros* – @@@ CROSS]; through Him, *I say*, whether things on earth [*ge*] or things in heaven [*ouranos*].

- (d) **Two Types.** Like @@@ ANGELS, mankind is also divided into two categories: Believers and unBelievers – Jn. 3:18. Unlike all Fallen angels, however, the living unBeliever still has the opportunity to be saved right up to the point of his physical @@@ DEATH.
- (e) **Lake of Fire.** Called *Tophet* and *Gehenna*, the “**Lake of Fire**” awaits all Unsaved @@@ ANGELS, unBeliever humans, and the Nephilim [the half humans/angels of Gen. 6:1-4] – Heb. 2:2; Jn. 3:36; Col. 2:14-15; Rev. 20:10-15; 2 Pet. 2:4; Mk. 9:48-49. *See* @@@ JUDGMENT.
- (8) **Deaths of Adam and Eve.** Adam and Eve suffered two deaths – spiritual and physical – when they committed the first @@@ SIN.
  - (a) **Deaths.** God instructed Adam and his wife in the Garden of Eden, who were created perfect and therefore allowed to have Fellowship with Perfect God, that the *day* they ate of the forbidden fruit they would suffer spiritual and physical @@@ DEATH – Gen. 2:17; Rom. 5:12. In the warning of Gen. 2:16-17, the Hebrew word *muth* is repeated back to back in the sentence. Their eventual **physical death**, the second use of *muth*, followed their immediate **spiritual death**, the first use of *muth*. Thus, Adam and Eve died spiritually at the very moment that they ate of the forbidden fruit, but they did not die physically until hundreds of years later – Gen. 5:5. Again, spiritual death – “**the wages of sin is death**” [Rom. 6:23] – is separation from God. In short, Perfect God cannot allow imperfect man to have any form of fellowship. As long as Adam and Eve were in a state of perfection in the Garden of Eden then the @@@ TRINITY attribute of Holiness was not compromised. However, once they committed that single sin they were “**accursed**” [Matt. 25:41] and the Justice of God could only condemn them.

## GENESIS 2:16-17

The LORD God commanded the man, saying, “From any tree [*ets*] of the garden you may eat [*akal* (to eat)] freely; but from the tree of the knowledge of good [*tob*] and evil [*ra* – human @@@ GOOD] you shall not eat [*akal* – disobeying God is a @@@ SIN], for in the day [*yom*] that you eat from it you will surely [*muth* (die) – spiritual @@@ DEATH] die [*muth* (die) – physical death; i.e., dying *spiritually* you will die *physically*].”

- (b) **The Promise.** Unsaved Adam and Eve believed in the promise of the coming Savior and were immediately saved, which nullified the false objection by Satan that God is unfair – Gen. 3:15; Rom. 6:23. In fact, God’s @@@ LOVE motivated Him to provide equal opportunity for all humans to be saved under @@@ GRACE – a fact that untold numbers of humans have accepted. In addition, **Winner** Believers at @@@ MATURITY further glorify God – Isa. 43:10; Job 1:8.

## ROMANS 6:23

For the wages [*opsonion* (a soldier’s pay)] of sin [*hamartia* – @@@ SIN] is death [*thanatos* (death with the result of going to hell) – spiritual @@@ DEATH], but the free gift [*charisma* (to receive without merit of his own)] of God is eternal [*aionios* (without beginning or end)] life [*zoe*] in Christ Jesus our LORD [@@@ SALVATION is available to all who believe in Christ].

## ISAIAH 43:10

“You are My witnesses [*ed* (a witness that provides testimony) – the Believer in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT],” declares the LORD, “And My servant whom I have chosen [*bachar* (to elect) – Jesus Christ], So that you may know [*yada* (to learn to know)] and believe [*aman*] Me And understand [*biyn* (to perceive; to understand)] that I am He. Before Me there was no God formed [*yatsar*], And there will be none after Me [*Satan’s desire to be God*].”

## JOB 1:8

The LORD said to Satan, “Have you considered My servant Job? For there is no one like him on the earth, a blameless and upright man [*Job had reached spiritual @@@ MATURITY*], fearing God and turning away from evil [*ra*].”

**PROSECUTION CASE – *All Old Testament and Church Age Believers.*** Under @@@ **UNLIMITED ATONEMENT** Jesus Christ bore all @@@ **SIN** – past, present, and future – for all humans who would ever live while He was on the @@@ **CROSS**, absolutely demonstrating God’s desire that all humans should be saved and refuting Satan’s false argument that God is unfair. Thus, all who believe in Jesus Christ are entered as basic appellate witness exhibits to demonstrate that God saves all who respond to His @@@ **GRACE** offer. In addition, those positive [+P] volition **Winner** Believers who reach spiritual @@@ **MATURITY**, like Job, are entered as special subject matter expert witness exhibits showing Satan that @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** is supreme.

**DEFENSE CASE – *The Seven Year Tribulation.*** At the @@@ **RAPTURE** the restraining ministry of the @@@ **HOLY SPIRIT** is completely removed from the earth and Satan is given a free hand to create his version of “perfect fellowship/environment.” This was part of Satan’s “*I will*” desires per Isa. 14:13-14. Satan’s attempt at rulership under his own demon possessed human Anti-Christ utterly fails and unprecedented violence follows at the mid-point of the Tribulation. See Dan. 9:27; 2 Thess. 2:3-4; Rev. 12:7-12; 13:1-10.

**PROSECUTION SUMMATION – *The 1,000 Year Millennium.*** Satan and his demons are taken off the earth at the 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ and locked up in @@@ **HELL** for 1,000 years. God then sets up a true perfect environment on the earth. Predictably, unBelievers born to the parents of Believers who entered the Millennium will soon inhabit the earth in huge numbers. However, perfect environment under human @@@ **GOOD** cannot provide @@@ **SALVATION** to those billions of humans born in the Millennium, thereby proving once again that perfect environment never solves the problem of how sinful man can gain a relationship with Perfect God apart from the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD**. See Rev. 20:1-6.

**DEFENSE SUMMATION – *The Gog and Magog Revolution.*** At the end of the Millennium, Satan is released from his confinement in @@@ **HELL** and engages in overt violence and @@@ **REVOLUTION** in a distorted attempt to lead humans in an attack on Jerusalem to destroy Jesus Christ. Satan’s mind is perpetually locked in a state of absolute arrogance and his battle cry of “equality” – it is not “fair” that Jesus Christ and the Jews should rule the earth from Jerusalem – is his final act of desperation. The revolt is squashed by fire and the sentence to the “*Lake of Fire*” given in Matt. 25:41, is finally carried out at the Great White Throne Judgment. See Rev. 20:7-10; Isa. 43:10.

- (9) **Sentence Carried Out.** At the conclusion of Satan’s appeal trial, the Devil and all his demons are sent to the “*Lake of Fire*” [Rev. 20:10, 14-15] per the original just sentence given by God in Matt. 25:41 – “*into the eternal fire.*”

## REVELATION 20:10

And the devil [*diabolos* (the slanderer) – Satan] who deceived them was thrown [*ballo*] into the lake of fire and brimstone [@@@ HELL], where the beast and the false prophet are also; and they will be tormented [*basanizo* (tortured)] day and night forever and ever [*aion* – this future final appellate judgment and sentence will conclude Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL].

- (10) **Satan’s Three Falls.** The @@@ BIBLE records three “falls” for Satan: (1) his Fall from perfection to imperfection; (2) his Fall from @@@ HEAVEN in the middle of the Tribulation; and (3) his Fall into the eternal Lake of Fire.

## ISAIAH 14:1-17

[written by the Prophet Isaiah (740-680 B.C.), Southern Kingdom of Judah].

BACKGROUND: Assyria and Egypt were fighting for control of the Levant with Israel, Judah, Syria, and many other city-States caught in the middle. Isaiah goes to King Ahaz of Judah and tells him to trust the LORD for deliverance from the attacking armies of Israel and Syria, but King Ahaz trusts in @@@ DEMONISM instead [Isa. 8:19]. Evil men tell Ahaz to steal money from the Temple and then bribe Assyria to attack rivals Syria and Israel. Assyria takes the bribe but then just a few years later attacks Judah as well. However, under the rule of the new Jewish King Hezekiah, God destroys the massive Assyrian army under Sennacherib in 701 B.C., at the very gates of Jerusalem – Isa. 14:25-28; 37:36; 2 Kng. 19:35-37; 2 Chron. 32:21-22. In addition, Isa. 14:1-11, goes on to predict God’s punishment of the Chaldean Empire [Babylon] who would destroy Judah in 586 B.C. Thus, as is often the case in prophecy, the sureness of God’s judgment on Assyria and Babylon is directly compared with Satan’s sure future final judgment to the Lake of Fire. See Isa. 14:18-32.

:12

**2nd Fall of Satan.** The information presented here on the “falls” of Satan is put in logical order, not chronological order.

“*fallen*” – *napel*. This is the **2nd Fall** of Satan which will occur in the Tribulation where the Devil will be cast out of @@@ HEAVEN for good – Rev. 12:7-9; Lk. 10:18.

“*star of the morning*” – “Lucifer” is the translation in the King James. Lucifer, his name, means star of the morning. In 2 Cor. 11:14, he is also called “*an angel of light*” recalling that the serpent in the Garden of Eden was *machash* (light), a clue to its internal structure. See Gen. 3:13-14.

:13-14

**1st Fall of Satan.** Information on the initial or **1st Fall** of Satan from a state of perfection to imperfection. Apparently, when the Angelic Conflict began the planet earth was Satan’s main HQ. See Rev. 12:4; Ezk. 28:11-18; Isa. 14:1-32.

“*you said*” – *amar*. Satan is a super genius and was already chief amongst all the angels, but the mental attitude @@@ **SIN** of arrogance destroyed his mind. Satan’s boast of “*I will*” is stated **five times** as he sought to deify himself. This attitude is now reflected in the @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS** and human @@@ **GOOD** where man also seeks to deify himself in the arrogant mind-set of self-sufficiency. See Jn. 3:19-20.

1. “*I will ascend*” – *alah*. Satan’s desire to rule God.
2. “*I will raise my throne above the stars of God.*” Satan’s desire to rule all angels – Job 38:7; Jude 13; Rev. 12:3-4.
3. “*I will sit*” – *jashav*. Satan’s desire to rule over the entire earth – Ps. 48:2.
4. “*I will ascend above the heights of the clouds.*” This phrase stands for the Divine presence – Ex. 16:10; 40:38; Matt. 24:30; 1 Kng. 8:10; Ps. 104:3; Acts 1:9; Isa. 19:1; Rev. 1:7. It is Satan’s desire to function as God.
5. “*I will make myself like*” – *damah*. Satan’s desire to have God’s essence.

:15-16

**3rd Fall of Satan.** Information on the final destination of Satan.

“*thrust down*” – *jaradh*. A specific place called the “*Lake of Fire*” awaits Satan and his demons at this future **3rd Fall** of Satan – Matt. 25:41; Rev. 20:10, 12-15. See @@@ **HELL**; @@@ **JUDGMENT**.



:17

“*world like a wilderness*” – The **1st Fall of Satan** caused disastrous conditions for the @@@ WORLD [Rom. 8:20-22]. The earth became locked in an ice pack per Gen. 1:2, but at some point God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT caused it to melt and restored meaningful living things per the six days of the restoration of life on the earth recorded in Gen. 1:2 – 2:6. Later, man’s Fall through the decision of Adam and Eve to sin against God also had its own negative impact on nature – Gen. 3:17-19.

### EZEKIEL 28:11-18

[written during the Prophet Ezekiel’s ministry to the 10,000 Jews living in exile in Babylon and to the Jews living in the Southern Kingdom of Judah prior its total destruction in 586 B.C., by the Chaldeans].

BACKGROUND: Compares the coming Divine judgment on the city-state of Tyre, for its anti-Semitism, to Satan’s final judgment. See @@@ JUDGMENT.

:11-12

The King of Tyre was under demon influence. The city-state of Tyre had great wealth and glamour as did Lucifer. See @@@ DEMONISM.

“*You had the seal of perfection*” – Idiom for perfection in form.

“*full of wisdom*” – Satan is a super genius in his intellect.

:13-15

“*in Eden*” – Lucifer was allowed to come into the Garden of Eden.

“*stone*” – these listings of stones are seen three times in the Bible: (1) Ex. 28:17 [Jewish priests in the Holy of Holies]; (2) Rev. 21:19-20 [at the New Jerusalem]; and (3) Ezk. 28:13 [the prehistoric Garden of Eden].

“*on the day you were created*” – Satan was the most intelligent and glamorous of all the angels created by God.

“*cherub*” – A special four-winged angel guarding God’s Throne. Note: No six-winged Saved angels existed at this time.

“*unrighteousness ... in you*” – Satan’s mental attitude @@@ SIN came from his own negative [-N] volition. This records the **1st Fall of Satan**.

:16

**2nd Fall of Satan** – Lk. 10:18; Rev. 12:7-9. This has not yet occurred; it takes place when Satan is cast onto the earth from the Third @@@ HEAVEN never to return. This happens in the middle of the Tribulation. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.

## REVELATION 12:7-9

And there was a war in heaven [*ouranos* – in the middle of the Tribulation], Michael and his angels [*aggelos*] waging war [*polemos*] with the dragon. The dragon and his angels [*demon @@@ ANGELS*] waged war, and they were not strong enough, and there was no longer a place found for them in heaven [*ouranos* – the third @@@ HEAVEN]. And the great dragon was thrown down [*ballo*], the serpent of old who is called the devil and Satan, who deceives [*planao* (to cause to stray)] the whole world; he was thrown down to the earth [*ge*], and his angels were thrown down with him.

:18-19

**3rd Fall of Satan** – Satan is cast into the eternal “*Lake of Fire*” [Rev. 20:10; Matt. 25:41].

- (11) **Rulership of the World.** Since the Fall of Adam and his wife, “*the whole world lies in the power of the evil one*” [1 Jn. 5:19]. Satan gained rulership of the @@@ WORLD, but not man’s volition – Lk. 4:5-7; 2 Cor. 4:4; Eph. 2:2; Jn. 12:31; 14:30; 16:11. The @@@ HOLY SPIRIT and the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS restrain Satan to certain parameters of activity.
- (12) **Attacks on Messiah.** Satan initially attacked the bloodline of the promised coming Messiah and then turned all his forces upon Jesus Christ while He was on earth in the incarnation, @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION – Gen. 6:1-6; Jn. 15:20. When Jesus arrived as a baby and grew up, Satan’s singular goal was to get Him to commit a @@@ SIN and/or not to go to the @@@ CROSS.
- (13) **Satan’s Present Strategy.** Believers in the Church Age are now the target of Satan’s main attacks – 1 Pet. 1:12; 3:17; Eph. 3:13; 6:10-17; Jn. 15:18; Rev. 2:13. As the ruler of the @@@ WORLD Satan opposes all Believers and desires to suck them into the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS. The question is: “Will the Believer use his positive [+P] volition to stay faithful to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE or will he squander his @@@ TIME on earth by whitewashing the Devil’s world under human @@@ GOOD activities?”
  - (a) **Appears in Heaven.** Satan is allowed by God to appear from time to time in the Third @@@ HEAVEN at angelic convocations where he openly accuses Believers before God of their misconduct and @@@ SIN – Rev. 12:7-10; Job 1:6-10; Zech. 3:1-3; Lk. 22:31; 1 Jn. 2:1.



## ZECHARIAH 3:1-3

Then he [an angel] showed me [Zechariah the Prophet] Joshua the high priest standing before the angel of the LORD [Jesus Christ as a @@@ THEOPHANY], and Satan standing at his right hand to accuse [watan (to accuse; to be or act as an adversary)] him [Satan was accusing Joshua of @@@ SIN]. The LORD [Jesus Christ] said to Satan, “The LORD [God the Father] rebuke [gaar (to rebuke; to reprove)] you Satan! Indeed, the LORD who has chosen [bachar] Jerusalem [God’s control of @@@ HISTORY] rebuke you! Is this not a brand plucked from the fire [Joshua is a Believer plucked from @@@ HELL by the @@@ GRACE of God in @@@ SALVATION]?” Now Joshua was clothed with filthy [tso (human excrement) – Joshua’s personal sin] garments and standing before the angel [Joshua was in carnality and needed to @@@ REBOUND].

## JOB 1:6-8

Now there was a day when the sons of God [@@@ ANGELS] came to present [yatsab (to stand, present oneself)] themselves before the LORD [this took place in @@@ HEAVEN], and Satan also came among them. The LORD said to Satan, “From where do you come?” Then Satan answered the LORD and said, “From roaming [shut (to go to and fro)] about on the earth [erets] and walking around [halak (to traverse)] on it [Satan emphasizes that he is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD, going wherever he pleases on the earth].” The LORD said to Satan, “Have you considered My servant Job [God calls Job to Satan’s attention as part of the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT]? For there is no one like him on the earth, a blameless and upright man, fearing God and turning away from evil [Job was then the most advanced Believer at spiritual @@@ MATURITY].”

## REVELATION 12:10

Then I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying, “Now the salvation [soteria (to deliver) – the @@@ PLAN OF GOD will soon be completed], and the power, and the kingdom of our God and the authority of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren [all Believers are accused by Satan] has been thrown down [Satan is cast out of @@@ HEAVEN at the mid-point of the Tribulation], he who accuses [kategoreo (to make an accusation before a judge)] them before our God day and night.”

- (b) **False Doctrine.** Satan attempts to get Believers to “*pay attention to deceitful spirits and doctrine of demons*” [1 Tim. 4:1]; 1 Thess. 2:18; Eph. 4:1; Js. 4:7-8. See @@@ GOOD; @@@ RELIGION.
- (c) **Causes Fear.** Satan attempts to cause worry and @@@ FEAR in Believers – 1 Pet. 5:7-9; Heb. 2:13-15.
- (d) **Blinds Believers.** Satan seeks to blind Believers to the truth of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – Gen. 3:4-5; Col. 2:8; Rev. 2:13.
- (e) **Blinds UnBelievers.** Satan seeks to blind unBelievers to the Gospel and uses @@@ RELIGION as a primary tool to do so – 2 Cor. 4:3-4.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 4:4

In whose case the god of this world [*aion* (a period of time) – Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD] has blinded [*tuphloo* (to make bind)] the minds [*noema* (a mental perception)] of the unbelieving [*apistos* – the unBeliever on negative [-N] volition] so that they might not see the light [*phos*] of the gospel [*euangelion* (good news)] of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God.

- (f) **Oppose Divine Institutions.** Satan seeks to turn all people on the earth against the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.
- (14) **The Positive Believer.** Satan will always take full credit for Believers that go into @@@ REVERSIONISM, but the Devil and his forces of darkness cannot touch a **Winner** Believer that is on positive [+P] volition in his @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – 1 Jn. 4:4. Still, Believers are warned throughout the @@@ BIBLE to be on the defensive against Satan, which requires understanding his *modus operandi* – Eph. 6:12-17. In turn, offensive action against @@@ DEMONISM simply means learning the full realm of Bible Doctrine and reaching @@@ MATURITY.

## 1 JOHN 4:4

You are from God, little children [*teknon* – Believers], and have overcome [*nikao* (to conquer)] them; because greater [*megas*] is He who is in you [all members of the @@@ TRINITY] than he [Satan and the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS] who is in the world [*kosmos* – @@@ WORLD].

## EPHESIANS 6:12-17

For our struggle [*pale* (to wrestle) – in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT] is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers [*arche* – officer demons], against the powers [*exousia* – rank and file demons], against the world forces [*kosmokrator* – senior officer demons] of this darkness [*skotos* – the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], against the spiritual forces of wickedness [*ponera*] in the heavenly [*epouranios* (existing in heaven)] places. Therefore, take up the full armor of God, so that you will be able to resist [*anthistemi*] in the evil day, and having done everything, to stand firm [*histemi*]. Stand firm therefore, having girded your loins [*osphus* (the hip)] with truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], and having put on the breastplate of righteousness [*dikaiosune* – God’s Righteousness [+R]], and having shod your feet with the preparation of the gospel [*euaggelion* (good news)] of peace [*eirene* – @@@ SOTERIOLOGY]; in addition to all, taking up the shield of faith [*pistis* – @@@ FAITH/Rest] with which you will be able to extinguish [*sbennumi* (to quench)] all the flaming arrows of the evil one. And take the helmet of salvation [*soterion* (he who embodies this salvation) – Jesus Christ provided @@@ SALVATION], and the sword [*machaira*] of the [Holy] Spirit, which is the word of God.

- (15) **Already Defeated.** Satan was defeated by the @@@ CROSS two thousand years ago but locked in arrogance blocks him from understanding that he has already lost his appeal – “*the ruler of this world has been judged*” [Jn. 16:11]. See Col. 2:15; Heb. 2:14; Rom. 16:20. Thus, he continues to wage an unseen war that pits his demons in running “battles” against God’s angels – Dan. 10:10-14; Rev. 12:7-9; Ezk. 1:4-25; 9:2-11; 10:3-22; Zech. 1:9-11; 6:1-8.

## DANIEL 10:13

But the prince [*sar* (ruler) – an angel] of the kingdom of Persia [ Satan’s demon general officer assigned to oversee events in Persia] was withstanding [*amad* (to stand firm against)] me [the angel Gabriel who had been dispatched by God to Daniel to give a prophecy] for twenty-one days [the demon forces successfully held up Gabriel’s mission]; then behold, Michael [the senior Army group angel], one of the chief [*rishon* (primary)] princes [*sar*], came to help me, for I had been left there with the kings [*melek* (demons) – the many rank and file demons supporting the general officer demon] of Persia.

## REVELATION 12:7

And there was a war in heaven [*ouranos* – in the middle of the Tribulation], Michael and his angels [*aggelos*] waging war [*polemos*] with the dragon. The dragon and his angels [*demon @@@ ANGELS*] waged war.

- (16) **God Controls History.** God allows the @@@ **WORLD** to continue as it now is in order to let @@@ **GRACE** run its full course until the body of Christ is complete – Heb. 2:10; Eph. 3:17-19. Although Satan is allowed to attack and accuse Believers as part of the Angelic Conflict, the Devil, a finite creature, has no knowledge about the outcome – he did not know Job would pass the testings he administered. *See Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL.*
- (17) **Answers Three Questions.** The doctrine of the Angelic Conflict answers three questions.
- (a) **Why mankind was created** – “*to make His power known, endured with much patience vessels of wrath prepared for destruction*” [Rom. 9:22]; Eph. 3:10.
  - (b) **Why there is sin in the world** – Rom. 5:12.
  - (c) **Why there is suffering in the world** – Rom. 8:19-22.

## ROMANS 8:19-22

For the anxious longing [*apokaradokia* (persistent expectation)] of the creation [*ktisis* (anything created) – the natural @@@ **WORLD**] waits eagerly for the revealing of the sons of God [Believers in their @@@ **RESURRECTION** bodies will accompany Christ at His 2nd Advent]. For the creation was subjected to futility [*mataiotes* (depravity) – due to the impact of demon and human @@@ **SIN**], not willingly, but because of Him who subjected it [the Permissive Will of God allowed this to occur in the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD** and the @@@ **ANGELIC CONFLICT**], in hope that the creation itself also will be set free [perfect environment will exist in the **Millennium**] from its slavery [*douleia* (bondage)] to corruption [*phthora*] into the freedom of the glory of the children of God. For we know that the whole creation groans [*sustenazo* (to groan together)] and suffers [*sunodino*] the pains of childbirth together until now.

## @@@ APOSTLES

- (1) **Definition.** The Greek word *apostolos* is used in two senses in the original meaning: Type One as a senior military admiral or supreme leader, or Type Two as a colonial representative leading citizens to or in a foreign territory. The @@@ BIBLE also employs *apostolos* with two similar distinctions.
- (2) **Disciples to Israel.** Jesus' 12 disciples to Israel included Judas Iscariot [an unBeliever]. Jesus sent them out to Israel – Matt. 10:2-4. Except for Judas, all of these disciples later became Type One Apostles in the early Church Age.
- (3) **Type Two Apostles.** Type Two Apostles included Barnabas [Acts 14:14; Gal. 2:9]; Apollos [1 Cor. 4:6, 9]; Epaphroditus [Phil. 2:25]; Silas and Timothy [1 Thess. 1:1; 2:6]; James [1 Cor. 15:7; Gal. 1:19]; Titus [2 Cor. 8:23]; Andronicus and Junias [Rom. 16:7]. Their primary mission was to establish new churches during the early Church period.
- (4) **Type One Apostles.** The Type One Apostle was a special designation to a male Believer who had supreme @@@ AUTHORITY over the developing local Churches. The Type One Apostle was limited to the first century A.D. only and was designed to carry the early Church until the completion of the @@@ BIBLE, circa A.D. 96. See 1 Cor. 13:10; Eph. 4:11.

## EPHESIANS 4:11

And He [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] gave some *as* apostles [*apostolos*], and some *as* prophets [*prophetes*], and some *as* evangelists [*euaggelistes* (the bringer of good news)], and some *as* pastors and teachers [*poimen kai didaskalos* – the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER].

- (5) **Eyewitness to Resurrected Christ.** Every Type One Apostle had to be an eyewitness to the resurrected LORD Jesus Christ – Eph. 4:8; Acts 1:22; 1 Cor. 9:1; 15:7-10; 1 Tim. 1:12-16. See @@@ CHRISTOPHANY.

## ACTS 1:22

Beginning with the baptism of John until the day that He [Jesus] was taken up from us—one of these *must* become a witness with us [Peter and the others] of His resurrection [*anastasis* – @@@ RESURRECTION].



- (6) **The Twelve.** Paul and the eleven other former disciples of Jesus were Type One Apostles. There were only 12 and the nomenclature “*the 12*” [Jn. 20:24-29] was sometimes used as a designation even though there were only 11 members until Paul later filled the empty slot [Paul was saved circa A.D. 33].
- (a) **Roster.** A roster of the Apostles of the Church is found in Acts 1:13 [lists eleven] – “*Peter and John and James and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartholomew (also called Nathaniel) and Matthew, James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon the Zealot (also called Simon the Canaanite), and Judas the son of James (also called Thaddaeus).*” Note: Matthias was not the replacement for Judas Iscariot. God chose Saul of Tarsus [aka *Paul*] as the replacement – Acts 23 through 26. Although God had not selected Matthias, Peter as the leader of the early Church in Jerusalem acted in legalism and orchestrated the appointment of Matthias as the replacement for Judas. Luke merely recorded this incident of presumptive legalism on the part of Peter in Acts 1:21-26.
- (b) **Paul.** Paul was appointed by God the Holy Spirit as the senior Apostle of “*the 12*” during the pre-Canon Church – “*I consider myself not in the least inferior to the most eminent apostles*” [2 Cor. 11:5]; 1 Cor. 15:9-10; 2 Pet. 3:14-16; Tit. 1:1; Col. 1:1.

## TITUS 1:1

Paul, a bond-servant [*doulos* (slave)] of God and an apostle of Jesus Christ, for the faith [*pistis* – the teaching and writing of the @@@ MYSTERY doctrine in the New Testament] of those chosen [*eklektos* – God always knew which humans would believe in Christ] of God and the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of the truth [*aletheia* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE given to the Believer] which is according to godliness [*eusebeia* (respect for God) – so the Believer can reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY].

## 1 CORINTHIANS 15:10

But by the grace [*charis* – @@@ GRACE] of God I am [*Paul*] what I am, and His grace toward me did not prove [*ginomai* (to become)] vain [*kenos* (empty)]; but I labored [*kopiaio* (to labor with wearisome effort)] even more than all of them [the other 11 @@@ APOSTLES], yet not I, but the grace [*charis*] of God with me.

- (c) **Powers.** At first the 12 Type One Apostles performed many @@@ **MIRACLES** and spoke in tongues. These temporary spiritual @@@ **GIFTS** established their @@@ **AUTHORITY** over any given group of Believers – “*greater works than these (in quantity) he will do*” [Jn. 14:12]; Col. 1:1; Acts 5:15-16; 16:16-18; 19:11-12; 28:8-9.

## ACTS 19:11-12

God was performing extraordinary miracles [*dunamis (power)* – @@@ **MIRACLES**] by the hands of Paul, so that handkerchiefs or aprons were even carried from his body to the sick, and the diseases [*nosos (sickness; disease)*] left [*apallasso (to set free)*] them and the evil spirits went out [*ekporeuomai (to depart)* – @@@ **DEMONISM**].

## ACTS 5:15-16

To such an extent that they even carried the sick out into the streets and laid them on cots and pallets, so that when Peter came by at least his shadow might fall on any one of them. Also, the people from the cities in the vicinity of Jerusalem were coming together, bringing people who were sick or afflicted with unclean spirits, and they were all being healed [@@@ **MIRACLES**].

- (d) **Gifts Removed.** All of the spectacular gifts were removed during the lifetime of the Apostles. For example, in Acts 19:11-12, the Apostle Paul could heal human sickness at will. Then in Phil. 2:27 and 2 Tim. 4:20, Paul has lost the gift of healing entirely, acknowledging that he was obliged to leave behind certain sick people on his traveling team.

## 2 TIMOTHY 4:20

Erastus remained in Corinth, but Trophimus I [Paul] left sick [*astheneo*] at Miletus [Paul could not heal him].

- (e) **Cutoff.** Paul anticipated the departure of short-term supernatural gifts and @@@ **MIRACLES** in 1 Cor. 12:8-10, and gave the cutoff sign for this early Church Age phenomena in 1 Cor. 13:8-10 – the completed New Testament of the @@@ **BIBLE** circa A.D. 96. So too, with the completed canon of Scripture both Type One and Type Two Apostles all ceased to exist. No one has the gift of Apostle today – 1 Cor. 4:9.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 13:8-10

Love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE] never fails [*pipto* (phased out)]; but if *there are gifts* of prophecy [*propheteia*], they will be done away [*katargeo* (abolished; ceased; canceled out)]; if *there are* tongues [*glossa* (the language or dialect used by a particular people)], they will cease [*pauo* (to stop)]; if *there is* [the gift of] knowledge [*gnosis*], it will be done away [*katargeo*]. For we [Believers] know [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] in part [in the pre-canon period of the Church Age] and we prophesy in part; but when the perfect [*teleios* (completed) – the word *teleios* is in the neuter which refers to a thing and not a person, i.e., the completed @@@ BIBLE] comes [Revelation was written in A.D. 96 and completed the Bible], the partial [*meros* – the temporary spectacular @@@ GIFTS of the early Church] will be done away [*katargeo* (to render inoperative)].

- (7) **Witness to Men and Angels.** Bold claims require bold evidence. The central message emanating from all of the Apostles was that they had personally witnessed with their own eyes, ears, and touch, the resurrected Jesus of Nazareth – the LORD Christ. All of them, with the possible exception of John, died violent deaths for that unwavering pronouncement and bravely exhibited this powerful testimonial evidence for the truth of the risen Savior to both @@@ ANGELS and men. Without question, their manner of death provides convincing evidence for the truth of their assertions. While a person might willingly die for what they believe to be true, they will not die for what they know is a lie, particularly cowards. Indeed, eleven of the Apostles, who were formally not brave people, as evidenced by the Gospels, all died gruesome deaths for their eyewitness testimony about encountering on many occasions the resurrected Jesus Christ– 1 Cor. 4:9. If these men objectively knew that they were lying, they would not have willingly suffered such horrible deaths.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 4:9

For, I [Paul] think, God has exhibited [*apodeiknumi* (to prove what kind of person anyone is)] us apostles last of all [Paul recognized that the spiritual gift of Apostle was limited to his day], as men condemned to death [*epithanaios* (doomed to death)]; because we have become a spectacle [*theatron* (a place in which games and dramatic spectacles are exhibited)] to the world, both to angels and to men [their deaths confirmed the truth].



## @@@ AUTHORITY

- (1) **Definition.** The doctrine of authority refers to the legal power given by God whereby certain members of the human race have jurisdiction over and responsibility for others. It also refers to the supreme and unalterable authority of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE for the Believer. Accordingly, legitimate God-ordained authority exists and functions in two main categories in life and human @@@ HISTORY: (1) Authority in the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS; and (2) Authority in the realm of Bible Doctrine.
- (2) **Divine Institutions.** In the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS proper authority protects human @@@ FREEDOM, but there is always a delicate balance between freedom and authority. Freedom without authority is anarchy and authority without freedom is tyranny. For the Divine Institutions to function properly @@@ PRIVACY must be respected and protected.
- (3) **Biblical Terminology.** The primary words in the @@@ BIBLE used for authority include:
  - (a) *hupakouo* (to be subject to) – Matt. 8:27; Lk. 8:25; Rom. 6:14-15; Eph. 6:1; Col. 3:20, 22; 1 Pet. 3:6.

## LUKE 8:25

And He [Jesus] said to them [the disciples], “Where is your faith [*pistis* – the lack of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in their @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT and the failure to apply @@@ FAITH/Rest to the @@@ PROBLEMS of the storm on the Sea of Galilee]?” They were fearful [*phobeo* (afraid; dread; terror)] and amazed, saying to one another, “Who then is this, that He commands even the winds and the water, and they obey [*hupakouo*] Him?”

- (b) *hupotasso* (to be under absolute authority) – Js. 4:7; 1 Pet. 5:5; Col. 3:18; 1 Cor. 14:32; Rom. 8:20; Eph. 5:22. This is the strongest Greek word for authority.

## COLOSSIANS 3:18

Wives, be subject [*hupotasso*] to your husbands, as is fitting [*aneko* (to pertain to what is due) – God established @@@ MARRIAGE] in the LORD.

- (c) *peitho* (to obey) – Gal. 5:7; Heb. 13:17; Js. 3:3.

## GALATIANS 5:7

You [**Believers in Galatia**] were running [*trecho* – @@@ **RUNNING**] well [in the @@@ **CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE**]; who hindered you from obeying [*peitho*] the truth [by their negative [-N] volition]?

### (4) **Types of Authority.**

- (a) **God's Authority.** God controls @@@ **HISTORY** under the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD**. The @@@ **BIBLE** is His authority for the Believer.
- (b) **Pastor/Teacher.** In the local non-denominational Church or “Bible class,” the authority rests with the @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHER** – 1 Thess. 5:12; 2 Cor. 10:8; Heb. 13:7; Isa. 54:17.

## 1 THESSALONIANS 5:12

But we [**Paul's team**] request you, brethren, that you appreciate those who diligently labor [*kopiao* (to grow weary) – @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHER who studies and teaches on a consistent basis**] among you, and have charge over [*proistemi* (to preside over)] you in the LORD and give you instruction.

- (c) **Self.** Volitional self-discipline to learn God's truth is the key to the Believer's advance to @@@ **MATURITY** – “*Everyone who is of the truth hears My voice*” [Jn. 18:37]; 1 Cor. 9:24-27; 1 Tim. 4:7.

## 1 TIMOTHY 4:7

But have nothing to do with worldly fables [*muthos* (a fiction)] fit only for old women. On the other hand, discipline [*gumnazo* (to practice for the games)] yourself for the purpose of godliness [*eusebeia* – reach @@@ **MATURITY**].

### (d) **Authority in the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.**

1. **Husband Over Wife.** In @@@ **MARRIAGE** “*being under the authority of your husband*” [Num. 5:20]; Eph. 5:22; Col. 3:18; 1 Pet. 3:1-6; 1 Tim. 2:11-12.

2. **Parents Over Children.** Both mother and father have authority over their minor children. “*Train up a child in the way he should go, even when he is old he will not depart from it*” [Prov. 6:22]. “*We had earthly fathers to discipline us*” [Heb. 12:9-11]. “*My mother who used to instruct me*” [S.S. 8:2]. See Col. 3:20; Deut. 6:6-9; 7:9; Ex. 20:12. Such authority does not authorize abuse – “*do not provoke your children to anger, but bring them up in the discipline and instruction of the LORD*” [Eph. 6:1-4]. Note: Children are spoiled by a lack of loving training/discipline from parents not by giving them material things.

### COLOSSIANS 3:20

Children, be obedient to your parents [*goneus*] in all things, for this is well-pleasing to the LORD.

3. **Government Over Citizen.** Believers should pray for those in authority, e.g., that the person in charge will be challenged to follow the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS. See Rom. 13:1-7; 1 Pet. 2:13-14; 1 Tim. 2:1-2.

### 1 PETER 2:13-14

Submit yourselves for the LORD’s sake to every human institution, whether to a king as the one in authority, or to governors [*hegemon (a leader of any kind)*] as sent by him for the punishment [*ekdikesis (criminal justice)*] of evildoers [*kakopoios – also capital punishment*] and the praise of those who do right.

- (e) **Teacher.** Teacher over the student in academics. See Prov. 5:13.
  - (f) **Employer over Employee.** The employer, male or female, is the boss over the employee. See Eph. 6:5; Col. 3:22-25; Prov. 31:13-18, 24.
  - (g) **Military.** The entire rank structure is based on chains of authority to prepare the soldier for the hard stresses of combat – Neh. 4:13-15.
- (5) **Over Nature.** God has complete control over nature – “*I shall give you rains in their season, so that the land will yield it produce*” [Lev. 26:4]. See Job 5:10; 28:25-27; 36:26-33; Ps. 135:7; 147:8; 148:8; Jer. 10:13; Lk. 8:25.

**JOB 5:10**

He [God] gives rain on the earth and sends water on the fields.

- (6) **Over History.** God has absolute authority over human @@@ HISTORY to include all categories of @@@ ANGELS. *“It is He who changes the times and the epochs; He removes kings and establishes kings”* [Dan. 2:12].
- (7) **Arrogance Rejects Authority.** Arrogance attacks all forms of legitimate authority. God “*opposes*” [1 Pet. 5:5-6] the Believer on negative [-N] volition who rejects lawful authority – Js. 4:6; Prov. 3:34; Heb. 13:7, 17.
- (8) **Adam and Eve.** Although Eve was deceived by Satan [1 Tim. 2:14], she committed the first @@@ SIN stemming from her rejection of God’s authority [Gen. 3:16]. On the other hand, because Adam’s sin was intentional, he not only suffered spiritual death like Eve but the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE is now passed down genetically from Adam [the male in copulation] to all subsequent humans – 1 Cor. 15:22; Col. 1:13.

**1 CORINTHIANS 15:22**

For as in Adam all die [*apothnesko* (of eternal death – spiritual @@@ DEATH)], so also in Christ all will be made alive [for @@@ SALVATION].

**GENESIS 3:16**

To the woman He [God] said, “I will greatly multiply your pain in childbirth, in pain you will bring forth children; yet your desire [*teshuqah*] will be for your husband, and he will rule [*mashal*] over you.”

**COLOSSIANS 1:13-14**

For He rescued us [Believers] from the domain of darkness [*skotos* – spiritual @@@ DEATH], and transferred us to the kingdom [*basileia* (royal domain)] of His beloved Son, in whom we have redemption, the forgiveness of sins.

- (9) **Orientation to Authority.** Authority orientation is key to a healthy society and Christian growth. However, the full benefits from authority must come from the true consent of the person that is under that authority – humility.

- (10) **Exercising Authority.** Those who exercise authority must exhibit **humility, patience, and sacrifice**. A good leader places the concern of those under his care above his own wants and needs – 2 Cor. 1:24; 1 Pet. 5:3; Eph. 5:25, 28.

### 1 PETER 5:3

Nor yet as lording it over [*katakuriueuo*] those allotted to your [**the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER**] charge [*kleros*], but proving to be examples to the flock [**Believers in the Church congregation**].

### EPHESIANS 5:28

So husbands ought also to love [*agapao (to love dearly)*] their own wives as their own bodies. He who loves his own wife loves himself.

- (11) **Jesus Christ Submitted.** Jesus Christ rejected calls to maintain His eternal and absolute “equality” with the other members of the @@@ TRINITY and opted instead to submit to the authority of the Father’s @@@ PLAN OF GOD to take on the form of a true human in @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION in order to go to the @@@ CROSS and provide the opportunity for @@@ SALVATION to all mankind. See Lk. 4:11-12; Heb. 2:14-15; Phil. 2:6-9; Jn. 10:34-38; 1 Tim. 4:10. See @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT.
- (12) **Disobey Authority.** The Believer must resist government commands when they directly conflict with certain @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE dogmas, e.g., witnessing about Jesus [Acts 4:18-20; 5:29]; bowing to an image [Dan. 3:16-19]; praying to idols [Dan. 6:10]; and murdering infants [Ex. 1:17].

### ACTS 4:18-20

And when they [**the Jewish High Council**] had summoned them [**Peter and John**], they commanded [*paraggello*] them not to speak [*phtheggomai (to give out a sound)*] or teach [*didasko (to hold discourse)*] at all in the name of Jesus. But Peter and John answered and said to them, “Whether it is right in the sight of God to give heed to you rather than to God, you be the judge; for we cannot stop speaking about what we have seen [*horao (a panoramic view)*] and heard [*akouo – Jesus Christ’s actual and historical @@@ RESURRECTION from the dead*].”

## @@@ BAPTISM

- (1) **Definition.** The English word “baptize” is a transliteration of the Greek word *baptizo* (to identify something with something else). The central meaning of baptize is an identification of one thing with another so that it is altered in some fashion. For example, Homer used the word to associate the weapon that pierced the eye of the Cyclops with the deed itself. Herodotus used the word to describe the new nature of a Greek soldier’s spear as he dipped it into a bowl of pig’s blood while “passing in review” of his commanding officer. Indeed, many Greek dramas would use the word *baptizo* to describe a person that became drunk with wine as being “baptized,” i.e., “identified” with the effects of the wine.
- (2) **John’s Baptism.** John’s Baptism – [WET]. John the Baptist carried the title of Elijah, the Herald of the coming Messiah – Mal. 4:5. John’s water baptism performed in the Jordan River represented the physical arrival of the Kingdom of God to humanity by means of the 1st Advent of Jesus Christ and the start of His three-year earthly ministry – Matt. 3:1-10; Jn. 1:25-33; Acts 19:4-5. John’s ritual went beyond the Temple’s washing rituals related to @@@ REBOUND and John would only baptize those who were already Believers. He would fully immerse the person under the water and then bring them up. Again, the ritual identified the Believer with the imminent coming of the Messiah, it was not for salvation. *See also*, Jn. 3:22 *cf.* Jn. 4:1-2, where Jesus’ disciples also performed water baptisms for the same purpose. [RITUAL].

### MATTHEW 3:5-6

Then Jerusalem was going out to him [John the Baptist], and all Judea and all the district around the Jordan; and they were being baptized [*baptizo*] by him in the Jordan River, as they confessed [*exomologeo* (to acknowledge)] their sins [*hamarita* – positive [+P] volition born again Believers using @@@ REBOUND].

- (3) **Jesus’ Baptism.** Jesus’ Baptism – [WET]. Represented Jesus Christ’s agreement to willingly identify Himself completely with the @@@ PLAN OF GOD to provide @@@ SALVATION by dying on the @@@ CROSS. Going into the @@@ WATER represented Jesus dying on the cross and coming up out of the water represented His @@@ RESURRECTION from the dead – Matt. 3:13-17. [RITUAL].



## MATTHEW 3:13-17

Then Jesus arrived from Galilee at the Jordan *coming* to John, to be baptized [*baptizo*] by him. But John tried to prevent Him, saying, “I have need to be baptized by You, and do You come to me?” But Jesus answering said to him, “Permit *it* at this time; for in this way it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness [*the @@@ PLAN OF GOD*].” Then he permitted Him. After being baptized, Jesus came up immediately from the water [*hudor*]; and behold, the heavens [*ouranos*] were opened, and he saw the [*Holy*] Spirit of God descending as a dove *and* lighting on Him, and behold, a voice out of the heavens said, “This is My [*God the Father, @@@ TRINITY*] beloved Son, in whom I am well-pleased.”

- (4) **Believer’s Baptism.** Believer’s Baptism – [**WET**]. This ritual was purely an identification of a person already a Believer with the @@@ DEATH of Jesus Christ on the @@@ CROSS. This is a teaching tool for learning about @@@ SOTERIOLOGY [Retroactive and Current Positional Truth] and never a requirement for @@@ SALVATION – Acts 8:36-38; 10:47-48; 16:33 [Gentiles baptized *after* believing in Christ]; Acts 22:16 [Saul baptized *after* he was already saved per Acts 22:8, 10-11]. [**RITUAL**].

## ACTS 10:47-48

“Surely no one can refuse the water for these to be baptized [*baptizo*] who have received the Holy Spirit just as we *did*, can he [*Peter speaking to Jewish Believers*]”? And he ordered them to be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ. Then they [*Gentile Believers*] asked him to stay on for a few days.

- (a) **Ritual.** The Believer’s water baptism ritual is only mentioned in the book of *Acts* and then once in 1 Cor. 1:11-18. Before the Bible was completed this water baptism also put emphasis on teaching about the special aspects of the *dry* baptism of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT.
- (b) **Teaching Tool.** The Believer’s water baptism is never a requirement for @@@ SALVATION in any of the @@@ DISPENSATIONS. As a teaching tool for the early Church it was optional. In fact, it was actually a source of strife, as in *1st Corinthians* where Paul commented on how he couldn’t even recall all those he had water baptized, “*beyond that, I do not know whether I baptized any other*” [1 Cor. 1:16].



- (c) **Mark.** The added passage in Mk. 16:16, indicating water baptism as a requirement for @@@ SALVATION is absolutely false. The entire section of Mk 16:9-20 [also speaking about snake handling and drinking poison] is not found in any of the oldest manuscripts of *Mark*.
- (d) **LORD's Supper.** The only ritual commanded for the Church Age is the communion supper instituted by Jesus Christ on the night He was betrayed per the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.
- (5) **Red Sea Baptism.** The Baptism of Moses – [DRY]. An identification of the Exodus Jews with the Cloud [Jesus Christ] as a @@@ THEOPHANY – 1 Cor. 10:1-2. Note: Only the pursuing Egyptians went completely under the actual water and died – Ex. 14:24-28. [REAL].

## 1 CORINTHIANS 10:1-2

For I [Paul] do not want you to be unaware, brethren, that our fathers [the Jews] were all under the cloud and all passed through the sea; and all were baptized [baptizo] into Moses in the cloud and in the sea.

- (6) **Baptism of the Cross.** Baptism of the Cross – [DRY]. Jesus is identified with all the @@@ SIN of the @@@ WORLD – Matt. 20:22-23; 26:28, 39, 42; Lk. 12:50. This unique baptism occurred once at the @@@ CROSS. See also @@@ CUP where Jesus Christ identifies himself with sin by drinking from a “cup” that held all human sin – past, present, and future. [REAL].

## LUKE 12:50

But I [Jesus] have a baptism [baptizo] to undergo [Jesus will be identified with all the @@@ SIN of the @@@ WORLD on the @@@ CROSS], and how distressed [sunecho (to be pressed on every side)] I am until it is accomplished [teleo (to bring to a close; to finish)].

- (7) **Baptism of Fire.** Baptism of Fire – [DRY]. For all unBelievers then on the earth at the 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ where they are identified with fire. All unBelievers are removed from the earth and the 1,000 year rule of Jesus Christ begins – Isa. 24:6; Lk. 3:16-17; 2 Thess. 1:7-9; Matt. 3:11. The “coming of the Son of Man will be just like the days of Noah” [Matt. 24:36-41], where Believers are left on earth and unBelievers are taken away. [REAL].

LUKE 3:16-17

John [John the Baptist] answered and said to them all [Believers and unBelievers], “As for me, I baptize [baptizo] you with water [hudor]; but One [Jesus Christ] is coming who is mightier than I, and I am not fit to untie the thong of His sandals; He will baptize [baptizo] you with the Holy Spirit and fire [pur]. His winnowing fork is in His hand to thoroughly clear His threshing floor, and to gather the wheat [Believers] into His barn [apotheke (a storehouse) – only Believers go into the Millennium and @@@ HEAVEN]; but He will burn [katakaio (consume by fire)] up the chaff [unBelievers] with unquenchable [asbestos (of eternal hell fire) – @@@ HELL] fire [pur].”

ISAIAH 24:6

Therefore, a curse devours [akal (to eat up)] the earth [erets], and those who live in it are held guilty [asham]. Therefore, the inhabitants of the earth are burned [charar], and few men are left [only Believers go into the Millennium].

(8) **Baptism of Holy Spirit.** Baptism of the Holy Spirit – [DRY]. [REAL].

(a) **A New Thing.** The Baptism of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT never occurred in the Old Testament and is part of the @@@ MYSTERY doctrines for the Church Age only. The Holy Spirit now Indwells every Believer in the Church Age. At His ascension, Jesus predicted when this would first occur – “not many days from now” [Acts 1:5]. The start of the Church Age was ten days later. See Jn. 14:16-17; 15:26.

ACTS 1:5

For John [John the Baptist] baptized [baptizo] with water [hudor – @@@ WATER], but you [Believers] will be baptized [baptizo] with the Holy Spirit not many days from now [ten days later].

(b) **Grand Opening.** The dry baptism of the Holy Spirit signaled the “grand opening” of the Church Age – Matt. 16:15; Acts 1:5; 2:3; 11:15-17 [showing the Gentile Pentecost]. The spectacular signs and temporary special @@@ GIFTS that accompanied the Holy Spirit’s dry baptism of some selected Believers at this fabulous window of announcement to the @@@ WORLD was very short lived.

- (c) **Mechanics.** The mechanics of the dry baptism of the Holy Spirit post Pentecost era. It is neither seen nor felt – 1 Cor. 12:13. The dry baptism of the Holy Spirit occurs at the moment of faith in Jesus Christ – Col. 2:12; Eph. 1:13; Tit. 3:5; Gal. 3:26-29. Again, the spectacular dry baptism results of flames of fire, @@@ MIRACLES, etc., were only extant for some Believers at the very beginning of the Church Age.
- (d) **Equality.** The dry baptism of the Holy Spirit is a sign of the unification/equality of all Believers in the Church Age. The only “equality” in the world is provided by God where every Believer has equal opportunity to reach @@@ MATURITY and be a subject matter expert witness exhibit to glorify God – Eph. 4:4-5; Gal. 3:26-29.

### GALATIANS 3:26-29

For you are all sons [*uihos*] of God through faith [*pistis* – the means of @@@ SALVATION is by @@@ FAITH] in Christ Jesus. For all of you who were baptized [*baptizo*] into Christ [dry baptism of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] have clothed yourselves with Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek [*ethnos*], there is neither slave nor free man, there is neither male nor female; for you are all one in Christ Jesus. And if you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham’s descendants, heirs [*kleronomos* (one who receives his allotted portion by right of sonship)] according to promise [*epaggelia* (the act of promising a good)] – salvation by @@@ GRACE].

### EPHESIANS 4:4-5

There is one body [*soma* – all Believers are in @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST] and one [Holy] Spirit, just as also you were called [*kaleo* (to utter with a loud voice)] in one [*heis*] hope [*elpis* (confidence)] of your calling; one LORD [*kurios* (God) – Jesus Christ the Savior], one faith [*pistis* – @@@ SALVATION by @@@ FAITH in Christ], one baptism [*baptisma* – the dry @@@ BAPTISM mechanics of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT at salvation].

- (e) **Resolves the Angelic Conflict.** The Devil’s back is broken! In the Old Testament the Holy Spirit only *regenerated* all Believers, e.g., the woman was renamed Eve to show that she had eternal life. There was no dry baptism of the Holy Spirit in the Old Testament. See Heb. 2:7-15; Col. 2:15; @@@ DISPENSATIONS.

- (f) **Retroactive.** The Holy Spirit's dry baptism marks Retroactive Identification with Christ in His death – Rom. 6:3-4; Col. 2:12; 3:1.

## COLOSSIANS 2:12

Having been buried with Him [Jesus Christ] in baptism [*baptisma* – @@@ HOLY SPIRIT], in which you [all Believers] were also raised up with [*sunegeiro* (to cause to raise together)] Him through faith [*pistis* – @@@ SALVATION by @@@ FAITH in Christ] in the working [*energeia* (superhuman power)] of God, who raised [*egeiro*] Him [Jesus Christ] from the dead [*nekros* – @@@ RESURRECTION].

- (g) **Positional Truth.** The dry baptism of the Holy Spirit is the basis of Current Positional Truth – Eph. 1:3-6; 2:6; Col. 2:10; 1 Cor. 12:13.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 12:13

For by one [Holy] Spirit we were all baptized [*baptizo*] into one body, whether Jews or Greeks [*hellen*], whether slaves or free, and we were all made to drink of one Spirit [saving ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT].

- (h) **Permanent.** The Indwelling of the Holy Spirit never departs the Believer but He can be grieved and quenched as to Fellowship/Filling in @@@ TIME – Eph. 4:30; 1 Thess. 5:19. See @@@ REBOUND.
- (9) **The Great Commission.** The Great Commission – [DRY]. In Matt. 28:19, the resurrected LORD Jesus Christ gives the future @@@ APOSTLES for the Church Age the command to identify [baptize], new Believers and Churches with the teaching of the full realm of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE. [REAL].

## MATTHEW 28:19

Go therefore [the resurrected Jesus Christ speaking to the future @@@ APOSTLES] and make disciples [*matheteuo* (students)] of all the nations [*ethnos*], baptizing [*baptizo* – the identification of Church Age Believers with the full @@@ PLAN OF GOD to reach @@@ MATURITY] them in the name of the Father [*pater*] and the Son [*uihos*] and the Holy Spirit [the @@@ TRINITY and the primacy of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE].

## @@@ BIBLE

- (1) **Definition.** The Bible is a collection of writings by human authors inspired by God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT, the earliest being the *Pentateuch* [the first five books of the Bible written by Moses circa 1,400 B.C.] and the last written by John circa A.D. 96. The Bible is divided into the Old Testament and the New Testament under the concept of the progression of Divine revelation to man under the @@@ PLAN OF GOD. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.
  - (a) **Old Testament.** The last book of the Old Testament is *Malachi* written around 450 B.C., from the Kingdom of Judea; the Jews having recently come out of the Babylonian captivity [586-516 B.C.].
  - (b) **New Testament.** New Testament books were all written between circa A.D. 40 to 96. The writers were all eyewitnesses to Jesus Christ in the flesh or the direct and contemporary associates of eyewitnesses, e.g., Luke and Mark. Numerous recovered copies and tens of thousands of fragments of manuscripts date back almost to the very time of the *autographs*, making it purer in content than any other book from antiquity – in a form that is well over 99.75 percent accurate!
  - (c) **Translation.** One of the best modern English translations is the New American Standard Bible, although the King James Bible is wonderfully accurate if one understands the old English.
- (2) **New Testament Greek.** *Koine* (common) Greek [Common Greek] is the original written language of the New Testament books. Although most of the writers spoke Aramaic they wrote in *Koine* Greek, the international language of the day in the eastern part of the Roman Empire [Latin was used in the western half].
- (3) **The Very Word of God.** The Bible is inerrant and is the inspired Word of God per *infra* (8). Jesus endorsed all the Old Testament, to include the *Torah* written by Moses [Ex. 24:4]: “*If you believed Moses, you would believe Me, for he wrote about Me*” [Jn. 5:46]. Thus, the Scriptures are dogmatic, without error in the original autographs [Jn. 10:35]. For example, when the scholars of the Middle Ages held that the earth was flat, the Bible stated that it was a sphere hanging on nothing – “*above the circle of the earth*” [Isa. 40:22]. Further, every Greek verb has three parts making communication precise.

TENSE – kind of action:

- (a) Present = Continuous Action.  
(also Imperfect)
- (b) Perfect = Completed Action.
- (c) Aorist = Occurring Action.

VOICE – relationship of the verb to the subject:

- (a) Active = Subject produces the action of the Verb.
- (b) Passive = Subject receives the action of the Verb.
- (c) Middle = Subject is benefited by the action of the Verb.

MOOD – relationship of the verb to reality:

- (a) Indicative = Actual reality.
- (b) Subjunctive = Reality is only a potential.
- (c) Imperative = A command.
- (d) Optative = Expression of a desire or wish.

SYNTAX – the way in words are arranged in a sentence, e.g., conditional clauses:

- (a) First Class Condition [FCC] = Assumed true. “If” – *ei* + the verb in the indicative. *See, e.g., Col. 3:1.*
  - (b) Second Class Condition [SCC] = Assumed not true. “If” – *ei* + imperfect tense, aorist, or pluperfect. The *ean* is always put in front.
  - (c) Third Class Condition [TCC] = Maybe it is true, and maybe it is false. “If” – *ean* + verb in the subjunctive mood. *See, e.g., 1 Jn. 1:9.*
  - (d) Fourth Class Condition = I wish it were true, but it is not true. “If” – *ei* = verb in the optative mood. *See, e.g., 1 Pet. 3:14.*
- (4) Granville Sharp Rule. If two or more nouns are joined by the conjunction *kai* (and) and only the first noun has a definite article, then all subsequent nouns refer to the same thing. *See, e.g., Eph. 3:18.*
- (5) Etymology. The study of the meaning of words, e.g., *plerooma* has three meanings (to fill up a deficiency; to fully influence; to possess something).
- (6) Hermeneutics. Hermeneutics is the study of the methodological principles of interpretation.
- (a) **Isagogical.** Bible verses must be interpreted in the time in which they were written. This provides accurate understanding.



- (b) **Categorical.** Subject matter of Scripture must be compared to other subject matter of Scripture and then set out in fixed categories of truth. Thus, the term “Bible Doctrine” refers to the existence of dogmatic and interlocking categories of God’s truth found throughout the many books of the Bible. *See* Heb. 6:1-3. Since learning the categories of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE is how the Believer grows to @@@ MATURITY, it is critical that he metabolizes them so that he can say: “*my mind instructs me in the night*” [Ps. 16:7]; Josh. 1:8-9.

### JOSHUA 1:8-9

This book of the law [the @@@ BIBLE as it then existed in writing] shall not depart from your mouth, but you shall meditate on it day and night [study @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE constantly], so that you may be careful [*shamar* (to keep watch)] to do according to all that is written in it; for then you will make your way prosperous [@@@ REWARDS as a result of reaching spiritual @@@ MATURITY], and then you will have success. Have I [God] not commanded you? Be strong and courageous! Do not tremble or be dismayed [@@@ FEAR is cast out], for the LORD your God is with you wherever you go.

- (c) **Exegetical.** To accurately interpret the meaning of the original text the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER must know the original languages or rely on another trusted language expert that knows them.
- (d) **Law of Unity.** All Scripture fits together perfectly. There are no contradictions whatsoever found in the Bible – Ps. 119:160; Jn. 10:35. All God’s words are entirely true in all that they reveal!

### JOHN 10:35

If he [an Old Testament prophet] called them gods, to whom the word of God came (and the Scripture [*agagraphe* (writing)] cannot be broken).

- (e) **Progression of the Bible.** Scripture is progressive in revelation. For instance, revelations about the person and mission of the coming Messiah Jesus Christ began as the “*seed*” of the woman in Gen. 3:15 [Isa. 7:14], and became more and more precise throughout the Old Testament writings, e.g., place of His birth [“*Bethlehem*”] in Mic. 5:2.



- 
- (f) **Law of First Mention.** The first time that the word appears in a body of text determines the predominant meaning of the word when it is next encountered in the same text. Although each book of the Bible stands alone, all books from *Genesis* to *Revelation* fit together perfectly linked under fixed categories of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.
- (g) **Proper Interpretation.** The true object of interpretation is to appreciate the exact thoughts of the writer of the instrument. For the strict constructionist, the usage of words determines their proper meaning just as the function of a word depends upon association with other words. In short, the goal and only issue is always: “What did the *writer* think [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT inspiring him to pen the words]?” It is never: “What do *you* think?” Liberal scholars reject this approach and superimpose their own thoughts washed in human @@@ GOOD or @@@ EMOTION on what they want the Bible to mean. Because the liberal scholar lives in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS he erroneously thinks in terms of self-sufficiency and arrogance.
- (h) **Plenary Aspects.** While all Scripture in the Word of God is absolutely true some portions of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE hold deeper truths and value than others. For example, understanding the doctrine of @@@ SALVATION is more important than understanding the workings of the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.
- (i) **Law of Reoccurrence.** Various Bible Doctrines are repeated over and over throughout the Bible. Repetition is necessary to assist the Believer to learn the materials and concepts, until they are reflexive in nature – “*your commandments make me wiser than my enemies, for they are ever mine*” [Ps. 119:97]; Jos. 1:8; Ps. 1:2.
- (7) **Content of Scripture.**
- (a) **Revelation of the Word.** God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT reveals @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in such a manner that without changing the author’s personality or style it is *theopneustos* (God-breathed) to the human author. In short, once finalized and set out in writing, every single word is exactly as God intends it to be – 2 Tim. 3:16-17. See 2 Sam. 23:2-3; Isa. 59:21; Job 32:18; Acts 4:24-25; 28:25; Mk. 12:36; Jer. 1:6-9; Matt. 22:42-44; Mic. 3:8; Heb. 3:7; Ps. 119:160; Jn. 17:17.

## 2 TIMOTHY 3:16-17

All Scripture [*graphe*] is inspired by God [*theopneustos* (God-breathed) – the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT and @@@ OPERATION Z] and profitable [*ophelimos* (to make a profit)] for teaching [*didaskalia* – the prepared @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER teaches from the @@@ BIBLE], for reproof [*elegchos* (a proof; evidence)], for correction [*epanorthosis* (restoration to an upright state)], for training [*paideia* (the whole education of children)] in righteousness [*dikaiosune* – learning the @@@ PLAN OF GOD]; so that the man of God [positive [+P] volition Believer] may be adequate [*artios* (fitted) – reach @@@ MATURITY], equipped [*exartizo* (to furnish perfectly)] for every good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] work [*ergon*].

## JEREMIAH 1:6-9

Then I [Jeremiah] said, “Alas, LORD [*adonay*] God! Behold, I do not know how to speak [called to be a Prophet to Judah], because I am a youth.” But the LORD [*Jehovah*] said to me, “Do not say, ‘I am a youth,’ because everywhere I send you, you shall go, and all that I command you, you shall speak. Do not be afraid of them, for I am with you to deliver you,” declares the LORD. Then the LORD stretched out His hand and touched my mouth, and the LORD said to me, “Behold, I have put My words in your mouth.”

- (b) **Communication.** God communicated to individual writers via: (1) words – Isa. 6:8-10; Acts 28:25; (2) dreams – Num. 12:6; Gen. 15:12; 31:10-13, 24; Dan. 10:9; Joel 2:28; Matt. 1:20-24; 2:12-13; Acts 1:20-24]; (3) visions – “*the visions of Isaiah*” [Isa. 1:1]; 1 Kng. 22:19; Joel 2:28; Dan. 7:13; Ezk. 1:3; and (4) angels – “*the word spoken through angels*” [Heb. 2:2]; Dan. 8:16; Deut. 33:2; Acts 7:38, 53; 10:3-19; 11:5-18; Gal. 3:19; Ps. 68:17; Heb. 2:2; 2 Pet. 3:1-2.

## 2 PETER 3:1-2

This is now, beloved, the second letter I [Peter] am writing to you [Believers] in which I am stirring up [*diegeiro* (to wake up)] your sincere [*eilikrines* (unsullied)] mind by way of reminder [*hupomnesis*], that you should remember [*mimnesko* (to be recalled to mind) – @@@ MEMORY] the words spoken beforehand by the holy prophets and the commandment of the LORD and Savior *spoken* by your apostles [the content of the @@@ BIBLE].

- (c) **Church Age.** With the completed Bible, God only speaks in the Church Age through His written word which is taught via the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER to individual Believers – 1 Cor. 13:8-10.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 13:8-10

Love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE] never fails [*pipto* (phased out)]; but if *there are gifts of* prophecy [*propheteia*], they will be done away [*katargeo* (abolished; ceased; canceled out)]; if *there are* tongues [*glossa* (the language or dialect used by a particular people)], they will cease [*pauo* (to stop)]; if *there is* [the gift of] knowledge [*gnosis*], it will be done away [*katargeo*]. For we [Believers] know [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] in part [in the pre-canon period of the Church Age] and we prophesy in part; but when the perfect [*teleios* (completed) – the word *teleios* is in the neuter which refers to a thing and not a person, i.e., the completed @@@ BIBLE] comes [*Revelation* was written in A.D. 96 and completed the Bible], the partial [*meros* – the temporary spectacular @@@ GIFTS of the early Church] will be done away [*katargeo* (to render inoperative)].

- (d) **Inspiration of the Bible.** Per 7(a) *supra*, God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT directed the writers of the Bible so that without setting aside their human mind, personality, background, or vocabulary God's complete message is recorded with perfect accuracy in the original languages – 2 Pet. 1:20-21; Isa. 30:8; Eph. 3:3-5; Rev. 1:3, 11, 19; 2:1, 8, 12, 18; 3:1, 7, 14. For example, Paul knew at the time that he was producing @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE as part of the Bible – 1 Thess. 4:15; 5:27. Peter also knew that both his and Paul's writings were inspired by God the Holy Spirit – 2 Pet. 3:15-16. Isaiah, whose teaching and writing ministry extended for several decades, referred to his previous writings as part of "*the book of the LORD*" [Isa. 34:16]. Finally, all such inspiration ended with the completed canon of Scripture in A.D. 96 – Rev. 22:18-19. See @@@ GIFTS.

### 1 THESSALONIANS 5:27

I [Paul] adjure [*horkizo* (solemnly implore)] you by the LORD to have this letter [*epistole* – the letter Paul wrote under inspiration of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT to Thessalonica] read [*anaginosko* (to know accurately) – by means of a @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER] to all the brethren [*adelphos* – Believers].

## ISAIAH 30:8

Now go, write [*kathab*] it [the Word of God communicated to Isaiah] on a tablet before them and inscribe it on a scroll [*sepher*], that it [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] may serve in the time to come as a witness forever.

## 2 PETER 1:20-21

But know this first of all, that no prophecy [*propheteia* (a discourse emanating from divine inspiration and declaring the purposes of God)] of Scripture is a matter of one's own interpretation [*epilusis* (loosening, unloosing; interpretation)], for no prophecy was ever made by an act of human will [*thelema* (what one wishes or has determined shall be done)], but men moved [*phero* (to carry; to move by bearing)] by the Holy Spirit spoke [*laleo* – all Scripture is from the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] from God.

## EPHESIANS 3:3-5

That by revelation [*apokalupsis* (a disclosure of truth)] there was made known to me [Paul] the mystery [*musterion* – @@@ MYSTERY], as I wrote before in brief. By referring to this, when you read you can understand my insight into the mystery of Christ [Paul knew he was writing portions of the New Testament], which in other generations was not made known to the sons of men, as it has now been revealed to His holy apostles and prophets in [*by*] the Spirit [all of the @@@ BIBLE is inspired by the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT].

- (e) **Interpretation and Communication.** This is now provided to the Believer through the gift of the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER.
- (8) **The Trinity.** All members of the @@@ TRINITY think exactly alike in terms of the Bible. The phrase, “*Thus says the LORD*,” or its equivalent, appears over 2,000 times proving that the words are from God. Further, the slight changes to Old Testament passages in certain New Testament quotations simply mean that God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT intends for such alterations in order to record new truths, e.g., Amos 9:11 *cf.* Acts 15:16.
- (a) **Word of God.** The Bible is the unchangeable Word of God the Father [Heb. 4:12] and the “*Scripture cannot be broken*” [Jn. 10:35]. Jesus endorsed the entire Old Testament – Jn. 5:39-47; Lk. 24:25-27!

## HEBREWS 4:12

For the word of God [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] is living [*zao* (true life)] and active [*energes* (powerful)] and sharper than any two-edged [*distomos*] sword [*machaira* (short Roman sword)], and piercing as far as the division [*merismos* (separation)] of soul [*psuche*] and spirit [*pneuma* – the human spirit], of both joints and marrow, and able to judge [*kritikos*] the thoughts [*enthumesis*] and intentions [*ennoia*] of the heart [*kardia*].

## LUKE 24:25-27

And He [*Jesus*] said to them, “O foolish men and slow of heart to believe [*pisteuo*] in all that the prophets have spoken! Was it not necessary for the Christ to suffer these things and to enter into His glory?” Then beginning with Moses and with all the prophets, He explained [*dierneneuo* (to unfold the meaning)] to them the things concerning Himself in all the Scriptures.

- (b) **Mind of Christ.** The Bible is the very eternal mind of the LORD Jesus Christ – 1 Cor. 2:14-16; Rev. 19:11-16; Gal. 4:19.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 2:14-16

But a natural [*psuchikos* (soulish) – the unBeliever has a soul but no human spirit] man does not accept the things of the Spirit of God [the author of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], for they are foolishness to him; and he cannot understand them, because they are spiritually appraised. But he who is spiritual [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit) – the Believer has a human spirit] appraises all things, yet he himself is appraised by no one [the Law of Liberty]. For who has known the mind of the LORD [*kurios* (God) – the thinking of Jesus Christ is Bible Doctrine], that he [any given person] will instruct Him [God]? But we [Paul and his traveling seminary] have the mind of Christ [these @@@ PASTOR/TEACHERs were ready to teach it].

- (c) **Holy Spirit.** “*All Scripture is inspired by God*” [2 Tim. 3:16-17] – *theopneustos* (God-breathed). The words of the Bible constitute the very thoughts of God – “*the sword of the (Holy) Spirit, which is the word of God*” [Eph. 6:17]; 2 Pet. 1:20-21; 1 Cor. 2:11. Further, the Holy Spirit is responsible for making @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE available to any Believer that desires to learn them.



## 1 CORINTHIANS 2:11

For who among men knows the *thoughts* of a man [a Believer] except the spirit [*pneuma*] of the man which is in him [only the Believer has a human spirit]? Even so the *thoughts* of God no one knows except the Spirit of God [the Holy Spirit provides the thoughts of the @@@ TRINITY in the Bible].

- (9) **Corrupted Passages.** There are very few scriptural errors in the first widespread printed version of the English Bible – the King James Bible. By far and away, the largest and most insidious is Mk. 16:9-20. These verses are not in any of the oldest manuscripts of *Mark* and are not mentioned by the early Church fathers [the first and second century letters are so extensive with quotations from the New Testament that one could reconstruct a complete New Testament].
- (10) **Command to Learn.** The Bible is God’s **strict academic textbook**, not a “good” luck charm or novel. God **commands** the Believer to consistently **study** and **master** it in order to be “*conformed to the image of His Son*” [Rom. 8:29]. “*For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments and His commandments are not burdensome*” [1 Jn. 5:3]; Matt. 4:4; 1 Pet. 2:2; Heb. 5:12-14; 13:9; 1 Tim. 4:6; Jn. 4:14; 2 Pet. 3:17-18; 2 Tim. 2:15.

## 2 TIMOTHY 2:15

Be diligent [*spoudazo* (to exert one’s self) – study @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE as the number one priority] to present yourself approved to God as a workman [*ergates* (a laborer)] who does not need to be ashamed [*anepaischuntos* – at the Judgment Seat of Christ Believers are evaluated for @@@ REWARDS], accurately handling the word of truth [*aletheia* – the Believer applying Bible Doctrine to @@@ PROBLEMS in life].

- (11) **Defends the Believer.** The Bible is the Believer’s absolute defense against the influence of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS – Eph. 6:17.

## EPHESIANS 6:17

And take the helmet of salvation [*soterion* (he who embodies this salvation) – Jesus Christ provided @@@ SALVATION], and the sword [*machaira*] of the [Holy] Spirit, which is the word of God [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE].

- (12) **Power of God.** The Bible is the eternal “*power of God*” [2 Tim. 1:7-8] that reveals His glory and truth to mankind. This “*power*” is the Believer’s absolute @@@ AUTHORITY [Ps. 138:2] for his life and the only means to reach @@@ MATURITY. As the “*mind of Christ*,” the Bible existed in eternity past and will exist forever – Prov. 8; 1 Pet. 1:23-25; Isa. 40:8.

## ISAIAH 40:8

The grass withers, the flower fades, but the word of our God stands forever.

## 1 PETER 1:23-25

For you have been born again [*anagennao* – @@@ SALVATION by @@@ FAITH in Christ] not of seed which is perishable but imperishable [*aphthartos* (not liable to decay)], *that is*, through the living [*zao*] and enduring [*meno*] word [*logos*] of God [*theos*]. For, “All flesh [*sarx*] is like grass, and all its glory like the flower of grass. The grass withers, and the flower falls off, but the word of the LORD [*kurios* (God) – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] endures [*meno* (to remain)] forever [*aion* (eternity)].” And this is the word which was preached [*eugangelizo* (to bring good news)] to you.

- (13) **The Bible Explains.** The Bible extends to a great many things.
- (a) **The Unknown Past.** For example, God originally made the earth and “*did not create it a waste place*” [Isa. 45:18]. But at Satan’s 1st Fall and the start of the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT the earth was locked in an ice pack per Gen. 1:1-2; Rom. 8:20-22. During this unknown time there was no energy on the earth and no rational creature lived there. In Gen. 1:1-2, “*darkness was over the surface of the deep* (water).” In Gen. 1:3, “*light*” was the first form of energy used in the restoration of life. See @@@ WORLD; @@@ HOLY SPIRIT.
  - (b) **Ancient History.** Although the Bible is not a @@@ HISTORY book, all events described are absolutely accurate.
  - (c) **Divine Institutions.** Set out in the Bible for all humans to observe.
  - (d) **Gospel.** Providing the information for @@@ SALVATION to the unBeliever [Gal. 3:22].



## GALATIANS 3:22

But the Scripture [@@@ BIBLE] has shut up everyone under sin [*hamartia* – the Bible shows that man is a sinner and God is Perfect], so that the promise [*egaggelia*] by faith [@@@ SALVATION by @@@ FAITH] in Jesus Christ might be given to those who believe [*pisteuo* – saving faith].

- (e) **Maturity.** The means to reach @@@ MATURITY for the Believer.
  - (f) **Dictation of God's Direct Words** – “*Thus says the LORD.*”
  - (g) **Records Falsehoods.** As they were uttered, e.g., Satan's in Gen. 3:4.
  - (h) **Prophetic Passages.** For example, Gen. 3:15; Isa. 53; Ps. 22.
- (14) **Opposition Techniques.** Opposition techniques to the Bible come in a variety of forms and include: (1) name calling devices; (2) human viewpoint; (3) superiority of human morality; (4) @@@ RELIGION; (5) card stacking techniques, by mixing truth with error; (6) bandwagon approach, such as “all scholars agree”; and (7) so-called “new Divine revelations,” claiming extra-Biblical writings, teachings, or man-made traditions, as essential supplements to the Bible. See Rev. 22:18-19; Prov. 30:5-6; Col. 2:8; Mk. 7:6-9.

## PROVERBS 30:5-6

Every word of God is tested; He is a shield to those who take refuge in Him. Do not add to His words. Or He will reprove you, and you will be proved a liar.

## MARK 7:6-9

And He [Jesus] said to them [the Pharisees and religious scribes], “Rightly did Isaiah prophesy of you hypocrites, as it is written: ‘This people honors Me with their lips, but their heart is far away from Me. But in vain do they worship Me, teaching as [Bible] doctrines the precepts of men.’ Neglecting the commandment of God [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], you hold to the tradition of men.” He was also saying to them, “You are experts at setting aside the commandment of God in order to keep your tradition.”

## @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE

- (1) **Definition.** The highest virtue in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE is for the Believer to gain the full knowledge of all the dogmatically fixed categories of God's revealed truths in the @@@ BIBLE, termed "Bible Doctrine" – the "*mind of Christ*" [1 Cor. 2:16]; Jer. 9:23-24; Eph. 3:18. These truths fall into three broad categories:
  - (a) **Category I Truth** – The @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS. This category is designed for all mankind.
  - (b) **Category II Truth** – Gospel of @@@ SALVATION. Designed for the unBeliever.
  - (c) **Category III Truth** – All the remaining Bible Doctrine. Designed for the Believer.
- (2) **Exists Forever.** Bible Doctrine exists forever [Matt. 24:35] and its power reveals the only path to @@@ SALVATION – 1 Pet. 1:23-25; 1 Cor. 2:16.

### MATTHEW 24:35

Heaven [*ouranos*] and earth will pass away, but My words [*logos (the sayings of God)* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] will not pass away [*parerchomai*].

### 1 PETER 1:23-25

For you have been born again [*anagennao* – @@@ SALVATION by @@@ FAITH in Christ] not of seed which is perishable but imperishable [*aphthartos (not liable to decay)*], *that is*, through the living and enduring [*meno*] word [*logos*] of God [*theos*]. For, "All flesh [*sarx*] is like grass, and all its glory like the flower of grass. The grass withers, and the flower falls off, but the word [*logos*] of the LORD [*kurios (God)* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] endures [*meno (to remain)*] forever [*aion (eternity)*]." And this is the word which was preached [*eugangelizo (to bring good news)*] to you.

- (3) **Related to the Trinity.** Bible Doctrine relates to all three members of the @@@ TRINITY [Matt. 28:13]: (1) God the Father – Heb. 4:12; (2) God the Son – 1 Cor. 2:16; and (3) God the Holy Spirit – 2 Tim. 3:16; 2 Pet. 1:21.

- (4) **Command to Learn.** The Believer is **commanded** to learn the full realm of the various categories of Bible Doctrine so that he can receive @@@ **REWARDS** which glorify the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD** – Prov. 8:33; 23:12; 2 Tim. 2:15; Col. 1:10-11; Deut. 6:6-7; Matt. 4:4; Philp. 2:5; Jn. 8:31-32.

## PROVERBS 23:12

Apply your heart [*leb* (mind)] to discipline [set proper priorities in life to reach spiritual @@@ **MATURITY**] and your ears to words of knowledge [@@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**].

## 2 TIMOTHY 2:15

Be diligent [*spoudazo* (to hasten)] – the positive [+P] volition Believer studies @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** as his number one priority in @@@ **TIME**] to present [*paristemi* (to present, to show)] yourself approved [*dokimos* (acceptable)] to God as a workman [*ergates* (a laborer)] who does not need to be ashamed [*anepaischuntos* (having no cause to be ashamed)] – at the Judgment Seat of Christ only those Believers who reach some level of @@@ **MATURITY** will receive @@@ **REWARDS**], accurately handling [*orthotomeo* (to cut straight)] the word [*logos*] of truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration)] – the positive [+P] volition Believer applying Bible Doctrine to @@@ **PROBLEMS** in life].

## JOHN 8:31-32

So Jesus was saying to those Jews who had believed [*pisteuo*] Him, “If you continue in My word [the Believer who is on positive [+P] volition to learn @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**], then you are truly disciples of Mine; and you will know the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration)] – Bible Doctrine will produce @@@ **MATURITY**], and the truth will make you free [*eleutheroo* – from the thinking of the @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS** and human @@@ **GOOD**].”

## MATTHEW 4:4

But He [**Jesus**] answered and said, “It is written, ‘Man shall not live on bread alone, but on every word [*rhema* – @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**] that proceeds [*ekporeuomai* (to go forth)] out of the mouth [*stoma*] of God.’”

## DEUTERONOMY 6:6-7

These words [*dabar* (words) – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], which I am commanding you today, shall be on your heart [*leb* (mind)]. You shall teach them diligently to your sons and shall talk of them when you sit in your house and when you walk by the way and when you lie down and when you rise up.

## PROVERBS 8:33

Heed instruction [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] and be wise [reach @@@ MATURITY], and do not neglect *it*.

## PHILIPPIANS 2:5

Have this [mental] attitude [*phroneo* (to have understanding; wisdom) – the positive [+P] volition Believer is commanded to think @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] in yourselves which was also in Christ Jesus.

- (5) **Pastor/Teacher.** The spiritual gift of @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER is given to certain undeserving Believer males to consistently communicate Bible Doctrine in a local Church over the course of time so that the positive [+P] volition **Winner** Believer can grow to @@@ MATURITY. He must never force the volition or violate the @@@ PRIVACY of the hearer in his communication of the Word – Prov. 8:34; 1 Tim. 4:16; Isa. 28:10; Eccl. 12:9.

## 1 TIMOTHY 4:16

Pay close attention to yourself [@@@ PASTOR/TEACHER Timothy's personal spiritual growth] and to your teaching [*didaskalia* (that which is taught) – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]; persevere [*epimeno* (to stay at or with)] in these things, for as you do this you will ensure salvation [*sozo* (to deliver) – deliver the baby Believer to @@@ MATURITY] both for yourself and for those who hear [*akouo*] you [Timothy will also grow].

## ECCLESIASTES 12:9

In addition to being a wise man, the Preacher [Solomon] also taught the people knowledge [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]; and he pondered, searched out and arranged many proverbs.

## PROVERBS 8:34

Blessed is the man [the positive [+P] volition Believer desiring knowledge of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] who listens [*shama*] to me [Bible Doctrine], watching [*shaqad* (to watch; be alert)] daily [*yom* – thousands of decisions are required to stay consistent] at my gates [*deleth* (a door; gate)], waiting at my doorposts [*mezuzah* (doorpost; gatepost) – public @@@ BIBLE classes were held at the city gates].

## ISAIAH 28:10 (KJV)

For precept [*tsav*] must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line [*qav* (measuring line)] upon line, line upon line; here [*sham*] a little, and there [*sham*] a little [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE builds on itself].

- (6) **Born Again Baby.** All new Believers begin the Christian life as born again babies, totally ignorant of even the basics of Bible Doctrine – 1 Pet. 2:2; 1 Cor. 3:1-2. Accordingly, all Believers must learn Bible Doctrine from their @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER – from the basics to the advanced concepts – so that they can gradually grow to spiritual @@@ MATURITY and apply the Bible Doctrine they retain to @@@ PROBLEMS and testings. See Heb. 5:11-14; 6:12; Deut. 6:6-9; 2 Pet. 2:1-5; 3:17-18; Ps. 19:7-9; Js. 1:2-4.

## 1 PETER 2:2

Like newborn babies [*brephos*], long for the pure milk [*gala*] of the word [*logikos* (spoken word) – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], so that by it you may grow [*auxano*] in respect to [learning about] salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – deliver the positive [+P] volition Believer from the state of a baby Believer to the state of spiritual @@@ MATURITY].

## 2 PETER 3:18

But grow [*auxano* (to cause to grow) – the positive [+P] volition Believer must reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY] in the grace [*charis* – @@@ GRACE] and [*grow in the*] knowledge [*gnosis* (the deeper more perfect and enlarged knowledge) – understanding the full realm of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] of our LORD and Savior Jesus Christ. To Him be the glory [*doxa*], both now and to the day of eternity. Amen.

## HEBREWS 5:13-14

For everyone who partakes *only* of milk [basic @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] is not accustomed [*aperios* (inexperienced in)] to the word of righteousness [*dikaiosune* – the negative [-N] volition Believer cannot metabolize advanced Bible Doctrine], for he is an infant [*nepios* (little child; infant)]. But solid food is for the mature [*teleios* (mature; brought to its end) – the positive [+P] volition Believer moving towards maturity], who because of practice [*hexis* (a habit whether of body or mind)] have their senses [*aistheterion* (faculty of the mind for perceiving)] trained [*gumnazo* (to exercise vigorously) – the positive [+P] volition Believer's self-discipline to make Bible Doctrine the number one priority in @@@ TIME] to discern [*diakrisis* (judging)] good [*kaloss* (precious; excellent) – Divine Good] and evil [*kakos* (wicked) – of human @@@ GOOD].

## 1 CORINTHIANS 3:1-2

And I [Paul], brethren, could not speak [*laleo*] to you as to spiritual men [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit) – Believers at some level of @@@ MATURITY], but as to men of flesh [*sarkinos* – under the influence of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE the negative [-N] volition Believer acts like the unBeliever], as to infants [*nepios* (an infant) – baby Believers] in Christ. I gave you milk [*gala*] to drink, not solid food [Paul could not give the Loser Believers advanced @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]; for you were not yet able to receive it. Indeed, even now you are not yet able.

- (7) **Faithfulness to Bible Doctrine.** The key to the Winner Believer attaining @@@ MATURITY is faithfulness in the daily intake and study of Bible Doctrine – Matt. 25:21; Eph. 1:1; Heb. 10:36; 1 Tim. 4:8. God reveals Bible Doctrine to the positive [+P] Believer [Phil. 3:15; 1 Chron. 28:9; Matt. 7:7; Prov. 8:17; Ps. 119:97; Jer. 15:16], but the effort and work to reach maturity is progressive over time – “*for this we labor and strive*” [1 Tim. 4:10].

## JEREMIAH 15:16

Your words [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE is the mind of Christ] were found and I ate [*akal* (to eat; devour) – the teachable positive [+P] volition Believer] them, and your words became for me a joy and the delight of my heart [*lebab* (inner man; soul)]; for I have been called by Your name, O LORD God of hosts.



## PSALM 119:97

O how I [the positive [+P] volition Believer] love [*ahab*] Your law [*torah* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]! It is my meditation [*wiychah*] all the day.

## PROVERBS 8:17

I [God] love [*ahab*] those who love me [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]; and those who diligently seek [*shachar* (to look earnestly for) – positive [+P] volition] me will find me.”

- (8) **Categories Retained.** Through the workings of @@@ OPERATION Z the Holy Spirit ensures that Bible Doctrine is stored in the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT of the Believer in fixed *categories*. These categories constitute the building blocks for the construction of the @@@ EDIFICATION COMPLEX OF THE SOUL and are the primary source for producing Divine @@@ GOOD. See Heb. 6:1-3; Gal. 3:26-28; Col. 1:27-28; Eph. 1:4-5, 11; 3:18-19; 2 Tim. 1:13; 2:15; 3:16-17; 1 Tim. 4:16; Rom. 12:2; 1 Pet. 3:15; Prov. 8:33; 23:12; 24:3; 2 Pet. 1:1-4; 1 Chron. 28:9; Ps. 90:12; 119:97; Jn. 8:31-31; Lk. 8:25; @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.

## HEBREWS 6:1-3

Therefore leaving [*aphiemi* (to send forth)] the elementary [*arche* (beginning; origin)] teaching [*logos* (what is declared) – the basic categories of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] about [1] the Christ [*christos* (the anointed one) – the person and work of Jesus Christ in @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION], let us press on to maturity [*teleiotes* (the state of the more intelligent) – the positive [+P] volition Believer’s goal is to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY], not laying again [*palin*] a foundation [*themelios*] of [2] repentance [*metanoia* (a change of mind)] from dead [*nekros*] works [*ergon* – the change of mind about the false claim of @@@ SALVATION by human works of @@@ RELIGION] and [3] of faith [*pistis* – @@@ FAITH/Rest] toward God, [4] of instruction about washings and laying on of hands [@@@ REBOUND], and [5] the resurrection [*anastasis* – the @@@ RESURRECTION] of the dead [*nekros* (physical death)] and [6] eternal [*aionios* (without beginning and without end)] judgment [*krima* – the Great White Throne @@@ JUDGMENT for the unBeliever and fallen @@@ ANGELS]. And [*kai*] this we will do [*poieo*], if God permits [*epitrepo* (to allow to happen)].



## 2 TIMOTHY 3:16-17

All Scripture [*graphe*] is inspired by God [*theopneustos* (God-breathed) – the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT and @@@ OPERATION Z] and profitable [*ophelimos* (to make a profit)] for teaching [*didaskalia* – the prepared @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER teaches from the @@@ BIBLE], for reproof [*elegchos* (a proof; evidence)], for correction [*epanorthosis* (restoration to an upright state)], for training [*paideia* (the whole education of children)] in righteousness [*dikaiosune* – learning the @@@ PLAN OF GOD]; so that the man of God [positive [+P] volition Believer] may be adequate [*artios* (fitted) – reach @@@ MATURITY], equipped [*exartizo* (to furnish perfectly)] for every good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] work [*ergon*].

## EPHESIANS 3:18-19

[The Believer] May be able to comprehend [*katalambano* (to lay hold of)] with all the saints [*hagios* (set apart ones) – every other Believer in @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST] what is the breadth and length and height and depth [the full realm of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], and to know [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] the love of Christ [the Believer cannot @@@ LOVE what he does not know] which surpasses [*hyperballo*] knowledge [*gnosis* – this is *epignosis*], that you may be filled up [*pleroo*] to all the fullness [*pleroma*] of God [positive [+P] volition Believer is able to reach @@@ MATURITY].

- (9) **Suffering for Blessing.** God provides and directs “*testing*” [Js. 1:3] or Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing to assist the Believer in his spiritual growth. See 1 Tim. 2:4; Ps. 119:11, 15-16; Heb. 6:10; 10: 35-36; 1 Cor. 9:24; 10:13; Prov. 3:1-2; 7:1-4; Phil. 3:12-16; 4:11; 2 Tim. 2:2; Col. 2:7.

## HEBREWS 10:35-36

Therefore, do not throw away [*apoballo* (to cast away as worthless)] your confidence [confidence in @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], which has a great reward [*misthapodosia* (payment of wages due) – @@@ MATURITY results in fantastic eternal @@@ REWARDS]. For you [positive [+P] volition Believer] have need of endurance [*hupomneo* (steadfastness) – Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing accelerates spiritual growth], so that when you have done the will of God, you may receive [*kolumbano* (to carry away, bear off)] what was promised [rewards at the Judgment Seat of Christ].

- (10) **Seeing the Divine Viewpoint.** To develop the capacity to actually @@@ LOVE God the Believer must learn the Divine viewpoint in all the categories of Doctrine for “*without faith it is impossible to please Him*” [Heb. 11:6]; Ps. 119:130; Isa. 55:7-9. For example, while Peter was an eyewitness to the transfiguration of Jesus, the “*prophetic word*” of Bible Doctrine was “*more sure*” [2 Pet. 1:16-21] to him than what he had seen. In short, Bible Doctrine allows the Believer to actually *see* God, to “*look ... at the things which are not seen*” [2 Cor. 4:18] and to then “*walk by faith, not by sight*” [2 Cor. 5:7]. Again, per *supra* (7), the process of learning Bible Doctrine is progressive and requires daily choices to study the Word. While salvation requires only one good decision, reaching @@@ MATURITY requires thousands of positive [+P] volition decisions by the Believer – “*prepare your minds for action*” [1 Pet. 1:13]; Matt. 22:29; Jn. 13:17; 14:23; Jer. 15:16; Ps. 119:165.

### JOHN 14:23

Jesus answered and said to him, “If anyone loves [*agapao* (to love dearly)] Me, he will keep My word [*logos* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]; and My Father will love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] him, and We will come to him and make Our abode [*mone* (a dwelling place) – Fellowship with the Believer] with him [Believer’s @@@ REWARDS in @@@ TIME and eternity].”

### JOHN 13:17

If you [Believer] know these things [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], you are blessed if you do [*poieo* – apply @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] them.

### MATTHEW 22:29

But Jesus answered and said to them, “You are mistaken [*plano* (to be led to error; wrong)], not understanding the Scriptures [*graphe* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] nor the power [*dunamis* (inherent power)] of God.”

- (11) **Results of Bible Doctrine.** Knowledge of Bible Doctrine leads to spiritual adulthood and is the basis for temporal and eternal @@@ REWARDS.
- (a) **Confidence.** Bible Doctrine gives the Believer confidence to face the exigencies of life by using “*the sword of the (Holy) Spirit, which is the word of God*” [Eph. 6:17]; 2 Cor. 4:7-8; Heb. 10:35-36; Ps. 119:11.

- (b) **Divine Viewpoint.** Bible Doctrine allows the Believer to reflect the Divine viewpoint in the Devil's @@@ WORLD with a relaxed mental attitude. *See* Js. 1:8; Ps. 119:165; Isa. 55:7-8; 2 Cor. 10:5; 1 Cor. 2:5.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 2:5

So that your faith [*pistis* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] would not rest on the wisdom of men [*human viewpoint*], but on the power [*dudamis*] of God.

## PSALM 119:165

Those who love [*Believer at spiritual @@@ MATURITY*] Your law [*@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE*] have great peace, and nothing causes them to stumble.

- (c) **Divine Good.** Bible Doctrine allows for the production of Divine @@@ GOOD and @@@ WITNESSING – Isa. 26:3-4; 1 Pet. 3:15.

## 1 PETER 3:15

But sanctify Christ as LORD in your hearts [*@@@ SOUL & SPIRIT*], always *being* ready [*hetoimos (prepare ready)*] to make a defense [*agologia (verbal defense)*] to everyone who asks you to give an account for the hope [*elpis (confident expectation)*] – the particular @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE that is in you, yet with gentleness [*prautes (mildness of disposition)*] – use the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES and reverence [*phobos (respect)*].

- (d) **Guidance.** Provides @@@ DIVINE GUIDANCE – Rom. 12:2-3.
- (e) **Rewards.** Bible Doctrine leads to @@@ REWARDS now and in eternity and the Winner Believer glorifies God as a subject matter expert witness exhibit in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT – Heb. 10:35-36; 11:9-10, 13; Js. 1:25; *cf.* Js. 2:12-13; 1 Tim. 4:8.

## 1 TIMOTHY 4:8

For bodily discipline is only of little profit, but godliness [*eusebeia* – the Winner Believer that attains @@@ MATURITY] is profitable for all things, since it holds promise for the present life [*temporal blessings to the Believer*] and also for the life to come [*eternal blessings to the Believer*].

- (f) **Occupation with Christ.** Leads to occupation with Christ and the ability to @@@ LOVE God – Phil. 3:10; Eph. 3:19; Heb. 12:2-3.
- (g) **Blunts Sin.** Doctrine blunts the power of @@@ SIN – Ps. 119:11.
- (12) **Avoid Reversionism.** The positive [+P] volition Believer avoids falling into the traps of @@@ REVERSIONISM – Phil. 2:3-14; Gal. 1:6-9; Prov. 8:36. So-called Christian “service” concepts, emotional activity, and morality are not the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.

### GALATIANS 1:6-8

I [Paul] am amazed that you [Believers in Galatia] are so quickly deserting Him [ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] who called you by the grace of Christ, for a different gospel; which is *really* not another; only there are some who are disturbing [*tarasso* (to cause commotion; to agitate)] you and want to distort [false teachers of @@@ RELIGION] the gospel of Christ [@@@ SALVATION by @@@ GRACE]. But even if we [Paul and his traveling seminary team], or an angel from heaven, should preach to you a gospel contrary to what we have preached to you, he is to be accursed [*anathema* (a person or thing doomed to destruction) – the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH]!

### PROVERBS 8:36

But he who sins against me [rejection of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] injures himself; all those who hate me love death [*maveth* (death by violence) – the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH].

- (13) **Synonyms for Bible Doctrine.** The @@@ BIBLE employs many teaching tools and phrases regarding the importance of Bible Doctrine.
  - (a) **Redeem the @@@ TIME** – Eph. 5:16-18; Col. 4:5.
  - (b) **Construct an Altar in the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT** – Heb. 13:10.
  - (c) **Take Up the @@@ CROSS.** To follow Christ – Matt. 10:38-40; Mk. 8:34; Lk. 9:23; 14:27. The Believer will receive undeserved Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing when he stands for God’s truth in the Devil’s @@@ WORLD. This accelerates his spiritual growth.

## MATTHEW 10:38-40

And he [the Believer] who does not take his cross [*stauros* – Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing] and follow after Me [Jesus Christ] is not worthy of Me. He who has found his life [*psuche* (soul) – Believer saved by @@@ GRACE] will lose [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely)] it [the Believer rejects the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], and he who has lost his life [the Believer positive [+P] to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE rejects the Cosmic Systems] for My sake will find it [@@@ REWARDS bestowed].

- (d) **Build an @@@ EDIFICATION COMPLEX OF THE SOUL.**
  - (e) **Greater Grace.** The “*greater grace*” [Js. 4:6]; Acts 4:33; Rom. 5:17.
  - (f) **Military Terms.** To “*keep standing firm*” [Gal. 5:1]; Eph. 6:11, 13.
  - (g) **Other Terminology.** Such as *chakmah* (wisdom); *epignosis* (full knowledge); *sunesis*; and *alethea* (truth). See @@@ WORDS.
  - (h) **Salt.** The Word of God is the preservative @@@ SALT that Believers must become. See Matt. 5:13; Mk. 9:15; Lk. 14:34; Col. 4:6.
  - (i) **Outside.** Living “*outside the camp*” [Heb. 13:13] of the @@@ WORLD. Legalism hates the truth and the Believer understands that he will generally be rejected by society. See @@@ SEPARATION.
- (14) **Bottom Line.** The primary issue in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE is growth to @@@ MATURITY. Thus, the battle for control of the Believer’s soul is constantly between the temptation of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE vs. the Filling of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT for daily spiritual growth. Inevitably, without a steady concentration on Bible Doctrine the Believer will be sucked into the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS – 2 Cor. 11:3.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 11:3

But I [Paul] am afraid that, as the serpent [Satan] deceived Eve by his craftiness [*panourgia* (a specious or false wisdom) – human @@@ GOOD], your minds will be led astray from the simplicity [*haplotes* (mental honesty)] and purity [*hagnotes* (uprightness of lifestyle)] of devotion to Christ.

- (15) **Accomplish the Plan of God.** Bible Doctrine will accomplish its goals in every precise and exact manner as ordained by God – Isa. 55:11. There are no mistakes in the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD** who in eternity past decreed that all the things that would come into existence would come into existence. See @@@ **TRINITY**; @@@ **ANGELIC CONFLICT**.

### ISAIAH 55:11

So will My word [*dabar* – @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**] be which goes forth [*yatsa* (to proceed forth)] from My mouth; it will not return [*shub* (to turn back)] to Me empty [*reyqam* (in an empty condition)], without accomplishing what I desire [*chaphets* (to delight in) – the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD**], and without succeeding [*tsalach* (to advance; to prosper)] *in the matter* for which I sent it.

- (16) **Not for Sale.** Never make @@@ **MONEY** an issue in the presentation of the Gospel or Bible Doctrine – “*men of depraved mind and deprived of the truth, who suppose that godliness is a means of gain*” [1 Tim. 6:3-10]. Pastor/Teachers do their job for the LORD, “*not for sordid gain*” [1 Pet. 5:2; Mic. 3:11-12; Prov. 23:23; 1 Pet. 5:2; Matt. 6:24; 2 Cor. 11:7-8].

### MICAH 3:11

Her leaders pronounce judgment for a bribe, her priests instruct [*yarah* (to teach)] for a price [*mechiyr* (payment)] and her prophets divine for money [*keseeph* (silver coins) – charging @@@ **MONEY**]. Yet they lean on the LORD saying, “Is not the LORD in our midst? Calamity [*ra* (evil)] will not come upon us.”

- (17) **Jesus’ Last Words.** The last words of the LORD Jesus Christ from the @@@ **CROSS** were about the primacy of Bible Doctrine – Ps. 31:5; cf. Lk. 23:46.

### PSALM 31:5

Into Your [**God the Father**] hand I [**Jesus Christ**] commit [*paqad* (to look after)] my spirit [*ruach* – His human spirit]; You have ransomed [*padah* (to rescue; redeem; ransom) – @@@ **SOTERIOLOGY**] me, O LORD, God of truth [*emeth* (truth; faithfulness) – @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**].

---



## @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST

- (1) **Definition.** The Blood of Christ is a figurative concept to denote the work of Jesus Christ on the @@@ CROSS. It draws from the bloody sacrifices of the Old Testament used to anticipate the Messiah's spiritual @@@ DEATH.
- (2) **Blood.** The primary words for blood are *aima* [Greek] and *dam* [Hebrew]. Blood is the seat of animal life, "*the life of the flesh (animal) is in the blood*" [Lev. 17:11]; they lack eternal souls. Man's "human life" is in the soul – Gen. 2:7; Job 33:4. See @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT; @@@ LIFE.
- (3) **Eating Blood.** In the Old Testament eating animal blood represented @@@ SALVATION by works and was prohibited – Lev. 17:10-11; Gen. 9:3-4. However, eating cooked flesh [Passover lamb] represented the Believer's recognition in the saving work of the Messiah by @@@ FAITH in the LORD.

## GENESIS 9:3-4

Every moving thing that is alive [*animals*] shall be food for you; I [*God*] give all to you, as *I gave* the green plant. Only you shall not eat flesh with its life, *that is*, its blood [*dam – the animal must be cooked before eating*].

- (4) **Representative Analogy.** Under the @@@ MOSAIC LAW the sacrificial animal killed by the Levitical priests represented the person and work of the coming promised Messiah. "*Behold the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world*" [Jn. 1:29, 36]. Accordingly, the sacrificial animal must be:
  - (a) **Innocent.** Not wronged mankind; not a wild animal. Jesus Christ was the innocent lamb and came to provide eternal life in @@@ HEAVEN.
  - (b) **No Defects.** Was without any spot or blemish – Deut. 17:1. Born with no @@@ OLD SIN NATURE and having committed no personal sin, Jesus was Perfect in His humanity – @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION.

## DEUTERONOMY 17:1

You shall not sacrifice to the LORD your God an ox or a sheep which has a blemish *or* any defect [*Perfect humanity of Christ*], for that is a detestable thing [*a Perfect human must pay for all @@@ SIN*] to the LORD your God.



- (5) **Bloody Levitical Offerings.** The many Old Testament Levitical offerings and rituals [Lev. 1 – 7] were saturated with the blood of innocent animals. The throat cut, the animal died a violent and gory @@@ DEATH and the life in the animal's blood was literally drained out during the ceremony. These animals were slaughtered to teach about @@@ SOTERIOLOGY and the awful required payment Jesus Christ would pay in full for human @@@ SIN. In turn, rituals that used the sprinkling of blood constituted another @@@ SALVATION analogy of Christ's substitutionary spiritual death – Heb. 9:19-25; Ps. 22:1; Isa. 53:9. *See* Levitical Offerings, @@@ MOSAIC LAW.
- (a) **The Burnt Offering.** Represented the work of Jesus Christ on the @@@ CROSS. The emphasis was on expiation and propitiation. The specific type of animal offered for sacrifice depended on the economic status of the Believer. *See* @@@ SOTERIOLOGY
  - (b) **The Food Offering.** Represented the Perfect person of Jesus Christ, qualified to die for @@@ SIN. No blood used in the ceremony.
  - (c) **The Peace Offering.** Represented the reconciliation between Perfect God and imperfect man made possible by the work of Jesus Christ.
  - (d) **The Sin Offering.** Represented the use of @@@ REBOUND for all unknown sins of the Believer.
  - (e) **The Trespass Offering.** Represented the use of @@@ REBOUND for known sins of the Believer – Heb. 9:6-7; 13-14.

### HEBREWS 9:13-14

For if the blood [*aima*] of goats and bulls and the ashes of a heifer sprinkling those who have been defiled sanctify for the cleaning of the flesh [*sarx*], how much more will the blood [*aima*] of Christ, who through [*dia* (with; by means of)] the eternal [*aionios* (without beginning and end)] [*Holy*] Spirit offered [*prosphero* (to bring a present or a thing)] Himself without blemish [*amomos* (morally without fault)] – as a perfect human Jesus Christ was qualified to go to the @@@ CROSS] to God, cleanse your conscience [*suneidesis*] from dead [*nekros*] works [*ergon* – the lie of human @@@ GOOD and @@@ RELIGION] to serve [*latreuo*] the living God [by learning and applying @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]?

- (6) **Did Not Bleed to Death.** Jesus Christ did not die physically on the @@@ CROSS by bleeding to @@@ DEATH – Lk. 23:46; Matt. 27:50; Jn. 10:18; 19:30-34. If the blood of Jesus Christ were a real analogy to the animal sacrifices of the Old Testament then it would be a case of a literal bleeding to death of the animal for a literal bleeding to death of Jesus Christ. However, Jesus was obviously quite lucid at the point of His physical death and He certainly did not die by loss of blood. In fact, Jesus Christ voluntarily dismissed His @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT once His mission of @@@ SIN bearing was accomplished and He then immediately died physically.
- (a) **Leaned Forward.** After suffering the judgment of all @@@ SIN on the @@@ CROSS, Jesus leaned His body forward so blood in the head drained into the right and left ventricles of the heart. His diaphragm cut off the blood from going into the abdomen. Jesus Christ then dismissed His @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT. See Jn. 19:28-30.

### JOHN 19:30

Therefore when Jesus had received [*lambano* (to take)] the sour wine [*oxos*], He said, “It is finished [*teleo* (to complete; mission accomplished) – during the past three hours Jesus Christ had suffered spiritual @@@ DEATH for the @@@ SIN of all humans]!” And He bowed [*klino* (to incline)] His head and gave up His [human] spirit [*pneuma* – His human spirit went to Heaven, His body to the grave, and His soul to Paradise in @@@ HELL].

- (b) **Roman Spear.** Blood clots and serum came out of the body when the Roman soldier thrust his long spear into Jesus’ *pleura* (chest) to determine physical @@@ DEATH. It is recorded that there was no pumping of blood in His body which indicates absolute proof that a sudden physical death had already occurred without the loss of blood – a clear serum poured out from the spear stabbing. See Jn. 19:31-37.
- (c) **Blood in Body.** Thus, since Jesus’ blood was still in His body after physical death, He did not bleed to death. Again, His physical death was accomplished by His own volition and not caused by bleeding to death – Jn. 10:18; Lk. 23:46; Matt. 27:50. Accordingly, no human being “killed” Jesus Christ, although the Jewish leadership certainly plotted and wanted to murder Him and the Roman governor wrongfully authorized His death after finding Jesus not guilty under Roman law.

- (7) **Soteriology.** The doctrine of the Blood of Christ portrays the various aspects of @@@ SOTERIOLOGY. For example: (1) Expiation – Rev. 1:5; 7:14 [“*washed ... in the blood*”]; (2) Propitiation – Rom. 3:2-26; Heb. 13:20 [Christ paid the full price]; and (3) Redemption and Reconciliation [the Believer is bought with a price] – 1 Pet. 1:18-19; Col. 1:14, 19-22; Rom. 5:8-11; Rev. 5:9.

### COLOSSIANS 1:20

And through [*dia* (by means of)] Him [Jesus Christ] to reconcile [*apokatallasso* (to bring back a former state of harmony) – the barrier between God and man is removed under @@@ SOTERIOLOGY] all things to Himself, having made peace [*eirenopoieo* – between Perfect God and imperfect man] through [*dia* (by means of)] the blood [*amia* – the @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST] of His cross [*stauros* – @@@ CROSS]; through Him, *I say*, whether things on earth [*ge*] or things in heaven [*ouranos* – @@@ HEAVEN] is currently open to both saved and fallen @@@ ANGELS].

### REVELATION 5:9

And they [@@@ ANGELS] sang a new song, saying, “Worthy are You [Jesus Christ] to take the book and to break its seals; for You were slain [*sphazo* (to put to death by violence) – Christ died to provide @@@ SALVATION], and purchased [*agorazo* (to do business in the market place) – under @@@ SOTERIOLOGY God is satisfied with the work of Christ on the @@@ CROSS] for God with Your blood [*aima* – @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST] *men* [Believers] from every tribe [*phule* (Jewish tribes)] and tongue [*glossa* (language)] and people [*laos* (a group of people)] and nation.”

### 1 PETER 1:18-19

Knowing that you were not redeemed [*lutroo* (to release on receipt of a ransom)] with perishable things like silver or gold from your futile [*mataios* (empty; devoid of force)] way of life [*anastrophe* – the evil of @@@ RELIGION cannot provide @@@ SALVATION] inherited from your forefathers, but with precious blood [*amia* – @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST] via substitutionary spiritual @@@ DEATH], as of a lamb unblemished [*amomos* (faultless)] and spotless [*aspilos* – Jesus was Perfect in His humanity and thus qualified to go to the @@@ CROSS], *the blood* of Christ.

- (8) **Jewish Passover Fulfilled.** The Old Testament Jewish ritual of the Passover which taught @@@ SALVATION was fulfilled at the @@@ CROSS. Now the Church Age Believer observes the LORD's Supper which is a ritual to see if the Believer can concentrate on the person and work of the LORD Jesus Christ – Matt. 26:26-28; 1 Cor. 5:7; 11:23-26.
- (9) **Fellowship in Time.** The blood of Jesus Christ is the basis for the @@@ REBOUND technique – 1 Jn. 1:7, 9; Col. 2:14-15; Lev. 4, 5.

### 1 JOHN 1:7

But if [Third Class Condition – maybe the Believer will or maybe he won't] we walk [*peripateo* – @@@ WALKING] in the Light [*phos*] as He Himself is in the Light [the @@@ TRINITY is Perfect], we have fellowship [*koinonia*] with one another, and the blood [*aima* – the @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST paid for our @@@ SIN] of Jesus His Son cleanses [*katharizo*] us from all sin [*hamartia* – @@@ REBOUND is possible because of the work of Christ on the @@@ CROSS].

- (10) **Christ Died Twice.** Jesus Christ died twice on the @@@ CROSS: *thanatos* (spiritual death) and *nekros* (physical death). See Isa. 53:9, where the word *maveth* (death), cf. Ezk. 28:10, is in the plural. See also Heb. 9:17; 1 Pet. 2:10; 2 Cor. 5:21; Rom. 8:11. Thus, the Believer will now only die once at his physical @@@ DEATH [unless he is taken up alive to get his @@@ RESURRECTION body at the @@@ RAPTURE].
- (11) **Mystery Doctrine.** The blood of Christ is related to the @@@ MYSTERY of the Church Age in terms of the new covenant of @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST for the Royal Family of God – 1 Cor. 11:15, 25.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 11:25

In the same way He [*Jesus*] took the cup [*poterion* – @@@ CUP] also after supper, saying, "This cup is the new covenant [*diatheke* (a compact) – the Church Age @@@ MYSTERY of @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST] in My blood [*aima* – the @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST]; do this, as often as you drink it, in remembrance [*anamnesis* (recollection) – @@@ MEMORY] of Me."

## @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE

- (1) **Definition.** The Christian Way of Life [CWL] refers to all the things that God has provided for the Believer to conduct himself in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT with the ultimate goal, through God's Predestination and Election input, of the positive [+P] volition **Winner** Believer going from a spiritual baby at the point of @@@ SALVATION to a spiritual adult at @@@ MATURITY. See Rom. 8:28-30; Ps. 16:3.

### JEREMIAH 29:11-13

“For I know the plans that I have for you [**Believers**],” declares the LORD, “plans for welfare [**God's Directive Will is to advance the Believer to @@@ MATURITY**] and not for calamity to give you a future and a hope [**@@@ REWARDS**]. Then you will call upon Me and come and pray to Me, and I will listen to you. You will seek Me and find *Me* when you search for Me with all your heart [**the positive [+P] volition Believer**].”

### PSALM 16:3

As for the saints [**Believers**] who are on the earth, they are the majestic ones [**emphasis on those reaching @@@ MATURITY**] in whom is all my delight.

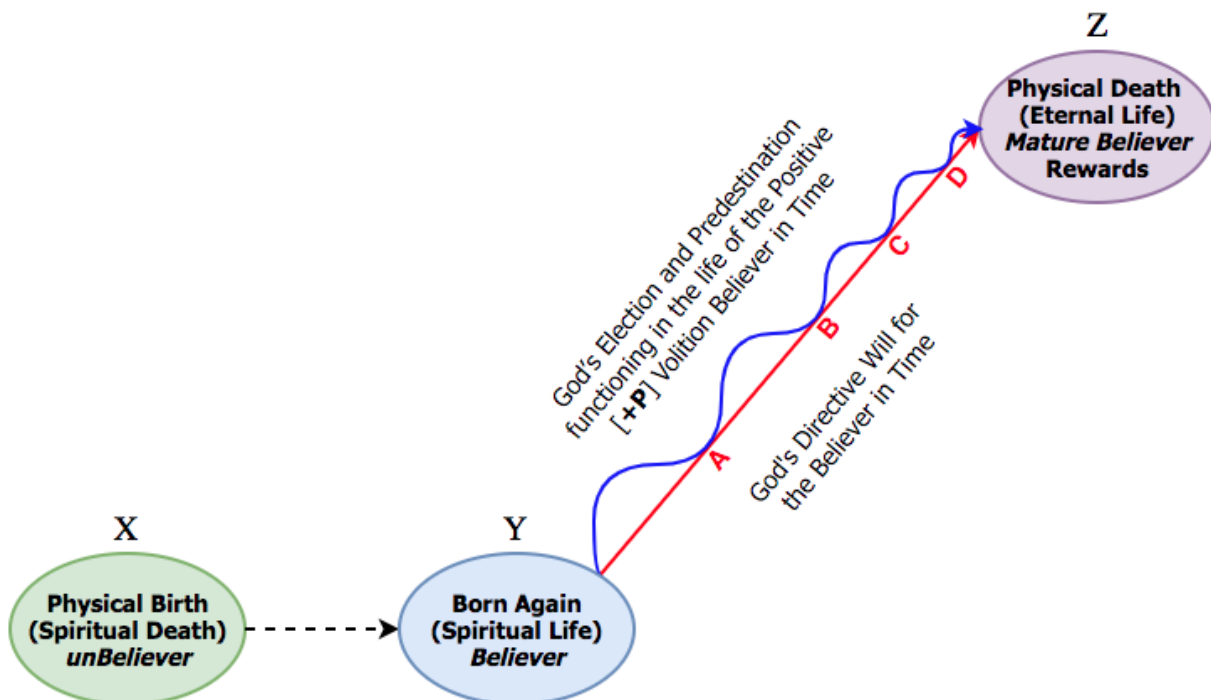
- (2) **New Creature.** At the very moment of @@@ SALVATION the Christian is a “***new creature*** – *kainos* (new in species)” [2 Cor. 5:17]; Eph. 2:10; Gal. 5:15. See @@@ NEW SPECIES; @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST.

### 2 CORINTHIANS 5:17

Therefore if anyone is in Christ, *he is* a new creature; the old things [**the power of the Old Sin Nature and death**] passed away; behold, new things have come.

- (3) **New Environment.** The “***new creature***” of the Church Age requires a new environment. Living inside of the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE with the Filling of the Holy Spirit constitutes this new supernatural environment, completely dependent on the @@@ GRACE provisions of God minus any human @@@ GOOD. While the New Testament reveals this @@@ MYSTERY doctrine, the Old Testament was “***written for our instruction***” [1 Cor. 10:11-13] and also has great value to the Church Age Believer.

- (4) **God's Directive Will.** Per the diagram below, God's Directive Will for the Believer is to reach spiritual adulthood or @@@ MATURITY [represented by the **RED** straight 45% upward line] which was chartered out by God in eternity past. However, since the Believer still possesses an @@@ OLD SIN NATURE and commits personal @@@ SIN and human @@@ GOOD throughout his life, it is absolutely impossible for him to travel along the straight Directive Will of God **RED** line. Only Jesus Christ in His humanity stayed completely on God's **RED** line for His entire life. Thus, in eternity past, knowing every failure of the Believer, God's Predestination and Election worked together for the absolute good of the positive [+P] volition Believer to nevertheless advance him to spiritual maturity. Accordingly, the wavy **BLUE** line represents the *actual* life path of the **Winner** Believer reaching and intersecting God's **RED** line at various progressive growth points in his life, from **A** to **D** on the diagram. In stark contrast, the negative [-N] volition Believer will aimlessly drift about in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS all his life and not advance in spiritual growth. The **Loser** Believer cannot lose his @@@ SALVATION, but he will receive little, if any, @@@ REWARDS at the @@@ JUDGMENT Seat of Christ. See Rom. 8:28-30.



– Tracking the Positive [+P] Volition **Winner** Believer –



- (5) **Supernatural Way of Life.** The CWL centers on the Believer's *spirituality*, a supernatural phenomenon that is only available to the Believer. CWL spirituality has an *absolute* as well as a *relative* meaning. The *absolute* side of spirituality is achieved by @@@ **REBOUND** which instantly "Fills" and places the Believer into Fellowship with the @@@ **HOLY SPIRIT**. The *relative* side of spirituality refers to the Believer's steady spiritual growth to @@@ **MATURITY** – Col. 3:17, 23-24; Heb. 6:1-3; 1 Pet. 1:14-16; Rom. 8:6; 13:1-10. Note: Spiritual growth is far beyond the requirement for the Christian to be a moral and law-abiding citizen.
- (a) **Spirituality.** Spirituality [*absolute* and *relative*] accomplishes five objectives: (1) partnership with God – 2 Pet. 1:4; (2) imitation of God – Eph. 5:1; Matt. 5:48; (3) glorification of Jesus Christ – Jn. 7:39; 16:14; 1 Cor. 6:19-20; Col. 3:4; (4) true fulfillment of the @@@ **MOSAIC LAW** – Gal. 5:18, 23; Rom. 8:2-4; 6:14; 10:4; 13:8; and (5) resolving the @@@ **ANGELIC CONFLICT**.
- (b) **Choice.** The Christian either lives the spiritual life of God or the psychological life of self-sufficiency and arrogance under the control of his @@@ **OLD SIN NATURE** – Rom. 8:6-8. Emotion has nothing to do with spirituality – Rom. 16:17-18; 2 Cor. 6:11-12; 1 Pet. 1:14-16.

## 1 PETER 1:14-16

As obedient children, do not be conformed [*suschematizo*] to the former lusts [*epithumia* (craving; desires)] which were yours in your ignorance [*agnoia* (lack of knowledge) – the influence of the @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS**], but like the Holy One [@@@ **HOLY SPIRIT**] who called [*kaleo* – @@@ **SALVATION** ministry of the Holy Spirit] you, be holy yourselves [@@@ **REBOUND** brings "absolute" spirituality] also in all *your* behavior ["relative" spirituality of the mature Believer]; because it is written, "You shall be Holy [*hagios*] for I am Holy [*hagios* – the @@@ **TRINITY**]."

- (6) **Absolute Spirituality.** Under the concept of @@@ **REBOUND**, at any given moment a Believer is either *carnal* [*sarkikos* (carnal)] or *spiritual* [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit)] – he is either absolutely Filled with the @@@ **HOLY SPIRIT** or he is not. Thus, in this context spirituality is a fixed absolute; there are no "degrees" of *absolute* spirituality. See 1 Jn. 1:5-7; 2:10-11; 3:4-10; Eph. 5:8; Col. 1:12; 1 Thess. 5:5; 1 Cor. 3:1-2.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 3:1-2

And I [Paul], brethren, could not speak [laleo] to you as to spiritual men [pneumatikos (relating to the human spirit) – Believers at some level of @@@ MATURITY], but as to men of flesh [sarkinos – under the influence of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE the negative [-N] volition Believer acts like the unBeliever], as to infants [nepios (an infant) – baby Believers] in Christ. I gave you milk [gala] to drink, not solid food [Paul could not give the Loser Believers advanced @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]; for you were not yet able to receive it. Indeed, even now you are not yet able.

- (a) **Rebound.** Since personal @@@ SIN puts the Believer out of *absolute* spirituality, the mechanics to regain *absolute* spirituality is via @@@ REBOUND. The @@@ HOLY SPIRIT Fills the Believer and provides the mechanics for learning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE. Accordingly, the Believer must constantly use Rebound in his CWL.
- (b) **Carnality.** The carnal Believer out of Fellowship with the Holy Spirit [“flesh” as opposed to “spirit”] imitates the unBeliever and is trapped in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS of Satan. See Rom. 8:6-8.

## ROMANS 8:6-8

For the mind set [phronema (what one has in the mind)] on the flesh [sarx – the desires of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] is death [thanatos – the state of Operational @@@ DEATH for the negative [-N] volition Believer to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], but the mind set on the [Holy] Spirit [the positive [+P] volition Believer staying in Fellowship by @@@ REBOUND] is life [zoe] and peace [eirene (prosperity) – reaching spiritual @@@ MATURITY and receiving @@@ REWARDS], because the mind set on the flesh is hostile [echthra] toward God; for it does not subject [hupotasso (to obey)] itself to the law of God [the negative [-N] volition Believer has minimal interest in Bible Doctrine], for it is not even able to do so [no use of Rebound], and those who are in the flesh [sarx – Operational Death of the negative [-N] volition Believer out of Fellowship with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT and under the control of the Old Sin Nature] cannot please God.

- (c) **Light or Dark.** The Bible uses the fixed concept of **light/dark** to analogize the absoluteness of spirituality – 1 Thess. 5:5; Eph. 5:8, 14.

## 1 THESSALONIANS 5:5

For you [Believer] are all sons [uihos] of light [phos] and sons of day [in @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST and have the option to be spiritual by @@@ REBOUND]. We are not of night nor of darkness [skotos – the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS].

- (7) **Relative Spirituality.** The *relative* side of spirituality refers strictly to the spiritual growth of the Believer moving towards @@@ MATURITY which is by definition a matter of degree. Believers are commanded to *peripateo* (walk); *pereuomai* (walk); and *stoicheo* (to march in military rank) in faithfulness to “*the word of the (Holy) Spirit, which is the word of God*” [Eph. 6:17] in order to grow up to maturity – Col. 1:10-11.
- (a) **Fruit of the Spirit.** A positive [+P] volition **Winner** Believer advancing to spiritual @@@ MATURITY will produce the very character of Jesus Christ, also described as producing the “*fruit of the (Holy) Spirit*” – Gal. 4:19; 5:22-23; 6:1; 2 Pet. 1:4; 1 Jn. 2:5.

## GALATIANS 5:22-23

But the fruit [karpos (production)] of the [Holy] Spirit is love [agape – impersonal love], joy [@@@ HAPPINESS], peace, patience, kindness [chrestotes (integrity; moral goodness)], goodness [agathosune (uprightness of life)], faithfulness [pistis], gentleness [prautes (mildness of disposition)], self-control; against such things [the Believer at @@@ MATURITY operating in the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE] there is no law.

- (b) **Loser Believer.** Tragically, most Believers achieve no *relative* spiritual growth and simply adopt morality and human good deeds as an imagined path to “spiritual” growth. This fake notion of self-sufficiency is delusional, as anything an unBeliever can do is not the CWL! Undoubtedly, an unBeliever can be moral, nice, patriotic, sweet, and altruistic. In fact, in many instances an unBeliever is a better citizen than a Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM! However, the unBeliever cannot be Filled with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT by use of the @@@ REBOUND technique, nor can he learn @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – Col. 1:10. Note: UnBelievers can and often do follow the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS. See Lk. 6:32.

## COLOSSIANS 1:10

So that you will walk [*peripateo* (lifestyle) – the Believer @@@ **WALKING** in the lifestyle of the @@@ **CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE** in @@@ **TIME**] in a manner worthy of the LORD, to please *Him* in all respects, bearing fruit [*karpophoreo* – reaching @@@ **MATURITY** which results in @@@ **REWARDS**] in every good [*agathos* – Divine Good] work and increasing [*auxano* (to cause to grow)] in the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge) – learning the full realm of @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**] of God.

- (8) **False Metrics.** God does not save or bless the Believer on the basis of @@@ **EMOTION** or how the Believer feels or thinks about himself in relation to other people! It is imbecilic to subjectively “hate” or “love” one’s self based on the metrics of human works of @@@ **GOOD** deeds. The issue is always about rejecting the thinking of the @@@ **WORLD** and *thinking* the thoughts of God – “*transformed by the renewing of your mind*” [Rom. 12:2].

## ROMANS 12:2

And do not be conformed [*suschematizo* (to conform one’s self to another’s pattern)] to this world [Satan’s @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS**], but be transformed [*metamorphoo* – the Believer must reject the Cosmic Systems and transform himself to the status of @@@ **MATURITY**] by the renewing [*anakainosis* (a renewal; complete change for the better to another form)] of your mind [transformation of the Believer’s thinking requires maximum @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** in the soul], so that you may prove [*dokimazo* (to test; to prove)] what the will of God is [the Believer is commanded to reach maturity], that which is good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] and acceptable and perfect [*teleios* (to make complete)].

- (9) **Spiritual IQ.** Humans are born unequal in terms of such fixed variants as IQ and physical traits. While many of these things cannot be altered, the Believer *can* choose his level of spiritual IQ. In other words, the smart Believer fully understands his physical, social, or mental limitations while realizing that growing to spiritual @@@ **MATURITY** in accordance with the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD** has no limitations or handicaps whatsoever, other than his own negative [**-N**] volitional decisions towards learning and applying @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** to life’s various @@@ **PROBLEMS** and other issues in the @@@ **ANGELIC CONFLICT** – 1 Cor. 15:10; Heb. 5:12-14.

## HEBREWS 5:12-14

For though by this time [*chronos* (time either short or long)] you [Believers on negative [-N] volition and no longer living the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE] ought to be teachers [*didaskalos* – these Believers should have reached spiritual @@@ MATURITY long ago given the quantity of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE taught by their @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER], you have need again for someone [a prepared Pastor/Teacher] to teach [*didasko* (to be a teacher)] you the elementary principles [*stoicheion* (the basic elements from which all things have come)] of the oracles [*logion* (the words or utterances of God) – the basic foundations of Bible Doctrine] of God [*theos*], and you have come to need [*chreia* (necessary)] milk [*gala*] and not solid food [*trophe*]. For everyone who partakes *only* of milk is not accustomed [*aperios* (inexperienced in)] to the word of righteousness [*dikaioisune* – a negative [-N] volition Believer cannot metabolize advanced Bible Doctrine], for he is an infant [*nepios* (little child; infant)]. But solid food is for the mature [*teleios* – the positive [+P] volition Believer moving towards maturity], who because of practice [*hexis* (a habit whether of body or mind)] have their senses [*aistheterion* (faculty of the mind for perceiving)] trained [*gumnazo* (to exercise vigorously) – the positive [+P] volition Believer's self-discipline to make Bible Doctrine the number one priority in @@@ TIME] to discern [*diakrisis* (judging)] good [*kaloss* (precious; excellent) – Divine Good] and evil [*kakos* (wicked) – of human @@@ GOOD].

- (10) **The Trinity Indwells.** All three members of the Godhead Indwell the Believer in the Church Age and will continue to do so forever and ever. This fact is never lost regardless of the level of *relative* @@@ MATURITY reached by any given Believer in @@@ TIME. See @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY; @@@ TRINITY.
- (a) **God the Father.** God the Father is the author of the @@@ PLAN OF GOD and the grantor of Escrow Blessings in @@@ REWARDS for the Believer – Jn. 14:23; 2 Jn. 9; Eph. 1:3-6, 12; 4:6.
- (b) **God the Holy Spirit.** God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT creates a “*temple*” [1 Cor. 3:16] in the physical body of the Believer for the @@@ INDWELLING OF CHRIST and serves as the power source for the spiritual **Winner** Believer spending maximum time inside of the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE – Rom. 8:11; 2 Cor. 6:16.



- (c) **Christ Indwells.** Christ Indwells as the badge of the Royal Family, the Escrow Officer, the guarantee of Escrow Blessings, the motivator of the Believer, and an eternal life guarantee for the Believer – Jn. 14:20; 17:22-26; Rom. 8:10; Col. 1:27; 1 Jn. 2:24; 2 Cor. 13:5; Gal. 2:20.
  - (d) **Benefits.** There are non-experiential aspects for all Believers of the Indwelling of the @@@ TRINITY. Experiential aspects are available for those who reach @@@ MATURITY – Gal. 4:19; Phil. 1:20; 2:5; 2 Cor. 3:17-18; 1 Jn. 3:23-24. The **Winner** Believer is a “*friend of God*” [Js. 2:21-23] so that “*Christ may dwell in your hearts*” [Eph. 3:16-17], and a producer of the “*fruit of the Spirit*” [Gal. 5:22-23].
- (11) **Royal Ambassadors.** All born again Believers in the Church Age are Royal Ambassadors for the LORD Jesus Christ – 2 Cor. 5:20.
- (a) An Ambassador does not appoint himself – God does. *See* Acts 9:15.
  - (b) He does not support himself – logistical @@@ GRACE is from God.
  - (c) His instructions are in writing – the Word of God per 2 Tim. 3:16.
  - (d) He does not belong to the country he is sent to – Believers are in the Devil’s @@@ WORLD. *See* 1 Pet. 2:11.
  - (e) He does not live in the country for personal interests and is content with what possessions he has – “*If we have food and covering, with these we shall be content*” [1 Tim. 6:8]; Phil. 4:11-13.
  - (f) He does his assigned duty and ignores personal insults – 1 Pet. 2:23.
  - (g) The recall of the Ambassador is for war or uselessness – the @@@ RAPTURE [recall] or taken under the Sin Unto Death [uselessness].
  - (h) Per the Gospel, the Ambassador can represent God to man. *See* Col. 4:6; Eph. 4:1-2; 1 Pet. 2:9. *See* @@@ WITNESSING.
  - (i) Believers are constantly observed by angels [and humans] as to their performance in the CWL as God’s “*witnesses*” [Acts 1:8; 2 Tim. 1:2] in the Angelic Conflict. *See* Heb. 12:1; 1 Cor. 4:9; 2 Cor. 5:20.



## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:20

Therefore, we [Paul and all Christians] are ambassadors [*presbeuo* – the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE] for Christ, as though God were making an appeal [*parakaleo* (to instruct)] through us; we [Paul and his team] beg [*deomai* (to desire)] you on behalf of Christ, be reconciled [*katallasso* (to have correct thoughts)] to God.

- (12) **Royal Priests.** All Christians are Royal Priests in the Church Age – 1 Pet. 2:5, 9; Rev. 1:6; 5:10.

## 1 PETER 2:5

You also, as living stones [*lithos*], are being built up as a spiritual house for a holy [*hagios*] priesthood [*hierateuma* (the office of priest)], to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ [by living the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE].

- (a) **Self.** The Church Age Believer represents himself before God. There are no societal priests or other intermediaries as in the Old Testament.
  - (b) **Privacy.** The Believer is absolutely entitled to his individual @@@ PRIVACY before the LORD – Matt. 6:6. See @@@ SHEEP.
  - (c) **Invisible.** The Church Age Believer has an invisible supernatural relationship with God – Heb. 11:1, 27; 1 Tim. 1:17.
- (13) **Acquiring Discernment.** Believers must be as “*shrewd as serpents* (discernment) *and innocent as doves* (no @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS)” [Matt. 10:16]. The Believer must know and then apply @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE correctly, “*rightly dividing the word of truth*” [2 Tim. 2:15].

## MATTHEW 10:16

Behold, I [Jesus Christ] send [*apostello*] you [Believers] out as sheep in the midst of wolves; so be shrewd [*phronimos* (intelligent; wise) – knowing and applying @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] as serpents and innocent [*akeraios* (of the mind without a mixture of evil; free from guile) – free from the human @@@ GOOD of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS] as doves.

(14) **The Five Laws.**

- (a) **Law of Liberty** – *eleutheria* (freedom to act as desired; liberty). Per the Law of Liberty the Believer is not accountable to other people, only to God. This law is directed at self and while very liberating, it respects the @@@ **PRIVACY** of others. See 1 Cor. 6:12; 8:9; Js. 1:25; 2:12-13; Gal. 2:4; 5:1; 2 Cor. 3:17; Col. 2:16; Ps. 118:45; 119:45.

**GALATIANS 2:4**

But *it was* because of the false brethren [negative [-N] volition Believers] secretly brought in, who had sneaked in to spy out our [Paul teaching of @@@ **GRACE** to Gentiles] liberty [*eleutheria* (freedom to act as desired)] which we have in Christ Jesus, in order to bring us into bondage [*katadouloo* (slavery) – legalists insisted on keeping Jewish customs for spirituality].

**JAMES 1:25**

But one who looks intently [*parakupto* (to stoop down to look at closely) – academic concentration] at the perfect law, the law of liberty [*eleutheria* (freedom to act as desired)], and abides by it, not having become a forgetful hearer [negative [-N] volition Believer] but an effectual [*ergon*] doer [*poietes* (performer) – positive [+P] volition Believer metabolizing @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**] this man will be blessed in what he does [@@@ **REWARDS**].

**PSALM 119:45**

And I will walk at liberty, for I seek Your [God] precepts.

**COLOSSIANS 2:16**

Therefore no one is to act as your judge [*krino* – the Law of Liberty] in regard to food or drink or in respect to a festival or a new moon or a Sabbath day.

**JAMES 2:12**

So speak and so act [the Believer] as those who are to be judged [*krino*] by the law [*nomos*] of liberty [*eleutheria* (the liberty to do as one pleases) – the – the Law of Liberty in the @@@ **CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE**].

- (b) **Law of Expediency.** This CWL law focuses on how the Believer deals with unBelievers, particularly when the Believer is engaged in @@@ WITNESSING. Under the Law of Expediency, the Believer must be careful not to create false issues related to style, morality, tradition, culture, etc., which might in any way cloud the @@@ SALVATION message. *See* 1 Cor. 9:16-23; 10:23.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 10:23

All things are lawful [*exesti* – the Law of Liberty], but not all things are profitable [*sumphero* – towards the goal of reaching @@@ MATURITY and towards @@@ WITNESSING – the Law of Expediency]. All things are lawful, but not all things edify [*oikodemo* (to build up)].

- (c) **Law of Supreme Sacrifice.** The Law of Supreme Sacrifice refers to those unique instances where a select few Believers are called out to face unusual circumstances in life and become special subject matter expert witness exhibits in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT. For instance, neither Paul, Barnabas, nor Daniel had a wife. Other Winner Believers are called to unusual deaths or other extreme situations as Pastor/Teacher Antipas – “*My witness, My faithful one*” [Rev. 2:13]; Acts 1:8. *See also* Rom. 8:36; 1 Cor. 9:1-15; Matt. 19:12; Isa. 43:10.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 9:5

Do we [Paul and some members of his team] not have a right to take along a believing wife, even as the rest of the apostles and the brothers of the LORD [the half-brother James] and Cephas [Aramaic for Peter]?

- (d) **Law of Love.** This law is for the mature Believer and is directed towards the weak or baby Believer as well as the unBeliever. For “*knowledge makes arrogant, but love edifies*” [1 Cor. 8:1]. The Law of Love requires the Believer to not get fat-headed about his progression in his spiritual life and to put aside judgmental arrogance and employ patience, tolerance, and flexibility, capped by *agape impersonal love* for others. The mature Believer must concentrate on @@@ GRACE and recall that he too, at one time, was an ignorant baby Believer as well. Thus, he maintains a “live and let live” attitude. *See* Rom. 5:5; 14:1-23; 15:1-4; 1 Cor. 8:10-13; 1 Jn. 3:23; Gal. 5:22.

## 1 JOHN 3:23

This is His [God the Father] commandment [*entole* (an order)], that we believe [*pisteuo*] in the name of His Son Jesus Christ, and love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE] one another [*allelon* (one another of the same kind) – other Believers under the Law of Love], just as He [Jesus] commanded us.

- (e) **Royal Law.** The Royal Law is mandated for all Believers in the Church Age. The Believer must forgive and forget the wrong inflicted – “*just as the LORD forgave you, so also should you*” [Col. 3:13-14]. While the Filling of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT provides the necessary power source to fulfill the Royal Law [Rom. 8:2-4], it can only be fully executed when the positive [+P] volition Believer reaches @@@ MATURITY so that he can then apply the full realm of the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES to the @@@ PROBLEMS and exigencies of life. The Royal Law is far beyond the so-called “Golden Rule: “*Treat people the same way you want them to treat you*” [Matt. 7:12]. For example, in Acts 15:36-42, when Barnabas urged Paul to allow John Mark to accompany them on a 2nd Missionary journey, Paul flatly refused, unwilling to forgive him for deserting the team on the 1st journey. Paul did not use the Royal Law. See Matt. 19:19; 22:39, 40; 1 Jn. 3:23; 3:11; 4:7; 1 Thess. 4:9; 1 Pet. 1:22; 2:17; Eph. 4:32.

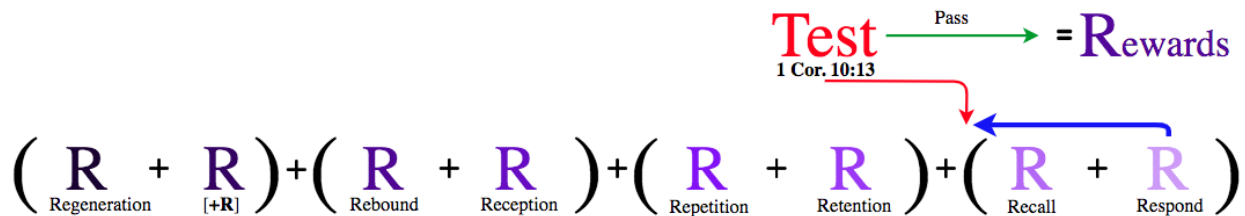
## EPHESIANS 4:32

Be kind [*chrestos* (virtuous; benevolent)] to one another [*allelon* (one another of the same kind) – Believers], tender-hearted [*eusplagchnos* (compassionate; having strong bowels)], forgiving [*charizomai* (to show one’s self gracious)] each other [the Royal Law], just as God in Christ also has forgiven you [no Believer deserves @@@ SALVATION].

## COLOSSIANS 3:13-14

Bearing [*anechomai* (to hold up)] with one another [Believers], and forgiving [*charizomai* (to show one’s self gracious; to grant forgiveness)] each other, whoever has a complaint against anyone; just as the LORD [Jesus Christ] forgave [*charizomai*] you, so also should you. Beyond all these things put on love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE], which is the perfect bond of unity [*sundesmos* (that which binds together) – the Royal Law].

- (15) **The Eight R's.** The **Eight R's** of the CWL is a teaching tool set out in logical tandems to capture the Believer's @@@ SALVATION and then progression from a baby Believer to an adult **Winner** Believer at @@@ MATURITY so that he can be entered as a subject matter expert "*witness*" [Rev. 2:13; Acts 1:8] exhibit in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT, as was the case of Job when God asked Satan, "*have you considered my servant Job?*" [Job 1:8].



### – Eight R's of the Christian Way of Life –

- (a) (**REGENERATION** + **RIGHTEOUSNESS [+R]**). The first tandem is an absolute for the Believer. It is his entrance point into an eternal relationship with God at the point of @@@ SALVATION – being "*born again*" [Jn. 3:3] in **REGENERATION** and receiving God's **RIGHTEOUSNESS**! This tandem is irrevocable and inviolate.
- (b) (**RECEPTION** + **REBOUND**). The second tandem is a potential for the Believer. It envisions the positive [+P] Believer who desires **RECEPTION** of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE utilizing **REBOUND** to be Filled with God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT and then consistently subjecting himself to the teaching of Bible Doctrine from a prepared @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER – 1 Jn. 1:9; 4:6; Prov. 8:34.

### 1 JOHN 4:6 [RECEPTION]

We [John and other Pastor/Teachers] are from God; he who knows [Believers wanting Bible Doctrine] God listens to us [**RECEPTION**]; he who is not from God does not listen to us [the negative [-N] volition Believer in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS will not listen]. By this we know the spirit [*pneuma* (the disposition or influence which fills and governs the soul of one)] of truth and the spirit of error [*plane* (one led astray from the right way)].

## PROVERBS 8:34 [RECEPTION]

Blessed is the man [the positive [+P] volition Believer desiring knowledge of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] who listens [*shama*] to me [RECEPTION of Bible Doctrine], watching [*shaqad* (to watch; be alert)] daily [*yom* – thousands of decisions are required to stay consistent] at my gates [*deleth* (a door; gate)], waiting at my doorposts [*mezuzah* (doorpost; gatepost) – public @@@ BIBLE classes were held at the city gates].

## 1 JOHN 1:9 [REBOUND]

If [Third Class Condition – maybe the Believer will or maybe he won't] we confess [*homologeo* (to declare oneself guilty; to name or cite as in a court case)] our sins [*hamartia* – the known @@@ SIN], He [God the Father] is faithful [*pistos* – God does the same thing every time] and righteous [*dikaio* – on the basis of the Believer having the Righteousness [+R] of God] to forgive [*aphiemi*] us our [known] sins and to cleanse [*katharizo*] us from all unrighteousness [*adikia* – all unknown sin as well as decontamination from human @@@ GOOD in REBOUND].

- (c) (REPETITION + RETENTION). The third tandem is a potential for the Believer. Constant REPETITION of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE from a prepared @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER will soon circulate in the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT of the Believer and result in long term RETENTION of the Word which then propels him on to advanced levels of spiritual @@@ MATURITY – Gal. 4:19; 2 Pet. 1:12-13; Ps. 119:97; 2 Tim. 1:13; 1 Cor. 2:16.

## 2 PETER 1:12-13 [REPETITION]

Therefore, I [Peter] will always be ready to remind [*hupomimnesko* (to cause one to remember) – @@@ MEMORY] you [Believers] of these things [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], even though you *already* know [*heneka* (to know on account of) – REPETITION] them, and have been established [*sterizo* (to make stable)] in the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration)] which is present [*pareimi* (to be by)] with you. I consider it right [*dikaio*], as long as I am in this *earthly* dwelling, to stir you up [*diegeiro* (to arouse the mind)] by way of reminder [*hupomnesis* – keep going over Bible Doctrine].



**GALATIANS 4:19 [REPETITION]**

My [Paul] children [*teknon*], with whom I am again [*palin* (repetition of action)] in labor [*odino* (to feel the pains of childbirth)] until Christ is formed [*morphoo*] in you [Paul taught @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE over and over in REPETITION so that positive [+P] volition Believers could grow to @@@ MATURITY and have the thinking of Christ].

**PSALM 119:97 [REPETITION]**

O how I [the positive [+P] volition Believer] love [*ahab*] Your law [*torah* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]! It is my meditation [*wiyeh* – REPETITION] all the day.

**2 TIMOTHY 1:13 [RETENTION]**

Retain [*echo* – RETENTION] the standard of sound [*hugiaino* (to be sound)] words which you have heard [*akouo*] from me [Paul], in the faith [*pistis* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] and love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE] which are in Christ Jesus.

**1 CORINTHIANS 2:16 [RETENTION]**

For who has known [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] the mind [*nous* (the mind, comprising alike the faculties of perceiving and understanding)] of the LORD [*kurios* (God) – the thinking of Jesus Christ is @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], that he [any given person] will instruct [*sumbibadzo* (to cause to coalesce)] Him [God]? But we [Paul and his traveling seminary] have [*echo* (to have and to hold) – RETENTION] the mind of Christ [these @@@ PASTOR/TEACHERs knew Bible Doctrine and were ready to teach it].

- (d) (**RECALL + RESPOND**). The fourth tandem is a potential for the Believer. When testing comes to the Believer under the concept of Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing or Discipline, the Believer must first immediately **RECALL** to mind the correct @@@ **PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES** and then **RESPOND** to the testing with the proper @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE to address and remediate the suffering at hand. See Lam. 3:20-23; 2 Pet. 1:13-15; Js. 1:3-4; 1 Sam. 17:47; Matt. 5:44; 2 Cor. 5:10; Lk. 8:25; Jn. 13:17.

## LAMENTATIONS 3:20-23 (KJV) [RECALL]

My soul [*nephesh*] hath *them* still in remembrance [*zakar*], and is humbled within me [the positive [+P] volition Believer]. This I recall [*shub* – **RECALL**] to mind [@@@ MEMORY of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], therefore I have hope [*yachal* (confidence; trust)]. *It is of* the LORD's mercies [*chesed* (mercy)] that we are not consumed [*tamam* (to completely consume to come to an end) – without God's @@@ GRACE in action all humans would be immediately consumed for just cause], because His compassions [*racham*] fail not. *They are* new every morning: great is thy [God's] faithfulness [*emunah* (fidelity; steadfastness)].

## 2 PETER 1:13-15 [RECALL]

I [**Peter**] consider it right, as long as I am in this *earthly* dwelling [*skenoma* (a tent; the dwelling place of the soul for the human body)], to stir you up by way of reminder [*hupomnesis* – **RECALL**], knowing [*heneka* (on account of)] that the laying aside [*apothesis* (a putting off)] of my *earthly* dwelling [*skenoma*] is imminent [*achinos* (swift) – Peter knew his physical @@@ DEATH was imminent and his soul would soon depart the body], as also our LORD Jesus Christ has made clear to me. And I will also be diligent that at any time after my departure [*exodus*] you [Believer] will be able to call these things [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] to mind [*mneme* (to remember a thing)].

## LUKE 8:25 [RESPOND]

And He [**Jesus**] said to them [the disciples], “Where is your faith [*pistis* – not able to **RESPOND** due to lack of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE and failure to apply @@@ FAITH/Rest to the @@@ PROBLEMS of the storm on the Sea of Galilee]?” They were fearful [*phobeo* (afraid; dread; terror)] and amazed, saying to one another, “Who then is this, that He commands even the winds and the water, and they obey [*hupakouo*] Him?”

## MATTHEW 5:44 [RESPOND]

But I [**Jesus Christ**] say to you, love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE] your enemies [*echthros*] and pray for those who persecute [*dioko* (to make to run or flee) – **RESPOND** by means of @@@ PRAYER and the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES] you.

## 1 SAMUEL 17:47 [RESPOND]

And that all this assembly [the Jewish army facing the army of the Philistines] may know that the LORD does not deliver by sword or by spear [human viewpoint]; for the battle is the LORD's [RESPOND] and He will give you [Goliath] into our [the Jews] hands.

- (e) **REWARDS.** The end result of the **Winner** Believer consistently using the last Six R's equals fantastic **REWARDS** in this @@@ WORLD and in eternity – "*it is for this (reaching maturity and receiving @@@ REWARDS) we labor and strive*" [1 Tim. 4:8-10]; 2 Cor. 5:10.
- (f) **Overview** – 2 Peter 1:2-11, provides a precise outline of the **Eight R's**.

## 2 PETER 1:2-8, 11

Grace and peace [*eirene* (prosperity)] be multiplied [*plethuno* (to increase)] to you [God's desire for the Believer to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY and receive **REWARDS**] in the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of God and of Jesus our LORD [*Iesous Kurios* – the @@@ BIBLE is the mind of Christ]; seeing that His divine power [*dunamis*] has granted to us everything pertaining to life [*zoe* – **REGENERATION** and **RIGHTEOUSNESS** puts the Believer into the Royal Family of God] and godliness [*eusebeia* – everything necessary for the Believer to reach maturity], through [*dia* (by means of)] the true knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of Him [the Believer reaching maturity is via the full knowledge of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] who called [*kaleo* (to call aloud by name)] us by His own glory and excellence [*arete* (a virtuous course of action)]. For by these [the Directive Will of God] He has granted [*doreomai*] to us His precious and magnificent promises [**Eight R's**], so that by them you may become partakers of the divine nature [the Believer can have the mind of Christ, the thinking of God], having escaped [*apopheugo* (to flee from; to escape)] the corruption that is in the world [*kosmos* – the thinking of Satan's @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS] by lust [*epithumia* (craving; lust)]. Now for this very reason also [the Believer's goal to have the mind of Christ], applying all diligence [*spoude* (earnestness in accomplishing) – the Believer using positive [+P] volition], in your faith [*pistis* – desire to acquire Bible Doctrine in **RECEPTION**] supply [*epichoregeo* (to furnish; to supply)] moral excellence [*arete* (a virtuous course of action) – positive [+P] volition decisions to expose self to a proper

@@@ PASTOR/TEACHER], and in *your* moral excellence, knowledge [*gnosis* (knowledge) – desire for Bible Doctrine to reach spiritual maturity, **RECEPTION**], and in *your* knowledge, self-control [*egkrateia* (one who masters his desires and passions) **REBOUND** – constantly evaluate self and @@@ REBOUND to stay in the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE], and in *your* self-control, perseverance [*hupomone* (steadfastness; constancy) – keep going in **REPETITION**], and in *your* perseverance, godliness [*eusebeia* – **RETENTION** of Bible Doctrine equals maturity], and in *your* godliness, brotherly kindness [*philadelphia*], and in *your* brotherly kindness, love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE as the ultimate @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES to **RECALL** and **RESPOND** to testing] ... for in this way the entrance into the eternal kingdom of our LORD and Savior Jesus Christ will be abundantly supplied [*epichoregeo* – **REWARDS** to mature Believers] to you.

$$\begin{array}{c}
 \left( \begin{array}{cc} \text{R} & + & \text{R} \\ \text{Regeneration} & & [+R] \end{array} \right) \\
 \left( \begin{array}{cc} \text{R} & + & \text{R} \\ \text{Rebound} & & \text{Reception} \end{array} \right) \\
 \left( \begin{array}{cc} \text{R} & + & \text{R} \\ \text{Repetition} & & \text{Retention} \end{array} \right) \\
 \begin{array}{c} \text{Test} \\ 1 \text{ Cor. 10:13} \end{array} \left. \begin{array}{c} \text{ } \\ \text{ } \\ \text{ } \end{array} \right\} \\
 + \left( \begin{array}{cc} \text{R} & + & \text{R} \\ \text{Recall} & & \text{Respond} \end{array} \right) \\
 \hline
 \text{Rewards}
 \end{array}$$

– The Eight R's of the Christian Way of Life –

## @@@ CHRISTOPHANY

- (1) **Definition.** Christophany is a theological term regarding the recorded appearances in the @@@ BIBLE of the LORD Jesus Christ after His @@@ RESURRECTION from the dead. Jesus Christ rose on the third day but did not ascend into the Third @@@ HEAVEN [see Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL] from the Mount of Olives until 40 days later – Acts 1:3-9. Then, ten days after the ascension of Jesus Christ the Church Age began on the day of Pentecost. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS; @@@ MYSTERY.
- (2) **Pre-Ascension Appearances.** There are eleven recorded appearances in the @@@ BIBLE of the LORD Jesus Christ in His resurrected body prior to the ascension. See 1 Cor. 15:3-8; Acts 1:3. He appeared to Believers only, as the LORD Jesus Christ “*dwells in unapproachable light, whom no man (the unBeliever) has seen or can see* [1 Tim. 6:16].

### 1 CORINTHIANS 15:3-8

For I [Paul] delivered to you [Believers in Corinth] as of first importance what I also received, that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures, and that He was buried, and that He was raised on the third day according to the Scriptures, and that He appeared [*horao (to see with the eyes)*] to Cephas [Aramaic for Peter], then to the twelve [technical term for the disciples minus Judas]. After that He appeared to more than five hundred brethren at one time, most of whom remain until now, but some have fallen asleep [*kaimao (to sleep; to die) – the term @@@ SLEEP describes the physical @@@ DEATH of a Believer*]; then He appeared to James, then to all the apostles; and last of all, as to one untimely born, He appeared to me also.

### ACTS 1:3

To these [many Believers] He also presented Himself alive after suffering [on the @@@ CROSS where He died for all @@@ SIN], by many convincing proofs [*tekmerion (on indubitable evidence)*], appearing [*optanomai (to look at, behold; to allow one's self to be seen)*] to them over a period of forty days and speaking of the things concerning the kingdom of God.

- (a) **Mary Magdalene** – Jn. 20:11-17. The former prostitute was the first to see Him due to her faithfulness to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.

- (b) **Other Women** – “*Jesus met them and greeted them*” [Matt. 28:9-10].
- (c) **Peter on Sunday** – Lk. 24:34.
- (d) **On the Road** – Mk. 16:12-13. This passage is not in the original text.
- (e) **Ten Disciples** – “*Jesus came and stood in their midst*” [Jn. 20:19-24].
- (f) **Eleven Disciples** – Jn. 20:24-29; Lk. 24:36-43.

### JOHN 20:24-29

But Thomas, one of the twelve [technical term for the @@@ APOSTLES], called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came. So the other disciples were saying to him, “We have seen the LORD!” But he said to them, “Unless I see in His hands the imprint of the nails, and put my finger into the place of the nails, and put my hand into His side, I will not believe.” After eight days His disciples were again inside, and Thomas with them. Jesus came, the doors having been shut and stood in the midst and said, “Peace *be* with you.” Then He said to Thomas, “Reach here with your finger, and see My hands; and reach here your hand and put it into My side; and do not be unbelieving, but believing.” Thomas answered and said to Him, “My LORD and my God!” Jesus said to him, “Because you have seen Me, have you believed? Blessed *are* they who did not see, and *yet* believed.”

- (g) **Seven Disciples** – “*Jesus stood on the beach*” [Jn. 21:1-23].
  - (h) **More than 500 Believers at Once** – 1 Cor. 15:6.
  - (i) **His Half-Brother James** – 1 Cor. 15:7. James was an unBeliever per Jn. 7:5, but became a Believer per Acts 1:14; Gal. 1:19. The same pattern with Jesus’ three other half-brothers, Simon, Jude, and Joseph.
  - (j) **Eleven Disciples on a Mountain** – Matt. 28:16-20.
  - (k) **The Ascension of Jesus Christ from Mount of Olives** – Acts 1:3-9.
- (3) **Post-Ascension Appearances.** There are nine recorded appearances in the @@@ BIBLE of the LORD Jesus Christ after His ascension.



- (a) **Stephen** – “*Jesus standing at the right hand of God*” [Acts 7:55-56].
  - (b) **Saul on the Road to Damascus** – Acts 9:3-6; 22:6-11; 26:13-18.
  - (c) **Ananias** – In a vision regarding Saul to regain his sight [Acts 9:10-16].
  - (d) **Saul in Arabia** – Acts 20:24; 26:17; Gal. 1:12, 17.
  - (e) **Paul in the Jewish Temple** – Acts 9:26-30; 22:17-21.
  - (f) **Paul Stoned** – The Apostle Paul when being stoned outside the city of Lystra [2 Cor. 12:1-7; Acts 14:19].
  - (g) **Paul in Prison** – “*The LORD stood at his side*” [Acts 23:11].
  - (h) **Peter** – Peter hearing the voice of the LORD regarding his ministry to the Gentiles [Acts 10:10-16].
  - (i) **John on the Island of Patmos in A.D. 96** – Rev. 1:12-20.
- (4) **No Christophany Post-Cannon.** Since A.D. 96, with the completed Bible, there have been no appearances of the resurrected Jesus Christ – 1 Cor. 13:8-10. Believers see Him now via @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – 1 Pet. 1:8.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 13:8-10

Love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE] never fails [*pipto* (phased out)]; but if *there are gifts* of prophecy [*propheteia*], they will be done away [*katargeo* (abolished; ceased; canceled out)]; if *there are* tongues [*glossa* (the language or dialect used by a particular people)], they will cease [*pauo* (to stop)]; if *there is* [the gift of] knowledge [*gnosis*], it will be done away [*katargeo*]. For we [Believers] know [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] in part [in the pre-canon period of the Church Age] and we prophesy in part; but when the perfect [*teleios* (completed) – the word *teleios* is in the neuter which refers to a thing and not a person, i.e., the completed @@@ BIBLE] comes [Revelation was written in A.D. 96 and completed the Bible], the partial [*meros* – the temporary spectacular @@@ GIFTS of the early Church] will be done away [*katargeo* (to render inoperative)].

---

## @@@ CIRCUMCISION

- (1) **Definition.** Circumcision refers to the cutting away of the band of useless skin around the end of the male sex organ. The Greek word for circumcision is *peritome*. The Old Testament practice, codified in the @@@ MOSAIC LAW, mandated circumcision on the 8th day after physical birth of the male child – “*circumcised the eighth day*” [Phil. 3:5]; Lev. 12:3. Jewish women were never circumcised. See @@@ AUTHORITY.
- (2) **Represents Grace.** Circumcision was designed as a key teaching tool for the Jews – every time the male looked at his sex organ it was a reminder of God’s fantastic @@@ GRACE. The dead skin removed represented the evil and worthlessness of human good works for @@@ SALVATION.
- (3) **Abraham’s Circumcision.** Abraham was circumcised long after his @@@ SALVATION. As a Gentile, Abram believed in the promised future Christ “*the LORD*” [Gen. 15:6] about the age of 20 in the city of Ur of the Chaldees in what today is Iraq. Once Abraham reached and held @@@ MATURITY at the age of 99, he was circumcised as commanded by God – Rom. 4:11.

## ROMANS 4:11

And he [Abraham] received the sign of circumcision [*peritome* – @@@ CIRCUMCISION], a seal of the righteousness [*dikaiosune* – a teaching tool about God’s @@@ GRACE] of the faith [*pistis* – @@@ SALVATION by @@@ FAITH] which he had while uncircumcised [*akrobestia* (having the foreskin) – Abram received God’s Righteousness [+R] at about the age of 20, long before he was physically circumcised], so that he might be the father of all who believe [*pisteuo* – Abraham’s salvation, 500 years before the @@@ MOSAIC LAW, clearly revealed the pattern for how all Believers are saved in all @@@ DISPENSATIONS] without being circumcised, that righteousness [*dikaiosune* – God’s Righteousness [+R] might be credited [*logizomai* (to pass to one’s account)] to them [all Believers].

- (4) **Sign of Abrahamic Covenant.** Circumcision also served as an overt sign of the Abrahamic Covenant – Gen. 17:10-14. The Jews were set apart as a @@@ PIVOT Client Nation to God to spread the Gospel to the Gentiles and to be the custodians for the growing Old Testament @@@ BIBLE – Gal. 2:8; Col. 4:11; Tit. 1:10; Ex. 4:24-26; 12:48. See @@@ COVENANTS.

- (5) **Contrast with Phallic Cult.** Jewish circumcision was in direct contrast to the Old Testament Phallic Cult @@@ RELIGION – Lev. 12:2-3.
- (6) **Will Not Save.** The Old Testament ritual of circumcision was meant to reflect the true spiritual connotation of @@@ SALVATION by @@@ GRACE. The ritual by itself cannot provide salvation as some legalists assert. *See* Jer. 6:10; 9:25-26; Rom. 3:27-30; Gal. 5:2-3.

### ROMANS 3:27-30

Where then is [human] boasting [*kauchesis* (the act of glorying)]? It is excluded. By what kind of law [*nomos*]? Of works? No, but by a law of faith [*pistis*]. For we [Paul and his seminary team] maintain [*logizomai* (to calculate)] that a man is justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – the Believer receives God's Righteousness [+R] at the moment of @@@ SALVATION] by faith [*pistis* – saving @@@ FAITH is the avenue to salvation] apart from works of the Law [the @@@ MOSAIC LAW will not provide salvation]. Or is God *the God* of Jews only? Is He not *the God* of Gentiles [*ethnos*] also? Yes, of Gentiles also, since indeed God who will justify [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] the circumcised [*peritome* – the Jews] by faith [*pistis*] and the uncircumcised [*akrobustia* (having the foreskin) – the Gentiles] through faith [*pistis* – saving faith] is one.

- (7) **No Church Age Mandate.** There is no special or spiritual significance for circumcision in the Church Age – 1 Cor. 7:18-19; Gal. 5:2-3. Titus was not circumcised, Timothy was. The Council of Jerusalem in A.D. 50, reiterated that @@@ SALVATION was not related to circumcision either for Jews or Gentiles – Acts 15:1-32; Gal. 2:1-2. It is now a matter of taste or hygiene.

### GALATIANS 5:2-3

Behold I, Paul, say to you that if you receive circumcision [*peritome*], Christ will be of no benefit to you [it will not provide @@@ SALVATION]. And I testify again to every man who receives circumcision, that he is under obligation to keep the whole Law [*nomos* – keeping the @@@ MOSAIC LAW is impossible to do and @@@ CIRCUMCISION will not save].

- (8) **Circumcision and Legalism.** Circumcision is sometimes used in the New Testament to illustrate the practice of legalism – Acts 15:1, 24; Gal. 6:12-13.

- (9) **Portrays Regeneration.** All human males are born uncircumcised, just as all people are born with an @@@ OLD SIN NATURE and in a state of spiritual @@@ DEATH without relationship with God – Col. 2:13. Having @@@ SALVATION and cutting away the dead skin both portray irrevocable change and newness.

### COLOSSIANS 2:13

When you [as unBelievers] were dead [*nekros* – spiritual @@@ DEATH] in your transgressions [*paraptoma* (a deviation from the truth) – the @@@ TRINITY can never have fellowship with anything imperfect] and the uncircumcision [*akrobustia*] of your flesh [*sarx* – all humans a born with an @@@ OLD SIN NATURE], He made you alive together with Him [@@@ UNION WITH CHRIST], having forgiven [*charizomai*] us all our transgressions [the efficacious work of Jesus Christ on the @@@ CROSS].

- (10) **Retroactive Positional Truth.** Circumcision is sometimes used as an analogy to the dry @@@ BAPTISM of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT to portray Retroactive Positional Truth – Col. 2:11.

### COLOSSIANS 2:11

And in Him [Jesus Christ] you were also circumcised [*peritome*] with a circumcision made without hands [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT's ministry in providing @@@ SALVATION], in the removal [*apekdusis* (a putting off)] of the body of the flesh [*sarx*] by the circumcision [*peritome*] of Christ.

- (11) **Reversionism and Rejection.** The concept of *not* being circumcised is sometimes used in the @@@ BIBLE to portray @@@ REVERSIONISM for Believers and damnation to @@@ HELL for unBelievers who reject the Gospel – Jer. 4:4; 6:10; 9:25-26; Ezk. 28:10; 44:7; Acts 7:51.

### EZEKIEL 28:10

“You will die [*muth* (to die; to execute)] the death [*maveth* (deaths by violence) – the word *muth* is in the plural and refers to the physical and spiritual @@@ DEATH of the unBeliever] of the uncircumcised [*arel* (having foreskin) – the unBeliever] by the hand of strangers, for I have spoken! Declares the LORD God!”

## ACTS 7:51

You men [**Stephen speaking to Jews**] who are stiff-necked [*sklerotrachelos* (stubborn; obstinate)] and uncircumcised [*aperitmetos*] in heart [*kardia*] and ears [*ous*] are always resisting [*antipto* (to run against; to strive against)] the Holy Spirit [**they will not respond to the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT and his ministry of @@@ GRACE**]; you are doing just as your fathers did [**most Jews in the Old Testament were unBelievers or in @@@ REVERSIONISM as Believers**].

- (12) **Portrays Bible Doctrine.** Circumcision is sometimes used to portray the absolute need for the Believer to discipline his mind so that he stays on positive [**+P**] volition to advancing in the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD** for his life and to reject anything that distracts him from his consistent learning of @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** from a prepared @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHER** – “*circumcise your heart, and stiffen your neck no longer*” [Deut. 10:16]; Jer. 4:4. See @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS**; @@@ **REVERSIONISM**.

## JEREMIAH 4:4

Circumcise yourselves to the LORD and remove the foreskins of your heart, [*leb* – **they were on negative [-N] volition towards God**], men of Judah and inhabitants of Jerusalem, or else My wrath will go forth like fire and burn with none to quench it, because of the evil of your deeds.

- (13) **Portrays the Mature Believer.** Circumcision is sometimes used to portray the construction of the @@@ **EDIFICATION COMPLEX OF THE SOUL** for the mature Believer – “*and circumcision is that which is of the heart, by the Spirit, not by the letter; and his praise is not from men, but from God*” [Rom. 2:28-29]; Phil. 3:3; Deut. 30:6.

## PHILIPPIANS 3:3

For we [**Believers on positive [+P] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE**] are the *true* circumcision [*peritome*], who worship in the Spirit of God [**@@@ REBOUND and producing the fruit of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT at @@@ MATURITY**] and glory in Christ Jesus and put no confidence [*peitho* (to make friends with; to trust)] in the flesh [*sarx* – **human @@@ GOOD**].

---

## @@@ CORNERSTONE

- (1) **Definition.** As a cornerstone refers to an especially sturdy cut stone set at the foundation corner of two intersecting walls to ensure the complete stability of the entire structure, so too is the analogy made to Jesus Christ. Other related concepts to the study of the doctrine of the cornerstone related to Jesus Christ include the “*foundation*” [1 Cor. 3:11], the basic stone footing upon which all buildings are constructed, and the gigantic “*rock*” [Deut. 32:4], indicating complete protection and stability. The Greek word used to describe a building stone is *lithos* (stones used for things to build), the Hebrew word is *spanah*, Job 38:6. The Hebrew word for rock is *tsur* (a giant boulder). See *infra* (5) for the parallel meaning of the Greek word “*rock*” *petra* (a giant stone).

## DEUTERONOMY 32:4

The Rock [*tsur* (giant boulder) – Jesus Christ the Savior]! His work is perfect [*tamiym* (complete; whole) – Jesus’ @@@ SALVATION work on the @@@ CROSS], for all His [God the Father under the @@@ PLAN OF GOD] ways are just [*mishpat* (right) – the @@@ TRINITY]; a God of faithfulness [*emunah* (steadfastness)] and without injustice [*evel* (iniquity; injustice) – under @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT God proved His desire that all humans can be saved], righteous [*tsaddiyq* (just; righteousness) – the Righteousness [+R] of God is uncompromising] and upright [*yashar* (straight) – God is Perfect in all His ways] is He.

- (2) **Salvation Rock.** Jesus Christ is the salvation rock and foundation stone for all Believers – 1 Cor. 3:11; Isa. 28:16; 31:29; 1 Pet. 2:4; 2 Tim. 2:19; Ps. 19:14. Moses struck the “*rock*” [Ex. 17:6] in Horeb with his staff – a rock that Christ stood before – and water came out to save the thirsty Hebrews. Christ would take our punishment and salvation water would flow to all!

## EXODUS 17:6

“Behold, I [Jesus Christ] will stand before you there on the rock [*tsur* (giant boulder)] at Horeb; and you [Moses] shall strike [*nakah*] the rock [Christ will be struck for all @@@ SIN while on the @@@ CROSS], and water [*mayim*] will come out of it, that the people may drink [recalls the doctrine of @@@ SALVATION plus God’s logistical @@@ GRACE provisions to them in the wilderness].” And Moses did so in the sight of the elders of Israel.



## 1 CORINTHIANS 3:11

For no man [*oudeis* (no one; nothing)] can lay a foundation [*themelios* (the foundation of a building)] other than the one which is laid, which is Jesus Christ [there is no other way for a human to be saved except by the @@@ GRACE @@@ PLAN OF GOD].

- (3) **The Tested Stone.** Jesus Christ is called the “*tested stone*” [Isa. 28:16] in the @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION because He was born Perfect and passed all temptations, making Him uniquely qualified to go to the @@@ CROSS.

## ISAIAH 28:16

Therefore thus says the LORD God, “Behold, I am laying in Zion [*Jerusalem*] a stone [*eben* (a stone as building material) – Jesus Christ], a tested [*bochan*] stone [Jesus Christ would pass every temptation, die on the @@@ CROSS for @@@ SALVATION, and be presented and accepted by God the Father per Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL], a costly cornerstone [*pinnah* – the cost to Jesus Christ at @@@ SIN bearing is beyond human comprehension] for the foundation, firmly placed. He who believes [*aman* – the means of salvation is by @@@ FAITH in Christ] in it will not be disturbed [the Believer has @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY].”

- (4) **Rock Rejected by Israel.** The LORD Jesus Christ as the true cornerstone to Israel made a bona fide offer of the Kingdom of God and the applicable @@@ COVENANTS to the Jews during His Sermon on the Mount and again on Palm Sunday. But the religious Jewish leaders and their followers rejected Him. For example, the Jews in Mk. 11:9-10, sang only the 2nd Advent verses pertaining to the promised Messiah [Son of Man] – Ps. 118:25-26. However, in Mk. 12:10-11, Jesus quotes to them the preceding verses of Ps. 118:22-23. These verses speak of the 1st Advent which contain the prediction of the cornerstone Messiah rejected by the builders [see Isa. 8:19]. See also, the parable of the vineyard at Mk. 12:1-12. The vineyard is Israel [Isa. 5:1-7], the wall is Divine protection for His people, the tower is added protection via the concept of the military establishment, the farmers are the Jewish people, and the journey portion of the parable sets out the various Jewish Client Nations to God under the @@@ PIVOT – United Kingdom, Northern Kingdom, Southern Kingdom, and Judea. All of these Client Nations turned against God and were all destroyed in Divine Discipline. See Deut. 32:17-18; Isa. 8:14.

Peter relates in Acts 4:10-12, and Paul in Rom. 9:30-33, that the Jewish leaders rejected their Savior Jesus Christ – “*He is the stone rejected by you, the builders.*” In fact, the stone of salvation “*cut out*” [Dan. 2:34] by the @@@ PLAN OF GOD is a stumbling block to the unBeliever who will be crushed by it and go to @@@ HELL. See Ps. 118:12; Isa. 8:14; 1 Pet. 2:8.

### PSALM 118:22-23

The stone [*eben* – Jesus Christ] which the builders rejected [*maas* (to despise; to reject) – the Jews] has become the chief [*rosh* (head; top)] corner stone [*pinnah* – Jesus Christ rejected @@@ RELIGION and established @@@ GRACE]. This is the LORD’s doing; it is marvelous in our eyes.

### ISAIAH 8:14

Then He [Jesus Christ] shall become a sanctuary [to Believers]; but to both the houses of Israel [most in the Northern Kingdom and Southern Kingdoms rejected @@@ SALVATION by @@@ GRACE], a stone to strike and a rock to stumble over, and a snare and a trap for the inhabitants of Jerusalem.

### DEUTERONOMY 32:17-18

They [the religious Jews] sacrificed to demons [*shed* (a demon)] who were not God, to gods whom they have not known, new *gods* who came lately, whom your fathers did not dread. You neglected the Rock [*tsur* – Jesus Christ] who begot you, and forgot the God who gave you birth.

- (5) **Chief Cornerstone.** Jesus Christ is the chief cornerstone of the Church and all Believers are the stones in the building structure of the Church – “*For no man can lay a foundation other than the one which is laid, which is Christ Jesus*” [1 Cor. 3:11] Matt. 16:18; 1 Pet. 2:4-7; Eph. 2:19-22.

### ACTS 4:11-12

He [Jesus Christ] is the stone which was rejected by you [religious Jews], the builders, *but* which became the chief corner stone [*gonia* (an external angle)]. And there is salvation [@@@ SALVATION into @@@ HEAVEN] in no one else; for there is no other name [*onoma* – Jesus Christ] under heaven that has been given among men [*anthropos*] by which we must be saved.

## EPHESIANS 2:19-22

So then you are no longer strangers [*xenos* (a foreigner)] and aliens [*paroikos*], [Believer is no longer an unBeliever] but you are fellow citizens [*sumpolites* (possessing the same citizenship)] with the saints [*hagios* (separated ones)], and are of God's household [*oikeios* (belonging to a house) – Believers are in @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST], having been built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets [they proclaimed the Gospel of @@@ SALVATION], Christ Jesus Himself being the corner stone [*akrogoniaios* (placed on an extreme corner)], in whom the whole building, being fitted together, is growing into a holy temple in the LORD, in whom you also are being built together into a dwelling of God in the Spirit [@@@ HOLY SPIRIT's ministry for positive [+P] volition Believers reaching @@@ MATURITY].

- (6) **Peter is Not the Rock.** In Matt. 16:17-18, Jesus Christ renamed His disciple Simon giving him the new name Peter, using the word *petros* (a little chip or small rock) [*chepos* in the Aramaic]. Then in the same passage Christ describes Himself, in contrast to Peter the *petros*, as the unique and only *petra* (a gigantic bolder) upon which the New Testament Church would be built. It is upon the *petra* of the impeccable LORD Jesus Christ that the Church is built not the little chip of the imperfect man Peter, *petros*. See 1 Pet. 2:4-8 and @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST.

## MATTHEW 16:18

I [Jesus] also say to you that you are Peter [*petros* (little rock chip)], and upon this rock [*petra* (gigantic rock) – Jesus Christ is the foundation @@@ CORNERSTONE of @@@ SALVATION, the Church, and all Believers in all @@@ DISPENSATIONS] I will build My church [*ekklesia*]; and the gates [*pule* (likened to a vast prison)] of Hades will not overpower [*katischuo* (to prevail)] it.

- (7) **The Judgment Stone Upon History.** In Dan. 2:31-45, Daniel interprets King Nebuchadnezzar's dream about a gigantic statue of a man [which portrayed human history up to the 2nd Advent] that is struck and crushed by a gigantic stone "*cut out without hands*" by God. The stone is Jesus Christ as He comes at the 2nd Advent in @@@ JUDGMENT, destroying human works to set up His Kingdom in the Millennium [and beyond], which fills up the whole earth.

## @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS

- (1) **Definition.** The term “Cosmic Systems” refers to Satan’s entire thinking, “*doctrines of demons*” [1 Tim. 4:1], in his rulership of the @@@ WORLD. Satan’s Cosmic Systems are subdivided into two general spheres which both hate @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – **Cosmic I** and **Cosmic II**.
- (2) **Stay Out.** All unBelievers reside in the Cosmic Systems and are part of Satan’s family. On the other hand, while all Believers are expected to live in God’s @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE most Believers spend their entire time on earth in the Cosmic Systems reflecting Satan’s *thinking* and not Divine thinking. Thus, the repeated command to Believers: “**Stay out of the Cosmic Systems**” – Jn. 8:31-32; Rom. 12:2, 21; Eph. 5:16; 2 Tim. 2:19; 3:13; 2 Thess. 3:3; 1 Tim. 4:1-5; 1 Cor. 10:21; 1 Jn. 2:15-17; Rev. 2:24; Jos. 24:15.

## ROMANS 12:2

And [**Believer**] do not be conformed [*suschematizo* (to conform one’s self to another’s pattern)] to this world [*aion* (period of time) – Satan’s @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], but be transformed [*metamorphoo* – the Believer is expected to reject the Cosmic Systems and transform himself to the status of spiritual @@@ MATURITY] by the renewing [*anakainosis* (a renewal; complete change for the better to another form)] of your mind [*nous* – transformation of the positive [+P] volition Believer’s thinking requires maximum @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT], so that you may prove [*dokimazo* (to test; to prove)] what the will [*thelema*] of God is [**the Believer is commanded to reach maturity**], that which is good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] and acceptable [*euairestos* (well pleasing)] and perfect [*teleios* (to make complete)].

## JOSHUA 24:15

If it is disagreeable in your sight to serve [*abad* (to work; to serve as subjects)] the LORD, choose for yourselves today whom you will serve [**decisions from the free will**]: whether the gods which your fathers served which were beyond the River [**those on negative [-N] volition decisions to worship the idols of Egypt and other concepts of @@@ RELIGION**], or the gods of the Amorites in whose land you are living; but as for me [**Joshua**] and my house, we will serve the LORD [**positive [+P] volition decisions from the free will**].

## 2 TIMOTHY 2:19

Nevertheless, the firm foundation of God stands, having this seal, “The LORD knows [*ginosko*] those who are His [*all Believers*],” and, “Everyone who names the name of the LORD is to abstain [*aphistemi (to make standoff)*] from wickedness [*adikia (unrighteousness of heart and life) – stay out of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS*].”

- (3) **Entry Point of Arrogance.** The vicious @@@ SIN of arrogance with emphasis on self-sufficiency and self-justification is the pin in the grenade that opens the door to all the “gates” of the Cosmic Systems – Rom. 12:2-3; 1 Pet. 5:6-8; 2 Chron. 32:25.

## ROMANS 12:3

For through [*dia (by means of)*] the grace [*charis – God’s plan, policy, and purpose is @@@ GRACE*] given [*didomi*] to me I [Paul] say to everyone among you not to think more highly of himself [*hyperphroneo (not to think in terms of arrogance)*] than he ought to think [*phroneo (to have understanding)*]; but to think so as to have sound judgment [*sophroneo (to be of sound mind)*], as God has allotted to each a measure [*metron*] of faith [*pistis – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE learned on the road to @@@ MATURITY*].

## COSMIC I. Reflects Satan’s Attitude in the Prehistoric @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT – Arrogance.

### Gate 1. Motivational Arrogance.

- (a) **Hypersensitive to Self and Insensitive to Others.** Arrogance is the entrance point in Cosmic I and includes hatred, vanity, self-pity, vindictiveness, self-justification, @@@ JEALOUSY, and insolence. The person demands attention to self and will bully, put down others, bitch, and nag to get recognition. Arrogance is called the “*lust of the eyes*” [1 Jn. 2:15-16].
- (b) **War.** God makes @@@ WAR against the arrogant Believer and applies Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING to him – 1 Pet. 5:4-6; Js. 3:14-16; 4:6; Isa. 13:11; Prov. 11:2; 16:18; 29:23; 2 Tim. 3:2-7.

**1 PETER 5:5**

You younger men, likewise, be subject [*hupotasso*] to *your* elders [*presbuteros* (the old man) – the @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHER**]; and all of you, clothe yourselves with humility [*tapeinophrosune* (having a humble opinion of one's self)] toward one another [*allelon* (of the same kind)], for God is opposed [*antitassomai* (to range in battle against) – makes @@@ **WAR**] to the proud [*huperephanos* (showing one's self above others)], but gives grace [*charis*] to the humble [*tapeinos* – only the @@@ **GRACE** oriented positive [+P] volition Believer will reach @@@ **MATURITY**].

**Gate 2. Negative Volition Arrogance to God's Truth.**

- (a) **Category I Truth** – @@@ **DIVINE INSTITUTIONS**. Rejection or minimal respect. This category is designed for all mankind.
- (b) **Category II Truth** – **Gospel of @@@ SALVATION**. Designed for the unBeliever, he will not respond to @@@ **GRACE**. See Lk. 13:34.
- (c) **Category III Truth** – @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**. Designed for the Believer, but the Believer will not respond. See Lk. 13:34.

**LUKE 13:34**

O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, *the city* that kills the prophets and stones those sent to her! How often I [**Jesus Christ**] wanted to gather your children together, just as a hen *gathers* her brood under her wings, and you would not *have it* [**negative [-N] volition from the free will to salvation and also Bible Doctrine**]!

**Gate 3. Self-Righteous Arrogance.**

- (a) **Endorses Legalism**. To be righteous in one's own eyes. Stresses human achievements, morality, or good deeds as of paramount concern. See Js. 4:16, the book of *Galatians*, Matt. 23.

**JAMES 4:16**

But as it is, you boast [*kauchaomai* (to glory on account of a thing)] in your arrogance [*alazoneia* (braggart talk)]; all such boasting is evil [*poneros*].



- (b) **Personality.** A fixed personality type or style of behavior is demanded as a role model for all to emulate.
- (c) **Authority.** Rejects most of the forms of lawful @@@ **AUTHORITY**. This begins for children in the home. Byproducts include institutional arrogance in assuming that self is more important than the organization's policy or purpose. The arrogant person feels that he is greater than the system which, in his thinking, has overlooked him.
- (d) **Crusader Arrogance.** Putting personal opinions on others without their consent. Violates @@@ **PRIVACY** and often uses violence.
- (e) **"Christian Service" Arrogance.** All Christian service must be a result of growth towards spiritual @@@ **MATURITY**, never a means of growth – 1 Cor. 3:11-15; Lk. 14:11.

**Gate 4. Sexual Arrogance.**

- (a) **Normal Sexual Arrogance.** For example, King Solomon's lust pattern in his @@@ **OLD SIN NATURE** towards various females resulted in numerous instances of @@@ **ADULTERY/FORNICATION**. See Ex. 20:14; 1 Cor. 6:18; 2 Tim. 3:4; 1 Thess. 4:3; Deut. 5:18; Heb. 13:4.
- (b) **Abnormal Sexual Arrogance.** Manifested in the @@@ **SIN** of homosexuality, voyeurism, lesbianism, and autoeroticism [1 Cor. 6:9-20; 7:4; Gal. 5:19; 1 Tim. 1:10]. See Lev. 18:6-17.
- (c) **Criminal Sexual Arrogance.** Manifested in bestiality [Lev. 18:23], rape [Deut. 22:25-27], necrophilia, and pederasty [1 Cor. 6:9].

**Gate 5. Criminal Arrogance.** All criminal activity stems from basic rejection of legitimate @@@ **AUTHORITY**. Criminals seek to satisfy lusts in the @@@ **OLD SIN NATURE** without regard for others. All liars are not criminals but all criminals are liars. In fact, lies are the common way of life for the criminal and are his standard way of dealing with himself and others.

**Gate 6. Iconoclastic Arrogance.** The building up of another as a role model so that subsequent flaws spawn vicious attacks on the role model.

**Gate 7. Physiological Living Arrogance.**

- (a) **The Wants.** In the mindset of arrogance, “Maslow’s Hierarchy” of needs [self-actualization, self-esteem, belongingness, safety, food] always increases and is never satisfied. The arrogant person never gets over the “wants.” Dead ends include: @@@ MONEY without honor; success without integrity; promotion without ability; and @@@ LOVE without virtue.
- (b) **Rationalization.** Self-justification for everything the person does. For example, a Believer becomes instantly defensive when a religious legalist sees him @@@ DRINKING liquor at a bar.
- (c) **Defense Mechanisms.** Various defensive techniques are employed for dealing with @@@ PROBLEMS. This can be manifested by a sudden change in friends or employment.
- (d) **Denial.** A disorientation to reality leading in some cases to dangerous circumstances. For example, operating a car while drunk, open exposure to bullets in @@@ WAR, or laying down on a busy road.
- (e) **Sublimation.** Engaging in new outlets of distraction such as @@@ DRINKING and seeking stimulation in the details of life.

**Gate 8. Subjective Preoccupation With Self Arrogance.**

- (a) **Definition.** The person feels that they are not being treated the way that they want to be treated. They are hateful to people below them and bitter towards their superiors.
- (b) **Point of truth:** If you are not content with what you have right now, you will never be content in the future. “*If we have food and covering, with these we shall be content*” [1 Tim. 6:8]; Heb. 13:5; Phil. 4:11-13.

**PHILIPPIANS 4:11**

Not that I [Paul] speak from want [*husteresis (poverty)*], for I have learned [*manthano (to increase one’s knowledge)*] to be content [*autarkes (content with one’s lot; sufficient for one’s self)*] in whatever circumstances I am.

**Gate 9. Rational and Irrational Arrogance.**

- (a) **Rational Arrogance.** The arrogant high IQ or so-called “educated” person compromises @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE with their own human viewpoint washed in human @@@ GOOD – Prov. 18:1-2.

**PROVERBS 18:2**

A fool does not delight in understanding [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE, the “*mind of Christ*”], but only in revealing [*galah (delight)*] his own mind [*leb*].

- (b) **Irrational Arrogance.** @@@ EMOTION is used as the gauge for life – Phil. 3:18-19; Rom. 16:17-18; 2 Cor. 6:11-12. For example, the atheist scientist rejects God because of the purely emotional argument that he “cannot accept a God that would allow suffering in the world.”

**Gate 10. Client Nation Arrogance.**

- (a) **The Free Nation.** Legitimate forms of a capitalistic/nationalistic government under the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS are rejected. This attitude destroys freedom and builds a massive bureaucracy in its stead leading to national destruction – Hos. 4:1-6. See @@@ PIVOT.
- (b) **Types.** (1) Monarchy [a king who rules for the good of his people] vs. Tyranny [a king who rules for his own self-interest]; (2) Aristocracy [the best in society who rule for the good of the people] vs. Oligarchy [a small group who rule for their own self-interest]; (3) Republic [elected representatives rule for the good of the people] vs. Democracy [each rule for their own self-interest]. In each pairing, the former is authorized by the @@@ BIBLE and the latter is not.

**COSMIC II. Reflects Antagonism Toward the Plan, Purpose, and Will of God.** Absolute hatred for all @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.

**Gate 1. Negative Volition.**

- (a) **For the unBeliever.** Negative [-N] volition response at Gospel hearing or at God consciousness – Ps. 12:1; 14:1. See @@@ HEATHENISM.

## PSALM 14:1

The fool [*nabal* – the unBeliever] has said in his heart, “There is no God.”

- (b) **For the Believer.** Negative [-N] volition response to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – Rom. 16:17-18; 2 Cor. 6:11-12; Phil. 3:16-19.

**Gate 2. Anti-Divine Institutions.** For the unBeliever at Rom. 1:28-32. For the Believer at 2 Tim. 3:2-7.

**Gate 3. Cosmic Panaceas.**

- (a) **Greater Good.** All panaceas are based on “big State” and “little people.” The myriad actions of the leftist in this regard to “white-wash” the Devil’s world are always done in the name of the “greater good.”
- (b) **Equality.** The great lie of utopianism is cloaked in *equality* as first seen with the actions of Adam and Eve. When they committed sin and died spiritual @@@ DEATH they engaged in human @@@ GOOD by putting fig leaves over their genitalia [the most obvious different feature] to achieve “equality.” They reflected the great deception: “*If you are right with people, then you are right with God.*” Note: God took off the fig leaves when they believed in the Gospel – Gen. 3:7-21.

**Gate 4. Cosmic Degeneration.** Maximum time in the Cosmic Systems causes immoral degeneration [Rom. 1:24-27] and/or moral degeneration [Matt. 7:21-23]. See Acts 8:3; 9:4; 1 Tim. 1:13-15 [Paul]; Gal. 2:11-13 [Peter]; Gal. 3:1-3 [the Galatians].

**Gate 5. Demonism.** In @@@ DEMONISM, “*deceitful spirits and doctrines of demons*” [1 Tim. 4:1] permeate the thinking of the @@@ WORLD.

**Gate 6. Religion.** See @@@ RELIGION.

**Gate 7. Good & Evil.** Human good is the motivational and functional policy of Satan – Eph. 2:10; 5:15; 2 Tim. 3:13; 2 Thess. 3:3. Only the production of *agathos* (good of intrinsic value) Divine Good is acceptable to God – Rom. 12:21. See @@@ GOOD.

---

## @@@ COVENANTS

- (1) **Definition.** A covenant is a firm agreement between two parties. There are eight Covenants [solemn promises] in the @@@ BIBLE given by God. Most of the Covenants have an “eternal life” clause and since only Believers have eternal life, those Covenants apply to Believers – Rom. 9:4; 10:1-3; 1 Jn. 2:25.
- (2) **Not All Fulfilled.** Not all Covenants given by God have been completely fulfilled but they will be in the future, reflecting the fact that God cannot lie – Ps. 89:35. See @@@ TRINITY.

### PSALM 89:35

Once I [God] have sworn [*shaba*] by My holiness [*qodesh* – His Righteousness and Justice constitutes His Holiness]; I will not lie [about the Davidic Covenant] to David.

- (3) **Adamic Covenant.** The promised Savior/Messiah who would die for the sins of the @@@ WORLD will be a human being called the “seed of the woman” – Gen. 3:15; Rom. 16:20. See @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION.

### GENESIS 3:15

And I will put enmity [*eybath* (hatred)] between you [Satan] and the woman, and between your seed [*zera* – unBelievers] and her seed [Believers]; He [the Perfect seed of the woman in @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION, Jesus Christ] shall bruise [*shuph* (to bruise; to crush; fall upon)] you on the head [*rosh* – Satan and @@@ SIN will be destroyed], and you shall bruise [*shuph*] him [Christ] on the heel [*aqeb* – Christ will suffer the venom of Satan, which is spiritual @@@ DEATH, on the @@@ CROSS].

- (4) **Noahic Covenant.** The promised Savior/Messiah would come through the line of Noah – Gen. 6:18; 8:21–9:26; 1 Chron. 1:1-4.
- (5) **Abrahamic Covenant.** The promised Savior/Messiah would come through the line of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob – Gen. 12:1-3; 22:15-18; 26:3-4; 35:11. This Covenant defined the Jewish race of the future Messiah and provided a blessing/cursing vis a vis the Jews. “*Blessed is everyone who blesses you [Jewish race], And cursed is everyone who curses you*” [Num. 24.9].

## GENESIS 12:1-3

Now the LORD [Jehovah] said to Abram, “Go forth from your country [Abram was then a Gentile Believer in his 20’s living in the city of Ur – @@@ SEPARATION], and from your relatives and from your father’s house, to the land which I will show you; and I will make you a great nation [Abraham would become the father of the Jewish race], and I will bless you, and make your name great; and so you shall be a blessing; and I will bless [*barak*] those who bless you, and the one who curses [*qalal*] you [the Jewish race] I will curse. And in you all the families of the earth will be blessed [Abraham’s “grandson” would be Jesus Christ].

- (6) **Palestine Covenant.** The Palestine Covenant defines the geography that God will give to the Jewish national entity in the Millennium. The final land Palestine Covenant encompasses much of the Middle East – Gen. 13:14-15; 15:18-21; Num. 34:1-12; 35:12; Ex. 6:2-8; Deut. 30:1-9; Jos. 1:2-4; Jer. 32:36-44; Ezk. 11:16-21; 47:13-23; 48:1-35. The Palestine Covenant will not be fulfilled until the Millennium. Even in King David’s time, which saw the maximum expansion of the Jewish kingdom, the promised land Covenant was not anywhere near fulfilled. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.
- (7) **Mosaic Covenant.** The Mosaic Covenant defined the policy of God for the @@@ PIVOT Client Nation of Israel in the Old Testament era. The Mosaic Covenant was given to the Client Nation of Israel only [Ex. 19:3-6; Deut. 4:8] and does not apply to the Church Age [Rom. 2:12-14; 6:14; Acts 15:5, 24; Gal. 2:19; Heb. 7:12, 19; Phil. 3:9].
- (8) **Davidic Covenant.** The Davidic Covenant defines the dynasty of Jesus Christ. God’s promised Messiah would come through the genealogy of King David – 2 Sam. 7:8-17; Ps. 89:20-29; Mk. 11:10; Matt. 22:41-42. Bathsheba and David’s two sons formed the two possible blood lines of the future Savior – 1 Chron. 3:5. The line of Solomon [Joseph] is set out in *Matthew* and the line of Nathan [Mary] is set out in *Luke*. Later, the Coniah Curse dictated that the Messiah’s actual bloodline would not be through Solomon, but Nathan. Joseph, however, fulfilled the royalty *legal* line as he was Jesus’ step-father. Per the promise of Ps. 110:1-2; 2 Sam. 7:12-13; and Jer. 23:5-6; David’s future “son” would be David’s Savior as well. The LORD Jesus Christ, who is “*the Messiah, the son of David*” [Matt. 1:1], will rule forever! See Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL.



## 2 SAMUEL 7:12-13

When your [David] days are complete and you lie down with your fathers [physical @@@ DEATH], I [God] will raise up your descendant [zera (offspring) – Jesus Christ] after you, who will come forth from you, and I will establish his kingdom. He shall build a house [bayith (household; family)] for My name, and I will establish the throne [kisse] of his kingdom forever.

- (9) **New Covenant to Israel.** The New Covenant to Israel was given to the Jews and will be fulfilled in the Millennium. Israel will be an eternal Client Nation to God forever – Jer. 31:31-34; Rom. 11:27; Heb. 8:8-13; 10:15-17; Gal. 4:4; Zech. 8:23; Ezk. 16:16; Isa. 59:20-21; 61:2-11; Hos. 2:13-23. Believer Jews during the Church Age are elected just as Believer Gentiles – Rom. 11:1-7.
- (10) **New Covenant to the Church.** The New Covenant to the Church [also called the Eternal Covenant] operates in the Church Age only and refers specifically to the accomplished work of Christ for @@@ SALVATION and the special relationship of the Royal Family Church Age Believer who is in @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST. “*This cup is the new covenant in My blood*” [1 Cor. 11:25]. See Lk. 22:20; Heb. 13:20.

## HEBREWS 13:20

Now the God of peace [eirene (reconciliation) – @@@ SOTERIOLOGY], who brought up [anago (to lead up to a higher place)] from the dead [nekro – the @@@ RESURRECTION of Jesus Christ] the great [megas] Shepherd [poimen] of the sheep [probation – all Believers] through [dia (by means of)] the blood [aima – @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST provided @@@ SALVATION] of the eternal [aionios (without beginning or end)] covenant [diatheke (a compact)], even Jesus our LORD [kurios].

## 1 CORINTHIANS 11:25

In the same way He [Jesus] took the cup [poterion – @@@ CUP] also after supper, saying, “This cup is the new covenant [diatheke (a compact) – the Church Age @@@ MYSTERY of @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST] in My blood [aima – the @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST]; do this, as often as you drink it, in remembrance [anamnesis (recollection)] of Me.”

---

## @@@ CROSS

- (1) **Definition.** In a blatant perversion of Roman jurisprudence, Pontus Pilate, found Jesus of Nazareth not guilty at His trial and yet ordered Jesus crucified [nailed to a wooden beam in the shape of a cross] – Jn. 19:6. Crucifixion was the standard practice for all non-Roman citizens convicted of a capital offense. This historical event, which is recorded in the @@@ BIBLE as well as other contemporary documents, occurred on the Jewish Passover in April circa A.D. 30. The crucifixion took place just outside the walls of Jerusalem at a place called Golgotha. While on the cross, Jesus Christ bore all human @@@ SIN – past, present, and future – in order to provide @@@ SALVATION. See Jn. 19:15-22; Mk. 15:22-41; Matt. 27:27-56; Lk. 23:33-49; 1 Cor. 1:18.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 1:18

For the word of the cross is foolishness to those who are perishing [**the unBeliever rejects @@@ GRACE and will perish in @@@ HELL**], but to us who are being saved it is the power of God.

- (2) **Hanging on Wood.** Under the @@@ MOSAIC LAW capital punishment was to be performed by public stoning of the criminal. Furthermore, anyone who was hung upon “wood” of any sort and put to death was pronounced as “**accursed**” under the Jewish law [see Jos. 8:29]. Thus, in accordance with His substitutionary spiritual @@@ DEATH under the @@@ PLAN OF GOD, Jesus Christ was nailed to a wooden cross and “**cursed**” for @@@ SIN so that the Believer could be reconciled to God – Gal. 3:13. Note: The legalistic Jewish leaders requested that Jesus’ body be taken down before sundown so as not to violate this Jewish law – Jn. 19:31-38; Deut. 21:21-23.

## DEUTERONOMY 21:21-23

Then all the men of his city shall stone him to death [**normal form of capital punishment**]; so you shall remove the evil from your midst, and all Israel will hear *of it* and fear [**deterrence**]. If a man has committed a sin worthy of death and he is put to death [**mut**], and you hang [**tal** (**to hang up**)] him on a tree [**ets** (**tree; wood; plank; pieces of wood**)], his corpse shall not hang all night on the tree, but you shall surely bury [**qabar**] him on the same day (for he who is hanged is accursed [**qelalah**] of God [**elohim**]), so that you do not defile your land which the LORD your God gives you as an inheritance.

## GALATIANS 3:13

Christ redeemed [*exagorazo* (by payment of a price to recover from the power of another)] us [**Believers**] from the curse [*katara* (an execration; curse)] of the Law [*nomos* – the @@@ **MOSAIC LAW** demands Perfection], having become a curse for us—for it is written, “Cursed [*epikataratos* (accursed)] is everyone who hangs [*kremannumi* (to be suspended)] on a tree [*xulon* (wood; that made out of wood) – the prediction of where Christ’s work of @@@ **SALVATION** would occur, on a Roman @@@ **CROSS**].”

- (3) **Jesus Voluntarily Submitted.** Jesus went to the cross under His own volition in obedience to the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD** [despite a last moment desire not to]. He completely understood that Perfect God the Father would impute and then judge all human @@@ **SIN** in His body while He hung between @@@ **HEAVEN** and earth – Lk. 22:42-44; Heb. 12:2; 1 Pet. 2:22-23; Jn. 4:34.

## LUKE 22:42

Saying, “Father, [*pater* – Jesus speaking from His humanity to God the Father] if You are willing [*boulomai* (to will deliberately)], remove [*paraphero*] this cup [*poterion* – the @@@ **CUP** containing the @@@ **SIN** of all mankind] from Me [**Jesus**]; yet not My will, but Yours be done.”

## JOHN 4:34

Jesus said to them, “My food is to do the will [*thelema* (what one wishes or has determined shall be done)] of Him [**God the Father**] who sent [*pempo*] Me and to accomplish [*teleioo* (to complete)] His work [*ergon* – in the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD**, Christ suffers substitutionary spiritual @@@ **DEATH**].”

- (4) **Six Hours.** Jesus was on the cross for six hours starting at Roman time 0900 and ending at 1500 – Lk. 23:44; Jn. 19:14; Mk. 15:33-35; Matt. 27:45-46. Jesus uttered no loud sounds during the first three hours. During the last three hours, however, Jesus Christ screamed out repeatedly in Aramaic – “*Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani*?” or “**My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me?**” [Matt. 27:46; Ps. 22:1]. Although a supernatural darkness then covered the happening of @@@ **SIN** bearing, the screaming signaled that it was during these last three hours that He was being judged by God the Father for all human sin. See *infra* (7); Lk. 23:44; Mk. 15:33; Matt. 27:54; Heb. 12:2.

- (5) **Penalty of Sin Paid.** Jesus Christ's work on the cross was required under the @@@ PLAN OF GOD due to the often-stated penalty of @@@ SIN, which is *spiritual* @@@ DEATH – Jn. 4:34; Rom. 6:23. See Gen. 2:17 – “*dying* (*muth* – is used twice), *you will surely die*.” Spiritual death emanated from Adam and Eve who immediately died spiritually when they committed the sin of disobedience, but did not die physically until years later. See Gen. 3:6; 5:5; Rom. 5:12, 17; 6:7-11, 23; 1 Cor. 15:21-22; Col. 2:12. In turn, Adam's original sin and the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE are now passed down to all humans through copulation meaning that only a Perfect human could suffer the just penalty of sin. As the only Perfect human being ever born, only Jesus of Nazareth was qualified to go to the cross – 1 Pet. 2:22-23; 2 Cor. 5:21. Thus, Jesus “*offered Himself without blemish to God*” [Heb. 9:14].

## ROMANS 5:12

Therefore, just as through one man [Adam] sin [the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] entered into the world [Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD], and death [*thanatos* (physical death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – spiritual @@@ DEATH] through sin, and so death [*thanatos* – spiritual death] spread [*dierchomai* (to travel the road which leads through a place; to pass to)] to all men [*anthropos* (mankind)], because all sinned [*hamartano* – Adam's Old Sin Nature and human personal sins].

## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:21

He [God the Father] made Him [Jesus Christ] who knew no sin [*hamartia* – Jesus never committed a @@@ SIN and had no @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] to be sin [He took the judgment for all sin while on the @@@ CROSS] on our behalf [*huper* (as a substitute for)], so that we might become the righteousness [*dikaioisune* – God's Perfect Righteousness [+R] is imputed to the Believer making him acceptable to God] of God in Him.

- (6) **Reconciles Man to God.** The work of Jesus Christ on the cross provides the only pathway for imperfect man to have a relationship with Perfect God. Jesus Christ now holds the keys over spiritual death. Jesus is “*the living One* (Jesus Christ); *and I was dead, and behold, I am alive forevermore, and I have the keys of death and of Hades*” [Rev. 1:18], so that once any human exhales @@@ FAITH in Christ he is forever saved – Col. 1:20; 2:14; 2 Cor. 5:14-15. This fundamental truth is rejected by the unBeliever – 1 Cor. 1:18.

## COLOSSIANS 1:20

And through [*dia* (by means of)] Him [Jesus Christ] to reconcile [*apokatalasso* (to bring back a former state of harmony) – the barrier between God and man is removed under @@@ SOTERIOLOGY] all things to Himself, having made peace [*eirenopoieo* – between Perfect God and imperfect man] through [*dia* (by means of)] the blood [*amia* – the @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST] of His cross [*stauros* – @@@ CROSS]; through Him, *I say*, whether things on earth [*ge*] or things in heaven [*ouranos* – @@@ HEAVEN is currently open to both saved and fallen @@@ ANGELS].

## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:14-15

For the love [*agape* (to love dearly)] of Christ controls us [Believers], having concluded [*krino* (to be of opinion)] this, that one [Christ] died [*apothnesko* (of a violent death; of eternal death; to be subject to eternal misery in hell) – spiritual @@@ DEATH] for all [*pas*], therefore all died [*apothnesko* – spiritual death at birth]; and He died [*apothnesko*] for all [@@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT], so that they who live [Believers] might no longer live for themselves [Believers are to live the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE], but for Him who died [*apothnesko*] and rose again [@@@ RESURRECTION] on their behalf.

- (7) **Two Deaths on the Cross.** Jesus Christ died twice on the cross – a *spiritual death* [during the last three hours on the cross] followed by a physical death. The “deaths” of Jesus are set out at Isa. 53:9; cf. Ezk. 28:10. The Hebrew word for “death” in Isa. 53:9, is *maveth* and is in the intensive plural indicating both a physical and a spiritual death. Note: A Hebrew plural can also in some instances indicate an intensive singular, but certainly not the case herein.

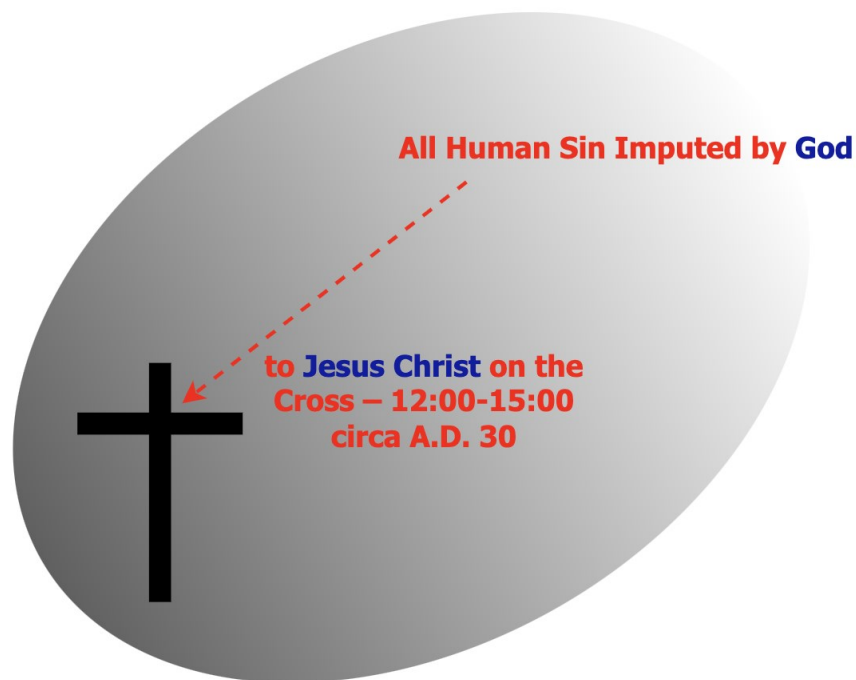
## ISAIAH 53:9

His [Jesus Christ] grave was assigned [*nathan* (to set; to give)] with wicked [*rasha* (criminals; wicked men)] men, yet He was with a rich [*ashiyir* (wealth)] man [Joseph of Arimathea put Jesus in his own tomb] in His death[s] [*maveth* (state of death) – in the plural], because He had done no violence [Christ was innocent of the crime of inciting rebellion against Rome], nor was there any deceit in His mouth [Jesus Christ was without @@@ SIN and remained absolutely Perfect in His life].

- (a) **Judicial Imputation of Spiritual Death.** While Jesus of Nazareth was still physically alive God the Father imputed and then judged in Jesus' body all human @@@ SIN. This *judicial imputation* of trillions and trillions of sins occurred from 1200 to 1500. Although the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT did help sustain Jesus on the cross [Heb. 12:2], Jesus was under inscrutable @@@ SUFFERING during His substitutionary spiritual death. “*By this will we have been sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all*” [Heb. 10:10]; Rom. 5:8; Gal. 3:1; Matt. 26:38; Isa 53:10; Ps. 22; 1 Pet. 2:24; 3:18; 2 Cor. 5:21. Again, this sin bearing was a judicial imputation from God as there was absolutely no affinity [attraction] between the Perfect humanity of Jesus and human sin.

### 1 PETER 3:18

For Christ also died for sins once for all [*hapax*], *the* just [*dikaios* (righteous) – Christ was Perfect] for *the* unjust [*adikos* – imperfect mankind], so that He might bring us to God, having been put to death in the flesh, but made alive in the spirit [@@@ HOLY SPIRIT in Jesus' @@@ RESURRECTION].



– Jesus' Sin Bearing on the Cross –



## 1 PETER 2:24

And He Himself [Jesus Christ] bore [*anaaphero* (to carry; to lift up one's self)] our sins in His body [*soma* – @@@ SIN bearing took place in the humanity of Jesus] on the cross [*xulon* (that which is made of wood) – Christ suffered spiritual @@@ DEATH while on the @@@ CROSS], so that we [all Believers] might die to [*apogenomenos* (to be removed from)] sin [the influence of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE is broken] and live to righteousness [*dikaiosune* – the positive [+P] volition Believer living inside the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE]; for by His wounds [*molops* (wound that trickles with blood) – the substitutionary spiritual death of Jesus Christ which occurred while He was still alive on the cross] you were healed [*iaomai* (to cure; to bring about salvation) – @@@ SALVATION was provided].

## ROMANS 5:8

But God [God the Father is the author of the @@@ GRACE centric @@@ PLAN OF GOD] demonstrates [*sunistao* (to put together by way of composition; to show; to prove) – God desires that all humans should be saved] His own love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE] toward us, in that while we were yet sinners [*hamartolos* – the unBeliever under spiritual @@@ DEATH is the enemy of God], Christ died [*apothnesko* (of violent death; of eternal death; to be subject to eternal misery in hell) – spiritual death] for us [the Believer is saved].

- (b) **Jesus' Physical Death.** The next @@@ DEATH of Jesus Christ was His physical death. With the work of @@@ SALVATION completed by 1500, Jesus could then taste the wine offered to Him [He had earlier rejected wine offered as He had to remain completely lucid for sin bearing] and direct His own physical death – Acts 2:23; Lk. 23:46; Matt. 27:50; Jn. 19:30. Jesus did not bleed to death. In fact, given His powerful physique, Pilate wondered how long Jesus would actually last on the cross [Mk. 15:44]. See @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST.

## MARK 15:44

Pilate wondered [*thaumazo*] if He [Jesus] was dead [*thnesko* (to die)] by this time, and summoning the centurion, he questioned him as to whether He was already dead [*apothensko*].

## ACTS 2:23

This *Man* [**Jesus Christ**], delivered over [*ekdotos* (given over to enemies)] by the predetermined [*horizo* (to mark out the boundaries)] plan [*boule* (to purpose)] and foreknowledge [*prognosis*] of God [**the @@@ PLAN OF GOD**], you [**religious Jewish leadership desired to murder Jesus**] nailed to a cross [*stauros*] by the hands of godless men [*anomos* (unlawful wicked) – **unBelievers**] and put *Him* to death [*anaireo* (physical death by murder)].

- (8) **Mission Accomplished.** After the @@@ SIN bearing was completed Jesus pronounced the triumphant **mission accomplished** phrase: “***It is finished!***” [Jn. 19:30] – *teleo* (to complete; mission accomplished). Jesus Christ had suffered substitutionary spiritual @@@ DEATH on the cross in order to save the human soul of every person that believes in Him – Ps. 34:22. Satan’s back is now broken in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT – Jn. 16:11; Col. 2:15.

## JOHN 19:30

Therefore when Jesus had received [*lambano* (to take)] the sour wine [*oxos*], He said, “It is finished [*teleo* (to complete; mission accomplished) – **during the past three hours Jesus Christ had suffered spiritual @@@ DEATH for the @@@ SIN of all humans**]!”\* And He bowed [*klino* (to incline)] His head and gave up His [human] spirit [*pneuma* – His human spirit went to Heaven, His body to the grave, and His soul to Paradise in @@@ HELL].

\* literally: “***Finished with the result that it is completed forever.***”

- (9) **Last Words of Jesus.** The very last words the LORD Jesus Christ uttered from the cross were about the primacy of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – Ps. 31:5; cf. Lk. 23:46. Luke records that Jesus quoted the first part of Ps. 31:5, and then records that a last sound was uttered by Jesus. That last sound completed the phrase from Ps. 31:5.

## PSALM 31:5

Into Your [**God the Father**] hand I [**Jesus Christ**] commit [*paqad* (to look after)] my spirit [*ruach* – His human spirit]; You have ransomed [*padah* (to rescue; redeem; ransom) – @@@ SOTERIOLOGY] me, O LORD, God of truth [*emeth* (truth; faithfulness) – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE].

- (10) **Sin Not an Issue.** With Jesus' work on the cross a fact of @@@ HISTORY, @@@ SIN is no longer an issue in @@@ SALVATION – Jn. 3:36. Because of Jesus Christ any human can receive the [+R] Righteousness of God at the point of belief in Christ – 2 Cor. 5:21. Indeed, sin is also not an issue for the unBeliever at his future trial at the Great White Throne @@@ JUDGMENT – Rev. 20:11-15. The unBeliever is rejected for an eternal relationship with His Creator because he does not possess the [+R] Righteousness of God.

### JOHN 3:36

He who believes [*pisteuo*] in the Son [*Jesus Christ*] has eternal [*aonios (without beginning and end)*] life [*zoe*]; but he who does not obey [*apeitheo (to refuse or withhold belief; not to allow one's self to be persuaded)*] the Son will not see life [*zoe*], but the wrath [*orge*] of God abides [*meno (to remain)*] on him [*eternal separation in @@@ HELL*].

- (11) **What Think Ye of Christ?** The only issue left unresolved for the unBeliever is whether or not he will accept the free gift of @@@ SALVATION offered by God. In short, it is a question of choosing either God's "Divine Good" @@@ GRACE provision for salvation or @@@ RELIGION's "human good" works provision – Eph. 2:8-9. Thus, although @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT makes all humans equal candidates for salvation, the unBeliever must accept the free gift provided by God by means of a single act of non-meritorious @@@ FAITH alone in Christ alone – Matt. 22:42-44.

### MATTHEW 22:42-44

"What do you think [*dokeo*] about the Christ, whose son is He?" They [*the Pharisees*] said to Him [*Jesus Christ*], "*The son of David.*" He said to them, "Then how does David in the [*Holy*] Spirit call Him 'LORD,' saying, 'The LORD [*kurios (God)*] said to my LORD [*kurios (God)*], 'Sit at My right hand, until I [*God the Father under the @@@ PLAN OF GOD*] put Your [*Jesus Christ in His @@@ RESURRECTION body*] enemies beneath Your feet [*Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL*]?"

- (12) **Two Primary Predictions.** The two primary Old Testament chapters predicting the person and work of Jesus Christ for @@@ SALVATION are *Psalms* 22 [written 1,000 years before the birth of Jesus of Nazareth] and *Isaiah* 53 [written 700 years before the LORD Christ came to the earth].

PSALM 22:1-22

:1

“**My God, my God . . . ?**” – Addressed to God the Father during the last three hours while bearing sin. The question that demands an answer, which is given in verse 3 below. Jesus screamed this in the Aramaic language more than once [Lk. 23:44; Mk. 15:33; Matt. 27:46] per Ps. 22:1-2 where the words *sheagah* (roaring) and *qara* (to scream out) are in the plural.

“**forsaken**” – *azab*. God judged all the sin of humanity in Jesus – 1 Pet. 2:24.

“**helping me**” – God won’t deliver Him until after sin bearing is completed.

“**groaning**” – *sheagah* (roaring; distress cry). This is in the plural and occurred during the last three hours as Christ bore our sins in His body.

:2

“**I cry by day**” – 0900 - 1200 = Normal physical suffering associated with His crucifixion and prior physical beatings. See Mk. 15:25, the “third hour” is the third hour after the sun comes up at approximately 0600 in the morning.

“**by night**” – 1200 - 1500 = The unique spiritual suffering of @@@ SIN bearing took place under a supernatural darkness covering the location where Jesus Christ’s work took place. Bystanders could hear Him scream but could not see Him. Not coincidental, this was the same time frame that the Passover lambs were being sacrificed on the Passover by the Jews.

:3

“**holy**” – *qadosh*. The answer to Ps. 22:1. God can’t compromise His Perfect essence. God’s Righteousness [+R] demands God’s Justice. God’s Justice demands punishment for human @@@ SIN.

:6-7

“**worm**” – *tola* (the blood of a special type of worm). This worm was crushed to make the red dye for the robes of royalty. Jesus was crushed for our sin so that we might become wrapped in His [+R] Righteousness – Isa. 61:10.

“**and not a man**” – The severe beatings inflicted caused Jesus to no longer appear human. See Isa. 52:14; 53:3; Mk. 15:15-20.

“**with the lip**” – Many in the crowd made dirty signs at Jesus. See Matt. 27:39-44; Mk. 15:29-32; Lk. 23:35-38.

:9-13

“**made me trust**” – Jesus was sustained by @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.

“**none to help**” – *azar* (total isolation). Only Christ provides salvation.

:16-17

“*dogs*” – *keleb*. Term used for Gentiles. See 2 Pet. 2:22; Matt. 15:25-27.

“*band of evildoers*” – All those Jews that clamored for his death.

“*pierced my hands and my feet*” – Zech. 12:10; Isa. 53:5. The Romans drove large iron nails through each hand and the feet.

“*I can count all my bones*” – As in the Passover lamb, no bones were broken.

:19

A prayer for resurrection.

:21-22

“*horns of the wild oxen*” – Idiom for the cross.

“*tell of your name*” – *saphar*. Jesus Christ will fulfill the plan of God.

### ISAIAH 52:13 – 53:12

[quoted in *Luke* and Acts 8]

:13

“*Behold*” – A command to Believers to study.

“*my servant*” – Jesus Christ.

“*prosper*” – *qsakal* (to be wise).

“*greatly exalted*” – Ps. 110:1. See Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL.

:14-15

“*astonished*” – *shamen* (to be shocked).

“*appearance*” – *mareh*. The face of Jesus.

“*marred*” – *mischath* (complete disfigurement of the face).

### ISAIAH 53

Verse 1 – Gospel; Verses 2-4 – The First Advent; Verses 5-6 – Man’s Hopeless Condition & Salvation Solution; Verses 7-8 – Trials of Jesus Christ on the Cross; Verse 9 – Burial of Christ; Verse 10 – Resurrection of Christ; Verse 11 – Salvation Doctrine; Verse 12 – Glorification of Jesus Christ & Rewards to Mature Believers.

:1-2

“*believed our message*” – The Gospel. Most humans reject God.

“*arm of the LORD*” – Not the hand of God but the “arm” which stresses how much it cost Jesus Christ to pay the price for salvation. See Jn. 12:38.

“*tender shoot*” – The Deity of Christ was hidden from sight, not a huge tree.  
The humanity of Jesus grew up to adulthood – Isa. 7:14-16.

“*root out of parched ground*” – Jesus came during the 4th Cycle of Discipline to the Jewish nation per Lev. 16:14-33; Isa. 11:1, 10; Rev. 5:5; 22:16.

“*no stately form or majesty*” – No human glamour exhibited. See Jn. 12:15.

:3-4

“*a man of sorrows*” – They rejected Him. See Matt. 10:37-39.

“*acquainted with grief*” – Jesus always knew that the cross awaited Him.

“*men hide*” – *mastare* (to cover the face).

“*esteem*” – *khawshab* (to put all the facts together).

“*smitten of God*” – His suffering was to save mankind but most mocked Him.

:5

“*pierced*” – *chalal* (to profane and defile self). Each and every individual sin pierced Him on the cross. The inscrutable pain of *spiritual* death.

“*transgressions*” – *pasha*. All humans fail God’s Perfection.

“*crushed*” – *daka* (to crush to a pulp).

“*for our iniquities*” – *avon*. Humans deserve to suffer spiritual death.

“*chastising*” – *musar* (discipline).

“*for our wellbeing*” – *shalom* (peace). @@@ SALVATION provided.

“*healed*” – *raphe* (sewn together by a physician). God and the Believer are reconciled. True God and true humanity, Christ is the only mediator!

:6

“*sheep have gone astray*” – Refers to stupid and helpless mankind.

“*turned to his own way*” – Human negative [-N] volition at work.

“*LORD*” – God the Father judged all sin in Jesus Christ on the cross.

:7-8

“*did not open his mouth*” – Jesus did not object to the mistreatment.

“*sheep that is silent before its shears*” – Sheep don’t resist.

“*by oppression*” – *otser* (to be arrested). Jesus was seized by legal authority.

“*judgment*” – *mispas* (to render a legal verdict). He was convicted illegally under both Jewish and Roman jurisprudence, yet no one complained.

“*cut off out of the land of the living*” – Jesus Christ died physically and spiritually. See Dan. 9:26.

“*to whom the stroke was due*” – *nega* (leprous disease). See Acts 8:27-35.  
We deserved to pay the punishment of our sins, not Him.



:9

“**grave**” – *qeber* (tomb, place of burial). Jesus was placed in a rock tomb.

“**wicked men**” – *rasah* (a criminal). The two thieves crucified next to Him were justly and lawfully punished for their crimes.

“**rich**” – *ashiyr* (wealthy). Joseph of Arimathea and Nicodemus were wealthy members of the Sanhedrin – Jn. 3:1; 19:38-42. Joseph of Arimathea put Jesus Christ in his own newly carved out burial tomb in his garden area.

“**death**” – *maveth* (deaths). This word is in the intensive plural, not the singular. Christ died twice on the cross. First, spiritual death and then physical death. See Ezk. 28:10, *maveth* is also in the plural and clearly refers to the unBeliever’s two deaths there – physical and spiritual.

“**no violence**” – *chamas* (no unrighteous violence). No overt sins.

“**deceit**” – *mirmah* (no treachery). Jesus remained perfect throughout.

“**in His mouth**” – No covert sin. No mental attitude sins at all.

:10

“**pleased**” – *chaphets*. This is the only way that Perfect God can save man.

“**crush**” – *daka* (to be crushed). Jesus was crushed for our @@@ SIN.

“**putting**” – *chalah* (to designate).

“**guilt offering**” – *asham* (a sin offering).

“**He shall see His offspring**” – Resurrection of all Believers [Heb. 2:9-13].

“**prolong**” – *arak*. Extended on forever, Jesus Christ will rise from the dead!

“**pleasure of the LORD**” – The Father’s @@@ GRACE Plan of Salvation.

“**prosper**” – *tsalach* (to advance). God’s grace turns cursing into blessing.

:11

“**anguish**” – *amal* (a wearing effort in pain).

“**soul**” – *nephesh*. Jesus Christ suffered the pain of spiritual death in His soul.

“**satisfied**” – *saba*. God is propitiation [satisfied].

“**by his knowledge**” – Jesus knew what was happening. He was conscious at all times and would not drink the wine offered to Him on the stick until after sin bearing had been completed. See Mk. 15:22-23; cf. Jn. 19:28-30.

“**many**” – Most humans will not respond to the Gospel, but many will.

“**bear**” – *sabal* (to carry on self).

“**iniquities**” – *avonba* (consequence of or punishment for iniquity).

:12

“**divide**” – *chalaq* (to distribute). The blessings of salvation accrue to all Believers, but rewards belong only to Believers who reach maturity.

“**strong**” – *atsum* (mighty). These are all Believers who are saved with special emphasis on mature Believers who reach spiritual maturity.

“**poured**” – *arah*. All human sin – trillions and trillions – were poured into the body of Jesus and judged.

“**death**” – *maveth*.

“**numbered**” – *manah* (to be assigned or appointed). It was our sin that was assigned to Jesus Christ. Jesus Christ had no sin.

(13) **Rebound**. The cross is also used to refer to @@@ REBOUND – Col. 2:14.

### COLOSSIANS 2:14

Having canceled out [*exaleipho* (to wipe away)] the certificate of debt [*cheirographon* – sinful man [-r] owes perfection to a Perfect [+R] God] consisting of decrees [*dogma* – the @@@ MOSAIC LAW condemns mankind] against us [Perfect God can only condemn imperfect man], which was hostile to us; and He [Jesus] has taken it out of [*airo* (to bear away)] the way, having nailed it to [*proseloo* (to fasten with nails)] the cross [*stauros* – Jesus Christ took the judgment of @@@ SIN in His own body on the @@@ CROSS so that the Believer now only uses @@@ REBOUND for sin].

(14) **Suffering for Blessing**. The cross is also used to represent Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing for the positive [+P] volition Winner Believer in time who advances to spiritual @@@ MATURITY – Matt. 10:38-40.

### MATTHEW 10:38-40

And he [the Believer] who does not take his cross [*stauros* – the @@@ CROSS here represents testing via Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing] and follow after [*akoloutheo* (to follow one who precedes)] Me [Jesus Christ] is not worthy [*axios* (having the weight of another thing of like value)] of Me. He who has found his life [*psuche* (soul) – the Believer saved by @@@ GRACE] will lose [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely)] it [the Believer should reject the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS of the @@@ WORLD], and he who has lost his life [*psuche* (soul) – the Believer that is positive [+P] to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE will turn away from the Cosmic Systems] for My sake [*heneka* (on account of)] will find it [@@@ REWARDS for the positive [+P] volition Believer].

## @@@ CUP

- (1) **Definition.** The word cup in the @@@ BIBLE means a drinking vessel. Because the person must use their *own volition* to drink the liquid contents, the cup is used to illustrate numerous concepts.
- (2) **Drinking is Nonmeritorious.** The contents of the cup go completely into the physical body where it is broken down for use throughout the body. This process is nonmeritorious – anyone can drink regardless of external factors.
- (3) **Cup of Divine Discipline.** Divine Discipline illustrates the administration of Divine @@@ SUFFERING to the individual Believer or to the nation in @@@ REVERSIONISM. Both types involve the consequences associated with rejecting @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE on a consistent basis – Isa. 51:17, 22; Jer. 25:11-13, 15-18; Lev. 26:14-33; Ezk. 23:32-34.

### ISAIAH 51:17

Rouse yourself! Rouse yourself! Arise, O Jerusalem, you who have drunk [*shathah*] from the LORD'S hand the cup [*kos*] of His anger [*chemah*]; the chalice of reeling [*tarelah* (to stagger)] you have drained [*matsah* (to drain out)] to the dregs [the Jews rejected God's @@@ GRACE and were under Divine Discipline for @@@ SUFFERING].

- (4) **Cup of Divine Blessing.** Divine Blessings and @@@ REWARDS from God overflow to the positive [+P] volition Winner Believer who reaches spiritual @@@ MATURITY – Ps. 23:5-6. In fact, @@@ GRACE blessings in @@@ TIME and eternity chase after the Believer – his cup *overflows* with wonderous blessings and the capacity to enjoy them.

### PSALM 23:5-6

You [God] prepare a table before me [King David] in the presence of my enemies; You have anointed my head with oil; my cup [*kos*] overflows [with @@@ REWARDS in @@@ TIME and eternity]. Surely goodness and lovingkindness [*chesed* (mercy) – @@@ GRACE in action] will follow [*radaph* (to pursue; to run after)] me all the days of my life, and I will dwell in the house [*bayith* (home; house containing a family)] of the LORD forever [@@@ ETERNAL SECURITY in @@@ HEAVEN].

- (5) **Cup of Salvation.** The cup of @@@ SALVATION – Ps. 116:13; Eph. 3:19. Here the emphasis is on the @@@ GRACE function of drinking which means that nothing is dependent on the character of the person doing the drinking. Anyone can drink regardless of their character or lack of character.

### PSALM 116:13

I shall lift up the cup [*kos*] of salvation [*yeshuah* (salvation, deliverance)] and call upon the name of the LORD.

- (6) **Cup of Sin.** The cup containing all the sins of the @@@ WORLD – Matt. 20:22-23; 26:39, 42; Mk. 10:38; Jn. 18:11; Lk. 22:42-44; 1 Pet. 2:24; Jn. 18:11. Jesus Christ voluntarily *drank* all the contents of this cup, trillions and trillions of sins, while on the @@@ CROSS – Heb. 2:9.

### MATTHEW 20:22-23

But Jesus answered, “You [*James and John*] do not know what you are asking. Are you able to drink the cup that I am about to drink [*@@@ CUP containing the @@@ SIN of all humanity*]?” They said to Him, “We are able.” He said to them, “My cup [*poterion – cup of @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST*] you shall drink; but to sit on My right and on My left [*the places of highest honor in @@@ REWARDS*], this is not Mine to give, but it is for those for whom it has been prepared by My Father [*God the Father delegates this to Christ*].”

### LUKE 22:42-44

Saying, “Father [*pater – Jesus speaking to God the Father*], if You are willing, remove this cup [*poterion – @@@ CUP containing the @@@ SIN of all mankind*] from Me; yet not My will, but Yours be done [*@@@ PLAN OF GOD for @@@ SALVATION*].” Now an angel from heaven appeared to Him, strengthening Him. And being in agony [*agonia* (of severe mental struggles)] He was praying very fervently; and His sweat [*hidros*] became like drops [*thrombos* (a large thick drop)] of blood, falling down upon the ground.

### JOHN 18:11

So Jesus said to Peter, “Put the sword into the sheath; the cup [*poterion* (drinking vessel)] which the Father has given Me, shall I not drink it?”

## MATTHEW 26:39

And He [**Jesus**] went a little beyond *them*, and fell on His face and prayed, saying, “My Father [*pater* – **Jesus speaking from His humanity in @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION**], if it is possible, let this cup [*poterion* – the @@@ **CUP** containing all the @@@ **SIN** of the @@@ **WORLD**] pass from Me; yet not as I will [*thelo*], but as You will.”

## MATTHEW 26:42

He went away again a second time and prayed, saying, “My Father [*pater* – **Jesus speaking from His humanity in @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION**], if this cannot pass away unless I drink [*pino*] it, Your will be done.”

- (7) **Cup of Union with Christ.** The cup of @@@ **UNION WITH CHRIST** is where the Believer shares everything that Jesus Christ has – “*This cup is the new covenant in My blood*” [1 Cor. 11:25]; Matt. 20:22-23.
- (8) **Communion Cup.** The cup of the Church Age ritual of communion to remember Jesus Christ and His work on the @@@ **CROSS** – “*do this, as often as you drink it, in remembrance of Me*” [1 Cor. 11:25-27]. This is the only ritual commanded in the Church Age and focuses on the Believer’s ability to concentrate correctly on the person and work of the LORD Jesus Christ. See @@@ **CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE**.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 11:25

In the same way *He* [**Jesus**] took the cup [*poterion* – @@@ **CUP**] also after supper, saying, “This cup is the new covenant [*diatheke* (a compact) – the Church Age @@@ **MYSTERY** of @@@ **UNION WITH CHRIST**] in My blood [**@@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST**]; do this, as often as you drink *it*, in remembrance [*anamnesis* (recollection) – @@@ **MEMORY**] of Me.”

- (9) **Bible Doctrine vs. Demonism.** The Believer is either drinking from the LORD’s cup where he consistently stays in the @@@ **DIVINE DYNASPHERE**, or from Satan’s cup where he chooses to reside in the @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS**. The negative [-N] volition **Loser** Believer cannot grow in @@@ **GRACE** because he does not drink of God’s cup of @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** – 1 Cor. 10:20-21. See @@@ **RELIGION**.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 10:20-21

No, but I [Paul] say that the things which the Gentiles [*ethnos* – unBelievers] sacrifice [*thuo*], they sacrifice to demons [*daimonion*] and not to God; and I do not want you [Believers] to become sharers [*koinonos* (a partner; associate)] in demons. You cannot drink [*pino*] the cup [*poterion*] of the LORD [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] and the cup of demons [@@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS]; you cannot partake of the table of the LORD and the table of demons.

- (10) **Cup of Anti-Semitism.** Satan has always desired to eliminate the Jewish race so God cannot keep His @@@ COVENANTS. Thus, as part of his rulership of the @@@ WORLD Satan stirs up anti-Semitism from time to time in human history. However, God controls @@@ HISTORY and has promised punishment to those nations who engage in anti-Semitism: “*And the one who curses you (the Jewish race) I (God) will curse*” [Gen. 12:3]. This cup of anti-Semitism reaches its peak in the Tribulation which will cause the total destruction of all those bent on destroying the Jews – Zech. 12:2.

## ZECHARIAH 12:2

Behold, I am going to make Jerusalem a cup [*saph*] that causes reeling to all the peoples around; and when the siege is against Jerusalem, it will also be against Judah.

- (11) **Cup of Wrath.** The expansion of maximum Satanic @@@ RELIGION will cause the practitioners to drink fully from the cup of the “*wrath of God*” [Rev. 1:9-10; 14:9-11] during the Tribulation. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.

## REVELATION 14:9-10

Then another angel, a third one, followed them, saying with a loud voice, “If anyone worships the beast and his image [maximum @@@ RELIGION in the Tribulation], and receives a mark on his forehead or on his hand, he also will drink [*pino*] of the wine of the wrath of God, which is mixed in full strength in the cup [*proterion*] of His anger; and he will be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb.”

---



## @@@ DEATH

**Definition.** There are nine types of “death” found in the @@@ BIBLE.

- (1) **One: Physical Death.** (1) The unBeliever’s human soul separates from the body at Physical Death and goes to @@@ HELL. (2) The Believer’s human @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT separates from the body at Physical Death and goes to @@@ HEAVEN – Matt. 8:22; 2 Cor. 5:1-8; Phil. 1:21; 22-23; Rom. 8:38-39. Heb. 4:12; 1 Thess. 5:23; Lk. 1:46-47. In either case, the physical body of each human disintegrates into the earth – Eccl. 3:20; 12:7.

### ECCLESIASTES 12:7

Then [at physical @@@ DEATH] the dust [*aphar* – the elements of biological @@@ LIFE] will return [*shub*] to the earth as it was, and the spirit [*ruach* (soul life)] will return to God who gave [*nathan* (to bestow)] it.

- (a) **God’s Timing.** The time of Physical Death for everyone is a matter of the Sovereignty of God – Ps. 34:22; 68:19-20; Acts 17:26; 2 Pet. 3:9.

### 2 PETER 3:9

The LORD is not slow about His promise [the @@@ RAPTURE will occur], as some count slowness, but is patient [*makrothumeo* (to persevere patiently)] toward you, not wishing [*boulomai* (to will deliberately)] for any to perish [*apolumi* (to put out of the way entirely) – the will of God is for all to be saved] but for all to come to repentance [*metanoia* (a change of mind) – reject @@@ RELIGION and accept God’s @@@ SALVATION].

- (b) **Salvation Opportunity Cuts Off.** Physical Death ends the opportunity for the unBeliever to be saved – “*it is appointed for men* (unBelievers) *to die once and after this comes judgment*” [Heb. 9:27-28]; Isa. 55:6; 2 Cor. 5:8; 6:2; Job 27:8; Lk. 12:19-21; 16:19-31; Ezk. 28:10.

### JOB 27:8

For what is the hope [*tiqvah* (expectation)] of the godless [the unBeliever] when he is cut off [*batsa* (to cut off; to finish)] – physical @@@ DEATH], when God requires [*shalah* (to require; to extract)] his life [*nephesh* (soul)]?

## HEBREWS 9:27-28

And inasmuch as it is appointed for men [**unBeliever**] to die [*apothenesko* (to be subject to eternal misery in hell)] once [*hapax* (one time)] and after this comes judgment [*krsis* (based on justice) – the unBeliever will face the Great White Throne @@@ JUDGMENT], so Christ also, having been offered once [on the @@@ CROSS] to bear the sins of many [@@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT], will appear a second time for salvation [*soteria* (deliverance) – at the 2nd Coming Jesus Christ will deliver the Jews] without reference to sin [Jesus Christ will be in a @@@ RESURRECTION body], to those who eagerly [*apekdechomai* (eagerly; to expect fully)] await Him.

## LUKE 12:19-21

And I [**unBeliever**] will say to my soul, “Soul, you have many goods laid up for many years *to come*; take your ease, eat, drink *and* be merry.” But God said to him, ““You fool [*aphron* (one without reason)]! This very night your soul is required [*apaiteo* (to demand back) – at physical death the soul departs the body] of you; and *now* who will own what you have prepared?” So is the man who stores up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God [the wealth of possessing the Righteousness [+R] of God for @@@ SALVATION].”

## EZEKIEL 28:10

You will die [*muth* – physical death] the death [*maveth* (realm of the dead) – spiritual death] of the uncircumcised [the unBeliever].

- (c) **Blessings From God.** God will not take a Believer home to @@@ HEAVEN until He has given every possible blessing to him compatible with His Justice – 2 Cor. 5:8. Accordingly, even the **Loser** Believer gets certain amounts of Divine @@@ GRACE blessings despite his total indifference to, or rejection of, @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:8

We [**Believers**] are of good courage, I [**Paul**] say, and prefer rather to be absent from the body [*soma* – at physical death the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT departs the body] and to be at home [*endemeo* (to be among one’s own people)] with the LORD [*kurios* (God) – in @@@ HEAVEN].

- (d) **Prolong Life.** God prolongs physical life for the positive [+P] volition Believer – Ps. 3:1-2; 23-24; 33:17-22; 56:13; 102:18-24; 116:8; 118:18; Prov. 3:1-2; 14:27. Indeed, praying to “continue to live in order to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY” mirrors a Directive Will of God.

### PROVERBS 3:1-2

My son, do not forget my [Solomon taught and wrote @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] teaching [*torah* – Bible Doctrine], but let your heart [*leb* – the Believer’s positive [+P] volition decisions from the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT] keep my commandments [*mitsvah* (instruction)]; for length of days [*yom*] and years of life [*chay*] and peace [*shalom* (prosperity) – @@@ MATURITY and @@@ REWARDS] they will add to you.

- (e) **Dying Grace.** In His @@@ GRACE, God provides all things necessary for the mature Believer when Physical Death arrives [Ps. 116:15; Phil. 1:20-21; 2 Tim. 4:7-8]. This is “dying grace” – Ps. 23.

### PSALM 23

The LORD is my [King David] shepherd [*raah* (to tend, shepherd)], I shall not want [*chaser* (to be without)]. He makes me lie down in green pastures; He leads me beside quiet waters. He restores my soul [*nephesh*]; He guides me in the paths of righteousness [*tsedeq* (what is right or just) – God provides @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE so David can reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY] for His name’s sake. Even though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death [*tsalmaveth* (a death shadowed valley) – @@@ DEATH holds no @@@ FEAR], I fear no evil [*raah*], for You are with me; Your rod [Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing] and Your staff [@@@ DIVINE GUIDANCE], they comfort me. You prepare a table before me in the presence of my enemies; You have anointed my head with oil; my cup overflows [with @@@ REWARDS in @@@ TIME and eternity]. Surely goodness and lovingkindness [*chesed* (mercy) – @@@ GRACE in action] will follow [*radaph* (to pursue; to run after)] me all the days of my life, and I will dwell in the house [*bayith* (home, house containing a family)] of the LORD forever [@@@ ETERNAL SECURITY in @@@ HEAVEN].

- (f) **True Love.** True @@@ LOVE in @@@ MARRIAGE can be a stronger @@@ EMOTION than a loss at Physical Death – S.S. 8:6.

- (g) **Confidence.** Physical Death cannot be faced with dignity by Believers who reject @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – Lam. 1:19-20.
- (h) **Reminder.** Physical Death is a reminder of the following facts: (1) shortness of one's time on the earth [Js. 4:14]; (2) fame and fortune are fleeting [Mk. 8:36-37]; (3) to prepare for eternity [Acts 16:31]; and (4) the certainty of @@@ JUDGMENT for the unBeliever [Jn. 3:18, 36].
- (i) **What Believers Can Anticipate After Physical Death.**
  - 1. **No Hell.** Staying out of @@@ HELL – “*no condemnation for those who are in Christ*” [Rom. 8:1]; Heb. 9:27-28. Unless a particular Believer is alive at the @@@ RAPTURE, where he will be transformed, a Believer only dies once – Physical Death.
  - 2. **Yes Heaven.** Going to @@@ HEAVEN where there is no more pain or the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE – 2 Cor. 5:8; Rev. 21:4.

## REVELATION 21:4

And He [God] will wipe away every [*exaleipho* (to anoint or wash in every part; to erase)] tear from their [the Believer] eyes; and [in @@@ HEAVEN] there will no longer be *any* death [*thanatos* (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)]; there will no longer be *any* mourning [*penthos*], or crying [*krauge*], or pain [*ponos* (great trouble)]; the first [*protos* (first in time)] things have passed away [*aperchomai* (to go away; depart)].

- 3. **Rewards.** The Winner Believer's wondrous eternal @@@ REWARDS bestowed at the Judgment Seat of Christ, above and beyond a resurrection body – Phil. 1:20; 1 Cor. 2:9.

## PHILIPPIANS 1:20

According to my [Paul] earnest expectation [*apokaradokia* (anxious and persistent expectation)] and hope [*elpis* (confidence)], that I will not be put to shame [*aischunomai* (to dishonor)] in anything, but *that* with all boldness [*parrhesia* (freedom of speaking)], Christ will even now, as always, be exalted [*megaluno* (to make great)] in my body [*soma*], whether by life or by death [*thanatos* (death of the body)] – Judgment Seat of Christ @@@ REWARDS].

## 1 CORINTHIANS 2:9

But just as it is written, “Things which eye has not seen and ear has not heard, and *which* have not entered the heart [*kardia*] of man, all that God has prepared [*hetoimazo* (to make ready beforehand) – the fantastic eternal @@@ REWARDS placed in an Escrow Account are beyond human comprehension] for those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly) – only the positive [+P] volition Believer at spiritual @@@ MATURITY can @@@ LOVE God] Him.”

4. **Eternal Life.** To eternal existence in the new Heaven, above and beyond human comprehension – Jn. 14:1-3; 1 Jn. 5:11-12, 20.

## JOHN 14:1-3

Do not let your heart be troubled; believe in God, believe also in Me [**Jesus Christ**]. In My Father’s house [*oikia* (an inhabited dwelling)] are many dwelling places [*mone*]; if it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare [*hetoimazo* (to make ready)] a place for you. If [**First Class Condition – and I do**] I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you to Myself [**at the @@@ RAPTURE**], that where I am, *there* you may be also [**@@@ ETERNAL SECURITY in @@@ HEAVEN**].

5. **New Body.** The Believer is waiting for a new indestructible and eternal @@@ RESURRECTION body – Phil. 3:21; 1 Jn. 3:1-2; Jn. 11:25; Job 19:25-26. Getting a resurrection body at the @@@ RAPTURE – 1 Pet. 1:3-5; Eph. 1:3-5; 1 Cor.3:11-15.

## 1 PETER 1:4-5

To *obtain* an inheritance [*kleronomia* (property received by inheritance) – the Believer receives a resurrection body and @@@ REWARDS] *which is* imperishable [*aohthartos* (immortal; not able to decay)] and undefiled [*amiantos* (unspoiled)] and will not fade away [*amarantos* (perennial; perpetual)], reserved [*tereo* (to post a guard)] in heaven [*ouranos* – the third @@@ HEAVEN] for you [**the Believer**], who are protected by the power of God through faith [*pistis* – the truth of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE guarantees these things] for a salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – the Believer is given these things by God] ready to be revealed in the last time [**at the @@@ RAPTURE** followed by the @@@ JUDGMENT Seat of Christ].

- (j) **Precious.** As His children all Believers, regardless of spiritual status, are “*precious*” [Ps. 16:3] to God – Ps. 116:15; Isa. 43:1-4; 1 Jn. 3:1.

## PSALM 116:15

Precious [*yaqar* (valuable; prized)] in the sight of the LORD is the death [*maveth* – physical @@@ DEATH] of His godly ones [all Believers possess the Righteousness [+R] of God and are in His family].

- (k) **Examples.** Six Believers in the Bible at the point of Physical Death:

1. **Moses** – Deut. 34:1-7 [**Winner** Believer].

## DEUTERONOMY 34:7

Although Moses was one hundred and twenty years old when he died [*maveth*], his eye was not dim, nor his vigor abated [although Moses was not allowed to enter the promised land due to an act of disobedience, he was allowed to view the land before his @@@ DEATH].

2. **Paul** – 2 Tim. 4:6-8 [**Winner** Believer].

## 2 TIMOTHY 4:6-8

For I [Paul] am already being poured out as a drink offering, and the time [*kairos*] of my departure has come [the Romans would execute him within a few weeks]. I have fought [*agonizomai* (to enter a contest in the games)] the good [*kalos* (beautiful to look at)] fight [*agon* (the place of contest) – in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT], I have finished the course [*dromos* (the course of life) – Paul had reached the high ground of spiritual @@@ MATURITY], I have kept [*tereo* (to attend to carefully)] the faith [*pistis* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]; in the future [*loipoi*] there is laid up [*apokeimai* (to be laid away)] for me the crown [*stephanos* (a wreath of garland which was given as a prize to victors in public games)] of righteousness [*dikaiosune*], which the LORD, the righteous Judge, will award [*apodidomi* (to deliver)] to me on that day [*hemera* – Paul’s @@@ REWARDS at the @@@ JUDGMENT Seat of Christ]; and not only to me, but also to all who have loved [*agapao* (to love dearly)] His appearing [*epiphaneia* – all Believers who reach maturity].



3. **King Saul** – 1 Sam. 28:4-7 [**Loser** Believer]; 4. **King David** – Ps. 23 [**Winner** Believer] 5. **Joseph** – Gen. 50:24-26 [**Winner** Believer]; 6. **Peter** – 2 Pet. 1:12-21 [**Winner** Believer].

(l) **Four Causes.** Four causes for the Believer's Physical Death.

1. **Time Up.** God allots a certain amount of days for each Believer – 2 Tim. 4:7; Eccl. 3; 2 Pet. 1:13-14. The confidence of the **Winner** Believer and God's perfect timing – Job 5:19-27.

### JOB 5:19-27

:19-20

“**deliver**” – *natsal* (to cause to be delivered or rescued).

“**redeem**” – *padah* (to preserve). To preserve in economic disaster.

:21-23

“**violence**” – *shod* (a violent or painful death).

“**laugh**” – *sachaq* (laughing from inner confidence). The mature Believer who knows that God controls the matter has no fear.

“**afraid**” – *yare*. Stones and beasts were instruments of violent death. Indeed, all Believers are further protected by their guardian @@@ ANGELS.

:24

“**You will know**” – *jada*. The mature Believer.

“**tent**” – *ohel* (a nomad's tent). The human soul's habitation in the body.

:26-27

“**full vigor**” – Physical Death at God's exact timing, which is perfect.

“**grain**” – There is a right time and a wrong time to harvest grain.

2. **Sin Unto Death.** The @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH of a reversionistic Believer. See 1 Jn. 5:16; 1 Chron. 10:13.
3. **Suicide.** Long or short type. The Believer's negative [-N] volition overrides the @@@ PLAN OF GOD for his life.
4. **Glorification of God.** Physical Death of a mature Believer during the Angelic Conflict – Phil. 1:20-21; Jn. 21:19; Rev. 2:13.

## REVELATION 2:13

I [Jesus Christ] know where you [Pergamum Church] dwell, where Satan's throne [*thronos* – Satan had established a major HQ there] is; and you hold fast [*krateo*] My name, and did not deny My faith [*pistis* – Believers stayed with @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] even in the days of Antipas, My witness [*martus*], My faithful [*pistos*] one [Antipas was the former Pastor/Teacher at Pergamum who was executed by the Romans], who was killed [*apokteino* (to inflict mortal death)] among you, where Satan dwells.

- (2) **Two: Spiritual Death at Birth.** At the moment of birth God imputes to the viable fetus the “spark of life” called *neshemah* in the Hebrew. This ignites physical life. Simultaneously, God also imputes Adam's original @@@ SIN to the baby which ignites individual Spiritual Death – Lk. 9:6; Col. 2:13; Eph. 2:1; Rom. 5:12, 18; 6:23; 1 Cor. 15:22; Gen. 2:17; 1 Pet. 3:18; 4:6. This is a “real imputation” by God as there is an affinity attraction between each person's genetic Old Sin Nature and Adam's original sin. Spiritual Death means that **all humans are born physically alive but spiritually dead**. It was the spiritually “*dead*” [Jn. 5:25] that heard Jesus' real offer of salvation.

## LUKE 9:6

But He [Jesus] said to him, “Allow the dead [*nekro* (spiritually dead) – physically alive but no human spirit] to bury their own dead [*physically dead*]; but as for you, go and proclaim everywhere the kingdom of God.”

## ROMANS 5:12

Therefore, just as through one man [Adam] sin [*hamartia* – the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] entered into the world, and death [*thanatos* – spiritual @@@ DEATH] through sin, and so death [*thanatos*] spread [*dierchomai*] to all men [*anthropos*], because all sinned [*hamartano* – personal @@@ SIN].

- (3) **Three: The Second Death.** The Second Death is reserved for the unBeliever only. It is irrevocably fixed at the unBeliever's Physical Death but finalized at the Great White Throne @@@ JUDGMENT where he is sent to the “*Lake of Fire*” [Rev. 20:12-15]. This Second Death is a direct consequence of the unBeliever's choice against God's offer of @@@ SALVATION – Jn. 3:36; 5:24; Heb. 9:27; Job 27:8; Matt. 25:41; Ezk. 28:10; 2 Thess. 1:7-9.

## REVELATION 20:14-15

Then death [*thanatos* (death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – spiritual @@@ DEATH] and Hades were thrown [*ballo*] into the lake [*limne* (a lake)] of fire [*pur* (burning)]. This is the second [*deuteros*] death [*thanatos*], the lake of fire [eternal separation from God in the Lake of Fire]. And if anyone's name was not found written [*grapho*] in the book [*biblos*] of life [*zoe* – the unBeliever has been blotted out of the Book of Life], he was thrown [*ballo*] into the lake of fire.

## 2 THESSALONIANS 1:7-9

And to give relief to you who are afflicted and to us [Paul and his traveling seminary team] as well when the LORD Jesus will be revealed from heaven [*ouranos*] with His mighty angels [*aggelos*] in flaming fire [*pur*], dealing out retribution [*ekdikesis* (vindication punishment)] to those who do not know God [unBelievers on negative [-N] volition] and to those who do not obey [*hupakouo* (to listen, to harken to a command) – unBelievers who actually rejected @@@ SALVATION] the gospel [*euaggelion*] of our LORD Jesus. These [unBelievers] will pay the penalty [*dike* (a suit at law)] of eternal [*aionios* (without end)] destruction [*olethros*], away from [*apo*] the presence [*prosopon* (the face)] of the LORD [eternal separation from God in the Lake of Fire] and from the glory [*doxaz* – the @@@ TRINITY] of His power.

- (4) **Four: Positional Death.** Regardless of the level of @@@ MATURITY of any given Believer, all Believers at the point of @@@ SALVATION are immediately identified with Jesus Christ in His death on the @@@ CROSS and thus are forever in a state of Positional Death to the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS, as well as liberated from the Spiritual Death status of the unBeliever – Rom. 6:3-11; Col. 2:12; 3:3. This @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST is irrevocable. Again, the fact of Positional Death is shared by the Winner and the Loser Believer. Of course, the Loser Believer will waste his life in @@@ REVERSIONISM and live in Operational Death per *infra* (6).

## COLOSSIANS 3:3

For you [the Believer] have died [*apothnesko*] and your life is hidden [*krupto* – the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE and the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE] with Christ [@@@ UNION WITH CHRIST] in God.

- (5) **Five: Operational Death.** The **Loser** Believer who rejects @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE and refuses to live in the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE is in Operational Death. No Divine Good [*agathos*] is produced by the **Loser** Believer in the status of Operational Death where he haplessly and stupidly imitates the unBeliever's lifestyle in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS – Rev. 3:1; Rom. 8:6-8, 13; Js. 2:26; Gal. 5:4; Prov. 8:36; Eph. 5:14-17; 1 Tim. 5:6.

#### GALATIANS 5:4

You [Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM] have been severed [*katargeo* (to render idle; unemployed) – Operational @@@ DEATH] from Christ, you who are seeking to be justified by law [*nomos* – Believers who reject the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE and seek the @@@ MOSAIC LAW]; you have fallen [*ekipto* (to fall out)] from grace [*charis* – these Believers are still saved, but @@@ GRACE cannot operate with @@@ RELIGION].

#### 1 TIMOTHY 5:6

But she [Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM] who gives herself to wanton pleasure [living in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS] is dead Operational @@@ DEATH] even while she lives [*zao* (to be among the living)].

- (6) **Six: Temporal Death.** The temporary loss of Fellowship with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT results in Temporal Death for the Believer. Temporal Death, being under the power of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE, occurs each time the Believer sins – Lk. 15:24, 32; Eph. 5:14-17; Js. 1:13-17; 1 Tim. 5:6. This status is remedied when the Believer uses @@@ REBOUND which places him back into the absolute spiritual status of being Filled with the Holy Spirit.

#### EPHESIANS 5:14-17

For this reason it says, “Awake, sleeper [Believer in Operational @@@ DEATH], and arise from the dead [*nekros* – Temporal Death is cured by @@@ REBOUND], and Christ will shine on you.” Therefore be careful how you walk [*peripateo* – Believer's lifestyle], not as unwise men but as wise [apply @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], making the most of your time, because the days are evil [*poneros* – Satan's @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS]. So then do not be foolish [*aphron* (without reason)], but understand what the will of the LORD is [reach @@@ MATURITY to glorify God].

## JAMES 1:13-15

Let no one [Believer] say when he is tempted [peirazo], “I am being tempted by God”; for God cannot be tempted by evil [kakos], and He Himself does not tempt anyone [the @@@ TRINITY cannot tempt anyone to commit @@@ SIN]. But each one is tempted when he is carried away [exelko (to draw out)] and enticed [delazo (to bait and catch)] by his own lust [epithumia (to long for that which is forbidden) – from the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE]. Then when lust has conceived [sullambano – the Believer uses his own negative [-N] volition to give in to the temptation to commit the sin], it gives birth [tikto (to bring forth)] to sin [hamartia – the personal sin is then committed]; and when sin is accomplished [apoteleo], it brings forth [apokueo] death [thanatos – Temporal @@@ DEATH for the Believer].

- (7) **Seven: Sin Unto Death.** Some Loser Believers die a horrible Physical Death called the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH – Isa. 38:17-22; 1 Jn. 5:16.

## 1 JOHN 5:16

If anyone sees his brother [adelphos – a Believer] committing a sin [hamartia] not leading to death [thanatos – physical @@@ DEATH], he shall ask and God will for him give life [zoe] to those who commit sin [hamartano] not leading to death [thanatos]. There is a sin [hamartia] leading to death [thanatos – the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH for the Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM]; I [John] do not say that he should make request [@@@ PRAYER] for this.

- (8) **Eight: Christ’s Unique Spiritual Death.** The deaths of Christ on the @@@ CROSS. Christ died twice [spiritual and physical] – Isa. 53:9; Heb. 9:27-28.

## ISAIAH 53:9

His [Jesus Christ] grave was assigned [nathan (to set; to give)] with wicked [rasha (criminals; wicked men)] men, yet He was with a rich [ashiyir (wealth)] man [Joseph of Arimathea put Jesus in his own tomb] in His death[s] [maveth (state of death) – in the plural], because He had done no violence [Christ was innocent of the crime of inciting rebellion against Rome], nor was there any deceit in His mouth [Jesus Christ was without @@@ SIN and Perfect in His life].

- (9) **Nine: Sexual Death.** Inability to copulate – Rom. 4:16-21; Heb. 11:11-12.
- (10) **Cut Off From Living.** The dead – in @@@ HELL [unBelievers] or in @@@ HEAVEN [Believers] – cannot know anything about the living. *See* Job 4:20-22; Eccl. 9:5-6; Lk. 16:29-31; 23:43; 1 Sam. 28:19; 2 Sam. 12:23. There are no such things as disembodied human “ghosts.” There are, however, @@@ ANGELS of all sorts and stripes and many of them operate around mankind to either attack [Fallen angels] or defend [Saved angels] the @@@ PLAN OF GOD. *See* @@@ DEMONISM; @@@ PRAYER.

### ECCLESIASTES 9:5

For the living [*chay*] know they will die [*muth* – physical @@@ DEATH]; but the dead [*muth*] do not know anything, nor have they any longer a reward, for their memory is forgotten.

### 2 SAMUEL 12:23

But now he [*David's son by Bathsheba*] has died [*muth* – after a short illness the baby died]; why should I [*David*] fast? Can I bring him back again? I will go to him [*in Paradise David will see his minor son as a @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT*], but he will not return to me [*while David is living on the earth*].

### 1 SAMUEL 28:19

Moreover the LORD will also give over Israel along with you [*King Saul*] into the hands of the Philistines, therefore tomorrow you and your sons [*all were Believers*] will be with me [*the Prophet Samuel who was brought back from Paradise to speak to Saul*]. Indeed, the LORD will give over the army of Israel into the hands of the Philistines!

### LUKE 23:43

And He [*Jesus*] said to him, “Truly I say to you [*the thief being executed next to Jesus as He hung on the @@@ CROSS*], today [*semeron (this very day)*] you shall be with Me in Paradise [*paradeisos – Paradise or Abraham's Bosom is a separate compartment in @@@ HELL which was the temporary abode of the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT of Believers in the Old Testament*].”

---



## @@@ DEMONISM

- (1) **Definition.** Demons are Unsaved @@@ ANGELS under the control of the devil Lucifer, the ruler of the @@@ WORLD. As with Saved angels there are a wide variety of different types of demons. Demons are also under a military-type rank force structure – Rev. 2:13. Beelzebub is the chief Fallen angel operational on the earth today – Matt. 9:34; 12:24; Lk. 11:15. Field grade officer demons are called *kosmokrators* [see Dan. 10:13, 20; Eph. 6:12] and are assigned to every major human population center in the world. Others, like the *beni ha elohim*, the Fallen angels of Gen. 6:2, are confined in Tartarus, while another massive demon army is currently located in the compartment of @@@ HELL called the Abyss waiting to be released during the Tribulation. See Eph. 6:10-17. See @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.

### EPHESIANS 6:10-17

Finally, be strong [*endunamoo* (endure with strength)] in the LORD and in the strength of His might. Put on the full armor [*panoplia* (complete military battle gear)] of God, so that you will be able to stand firm [*histemi*] against the schemes [*mehodeia*] of the devil [Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD]. For our struggle [*pale* (to wrestle) – in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT] is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers [*arche* – officer demons], against the powers [*exousia* – rank and file demons], against the world forces [*kosmokrator* – senior officer demons] of this darkness [*skotos* – the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], against the spiritual forces of wickedness [*ponera*] in the heavenly [*epouranios* (existing in heaven)] places. Therefore, take up the full armor of God, so that you will be able to resist [*anthistemi*] in the evil day, and having done everything, to stand firm [*histemi*]. Stand firm therefore, having girded your loins [*osphus* (the hip)] with truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], and having put on the breastplate of righteousness [*dikaiosune* – God's Righteousness [+R]], and having shod your feet with the preparation of the gospel [*euaggelion* (good news)] of peace [*eirene* – @@@ SOTERIOLOGY]; in addition to all, taking up the shield of faith [*pistis* – @@@ FAITH/Rest] with which you will be able to extinguish [*sbennumi* (to quench)] all the flaming arrows of the evil one. And take the helmet of salvation [*soterion* (he who embodies this salvation) – Jesus Christ provided @@@ SALVATION], and the sword [*machaira*] of the [Holy] Spirit, which is the word of God.

## REVELATION 2:13

I [Christ] know where you [Pergamum Church] dwell, where Satan's throne [Satan had a major HQ of his demons at that locality] is; and you hold fast [krateo (to take powerful hold of something)] My name, and did not deny My faith [the Believers stayed positive [+P] to Bible Doctrine] even in the days of Antipas, My witness [subject matter expert exhibit], My faithful [pistos] one [Antipas was the former @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER at Pergamum who was executed by Rome], who was killed among you, where Satan dwells.

- (2) **Power of Demons.** God controls @@@ HISTORY and demons are powerless to hinder the @@@ PLAN OF GOD – 1 Jn. 3:8; Heb. 2:14-15; Job 1:12, 18-19; Lk. 22:31-32; Matt. 8:28-32. However, in allowances under the Plan of God, Satan and his demons are permitted to do certain things.

## LUKE 22:31

Simon, Simon [Jesus speaking to Peter], behold, Satan has demanded permission to sift [siniazo] you like wheat [Peter under Divine Discipline].

- (a) **Blind Humans.** Demons can blind humans via the evil of @@@ RELIGION – “*even is our gospel is veiled, it is veiled to those who are perishing, in whose case the god of this world has blinded the minds of the unbelieving so that they might not see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ*” [2 Cor. 4:3-4]; Gen. 4:3; Ps. 109:7; 1 Cor. 15:56;; Jn. 8:44-45; 10:10; Heb. 2:14.

## JOHN 8:44-45

You [Jesus speaking unBeliever religious leaders] are of your father [pater] the devil [diabolos (slanderer) – Satan], and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer [anthropoktonos (manslayer)] from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own nature, for he is a liar and the father of lies [@@@ RELIGION; @@@ GOOD]. But because I speak the truth [Bible Doctrine], you do not believe Me.

- (b) **Remove From Power.** Demons can remove certain humans from positions of power in society – “*let another take his office*” [Ps. 109:8].

- (c) **Torment.** Demons can kill or shorten life – Ps. 109:8-9; Job 1:12, 18-19. If allowed, Satan can administer the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH – 1 Cor. 5:5-7. For example, God allowed an “*evil spirit*” [1 Sam. 18:10; 19:9] to torment King Saul as he sought to murder David. God also allowed a “*messenger of Satan to torment*” Paul [2 Cor. 12:7].

### 1 CORINTHIANS 5:5-7

*I [Paul] have decided to deliver [paradidomi (to give into the hands of another)] such a one [a Believer having sexual relations with his own mother] to Satan for the destruction of his flesh [sarx – @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH], so that his [human] spirit [pneuma] may be saved [sozo (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven] in the day of the LORD Jesus [at the @@@ RAPTURE].*

### LUKE 13:16

And this woman, a daughter of Abraham as she is, whom Satan has bound [*deo (to fasten with chains)*] for eighteen long years, should she not have been released from this bond on the Sabbath day [*Jesus speaking*]?

- (d) **Discord.** Demons can pit people against one another – Ps. 109:10-12.
- (e) **Money.** Demons can give/remove money and status – Ps. 109:11, 13.
- (f) **Sickness.** Demons can cause sickness and disease to include demon possession of an unBeliever – Job. 2:6-8; Matt. 12:22; Acts 10:38; Mk. 5:5; 9:17-18. In turn, the removal of a demon can cause an instant cure in that person – Mk. 1:32-34; Matt. 10:1; Acts 8:7-19; Lk. 11:14; 1 Sam. 16:23. Thus, Satan may remove a demon from a demon-possessed unBeliever to cause a “fake” healing in order to impress a given audience for his own purposes of deception – 2 Thess. 2:9; Rev. 16:14; Matt. 24:24. Today, God heals directly without human agents – Paul in Acts 19; cf. Phil. 2:27; 2 Cor. 12:8. See @@@ MIRACLES.

### LUKE 11:14

And He [*Jesus Christ*] was casting out [*ekballo (to drive out; to cast out)*] a demon [*daimonion*], and it was mute [*kophos (dumb; speechless)*]; when the demon had gone out, the mute man spoke; and the crowds were amazed.

- (g) **Accuse.** Satan “*accuses*” [Rev. 12:10] Believers of @@@ SIN before the Throne of God – Job 1:6-12; Lk. 22:31-32; Zech. 3:1-3; Rom. 8:33.

### ZECHARIAH 3:1-3

Then he [an angel] showed me [Zechariah the Prophet] Joshua the high priest standing before the angel of the LORD [Jesus Christ as a @@@ THEOPHANY], and Satan standing at his right hand to accuse [*watan (to accuse; to be or act as an adversary)*] him [accusing Joshua of @@@ SIN]. The LORD [Jesus Christ] said to Satan, “The LORD [God the Father] rebuke [*gaar (to rebuke; to reprove)*] you Satan! Indeed, the LORD who has chosen Jerusalem [God’s controls @@@ HISTORY] rebuke you! Is this not a brand plucked from the fire [Joshua is a saved Believer plucked from @@@ HELL by the @@@ GRACE of God]?” Now Joshua was clothed with filthy [*tso (human excrement)*] – Joshua’s personal sin] garments and standing before the angel [Joshua was in carnality and needed to @@@ REBOUND].

- (h) **Attack and Distract.** Demons attack and distract Believers by “*the snare of the Devil*” [2 Tim. 2:26]. See Eph. 6:12; 2 Cor. 10-11; 1 Thess. 2:17-18. Further, Satan will invariably take full credit for the Believer that falls into @@@ SIN and @@@ REVERSIONISM, but the real cause is always the Believer’s negative [-N] volition to God.

### 1 THESSALONIANS 2:18

For we [Paul and his traveling seminary team] wanted to come to you – I, Paul, more than once – and yet Satan hindered [*egkopto (to impede one’s course by cutting off his way)*] us.

- (i) **Demon Possession.** In certain circumstances of negative [-N] volition by an unBeliever only, demons can take possession of the body of said unBeliever – Jn. 13:27. However, no demon can ever possess the physical body of a Believer because God Indwells all Believers and “*the evil one does not touch him*” [1 Jn. 5:18]. See *infra* (3) and (4).

### JOHN 13:27

After the morsel, Satan then entered [*eiserchomai (to go out or come in)*] into him [Judas]. Therefore Jesus said to him, “What you do [*poieo*], do quickly.”

- (j) **Influence World Events.** Demons can influence @@@ WORLD events. Demons are assigned to fulfill Satan's objective of advancing the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS – Dan. 10:13, 20; Eph. 6:12. God, however, limits the degree of demon influence in accordance with His @@@ PLAN OF GOD for @@@ HISTORY – 2 Thess. 2:6.

### DANIEL 10:13

But the prince [*sar* (ruler) – an angel] of the kingdom of Persia [Satan's demon general officer assigned to oversee events in Persia] was withstanding [*amad* (to stand firm against)] me [the angel Gabriel who had been dispatched by God to Daniel to give a prophecy] for twenty-one days [the demon forces successfully held up Gabriel's mission]; then behold, Michael [the senior Army group angel], one of the chief [*rishon* (primary)] princes [*sar*], came to help me, for I had been left there with the kings [*melek* (demons) – the many rank and file demons supporting the general officer demon] of Persia.

- (3) **Demon Possession.** Demon possession can only occur in the physical body [not the soul] of an unBeliever [not a Believer] and then only if chosen by that person through a maximum intake of: (1) the works @@@ RELIGION [Isa. 8:19]; (2) the heavy use of drugs [Gal. 5:20 *pharmekia* (witchcraft)]; (3) maximum idolatry in the life [1 Cor. 10:19-21; Isa. 2:6; Lk. 8:2; Mk. 16:9]; or (4) the unBeliever overtly invites the possession of his body by demon(s).
- (a) **No Believers.** Although the Believer cannot be possessed by demons, those on negative [-N] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE can suck into their thinking the exact viewpoint of demonism – “*doctrines of demons*” [1 Tim. 4:1]. See @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS.

### 1 TIMOTHY 4:1

But the [Holy] Spirit explicitly says that in later times [the Church Age] some [Believers in @@@ REVERSIONISM] will fall away from the faith [*pistis* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], paying attention to deceitful spirits and doctrines [*didaskalia* (teachings)] of demons [*daimonion*].

- (b) **Characteristics of Demon Possession.**

1. **Volition.** Partial or total loss of volition – Mk. 5:6.

2. **Abnormal Behavior.** To varying degrees. This might include: convulsions [Mk. 1:26; 9:20]; violence [Matt. 8:28; 17:15]; extraordinary strength [Mk. 5:4; Lk. 8:29]; ranting [Mk. 5:5]; self-mutilation [Mk. 5:5]; foaming at the mouth [Lk. 9:39; Mk. 9:20]; nakedness [Lk. 8:27]; grinding of the teeth [Mk. 9:18]; diseases [Mk. 9:17, 25; Lk. 4:45; Matt. 12:22]; or speaking in other voices [1 Sam. 28:3-19; Isa. 29:4; Rev. 16:13]. Note: The temporary gift of tongues which first appeared at the start of the Church Age expired completely by A.D. 70, per @@@ GIFTS.
- (4) **Capital Offense.** Under the @@@ MOSAIC LAW demon-possessed people were executed – Lev. 20:27. Again, no unBeliever is ever possessed without their free will essentially inviting same to occur in some form or fashion.

## LEVITICUS 20:27

Now a man or a woman who is a medium [*ob (necromancer; one who evokes the dead)*] or a spiritist [*uiddeonyi (a familiar spirit; soothsayer)*] shall surely be put to death [*muth*]. They shall be stoned with stones, their bloodguiltiness [*dam*] is upon them.

- (5) **Worshipping Idols.** Idolatry in the @@@ BIBLE is directly related to demons and is called the altar of Satan. The Greek word for “idols” is *diamonia*. See Lev. 17:7; Ps. 96:5; Ex. 12:12; Isa. 19:3. Demons stir up spiritual idolatry to worship “*the creature rather than the Creator*” [1 Cor. 10:19-21]; Ezk. 16:23-43; 23:24-28; Jer. 3:8-10; Rev. 17:1-5; Rom. 1:18-25. Demons operate at or around idols – Zech. 10:2; Isa. 57:5-6; Deut. 32:17-18.
- (a) **Satyrs** [the mythical man/goat]. Satyrs were worshiped as idols as part of the Phallic Cult – Isa. 13:21; 34:14; Lev. 17:7, *dsair (the hairy one)*.
  - (b) **Human Sacrifice.** Human sacrifices are demonic events – 1 Cor. 10:19-21; Ps. 106:37-39; 109:7-14; Lev. 17:7; Deut. 23:37-38; 32:11; Isa. 57:5-7. Sex orgies often accompanied the human sacrifices which were particularly gruesome with the screams of children roasted alive. Apostate Jews would regularly engage in this practice in the Old Testament, e.g., King Ahaz sacrificed at heathen altars and “*even made his son pass through the fire*” [2 Kng. 16:3]; Ezk. 16:20-21; 23:37.



**2 KINGS 16:3**

But he [**King Ahaz, Southern Kingdom**] walked in the way of the kings of Israel [**the Northern Kingdom was in complete apostasy**], and even made his son pass through the fire [**human sacrifice**], according to the abominations of the nations whom the LORD had driven out from before the sons of Israel [**when the Jews conquered the land under Joshua**].

**EZEKIEL 23:37**

For they [**Jews in Judah**] have committed adultery [*naaph*], and blood is on their hands. Thus they have committed adultery with their idols and even caused their sons, whom they bore to Me, to pass through *the fire* to them as food [**offerings to the demon idols included roasting their own children while they were still alive**].

- (c) **Phallic Cult.** The Canaanites were the original source of the Phallic Cult. Their chief god was El. Baal was the son of El and was said to provide fertility to crops and people. Mot, the god of Death, kills Baal but Baal's sister/wife Anath finds his body and brings him back to life. Anath becomes the goddess of sex and warfare. Egyptians later call her Ishtar; Babylonians, Ashtarte; Greeks, Aphrodite; and Romans, Venus. In Greece El became Zeus; in Rome El became Jupiter. All of these "*worldly fables*" [1 Tim. 4:7] and myths are advanced by Satan to distort and/or conceal God's true message of @@@ SALVATION.
- (d) **Jewish Apostasy.** The Jews regularly refused to destroy the various idol cults surrounding their nation and, in many cases, became worse than the original practitioners in the realm of murders, human sacrifice, and sex orgies – Ps. 106:32-39. *See* Deut. 18:9-12.
- (e) **The Golden Calf.** Made by Aaron when Moses was away receiving the Ten Commandments, it was used to worship a god of Egypt – Deut. 32:16-20. The "*play*" terminology of Ex. 32:6, referred to some of the Hebrews engaging in sex orgies around the idol. *See* @@@ SIN.
- (f) **Apostasy is Demonism.** *See* Deut. 32:15-18; Ps. 106:37; 1 Tim. 4:1 Isa. 57:5-6. Jewish King Manasseh was demon-possessed; it is said he killed the Prophet Isaiah by having him sawed in half – 2 Kng. 21:2-16.

## ISAIAH 57:5-6

*Who* inflame [**sex orgies**] yourselves among the oaks, under every luxuriant tree, who slaughter the children in the ravines, under the clefts of the crags? Among the smooth *stones* of the ravine is your portion, they are your lot; even to them you have poured out a drink offering, you have made a grain offering. Shall I [**God**] relent concerning these things?

## DEUTERONOMY 32:17-18

They [**the religious Jews**] sacrificed to demons [*shed (a demon)*] who were not God, to gods whom they have not known, new *gods* who came lately, whom your fathers did not dread. You neglected the Rock [*tsur – Jesus Christ*] who begot you, and forgot the God who gave you birth.

- (6) **God Regulates and Judges.** Demons know God’s ultimate judgment – “*have you come to torment us before the time?*” [Matt. 8:28-32]. God keeps demon activity within certain fixed parameters, e.g., God judged the demons of Egypt when the Hebrews departed under Moses – Num. 33:4; Ex. 12:12; Isa. 19:3.

## EXODUS 12:12

For I [**God**] will go through the land of Egypt on that night, and will strike down all the firstborn in the land of Egypt, both man and beast; and against all the gods of Egypt [**demons**] I will execute judgments—I am the LORD.

- (7) **Necromancy.** Attempts to contact the dead are prohibited – Lev. 19:31; 20:6, 27; Deut. 18:9-12; 2 Kng. 23:24. It can result in the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH – 1 Chron. 10:13. Any so-called communication via a human “medium” is either fake or it is an actual demon that possesses the medium and then imitates the voice of the deceased human – Lk. 16:29-31; Eccl. 9:5-6; 2 Sam. 12:23; Isa. 8:19; 29:4. Thus, the witch of Endor in 1 Sam. 28:3-19, was demon possessed and shocked when God brought the *real* Samuel up.

## LEVITICUS 19:31

Do not turn to mediums [*ob (necromancer; one who evokes the dead)*] or spiritists [*uiddeoniy (a familiar spirit; soothsayer)*]; do not seek them out to be defiled by them. I am the LORD your God.

- (8) **Destroys Nations.** Involvement with demonism can bring on the 5th Cycle of Discipline to the nation per Lev. 26:14-33 [destruction of the Client Nation] – “*all images of her gods are shattered on the ground*” [Isa. 21:9]; Ezk. 6:4-6; Isa. 2:8; 29:1-6; 36:18-20; 37:12, 19; 47:1-15. See @@@ PIVOT.

### EZEKIEL 6:4-5

So your altars will become desolate and your incense altars will be smashed; and I [God] will make your slain fall in front of your idols. I will also lay the dead bodies of the sons of Israel in front of their idols; and I will scatter your bones around your altars.

- (9) **Command to Resist.** The @@@ BIBLE commands the Believer to resist the “*snare of the devil*” [2 Tim. 2:26] and “*the schemes of the devil*” [Eph. 6:11] in our “*struggle*” against his @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS – 1 Pet. 5:8-9; Js. 4:6-7. This command by God is defensive in nature and means to @@@ REBOUND and learn/apply @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.

### JAMES 4:7

Submit [*hupotasso* – stay in the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE] therefore to God. Resist [*anthistemi* (to set one’s self against)] the devil [stay out of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS and apply the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES] and he will flee [*pheugo* (to flee away)] from you [the Believer].

### 1 PETER 5:8-9

Be of sober *spirit*, be on the alert [*gregoreuo* (to give strict attention)]. Your adversary [*antidikos* (an opponent in a lawsuit) – in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT], the devil, prowls [*peripateo*] around like a roaring [*orumi* – Satan uses @@@ FEAR as a tool of attack] lion, seeking someone to devour [*katapino* (to swallow up; to destroy) – Satan wants all Believers in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS]. But resist [*anthistemi* (to set one’s self against)] him, firm in your faith [*pistis* – apply @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], knowing that the same experiences of suffering [Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing to the positive [+P] volition Believer] are being accomplished [*epiteleo* (to bring to an end)] by your brethren who are in the world [*kosmos* – Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD but he absolutely cannot stop the positive [+P] volition Believer from reaching spiritual @@@ MATURITY].

## @@@ DISPENSATIONS

- (1) **Definition.** The term “dispensations” refers to the fact that God has segmented out periods of human @@@ HISTORY into fixed time frames according to His Divine purpose. In order to properly orient to the @@@ PLAN OF GOD and the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT Believers must fully understand God’s “master road map” setting out these various periods – 1 Thess. 5:1; Heb. 11:3; Eccl. 3:1; Acts 1:7-8; Col. 1:25-26; Eph. 3:9.

## ACTS 1:7-8

He [Jesus Christ] said to them [His disciples], “It is not for you to know [ginosko (to learn to know)] times [chronos (periods)] or epochs [karios (a measure of time)] which the Father [pater – God the Father] has fixed [tithemi (to set)] by His own authority [exousia (power of choice)]; but you will receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you [the day of Pentecost when the Church Age began]; and you shall be My witnesses [martus – @@@ WITNESSING] both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and even to the remotest part of the earth.”

## COLOSSIANS 1:25-26

Of *this church* I [Paul] was made a minister [dikonos – a @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER] according [kata (according to a norm or standard)] to the stewardship from God bestowed [didomi (to give)] on me for your benefit [so that positive [+P] volition Believers can reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY], so that I might fully carry out the *preaching of* the word of God, *that is*, the mystery [musterion – the advanced @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE called the @@@ MYSTERY] which has been hidden [apokrupto (to keep secret)] from the *past* ages [aion (a period of time)] and generations [genea (an age occupied by each successive generation)], but has now been manifested [phaneroo (to make manifest or visible)] to His saints [hagios (set apart ones) – all the Believers in the Church Age].

## EPHESIANS 3:9

And to bring to light what is the administration of the mystery [musterion – the advanced @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE called the @@@ MYSTERY] which for ages [aion] has been hidden in God who created all things.

## 1 THESSALONIANS 5:1

Now as to the times [*chronos*] and the epochs [*karios*], brethren, you have no need of anything to be written to you [*these Believers understood it already*].

- (2) **God Uses Agencies.** In every age of mankind God operates through agencies of some sort – individuals, groups, or nations.
- (3) **Expressing Time.** Time is expressed in five manners in the @@@ BIBLE: (1) *chromos* (a chain of events) – Rom. 16:25; 1 Pet. 1:20; (2) *kairos* (time broken into periods) – Eph. 1:10; 2:11-12; 1 Thess. 5:1; Rom. 8:18; 11:5; 13:11; Lk. 21:24; (3) *oikonomia* (the orderly administration of a household) – Eph. 1:10; (4) *aion* (a period of time) – Col. 1:26; Eph. 3:9; 1 Tim. 1:4; and (5) *genea* (an age occupied by each successive generation) – Col 1:26.
- (4) **THEOCENTRIC PERIOD.**

## PART I

**Age of the Gentiles** – Gen. 1-11.

- (a) **Positive [+P] Volition Era.** Adam and the woman in the Garden of Eden existed in a state of perfection and without @@@ SIN for an unknown period of time. As long as the two remained perfect they could enjoy fellowship with their Creator. A conditional relationship, their primary point of contact with God was His @@@ LOVE.
- (b) **Negative [-N] Volition Era.** The Fall of Adam and Eve to the Tower of Babel [God is opposed to internationalism and struck it down].
- (c) **Nationalism Era.** Post-Tower of Babel and the rise of Gentile nations.
- (d) **Attacks.** Major attacks were launched by Satan on all of the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS: (1) Privacy [Gen. 3]; (2) Marriage & Family [Gen. 6]; and (3) Nationalism [Gen. 11:1-11].
- (e) **No Bible.** There was no @@@ BIBLE. There were teaching tools revealing @@@ SALVATION by the use of animal sacrifices, drawings, oral traditions, and direct communication by God and angels. There was no missionary agency. See @@@ HEATHENISM.

## PART II

**Age of the Jews** – Rest of the Old Testament and the Future Seven-Year Tribulation.

- (a) **Period of the Patriarchs.** From Abraham to Moses.
- (b) **Period of the @@@ MOSAIC LAW.** From Moses to Jesus. Codex 1 [Commandments]; Codex 2 [Ritual Plan of Worship]; Codex 3 [various legal, health, and welfare provisions]. Only a Jewish nation could be a Client Nation to God during this time frame – Ps. 33:12. See @@@ PIVOT.
  - 1. **United Kingdom** – 1050 B.C. - 931 B.C.
  - 2. **Northern Kingdom** [Ephraim] – 931 B.C. - 721 B.C.
  - 3. **Southern Kingdom** [Judah] – 931 B.C. - 586 B.C.
  - 4. **Judea** – 516 B.C. - A.D. 70. The Jewish people were cut off as a Client Nation in A.D. 30 and Gentile nations block any Jewish Client Nation in the Church Age [Lk. 21:24]. Gentiles also block the Jews as a Client Nation in the Tribulation [Rev. 11:2].
- (c) **Period of the Tribulation.** A future seven-year period which starts at the @@@ RAPTURE of the Church and concludes at the 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ. This is Daniel’s 70th week – Dan. 9:1-2; 20-27.

### DANIEL 9:1-2, 20-27

:1

“**Darius**” – He was the father-in-law and uncle of Cyrus the Great. The name Darius means King and subsequent rulers took this as a title. Cyrus the Great allowed the first wave of Jews to return to Jerusalem circa 538 B.C.

“**Median**” – He was a Median.

:2

“**books**” – Daniel had access to the books of *Jeremiah*, *Ezekiel*, *Isaiah*, *Micah* and other Old Testament Scriptures – Jer. 25:8-12; 29:10; Ex. 23:10-11; Lev. 25:3-4; 2 Chron. 36:17-23.



“*seventy years*” – Because the Jews had for 490 years ignored the command to observe a special sabbatical year every seventh year, God provided 70 years of Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING, the exact number of years they refused the special sabbatical. See Lev. 25:2-7; 26:33; Ex. 23:10-11; 2 Chron. 36:16-21; Jer. 25:12; 29:10. The full period of Divine Discipline covered 586-516 B.C., ending when the Second Temple was dedicated by the few returning Jews from the Persian Empire.

:20

“*confessing my sin*” – *yadah chattaah*. See @@@ REBOUND.

“*holy mountain of God*” – This is Jerusalem.

:21-23

“*Gabriel*” – (*hero of God*). He is a six-winged angel – Lk. 1:19, 26.

“*evening offering*” – Per 1 Kng. 18:36, this was at 1500 hours.

“*highly esteemed*” – Daniel was a mature Believer who lived a long time under God’s provisions. See Ezk. 14:14; 28:3.

:24

“*seventy weeks*” – *shibiuym (seventy) shabua (a period of days or years)*. The *shabua* here stands for “years,” not days. The key is as follows: a day = one year (see Num. 14:34; Lev. 25:8; Lk. 13:32). Thus, Daniel’s **70 weeks** = **490 years**. In turn, considering that Jewish years are 360 days for a lunar year and not 365, the final calculation for us must add in the extra days.

“*holy city*” – Jerusalem. The key to the royal decree starting date for the 490 years concerns specific building activities in the city of Jerusalem, not the rebuilding and dedication of the Temple in 516 B.C.

“*finish the transgression*” – The cycle of discipline to Jerusalem will be from A.D. 70 [destruction of the 2nd Temple], to the 2nd Advent of Christ.

“*until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled*” – Lk. 21:24.

“*end of sin*” – Jesus Christ will put an end to @@@ SIN as a barrier for @@@ SALVATION. Also refers to the @@@ BAPTISM of Fire.

“*make atonement for iniquity*” – Salvation and the regathering of the Jews under the reign of Christ in the Millennium. See Zech. 10:6-12; Joel 2:16.

“*everlasting righteousness*” – The @@@ RESURRECTION of Old Testament Believers and Tribulation Believers.

“*seal up the vision and prophecy*” – The end of the Jewish Age.

“*anoint the most holy*” – The Millennium Temple. All unconditional @@@ COVENANTS will be fulfilled.

:25

“*know*” – Hear @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.

“*discern*” – Apply @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.

“*decree to restore and rebuild Jerusalem*” – There are several potential candidates for the Persian decree for this date but only one clear choice:

537 B.C. – Cyrus’ decree to restore the Temple – Ezra 1:1-3; 6:1-7.

520 B.C. – Darius’ decree for money to the Temple – Ezra 6:8-12.

458 B.C. – Artaxerxes Longimanus’ [465 - 424 B.C.] decree to provide the upkeep of the Temple, but no walls – Ezra 7:11-28. Ezra went to Jerusalem under this decree and started a Jewish revival.

**445 B.C.** – Artaxerxes Longimanus’ decree to rebuild the infrastructure for the city of Jerusalem – Neh. 2:1-8. This is the only royal decree that commands the rebuilding of the city infrastructure with walls. This decree was given in April and the Prophet Nehemiah went to Jerusalem with the decree in hand. It starts Daniel’s prophetic clock.

“*Messiah*” – (anointed one). Jesus Christ. See Jn. 12:34.

“*seven weeks*” – It took 49 years to completely rebuild the walls and complete the repairs to the city – construct the city streets, plazas, water systems, and all its defenses. The Old Testament closed at this time. See Ezra 4:24.

“*sixty-two weeks*” – Remaining time on the clock until the Messiah’s death.

:26

“*then after*” – Add the 7 weeks to the 62 weeks = 69 weeks or 483 Jewish years. Multiply 5 x 483 to account for the lunar years = 2,415 extra days or 5 x 490 = 2,450 days or 7 years. Thus, the entirety of the 69 weeks prophecy extends to circa **A.D. 30-32**.

“*Messiah will be*” – *mashiyach* (the anointed one). The future Messiah.

“*cut off*” – *karath* (to kill; eliminate). Jesus Christ died on the @@@ CROSS in circa A.D. 30. See Isa. 53:8.

“*and have nothing*” – *akin* (Chaldean idiom meaning not for himself). Perfect Jesus Christ died for the sins of the world. See @@@ SALVATION.

“*people of the prince to come*” – This refers to the Romans who destroyed Jerusalem and the Temple in A.D. 70 – Lk. 21:20-24.

:27

“*he*” – The Revived Roman Dictator of the Tribulation.

“*firm covenant*” – A treaty will be made between the Roman Dictator and the Jewish Dictator ruling in Israel during the Tribulation – Rev. 13:12.

“*the many*” – The Jews.

“*one week*” – The last 7 years owed the Jews will take place at the Tribulation. Once the @@@ RAPTURE occurs the prophetic clock restarts in order to tick off the final 7 years. This will close out the 70 weeks of *Daniel*. However, per Matt. 24:22, the final 7th year will be slightly shortened.

“*one who makes desolate*” – This is the future Dictator of the Revived Roman Empire per Rev. 13:11-18.

- (d) **Custodians of Scripture.** The various Hebrew national entities were custodians of the @@@ BIBLE and also expected to be missionary agents to give the Gospel to the Gentiles – Ps. 117; Isa. 53:1; *Jonah*.
- (e) @@@ COVENANTS with eternal life clauses are given to the Jews.
- (f) **Special Progressive Cycles of Blessing or Discipline** – Lev. 26:1-33. These **blessing** [Lev. 26:1-13] and **cursing** [Lev. 26:14-33] clauses are still valid today for Gentile Client Nations. See @@@ PIVOT.
- (g) **Promised Messiah.** The prophesied Messiah will come to the earth at the 1st Advent and @@@ SALVATION will be accomplished – Gen. 15:6; Gal. 2:16; 4:4-5; Jn. 1:15-17; Rom. 4:3; 1 Cor. 10:1-4.
- (h) **Spiritual Life.** “Spirituality” during this period is via @@@ FAITH/Rest in God’s promises – Heb. 11; Rom. 4:17-21; Ps. 37:3-7. There is no Indwelling of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT. @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE is taught through the many rituals of the @@@ MOSAIC LAW and the words of the various Prophets sent by God.

## (5) CHRISTOCENTRIC PERIOD.

### PART I

**Hypostatic Union** – 4 B.C. - A.D. 30. The four Gospels in the New Testament.

- (a) **The Prototype.** The Prototype @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE was established for Jesus Christ alone. This bridge between the Old Testament and the New Testament was occupied by the LORD Jesus Christ alone, the @@@ CORNERSTONE.
- (b) **Work of Christ.** Jesus Christ provided for @@@ SALVATION and brought all Old Testament Believers into Heaven. See Rom. 3:21-26.

## PART II

**Church Age** – A.D. 30 - Rapture. New Testament letters.

- (a) **Pre-Canon Period.** The early Church Age from A.D. 30 - 96, saw the completion of the @@@ BIBLE and the end of all temporary “spectacular” spiritual @@@ GIFTS. *See also* (b) below.
- (b) **Post-Canon Period.** The Church Age from A.D. 96 - Rapture. This is called the “*fullness of times*” [Eph. 1:9] and “*later times*” [1 Tim. 4:1] due to the @@@ MYSTERY doctrines and spiritual life mandates.
  1. **Absolute Spirituality.** The *absolute* side of spirituality is achieved by means of the Filling of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT.
  2. **Royalty.** Every Believer is a Royal Priest and represents himself before God [Pet. 2:9]. *See* @@@ REBOUND. Every Believer is also an aristocrat adopted son of God in the Royal Family of God [Eph. 1:5], as well as an Ambassador for Christ in full time Christian service during their sojourn on the earth [2 Cor. 5:20].
  3. **Jesus Christ Indwells.** All Believers are Indwelt as a guarantee of their Escrow Blessing @@@ REWARDS. All Believers also have the additional Righteousness [+R] of Jesus Christ.
  4. **No Prophecy Remains.** There is no Biblical prophecy to be fulfilled in the Church Age prior to the @@@ RAPTURE.
  5. **Client Nation.** Only Gentile nations can be Client Nations to God – Lk. 21:24; Rom. 11:25; Eph. 1:10; Isa. 55:5-6; Rev. 11:2.

## LUKE 21:24

And they [*the Jews*] will fall by the edge of the sword, and will be led captive [*aichmalotizo (to be led away a captive)*] into all the nations [*ethnos – the two Jewish wars with Rome scattered the Jews across the known world*]; and Jerusalem will be trampled under foot [*pateo (to crush with the feet)*] by the Gentiles [*ethnos*] until the times [*kairos (a fixed and definite measure of time)*] of the Gentiles are fulfilled [*pleroo (to make full) – until the start of the Millennium there will never be another Jewish Client Nation to God*].

## ROMANS 11:25

For I [Paul] do not want you, brethren [Believers], to be uninformed [*agnoeo* (to be ignorant)] of this mystery [*musterion* – @@@ MYSTERY]—so that you will not be wise in your own estimation—that a partial [*meros* (a part)] hardening [*porosis* (the mind of one who has been blunted) – negative [-N] volition to the Gospel] has happened to Israel until the fullness [*pleroma*] of the Gentiles [*ethnos*] has come in [*eiserchomai* (to go out or come in) – this will end at the start of the Millennium].

6. **No Mention.** Church Age is not mentioned in the Old Testament.
7. **Rapture.** The Church is completed at the @@@ RAPTURE.

(6) **ESCHATOLOGICAL PERIOD.****PART I**

**Tribulation** – Seven-year period from the Rapture to the 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ. See Zech. 14:3-4; Rev. 19:11-16; Joel 2:30-31; Dan. 9:1-2, 20-27.

- (a) **Seven Years.** The Tribulation is part of the Old Testament period called the time of “*Jacob’s distress*” [Jer. 30:7] due to the horrors that occur during the last 7 years of Daniel’s prophecy. See Jer. 25:30-38.
- (b) **Satan’s Time.** Following the removal of all Believers at the @@@ RAPTURE, God allows Satan to attempt his “perfect environment” with unfettered rulership of the @@@ WORLD. Thus, the restraining ministry of the Holy Spirit is removed per 2 Thess. 2:6-7; Matt. 24:24.

## MATTHEW 24:24

For false Christs and false prophets will arise and will show great signs [*semeion* (miracles)] and wonders [*teras*], so as to mislead [*plano* (to cause to stray)], if possible even the elect [*eklektos* (choice; the best of its class) – the mature Believers].

- (c) **Ends.** The Tribulation ends when Christ returns at the 2nd Advent to make @@@ WAR against all unBelievers and demons. He casts them off the earth to start the Millennium. See Zech. 14:3-4; Joel 2:30-31.

**ZECHARIAH 14:3-4**

Then the LORD [**Jesus Christ**] will go forth and fight against those nations, as when He fights on a day of battle. In that day His feet will stand on the Mount of Olives, which is in front of Jerusalem on the east; and the Mount of Olives will be split in its middle from east to west by a very large valley, so that half of the mountain will move toward the north and the other half toward the south.

**JOEL 2:30-31**

I [**God**] will display wonders [*mopheth (signs; miracles)*] in the sky and on the earth, blood, fire and columns of smoke. The sun will be turned into darkness [*choshek*] and the moon into blood before the great and awesome day of the LORD [**just prior to the 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ**] comes.

**PART II**

**Millennium** – Latin for “1,000-year” rule. *See* Rev. 20:4-6.

Covering the period from the 2nd Advent of Christ to the final defeat of Satan, who is confined until the very end of the Millennium’s 1,000 years. This is properly termed **pre-Millennialism**. The other two false doctrines are “a-Millennialism” [rejects the future reign of Christ] and “post-Millennialism” [holds that all the world must first be “saved” before Jesus Christ returns].

- (a) **Perfect.** A perfect environment until the 2nd Advent of Satan when the Devil is released from confinement in the Abyss – Rev. 20:7-10.
  1. **No Religion.** With Satan and his demons taken off the earth for the 1,000 years, there is no @@@ **RELIGION** – Rev. 20:1-3.
  2. **Emotion.** There is great spirituality and @@@ **EMOTION** for Believers – Joel 2:28-29; Isa. 65:24; Hab. 2:14.
  3. **Rulership.** Jesus Christ will rule the earth from Jerusalem – Isa. 2:4; Ezk. 37:24-28; Zech. 14:9-10; Mic. 4:3; 2 Sam. 7:16.
  4. **Assisting.** The **Winner** Believers in both the Old Testament and New Testament periods, now in @@@ **RESURRECTION** bodies, will rule with Christ as part of their @@@ **REWARDS**.



5. **Israel Restored.** Israel will be restored as a Client Nation under God and the land grant will be fulfilled – Isa. 5:26-30; 10:19-23; 11:11-16; 14:1-3, 35; Joel 2:16; Jer. 31:33; Ezk. 36:28; Gen. 15:18-20; Num. 34:1-12; Jos. 1:3-4. *See @@@ COVENANTS.*
6. **No War.** No more @@@ WAR from competing nations – Dan. 7:11-14; Isa. 2:4. However, conflict and crime will still occur.
7. **No Disease.** No more diseases – Ezk. 34:16; Isa. 35:5-6.
8. **Prosperity.** Universal prosperity and vast economic opportunity for all humans – Ps. 72:7, 16.
9. **God.** Universal knowledge of God is freely available – Isa. 11:9.
10. **Environment.** Positive changes in nature [Rom. 8:18-23; Isa. 11:6-9, 35; 55:12-13; 65:25], which is restored to its intended state. Humans will not be harmed by animals, plants, or insects.
11. **The Start.** No unBelievers at the start – Ezk. 20:32-38; Matt. 25:31-46. But across the 1,000-year period billions of humans will be born on the earth creating a population boom – Isa. 60:23. Amazingly, many of the offspring of the original Believers will reject God, demonstrating that “true” perfect environment is not the solution to man’s plight of spiritual @@@ DEATH.
12. **Physical Life Extended.** The human life span will be extended well beyond a mere 100 years – “*the one who does not reach the age of one hundred will be thought accursed*” [Isa. 65:20].
13. **Revolt.** At the end of the 1,000 years, a final revolt by unBelievers [and probably **Loser** Believers] will occur under the leadership of the newly released Satan from the Abyss – Rev. 20:7-10. Satan’s rallying cry will most likely revolve around the same lies he used in the Garden of Eden about “equality” and “fairness.” Again, this proves that perfect environment and even maximum availability of knowledge about God will not provide @@@ SALVATION to those humans on negative [-N] volition in their souls. God will quickly crush the revolt with fire.

## REVELATION 20:7-10

When the thousand years are completed [Millennium], Satan will be released from his prison [*phulake* (guard watch)], and will come out to deceive [*planao* (to lead away from the truth)] the nations [*ethnos*] which are in the four corners of the earth [*ge*], Gog and Magog [a generalized term describing a leader and followers], to gather them together for the war; the number of them is like the sand of the seashore. And they came up on the broad plain of the earth and surrounded the camp of the saints and the beloved city [Jerusalem], and fire came down from heaven and devoured them. And the devil [*diabolos* (the slanderer) – Satan] who deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and brimstone [@@@ HELL], where the beast and the false prophet are also; and they will be tormented [*basanizo*] day and night forever and ever [*aion*].

14. **Sermon on the Mount.** Much of the Sermon on the Mount regards the Millennium. See Matt. 5-7.

## PART III

**Eternal State** – Forever and ever.

- (a) **UnBelievers Judged.** All unBelievers will be judged at the Great White Throne Judgment and spend eternity in the **Lake of Fire** [along with all demons] separated from God in a state of spiritual @@@ DEATH – Rev. 20:11-15; Matt. 25:41; 2 Thess. 1:7-9; Jude 5-13; Rom. 2:16; Acts 17:21; Heb. 9:27; 2 Tim. 4:1. See @@@ JUDGMENT.
- (b) **New Universe.** God destroys the current universe and creates a new Heaven and earth – 2 Pet. 3:10-13; Heb. 1:10-12; Rev. 21:1; Isa. 65:17.

## HEBREWS 1:10-12

And, “You, LORD, in the beginning [*arche*] laid the foundation of the earth [*ge*], and the heavens are the works of Your hands; they will perish [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely)], but You remain [*dimeno* (to stay permanently)]; and they all will become old like a garment, and like a mantel You will roll them up; like a garment they will also be changed [*allasso* (to exchange one thing for another) – at the end of the Millennium God will destroy the old universe and create a new one]. But You are the same [*autos*], and Your years [*etos*] will not come to an end [*ekleipo* (to cease)].”

## REVELATION 21:1

Then I [John the Apostle] saw a new [*kainos* (new in kind)] heaven [*ouranos*] and a new earth [*ge*]; for the first [*protos* (first in time or place)] heaven and the first earth passed away [*aperchomai* – the creation of a new universe and new earth at the end of the Millennium], and there is no longer any sea [*thalassa*].

## ISAIAH 65:17

For behold, I [God] create [*bara* (to create)] new heavens and a new earth; and the former things [the evil of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS] will not be remembered [*zakar* (to be brought to remembrance)] or come to mind [*leb* (the mind of the inner man) – in the eternal state will have no recollection of the old @@@ WORLD].

## 2 PETER 3:10, 12-13

But the day of the LORD [the creation of a new universe at the end of the Millennium] will come like a thief [*kleptes*], in which the heavens [*ouranos*] will pass away with a roar [*rhoizedon* (a loud noise)] and the elements [*stoicheion* (the elements from which all things have come)] will be destroyed [*luo* (to loose)] with intense heat [*kausoo* (to burn up)], and the earth and its works [*ergon* – of human @@@ GOOD] will be burned up [*katakaio* (to consume by fire)].... Looking for and hastening the coming of the day of God [the creation of a new universe at the end of the Millennium], because of which the heavens [*ouranos*] will be destroyed by burning, and the elements will melt with intense heat! But according to His promise we are looking for new [*kainos* (new in kind)] heavens and a new [*kainos* (new in kind)] earth [*ge*], in which righteousness [*dikaioisune*] dwells [*katoikeo* (inhabits)].

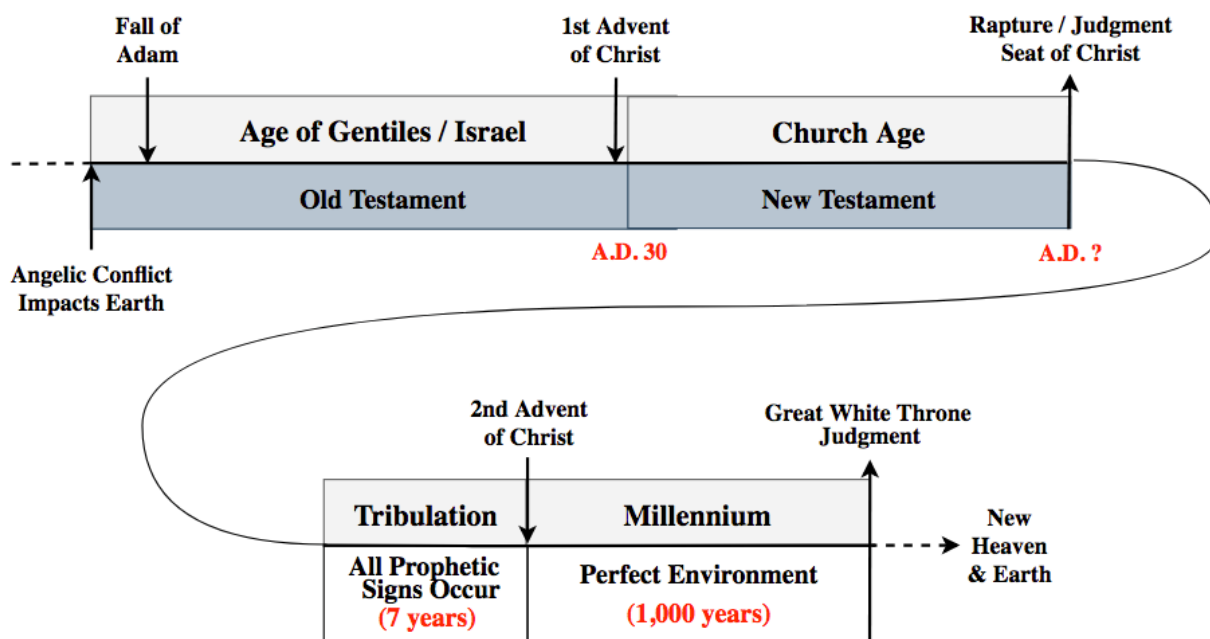
- (c) **Believers.** Believers from all the various epochs and ages of the earth will be in @@@ RESURRECTION bodies and will live with God forever in the new @@@ HEAVEN and new earth – Rev. 21:2-4; 22:4-5. The @@@ BIBLE indicates that the eternal state is beyond human comprehension [1 Cor. 2:9], although it is a place of vast inequality based on the bestowing of eternal @@@ REWARDS to the **Winner** Believers who obeyed God's mandates and reached spiritual @@@ MATURITY in @@@ TIME.

# REVELATION 21:4

And He [God] will wipe away [*exaleipho* (to anoint or wash in every part; to erase)] every tear [*dakru*] from their [the Believer] eyes; and [in @@@ HEAVEN] there will no longer be *any* death [*thanatos* (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)]; there will no longer be *any* mourning [*penthos*], or crying [*krauge*], or pain [*ponos* (great trouble)]; the first [*protos* (first in time)] things have passed away [*aperchomai* (to go away; depart)].

# REVELATION 22:4-5

They [Believers] will see His face, and His name *will be* on their foreheads. And there will no longer be *any* night; and they will not have need of the light [*phos*] of a lamp nor the light of the sun, because the LORD God will illumine [*photizo* (to give light)] them; and they will reign [*basileuo* (to exercise kingly power)] forever and ever [*aion*].

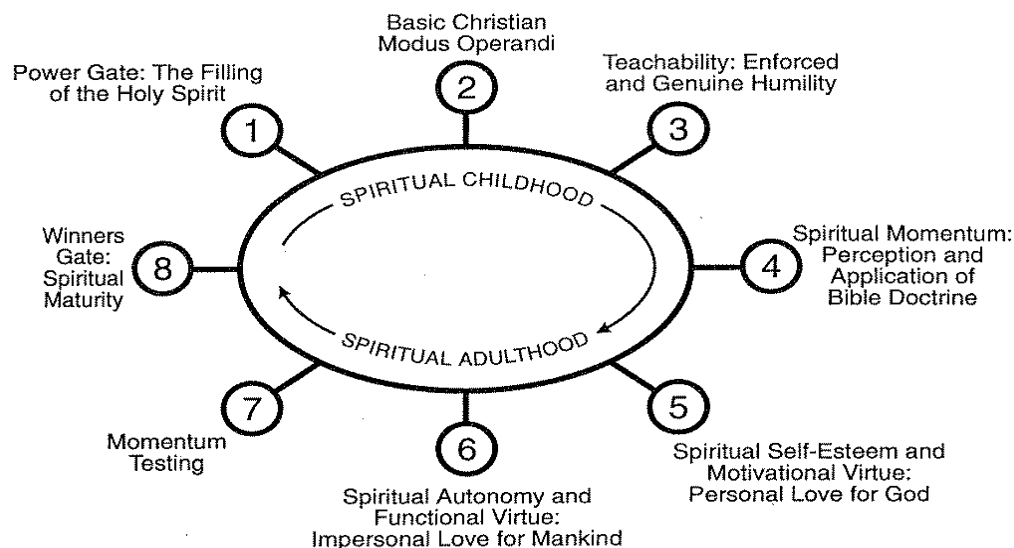


– Dispensations General Outline –

## @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE

- (1) **Definition.** The Divine Dynasphere is a teaching tool developed by R. B. Thieme, Jr. It describes “*absolute* spirituality” by @@@ **REBOUND** and growth to spiritual @@@ **MATURITY** [“*relative* spirituality”] by learning and applying @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**.
- (2) **Gates.** The individual “gates” begin with the Filling of the @@@ **HOLY SPIRIT** and extend for the **Winner** Believer to @@@ **MATURITY**.
- (3) **Power Source.** The @@@ **HOLY SPIRIT** is the power source for the Believer living inside the Divine Dynasphere – Rom. 8:11; Eph. 5:18; Acts 1:8; 1 Cor. 3:16. See @@@ **REBOUND**.
- (4) **God’s Plan – Mandates First.** Constant subjection of the Believer’s life to the absolute @@@ **AUTHORITY** of @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**.
- (5) **God’s System – Virtue First.** The Believer uses *agape* impersonal @@@ **LOVE** to handle @@@ **PROBLEMS** – 1 Cor. 13:13; Rom. 5:5.
- (6) **God’s Policy – Grace First.** See @@@ **CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE**.

### THE DIVINE DYNASPHERE



## @@@ DIVINE GUIDANCE

- (1) **Definition.** Divine Guidance involves understanding the Directive and Sovereign Will of God for the life of the Believer in @@@ TIME – Ps. 16:11; 143:8. *See @@@ TRINITY.*
- (2) **Two Divine Directives.** The @@@ BIBLE reveals two overarching Divine Directives for mankind – Jn. 1:7, 12-13; 6:39-40; 1 Jn. 3:23; Prov. 8:17; Eph. 3:14-19; Rom. 12:12. *See infra (5).*
  - (a) **Divine Directive One.** It is God’s Sovereign Directive Will that all human beings [unBelievers] throughout all of human @@@ HISTORY should be saved and reside in @@@ HEAVEN – Isa. 45:22; 2 Pet. 3:9; Matt. 18:14; 22:14. *See infra 5 (a).*

## ISAIAH 45:22

Turn to [*panah* (to turn toward) – exercise positive [+P] volition] Me and be saved [*yasha* (to be liberated) – into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN], all the ends of the earth [@@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT provides equal opportunity for @@@ SALVATION]; for I am God, and there is no other.

## 2 PETER 3:9

The LORD is not slow about His promise [the @@@ RAPTURE will occur], as some count slowness, but is patient toward you, not wishing [*boulomai* (to will deliberately)] for any to perish [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely) – the will of God is for all humans to be saved and none go to @@@ HELL] but for all to come to repentance [*metanoia* (a change of mind) – reject @@@ RELIGION and accept God’s @@@ SALVATION].

- (b) **Divine Directive Two.** It is God’s Sovereign Directive Will that all Believers reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY as **Winners** so that Jesus Christ can distribute their Escrow Account @@@ REWARDS in time and eternity and enter them as subject matter expert witness exhibits in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT. “*For I know the plans that I have for you,*” declares the LORD, “*plans for welfare and not for calamity to give you a future and a hope*” [Jer. 29:11]; Eph. 3:17-19; 5:14-17; 2 Pet. 3:9; 1 Tim. 2:4; Ps. 143:8; Prov. 3:5-6.



## 1 TIMOTHY 2:4

Who [God] desires all men [*anthropos* (mankind) – the unBeliever] to be saved [*sozo* – @@@ SALVATION into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN] and to come to the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – the Believer who takes in @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE and reaches @@@ MATURITY].

## EPHESIANS 3:17-19

So that Christ may dwell [*katoikeo* (to inhabit)] in your hearts [*kardia* – Fellowship with Christ] through [*dia* (by means of)] faith [*pistis* – the learning and application of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]; and that you [the positive [+P] Believer], being rooted and grounded [*themelioo* (to lay the foundation)] in love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE], may be able to comprehend with all the saints [*hagios* (separated ones) – all Believers] what is the breadth and length and height and depth [full knowledge Bible Doctrine], and to know [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] the love [*agape* (to love dearly)] of Christ which surpasses knowledge [*gnosis*], that you may be filled up to [*pleroo* (to fill to the top)] all the fullness of God [Believer at @@@ MATURITY].

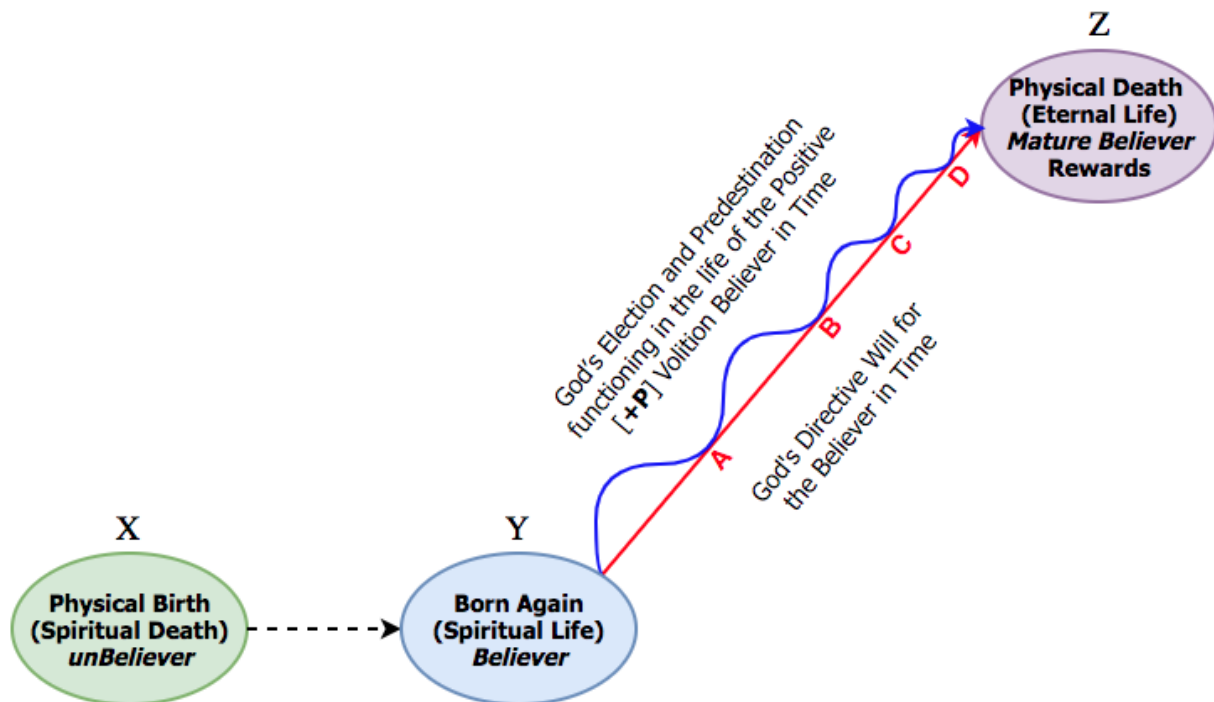
## PSALM 143:8

Let me hear Your [God's] lovingkindness [*chesed* – @@@ GRACE in action] in the morning; for I trust [*batach* (to have confidence)] in You; teach [*yada*] me the way in which I should walk; for to You I lift up my soul [*nephesh* – positive [+P] volition to learn @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE].

- (3) **Predestination and Election.** The “X-Y-Z” [*infra*] diagram expresses the fact that God acted in eternity past to ensure that the Winner Believer reaches @@@ MATURITY – “*in whom you also are being built together into a dwelling of God in the Spirit*” [Eph. 2:22]; Prov. 3:5-6. For a detailed description of X-Y-Z, see @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE at (4), p. 89.

## PROVERBS 3:5-6

Trust in the LORD [*Jehovah*] with all your heart and do not lean [*shaan* (trust in)] on your own understanding. In all your ways acknowledge Him, and He will make your paths straight [@@@ DIVINE GUIDANCE].



– Tracking The Positive [+P] Volition **Winner** Believer –

(4) **Categories of Divine Guidance.**

- (a) **Thinking.** Question: **What does God want me to think?** Answer: God wants all Believers to think His thoughts which are set out in @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE. See Matt. 16:23; 22:42; 1 Cor. 2:16; Phil. 2:5; Ps. 90:12; 119:23-34; 143:8. If this factor is satisfied on a consistent basis then all other issues of Divine Guidance will fall into place. What the @@@ WORLD thinks of the Believer is irrelevant.

**PSALM 119:23-24**

Even though princes sit *and* talk against me, Your servant [**the positive [+P] volition Believer**] meditates on Your statutes [**@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE**]. Your testimonies also are my delight [*shashua*]; *they are* my counselors.

**PSALM 90:12**

So teach us to number our days [**priorities**], that we may present [*bo* (to come with)] to You a heart of wisdom [*chokmah* – at @@@ **MATURITY**].

## MATTHEW 16:23

But He [**Jesus Christ**] turned and said to Peter, “Get behind Me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to Me; for you are not setting your mind [*phroneo (to have understanding)*] on God’s interests [**the @@@ PLAN OF GOD for @@@ SALVATION**], but man’s [**of human @@@ GOOD**].”

- (b) **Geographical.** Question: **Where does God want me to be?** See Jon. 1:1-2; Acts 16:6-7, 10; 1 Cor. 7:20-24. Answer: God will provide the location where the Believer should be at any given period of his Christian life. When in doubt the Believer should simply “*remain in that condition*” [1 Cor. 7:20] as he is, until God opens another door.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 7:20-23

Each man [*hekastos (every person)*] must remain in that condition in which he was called [*kaleo – when @@@ SALVATION occurred*]. Where you called while a slave [*doulos*]? Do not worry about it; but if you are able also to become free [*eleutheros*], rather do that. For he who was called in the LORD while a slave, is the LORD’s freedman; likewise he who was called while free, is Christ’s slave. You were bought [*agorazo (to purchase in the marketplace)*] with a price [*time – by Christ on the @@@ CROSS*]; do not become slaves of men [*stay out of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS*].

- (c) **Operational.** **What does God want me to do?** See Ps. 32:8; Isa. 58:11; Rev. 3:1-6. Answer: God will open the door to the Believer at the proper time. The Believer should simply “saw the wood” in front of him. “**Duty is ours; results are God’s.**” See @@@ OPEN DOOR.

## ISAIAH 58:11

And the LORD will continually guide you [**the Believer**], and satisfy your desire in scorched places, and give strength to your bones; and you will be like a watered garden, and like a spring of water whose waters do not fail.

- (d) **Understanding.** As the Believer advances in @@@ MATURITY he will better understand the Will of God for the details of his life in terms of location and operation – Isa. 58:11; Rom. 8:28-30; 12:2-3, 12; Prov. 3:1-6; Ps. 16:11; Isa. 58:11; 2 Pet. 1:12-21; 3:18; 1 Thess. 5:18.

PSALM 16:11

You [God] will make known to me [the positive [+P] Believer] the path of life [*orach* (the path; way; passing of life)]; in Your presence is fullness of joy [*wimchah* (glad result) – God provides for spiritual @@@ MATURITY]; In Your right hand there are pleasures forever [eternal @@@ REWARDS].

ROMANS 8:28-30

And we [Paul] know that God causes all things to work together for good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] to those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] God [only a Believer who reaches @@@ MATURITY can @@@ LOVE God], to those who are called [*kletos* (called; invited to a banquet)] according to His purpose [*prothesis* (a predetermined plan)]. For those whom He foreknew [*proginosko* (to have knowledge beforehand) – those who would believe in Christ], He also predestined [*proorizo* (to decide beforehand) – God made provisions in @@@ TIME to get the positive [+P] volition Believer to maturity] to become conformed [*summorphos* (having the same form as another)] to the image of His Son, so that He would be the firstborn among many brethren; and these whom He predestined, He also called; and these whom He called, He also justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – getting God's Righteousness [+R]]; and these whom He justified, He also glorified [*doxazo* (to honor) – by the giving of @@@ REWARDS].

- (5) **Three Sovereign Wills.** The @@@ PLAN OF GOD incorporates three operational Divine Sovereign Wills in dealing with mankind.
  - (a) **Directive Will of God.** The Directive Will of God is set out in the Divine Decrees in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD: (1) all humans should be saved; and (2) all Believers should reach @@@ MATURITY.
  - (b) **Permissive Will of God.** The Permissive Will of God functions within the Perfect @@@ PLAN OF GOD to allow man to exercise his own free will. For example, the vast majority of humans reject God's offer of @@@ SALVATION – Matt. 7-13-14. See @@@ TRINITY.
  - (c) **Preventative/Overruling Will of God.** God exercises His Overruling Will in order to keep the overall negative results of human free will within the bounds of His Sovereign control of @@@ HISTORY.

- (d) **All Three.** Illustration of all three Divine Wills: The story of Balaam. Balaam was a Gentile Believer who loved @@@ MONEY and was asked to curse the Jews entering into the Promised Land by her enemies for a large sum of money. The Directive Will of God is to bless the Jews but the Permissive Will of God allowed Balaam to accompany the Gentiles on this mission to curse them – Num. 22:20. Then, as Balaam was set to curse the Jews the Preventative/Overruling Will of God instructed Balaam to bless the Jews – Num. 23:5. Soon thereafter Balaam died the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH – Jos. 13:22.

### JOSHUA 13:22

The sons of Israel also killed Balaam the son of Beor, the diviner, with the sword among *the rest of* their slain.

- (6) **Jesus' Divine Guidance.** The humanity of Jesus Christ always followed the @@@ PLAN OF GOD – Matt. 20:22; Heb. 10:7, 9. On the night of His betrayal Jesus prayed several times not to go to the @@@ CROSS – “*let this cup pass from me*” [Matt. 26:39]. It is not a @@@ SIN to be tempted and Christ in His humanity expressed the desire of His own free will to not suffer spiritual @@@ DEATH, but nevertheless subordinated His personal will to the Directive Will of the Father for @@@ SALVATION. See @@@ CUP.

### MATTHEW 26:39

And He [Jesus] went a little beyond *them*, and fell on His face and prayed, saying, “My Father [*pater – Jesus speaking from His humanity*], if it is possible, let this cup [*poterion – the @@@ CUP containing all the @@@ SIN of the @@@ WORLD*] pass from Me; yet not as I will, but as You will.”

- (7) **Principles on Divine Guidance.** Acts 11:5-16:

:5 – Guidance through @@@ PRAYER.  
 :6 – Guidance through @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.  
 :7-10 – Guidance by following the specific mandates in the @@@ BIBLE.  
 :11 – Guidance via providential circumstances in @@@ LIFE.  
 :12 – Guidance through the Filling of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT.  
 :13-15 – Guidance through relationships with other mature Believers.  
 :16 – Guidance by recalling @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.

- (8) **Saw the Wood.** Realizing God's Will for the Believer is to reach maturity all other things in life are details. Although no one can know his future, the wise Believer need only "**saw the wood**" in front of him and maintain his focus on learning Bible Doctrine as the LORD guides him in His timing. "*Your ears will hear a word behind you, "This is the way, walk in it," whenever you turn to the right or to the left*" [Isa. 30:21]. In other words, the wise Believer does not know what the future holds for him, but he knows who holds his future. He is not in a panic or rush: "*Yet those who wait for the LORD will gain new strength; they will mount up with wings like eagles*" [Isa. 40:31]. As the new Believers in Nineveh stated to each other in response to the prediction from the Prophet Jonah that the city would be destroyed: "*Who knows, God may turn and ... we will not perish*" [Jon. 3:9]. See Ps. 119:23-24; 1 Cor. 7:21-24; Col. 3:23-24; Esth. 4:13-14; Ph. 15. Also, as Mordecai told Jewish Queen Esther concerning her decision to advocate to the Persian King to save the Jews from a plot to kill them: "*And who knows whether you have not attained royalty for such a time as this?*" [Esth. 4:13-14].

#### ESTHER 4:13-14

Then Mordecai [**Jewish uncle of Queen Esther**] told *them* [**Esther's servants**] to reply to Esther, "Do not imagine that you in the king's palace can escape any more than all the Jews [**there was a plot to slaughter all Jews in the Persian Empire**]. For if you remain silent at this time, relief and deliverance will arise for the Jews from another place [**God controls @@@ HISTORY and will not allow the Jews to be destroyed**] and you and your father's house will perish [**@@@ SIN UNTO DEATH**]. And who knows [*yada* (to know) – Believers cannot know the future details of their lives or what God has in store for them as to their specific role in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT] whether you have not attained royalty [**Esther was a Jewish girl elevated to be a Queen of the Persian King Xerxes**] for such a time [*ayth* (an event)] as this?"

#### PHILEMON 15

For perhaps he [**runaway slave Onesimus**] was for this reason separated *from you* [**Philemon the master**] for a while [**Onesimus stole from Philemon and ran off to Rome**], that you would have him back [**Paul took Onesimus under his wing in Rome and he became a mature Believer**] forever [**Paul sent him back to Philemon in hopes that he would forgive and free Onesimus**].



## @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS

- (1) **Definition.** Divine Institutions refer to a fixed set of standards established by God to maximize @@@ FREEDOM and to maintain order in the human race. The Divine Institutions were devised for unBelievers and Believers.
- (2) **Categories of Divine Truth.** The three categories of Divine truth: (1) **Divine Institutions** [for all humans]; (2) **Gospel of Salvation** [for the unBeliever]; and (3) **Bible Doctrine** [for the Believer]. Each category provides benefits for those on positive [+P] volition in their soul – Jn. 8:32.

### JOHN 8:32

And you will know [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – revealed by @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], and the truth will make you free [*eletheroo* (to set at liberty)].

- (3) **Angelic Conflict.** The Divine Institutions were established by God in order to maintain order and stability in the human race during the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT – Gen. 9:6. Applications include:
  - (a) **Protection.** As a protection from the tyranny and total depravity of mankind's @@@ OLD SIN NATURE. Imperfect man cannot operate in the @@@ WORLD without some level of restraint and order.
  - (b) **Salvation.** To allow those who are on positive [+P] volition the opportunity to be saved and reach @@@ MATURITY – Jn. 3:16, 36; 1 Tim. 2:4; Col. 3:23-24. In turn, the Believer is expected to follow the mandates of the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS as a model citizen.

### COLOSSIANS 3:23-24

Whatever you [Believers] do [*poieo*], do your work [*ergazomai* (to labor)] heartily [*psuche* – follow the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS and morality good], as for the LORD [*kurios*] rather than for men [*anthropos* (mankind)], knowing [*heneka* (on account of)] that from the LORD you will receive [*apolambano*] the reward [*anatapodosis* – @@@ REWARDS] of the inheritance. It is the LORD Christ whom you serve [*douleuo* (to be a slave) – in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT].

- (c) **Benefits the UnBeliever.** The unBeliever who otherwise rejects the Gospel of @@@ SALVATION can still enjoy the general benefits of the Divine Institutions, but this is all the human @@@ HAPPINESS he will ever experience in @@@ TIME or in eternity – Matt. 5:45; Eccl. 2:24; 3:13; 6:10; 9:3-10. See @@@ JUDGMENT.

## ECCLESIASTES 2:24

There is nothing better for a man [unBeliever] *than* to eat and drink and tell himself that his labor [amal] is good. This also I [Solomon] have seen that it is from the hand of God [via the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS].

## ECCLESIASTES 9:9-10

Enjoy life [chay – the unBeliever living under the umbrella of the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS] with the woman [ishshah (wife; female)] whom you [the unBeliever] love all the days of your fleeting life which He [God] has given to you under the sun; for this is your reward [cheleq (a portion; share)] in life and in your toil [amal (labor)] in which you have labored under the sun. Whatever your hand finds to do, do *it* with *all* your might; for there is no activity [maaweh (work; business)] or planning [chashab (to invent; to think about)] or knowledge [daath (premeditation; knowledge)] or wisdom [chokmah] in Sheol [the Lake of Fire] where you [the unBeliever] are going.

## MATTHEW 5:45

So that you may be sons of your Father who is in heaven [ouranos]; for He causes His sun to rise on *the* evil [poneros] and *the* good [agathos (good of intrinsic value)], and sends rain on *the* righteous [dikaios – the Believer] and *the* unrighteous [adikos (one who violates justice) – the unBeliever].

- (4) **The Four Divine Institutions.** There are four Divine Institutions ordained by God and all relate to establishment systems or principles of behavior for the nation and the citizens that reside therein. Each one of the four Divine Institutions functions in and relates directly to specific areas of @@@ AUTHORITY. While they are the “ideal” standards for interaction and should be respected and upheld by all people, it is obvious that flawed humans have great difficulty living up to or adhering to them. This does not mean that the Divine Institutions are invalid, only that people are flawed.

**One: Privacy.** The emphasis under Divine Institution #1 is placed on the individual's right of self-determination and @@@ **PRIVACY**. The right to exercise individual volition within the framework of the other Divine Institutions is inviolable as long as the person obeys proper @@@ **AUTHORITY**, e.g., a person cannot use their free will to murder. Individual privacy is the environment for true @@@ **FREEDOM** and the authority mechanism is the positive [+P] volition of the individual. *See* Gen. 2:17.

**Two: Marriage.** Mankind was not meant to be alone. The relationship of @@@ **MARRIAGE** between a man and a woman is the basic corporate unit for humans in this life. While it is a unique *voluntary* partnership the @@@ **AUTHORITY** mechanism is given to the husband. *See* Gen. 2:18, 24.

**Three: Family.** Babies are born helpless and must rely on the @@@ **GRACE** functions of their parents for survival. The nuclear family is set as the proper place to raise and teach/instruct children about the three Divine truths [*see supra* (2)]. As long as the child resides in the home the authority mechanism rests with parents. *See* Gen. 4; Prov. 22:6; S.S. 8:2; Ex. 20:12.

**Four: Freedom Based Nationalism.** A governmental structure that protects all forms of @@@ **FREEDOM** and basic human rights. Freedom Based Nationalism is the proper governmental framework for the inherent right of the individual to enjoy life, liberty, and @@@ **HAPPINESS**. The @@@ **AUTHORITY** mechanism resides with the State, operating within a just rule of law under a consent of the governed principle. *See* Gen. 10:5, 32; Deut. 32:8; Acts 17:26-28; 1 Pet. 2:13-18; Col. 1:16. *See infra* (5).

- (5) **Freedom Based Nationalism.** The Divine Institutions operate ideally in nations that are freedom oriented. Understanding Lord Acton's observation that centralized "*power tends to corrupt, and absolute power corrupts absolutely*," the Freedom Based Nation rejects internationalism and endorses patriotism – Gen. 11:1-9. Indeed, internationalism is a manifestation of human @@@ **GOOD** and a key part of the @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS**. Points on the proper national entity operating under Divine Institution #4:
  - (a) **Military.** The Freedom Based Nation must have a vibrant military that operates under civilian control. The overt protection of the nation is the function of the military on exterior lines and relies on military victory – 1 Sam. 17:1-58. The Christian should be the best killer in his platoon.

- (b) **Law and Order.** Interior protection of the nation requires law and order by the police and proper jurisprudence by the courts. Capital punishment is authorized but not vigilantism – Gen. 4:15; 9:5-6; Rom. 12:17-21; 13:1-7; 1 Pet. 2:13-15; Lk. 23:39-42; Deut. 21:18-21.

## 1 PETER 2:13-14

Submit [*hupotasso*] yourselves [*Believers*] for the LORD's sake to every human institution [@@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS], whether to a king [*basileus* (leader of the people)] as the one in authority [*huperecho*], or to governors [*hegemon* (a leader of any kind)] as sent by him [the one in @@@ AUTHORITY] for the punishment [*ekdikesis* (criminal justice)] of evildoers [*kakopoios*] and the praise of those who do right.

1. **Criminals.** All criminals are divorced from reality and arrogant, covering their crimes by lying – Gen. 4:9-10. Ignorance of a crime is no excuse [Rom. 2:12], but a sick society coddles them.
  2. **Social Problems.** Laws were not meant to solve social problems in the Freedom Based Nation but to protect @@@ FREEDOM and @@@ PRIVACY. Social problems such as @@@ POVERTY will always exist. Thus, criminal and civil laws should be made on the basis of the best interests of the majority. Laws are made for the general principal, never the exception.
- (c) **Capitalism.** The Freedom Based Nation must provide a system of free enterprise so that people can prosper. Again, nationalism [State's Rights] and capitalism rightly fragment the consolidation of centralized power which always stifles free thinking and economic growth.
1. **Property.** The Freedom Based Nation recognizes the right of private ownership of property and the right to conduct business apart from undue interference from the State. “*Thou shalt not steal*,” endorses the private ownership of property. In turn, it is a sin and evil to “*covet*” the property of others – Ex. 20:15, 17.

## EXODUS 20:15

You shall not steal.

**EXODUS 20:17**

You shall not covet [*chamad* (to desire)] your neighbor's [*rea* (fellow-citizen)] house; you shall not covet your neighbor's wife or his male servant or his female servant or his ox or his donkey or anything that belongs to your neighbor [*a central ingredient of socialism is based on coveting property*].

2. **Tax.** There must be a fair system of taxation as in a fixed percentage of income tax for all – Rom. 13:7.
  3. **Virtue.** The true measure of capitalism is not necessarily “look at our prosperity,” but “look at our @@@ FREEDOM.” Of course, capitalism requires virtue as well as a strong work ethic which is mandated for all Believers – 2 Thess. 3:7-14. In short, the Believer must “**get a job.**” The only joint sharing of property in the @@@ BIBLE was in the early Church in Jerusalem. This was because the Jerusalem Believers were excommunicated from the synagogues/society and were forced to pool their assets just to survive – Acts 2:43-47. Thus, the only collection that was taken up by Paul was for the relief of Believers in Jerusalem – 1 Cor. 16:1-4; 2 Cor. 8:1-9; Rom. 15:14-32; Acts 24:17. All other Believers were instructed to “*work in quiet fashion and eat their own bread*” [2 Thess. 3:12]. See Gen. 3:17.
- (d) **Religion.** @@@ RELIGION must be separated from the functions of the Freedom Based Nation – Matt. 22:21; Jn. 8:44; Mk. 12:17. General recognition of God is proper, but not forced religious practices.

**MARK 12:17**

And Jesus said to them [*Pharisees and Herodians*], “Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar’s, and to God the things that are God’s.” And they were amazed at Him.

- (6) **Client Nation Status.** Believers are the @@@ SALT of the nation and can constitute a @@@ PIVOT to God to bless the nation. However, if the salt has lost its taste, i.e., the function of Believers in @@@ REVERSIONISM, it is cast out – Matt. 5:13; Hos. 4:1-8; Isa. 28; Ps. 119:45; Eccl. 9:14-18; Lev. 26:14-34 [progressive cycles of Divine Discipline to a Client Nation].

## LEVITICUS 26:14-33

But if you [the Jews as a Client Nation to God] do not obey Me [God] and do not carry out all these commandments, if, instead, you reject My statutes, and if your soul abhors My ordinances [negative [-N] volition towards @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] so as not to carry out all My commandments, and so break My covenant, I, in turn, will do this to you: [1] I will appoint over you a sudden terror, consumption and fever that will waste away the eyes and cause the soul to pine away; also, you will sow your seed uselessly, for your enemies will eat it up. [2] I will set My face against you so that you will be struck down before your enemies; and those who hate you will rule over you, and you will flee when no one is pursuing you. [3] If also after these things you do not obey Me, then I will punish you seven times more for your sins. I will also break down your pride of power; I will also make your sky like iron and your earth like bronze. Your strength will be spent uselessly, for your land will not yield its produce and the trees of the land will not yield their fruit. [4] If then, you act with hostility against Me and are unwilling to obey Me, I will increase the plague on you seven times according to your sins. I will let loose among you the beasts of the field, which will bereave you of your children and destroy your cattle and reduce your number so that your roads lie deserted. And if by these things you are not turned to Me, but act with hostility against Me, then I will act with hostility against you; and I, even I, will strike you seven times for your sins. I will also bring upon you a sword which will execute vengeance for the covenant; and when you gather together into your cities, I will send pestilence among you, so that you shall be delivered into enemy hands. When I break your staff of bread, ten women will bake your bread in one oven, and they will bring back your bread in rationed amounts, so that you will eat and not be satisfied. [5] Yet if in spite of this you do not obey Me, but act with hostility against Me, then I will act with wrathful hostility against you, and I, even I, will punish you seven times for your sins. Further, you will eat the flesh of your sons and the flesh of your daughters you will eat. I then will destroy your high places, and cut down your incense altars, and heap your remains on the remains of your idols, for My soul shall abhor you. I will lay waste your cities as well and will make your sanctuaries desolate, and I will not smell your soothing aromas. I will make the land desolate so that your enemies who settle in it will be appalled over it. You, however, I will scatter among the nations and will draw out a sword after you, as your land becomes desolate and your cities become waste [the 5th and final cycle of Divine Discipline sees the Client Nation destroyed].



- (7) **Satan Attacks.** Satan attacks all the Divine Institutions – Rev. 12:9; 20:3, 8. In fact, Satan promotes internationalism and socialism per his @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS. See @@@ DEMONISM.
- (8) **Revolution.** Armed @@@ REVOLUTION against a national entity is unauthorized – Rom. 13:1-7. However, in extreme grievances @@@ SEPARATION is authorized under the “consent of the governed” concept. For example, the 1776 American War for Independence from England.
- (9) **Loyal Citizens.** Recognizing that their true “*citizenship is in heaven*” [Phil. 3:20-21], Believers are still commanded to be loyal citizens of the State where they reside and to live their lives “*as for the LORD*” [Col. 3:23-24]; Eph. 5:22; Col. 3:13;; Matt. 22:19-21; Rom. 13:1-7 [death penalty is correctly applied for criminal Believers]; 1 Pet. 2:11-15; 1 Tim. 2:1-2. See @@@ HEAVEN.

### ROMANS 13:1

Every person is to be in subjection [*hupotasso*] to the governing authorities. For there is no authority [*exousia*] except from God, and those which exist are established by God [*per the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS*].

### MATTHEW 22:19-21

“Show Me [*Jesus*] the coin *used* for the poll-tax.” And they [*Pharisees*], brought Him a denarius. And He [*Jesus*] said to them, “Whose likeness and inscription is this?” They said to Him, “Caesar’s.” Then He said to them, “Then render to Caesar the things that are Caesar’s; and to God the things that are God’s.”

### 1 PETER 2:11-12

Beloved, I [*Peter*] urge you as aliens and strangers [*the Believer is a citizen of @@@ HEAVEN*] to abstain from fleshly lusts [*epithumia* (lusts) – coming from the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] which wage war against the soul [*the battle for control is between the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT and the Old Sin Nature*]. Keep your behavior excellent among the Gentiles [*ethnos – the unBelievers*], so that the thing in which they slander you as evildoers [*presenting the Gospel*], they may because of your good deeds [*as a model citizen*], as they observe *them*, glorify God in the day of visitation.

- (10) **Unlawful Orders.** The Believer must resist government commands when they directly conflict with @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – 1 Pet. 2:13-14; Acts 4:18-20 [Peter and Paul refused orders to stop speaking about Jesus Christ]; Dan. 3:16-19; 6:1-28 [Daniel ignored the King’s decree to stop praying].
- (11) **Encroachment on Divine Institutions.** Rejection of the Divine Institutions is always for the “good” of some group of people. Example, the early Communist Chinese revolution did away with narcotic dins winning the support of many of the local Christian churches for such social reforms. Then, when in power, the communists slaughtered the Chinese Christians wholesale.
- (12) **National Destruction.** When a significant number of people in the national entity ignore or oppose the Divine Institutions a tipping point is rapidly reached which will ultimately lead the nation to its destruction – Mic. 3:1-4.

### MICAH 3:1-4

And I [God] said, “Hear now, heads of Jacob and rulers of the house of Israel. Is it not for you to know justice [*mishpat* (the act of correctly deciding a case) – they should endorse and follow the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS]? You who hate good [*tob*] and love evil [*ra*], who tear off their skin from them and their flesh from their bones, who eat the flesh of my people, strip off their skin from them, break their bones and chop *them* up as for the pot and as meat in a kettle [the people are abused by their leaders].” Then they [those who practice injustice] will cry out to the LORD, but He will not answer them. Instead, He will hide His face from them at that time because they have practiced evil deeds.

- (13) **Requires Work.** In contrast to the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE, a @@@ GRACE system *in toto*, the function of the Divine Institutions are meritorious and require great effort to maintain. Ironically, both “moral” and “immoral” degeneracy occur faster under a free society than under tyranny, meaning that virtue and humility are key ingredients in upholding the Divine Institutions. Accordingly, the Believer should be a model example when it comes to following, protecting, and energizing the Divine Institutions – Ps. 119:5; Gal. 6:7. Furthermore, the Believer should use *agape* impersonal @@@ LOVE to further boost his support to these things – Mic. 6:8-16.

## @@@ DIVORCE

- (1) **Definition.** The end result of a legal process that dissolves the former bonds of @@@ MARRIAGE between a man and a woman. The parties are then in the status quo of “single” – no longer are they husband and wife.
- (2) **No Divorce.** The general mandate from God to Believers is that there should be “no divorce” – 1 Cor. 7:10-11, 27; Matt. 4:3-8; 19:3-8. “*I hate divorce*” [Mal. 2:14, 16] is God’s pronouncement, as it strikes at the very heart of breaking down one of the four @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.

### MALACHI 2:14, 16

Yet you say, “For what reason?” [the LORD will not accept certain offerings] Because the LORD has been a witness between you and the wife [*ishshah*] of your youth, against whom you have dealt treacherously [*bagad (to deal treacherously or deceitfully)*], though she is your companion and your wife, by covenant [*beriyth (covenant; pledge)*]. . . . “For I hate [*wane*] divorce [*shalach (be put away; divorce)*],” says the LORD, the God of Israel, “and him who covers his garment with wrong [an idiom for injustice],” says the LORD of hosts. “So take heed to your spirit [*ruach*], that you do not deal treacherously.”

### MATTHEW 19:3-8

Some Pharisees came to Jesus, testing Him and asking, “Is it lawful *for a man* to divorce [*apoluo (to dismiss; to send away)*] his wife for any reason [*aitia*] at all?” And He answered and said, “Have you not read [*anaginosko – @@@ BIBLE*] that He who created *them* from the beginning made them male and female, and said, ‘For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined [*kollao (to glue together) – to have sexual relations*] to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh’? So they are no longer two, but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together [@@@@ MARRIAGE is one of the four @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS], let no man separate.” They said to Him, “Why then did Moses command to give her a certificate of divorce and send *her* away?” He said to them, “Because of your hardness of heart [*sklerokardia – negative [-N] volition*] Moses permitted you to divorce your wives; but from the beginning it has not been this way [God intends for marriage to stand].”

## 1 CORINTHIANS 7:10

But to the married I [Paul] give instructions, not I, but the LORD, that the wife should not leave her husband.

- (3) **No Happiness Guarantee.** Under the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS, matrimony was not designed as the primary means for @@@ HAPPINESS for the Believer. However, for the mature Winner Believer marriage can be a source of great blessing, and @@@ REWARDS. See @@@ LOVE.
- (4) **Marriage in Conflict.** For the positive [+P] volition Believer the solution to a @@@ MARRIAGE in conflict:
  - (a) **Bible Doctrine First.** If you are a husband or a wife your foundation and number one allegiance is always to God and His @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.
  - (b) **Problem Solving Devices.** If the partner is lacking in some manner of behavior in @@@ MARRIAGE then the other partner must wisely apply 1 Pet. 3:1-2 [viewed from the perspective of a Winner Believer wife] and/or the appropriate @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES such as *agape* impersonal @@@ LOVE.

## 1 PETER 3:1-2

In the same way, you [the positive [+P] volition Believer] wives [*gune*], be submissive [*hupotasso* (obey; to be subordinate to) – under the @@@ AUTHORITY] to your own husbands so that even if any of them [the husband is a Loser Believer on negative [-N] volition or perhaps an unBeliever] are disobedient [*apeitheo* (not to allow one's self to be persuaded; to refuse or withhold belief)] to the word [*logos* – negative [-N] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], they may be won [*kerdaino*] without a word by the behavior [*anastrophe* (manner of life) – the use of impersonal @@@ LOVE] of their wives, as they observe your chaste [*hagnos* (pure from carnality)] and respectful [*phobos*] behavior [*anastrophe* – the witness of the life in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE].

- (c) **Unto the LORD.** As in all things in the Believer's life do your assigned duty in marriage “*as for the LORD*” [Col. 3:23-24].

- (d) **Forgive and Forget.** The Believer must always apply the “Royal Law” – “*forgiving each other, just as God in Christ also has forgiven you*” [Eph. 4:32] and forgive and forget wrongs from their spouse, as couples will always commit sin. See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.
- (5) **Lawful Divorce.** Divorce is allowed [but not commanded] under two specific conditions: (1) adultery; and (2) desertion. See Matt. 5:32; 19:3-9; Deut. 24:1, 3; 1 Cor. 7:15. There are no other listed causes for divorce in the Bible.

### DEUTERONOMY 24:1

When a man takes a wife and marries [*baal (marry; possess)*] her, and it happens that she finds no favor in his eyes because he has found some indecency [*ervah (nakedness; shame) – the wife has committed adultery*] in her, and he writes her a certificate of divorce [*sepher (a legal certificate of divorce)*] and puts *it* in her hand and sends her out from his house.

- (6) **The Former Spouse.** Once there is a remarriage by one of the parties following a divorce, the former spouse is to be regarded as if dead – Rom. 7:1-6; Deut. 24:2-4. In that case there should be no social contact with the former spouse unless required by other lawful functions such as child custody/visitation issues.

### DEUTERONOMY 24:2-4

And she leaves his house and goes and becomes another man’s *wife*, and if the latter husband turns against her and writes her a certificate of divorce and puts *it* in her hand and sends her out of his house, or if the latter husband dies who took her to be his wife, *then* her former husband who sent her away is not allowed to take her again to be his wife, since she has been defiled [*tame (to become unclean; defiled)*]; for that is an abomination before the LORD, and you shall not bring sin on the land which the LORD your God gives you as an inheritance.

- (7) **Separation.** If one party is the victim of a violent or abusive @@@ MARRIAGE, or abuse to the children occurs, etc., the wronged party may geographically separate from that person [and call law enforcement officers on the abusive partner if criminality occurred]. This is a @@@ SEPARATION only, not a divorce.

- (8) **Remarriage.** Remarriage is allowed in the @@@ BIBLE per the following:
- (a) **Before Salvation.** The divorce occurred before @@@ SALVATION – Isa. 44:22; Ps. 103:12.
  - (b) **Adultery.** The innocent party of an adultery case – Matt. 5:32.
  - (c) **Desertion.** The innocent party of a desertion case – 1 Cor. 7:13.
  - (d) **Gimmicks.** The person was the innocent party of a “divorce gimmick.” In Deut. 24:1-4, the word *ervah* (nakedness; shame) is used to describe adultery. Later in the passage the word *tame* (to become unclean; defiled) is also used to describe the former wife who has remarried *vis a vis* the original husband. Improperly seeking to expand the Biblical causes for divorce, this word was twisted by the Jews to include all sorts of ritualistic “unclean” acts listed in *Leviticus*, e.g., entering a house where a recent death occurred. Thus, the conniving husband would send the wife into the home of a deceased person so that he could then declare the wife *tame*, and immediately divorce her. Today, the divorce gimmick is practiced by one party using man-made reasons set out in various State laws which authorize divorce, e.g., “incompatibility” or “irreconcilable differences.” These modern civil codes are not Biblical.
  - (e) **Former Spouse Remarriage.** The former spouse has now remarried [regardless of who caused the divorce] – Deut. 24:3-4.
  - (f) **Remarriage of Original.** The original two divorced partners can remarry each other so long as no other @@@ MARRIAGE has taken place by one or the other in the interim – Deut. 24:4. *See supra* (6).
- (9) **Unauthorized Remarriage.** If a Believer divorced and then remarried contrary to the Biblical mandates the Believer is to stay as he is [married] and @@@ REBOUND – 1 Cor. 7:20. Any ongoing discipline for this subsequent @@@ SIN is converted to Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 7:20

Each man [*hekastos*] must remain in that condition in which he was called.

---



## @@@ DRINKING & EATING

### – DRINKING –

- (1) **Definition.** The term “drinking” refers to the consumption of alcoholic beverages which may or may not lead to being drunk or intoxicated.
- (2) **Drunkenness.** Getting drunk on alcoholic beverages is a @@@ SIN – Isa. 5:11, 22; 28:7-8; Rom. 13:13; 1 Cor. 5:11; Eph. 5:15-18; Prov. 20:1; 23:20; Joel 1:5; Jer. 23:9. By direct analogy getting “drunk” on drugs is a sin [apart from medical uses]. Drunkenness causes sin – Prov. 23:29-35; Gen. 9:21.

### ROMANS 13:13

Let us [**Believers**] behave properly as in the day, not in carousing and drunkenness [*methe*], not in sexual promiscuity and sensuality, not in strife and jealousy.

### EPHESIANS 5:15-18

Therefore be careful how you walk [**the Believer’s lifestyle**], not as unwise men but as wise [**apply @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE**], making the most of your time [*kairo*], because the days are evil [**Satan seeks to deceive the Believer**]. So then do not be foolish [*aphron* (without reason)], but understand what the will of the LORD is [**reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY**]. And do not get drunk [*methusko*] with wine [*oinos*], for that is dissipation [*asotia* (a dissolute life) – @@@ **SUFFERING**], but be filled [*pleroo* (to make full)] with the Spirit [**Fellowship with the Holy Spirit by @@@ REBOUND**].

### JOEL 1:5

Awake, drunkards, and weep; and wail [*yalal* (to howl)], all you wine [*yayin*] drinkers, on account of the sweet wine that is cut off from your mouth [*peh* – **Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING is coming to the nation**].

- (3) **Those in Authority.** Those in positions of @@@ **AUTHORITY** have a special responsibility to stay sober: (1) national leaders [Prov. 31:4-5]; (2) @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHERS** [1 Tim. 3:3; Tit. 1:7]; and (3) deacons in a local Church [1 Tim. 3:8].

- (4) **Illustrations.** Some examples of the negative results of drunkenness: (1) Noah engaged in the @@@ SIN of autoeroticism and homosexual conduct with his son Ham. Ham and his descendants were subsequently cursed [Gen. 9:20-25]; (2) Nabal was too drunk to listen to the words of Abigail [1 Sam. 25:36-38]; (3) Rulers of the Northern Kingdom were always in a state of drunkenness and unable to lead [Isa. 28:1]; (4) Lot, on two separate occasions, got drunk and engaged in incest with one of his daughters [Gen. 19:32-36].
- (5) **Separation from Drunks.** Believers are commanded not to keep company with perpetual drunks – 1 Cor. 5:11. See @@@ SEPARATION.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 5:11

But actually, I [Paul] wrote to you not to associate [*sunanamignumi* (to keep company with)] with any so-called [*onomazo* (to name)] brother [*adelphos* – a Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM] if he is an immoral person [ *pornos* (a man who prostitutes his body to another's lust for hire)], or covetous, or an idolater, or a reviler [*loidoros* (one who causes mischief)], or a drunkard [*methusos* (one intoxicated)], or a swindler—not even to eat with such a one.

- (6) **Loser Believer. Loser** Believers who are consistently on negative [-N] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE are equated with drunks – 1 Thess. 5:6-7; Eph. 5:15-18.

## 1 THESSALONIANS 5:6-7

So then let us not sleep [*katheudo* – Operational @@@ DEATH of the Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM] as others do [Loser Believers], but let us be alert [*gregoreuo* (to watch)] and sober [*nepho* (to be calm and collected)]. For those who sleep do their sleeping at night, and those who get drunk [*methusko* (to intoxicate)] get drunk [*methuo* (to be drunken)] at night [*nux* – but positive [+P] volition Believers keep @@@ WALKING in the light of Bible Doctrine].

- (7) **Drinking in Moderation.** Drinking alcohol in moderation is condoned – Prov. 31:6-7; 1 Tim. 5:23; Tit. 2:3-5. In fact, most all people in the ancient world drank various alcoholic beverages for a variety of reasons to include purification purposes, medicinal, relaxation, enjoyment, and celebration [analogy to the joy of circulating Bible Doctrine – Ps. 104:15; Isa. 55:2].

## 1 TIMOTHY 5:23

No longer drink water *exclusively*, but use a little wine [*oinos*] for the sake of your [*Timothy*] stomach and your frequent ailments.

## TITUS 2:3-5

Older women likewise are to be reverent in their behavior, not malicious gossips nor enslaved to much wine, teaching what is good, so that they may encourage the young women to love their husbands, to love their children, *to be* sensible, pure, workers at home [*oikouros (caring for the house)*], kind, being subject [*hupotasso (to submit to one's control)*], to their own husbands, so that the word of God will not be dishonored.

- (8) **Jesus' First Miracle.** Jesus turned water into a fabulous alcoholic wine as His first public miracle – Jn. 2:1-11. In fact, Jesus drank wine with His meals as did most of the people of the ancient world. Jesus was often slandered as being a drunk because he associated with tax collectors and prostitutes – Jn. 2:1-12; Lk. 7:34. See @@@ **HAPPINESS**; @@@ **MIRACLES**.

## JOHN 2:9-10

When the headwaiter tasted the water [*hudor*] which had become wine [*oinos*], and did not know where it came from (but the servants who had drawn the water knew), the headwaiter called the bridegroom, and said to him, “Every man serves the good wine first, and when *the people* have drunk freely, *then he serves* the poorer wine; *but* you have kept the good wine until now.”

## LUKE 7:34

The Son of Man has come eating and drinking [*pino – Jesus was never drunk*], and you say, “Behold, a gluttonous man and a drunkard, a friend of tax collectors and sinners [*prostitutes*]! Yet wisdom is vindicated by her deeds.

- (9) **Common Sense Rules.** Since alcohol is a depressant, some “common sense” suggestions [these are not in the @@@ **BIBLE**]: (1) never drink when upset; (2) never drink alone, *but see* 1 Tim. 5:23 [medicinal purposes]; (3) never drink with strangers; and (4) the “two-beer rule – limit drinking at one setting to two drinks [meets most State laws concerning driving while impaired].

## – EATING –

- (1) **All Good.** All food “*created by God is good*” [1 Tim. 4:4-5] to eat. The dietary restrictions in the @@@ MOSAIC LAW are now abrogated for the Church Age Believer – Acts 10:9-16. Thus, each Believer can determine for himself what he will or will not eat – Rom. 14:20; Mk. 7:19. Note: The prohibition on eating raw flesh in Gen. 9:3-4, dealt with illustrating for the Jews the evil of @@@ SALVATION by human works.

## GENESIS 9:3-4

Every moving thing that is alive [*animals*] shall be food for you; I [*God*] give all to you, as *I gave* the green plant. Only you shall not eat flesh with its life, *that is*, its blood [*dam – the animal must be cooked before eating*].

## ROMANS 14:20

Do not tear down the work of God for the sake of food [*broma (things eaten)*]. All things indeed are clean, but they are evil for the man who eats and gives offense [*under the Law of Expediency in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE the Believer must consider his actions in light of the possible negative impact on the unBeliever or the weak immature Believer*].

## MARK 7:19

And He [*Jesus*] said to them, “Are you so lacking in understanding also? Do you not understand that whatever goes into the man from outside [*food*] cannot defile him, because it does not go into his heart [*kardia – human soul*], but into his stomach, and is eliminated?” (*Thus He declared all foods clean*).

- (2) **Fasting.** Fasting is a matter of individual choice and may or may not involve skipping meals. Under the Law of Liberty in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE, the Believer is not bound by restrictions on eating – “*he who eats, does so for the LORD, for he gives thanks to God; and he who eats not, for the LORD he does not eat, and gives thanks to God*” [Rom. 14:6]. In fact, *fasting* simply means that the Believer will devote extra time to studying or engaging in @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE activities which requires giving up other activities that would normally have filled that @@@ TIME slot, e.g., preparing and eating a meal.

- (3) **Gluttony.** Gluttony is a @@@ SIN – “*If we have food and covering, with these we shall be content*” [1 Tim. 6:8]; Prov. 23:1-2; Tit. 1:12-13.
- (4) **Prayer.** Prayer for food to be sanctified for use in the body should always precede eating a meal – 1 Tim. 4:4-5. See @@@ PRAYER.

### 1 TIMOTHY 4:4-5

For everything created by God is good [*kalos* (useful; suitable)], and nothing is to be rejected [*apobletos* (thrown away; rejected)] if it [food to be eaten] is received with gratitude [*eucharistia* – @@@ THANKSGIVING]; for it is sanctified [*hagiazō* (to be separated from profane things)] by means of the word of God and prayer [PRAYER over food].

- (5) **Spirituality.** Eating or restricting the eating of food does not equate to, or result in, spirituality – 1 Cor. 8:8.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 8:8

But food will not commend [*paristemi* (to place beside or near)] us to God; we are neither the worse if we do not eat, nor the better if we do eat.

- (6) **Bible Doctrine.** The “*solid food*” [1 Cor. 3:2] of Bible Doctrine provides eternal life to the unBeliever, the Gospel – “*he who believes in Me*” [Jn. 6:35] – and spiritual growth to @@@ MATURITY for the Believer. See Mk. 7:19; Matt. 4:4; 1 Cor. 3:1-2.

### JOHN 6:35

Jesus said to them, “I am the bread of life; he who comes to Me will not hunger, and he who believes in Me will never thirst [*dipsao* – Believers receive @@@ SALVATION].”

### MATTHEW 4:4

But He [Jesus] answered and said, “It is written, ‘Man shall not live on bread alone, but on every word [*rhema* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] that proceeds [*ekporeuomai* (to go forth)] out of the mouth [*stoma*] of God.’”

---

## @@@ EDIFICATION COMPLEX OF THE SOUL

- (1) **Definition.** The Edification Complex of the Soul [ECS] is an R. B. Thieme Jr., teaching concept that refers to the positive [+P] volition **Winner** Believer who builds a categorical @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** mental structure in his @@@ **SOUL & SPIRIT**. The ECS is equivalent to having “*the mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16] at spiritual @@@ **MATURITY**.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 2:16

For who has known [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] the mind [*nous* (the mind, comprising alike the faculties of perceiving and understanding)] of the LORD [*kurios* (God) – the thinking of Jesus Christ is @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**], that he [any given person] will instruct [*sumbibadzo* (to cause to coalesce)] Him [God]? But we [Paul and his traveling seminary] have [*echo* (to have and to hold)] the mind of Christ [these @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHERs** knew Bible Doctrine and were ready to teach it].

- (2) **Biblical Verbs.** Verbs in the @@@ **BIBLE** to describe the ECS include: Hebrew *banah* (to build something out of existing materials) and Greek *oikodomeo* (to build or contrast a structure). Greek nouns to describe the ECS include: *oikodome* (the act of building); *oikodomia* (the result of erecting a structure) – 1 Cor. 3:10-12; Acts 4:11; Eph. 4:12, 15-16, 29 [the @@@ **HOLY SPIRIT**’s function in @@@ **OPERATION Z**].

## EPHESIANS 4:15-16

But speaking the truth [*aletheuo* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**] in love [*agape* (to love dearly)], we are to grow up [*auxano* (to grow; to increase) – the positive [+P] volition Believer is to grow to @@@ **MATURITY**] in all *aspects* into Him who is the head, *even* Christ, from whom the whole body [*soma* – all Church Age Believers], being fitted and held together by what every joint [*haphe* – the @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHER** providing the construction material of Bible Doctrine] supplies [*epichoregia*], according to the proper working of each individual part, causes the growth [*auxesis* (increase; growth)] of the body [*soma* – any positive [+P] volition Believer wishing to reach maturity] for the building up [*oikodome* – the @@@ **EDIFICATION COMPLEX OF THE SOUL**] of itself in love [*agape* (to love dearly)].



- (3) **Construction Materials.** The construction materials for an ECS consist of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE which is obtained through the function of @@@ OPERATION Z in the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT – Eph. 3:17-20; 4:12-13, 23-24; Jn. 14:26; 16:12-14; 1 Jn. 2:3, 27; 1 Cor. 2:9-16; Col. 1:9-10. See @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER.
- (4) **Foundation.** The foundation slab which supports the ECS is @@@ FAITH in the LORD Jesus Christ the @@@ CORNERSTONE, and the @@@ FORTY THINGS given at @@@ SALVATION – 2 Tim. 2:19; 1 Cor. 3:11.
- (5) **Progressive in Structure.** Building the ECS is progressive in nature so that the Believer gradually thinks more and more in terms of the Divine viewpoint, as in the construction of a building. Thus, advanced @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE is built on top of basic Bible Doctrine “*day by day*” [2 Cor. 4:17] until the whole project is completed – Eph. 4:12; Col. 2:7; Jude 1:20. Ultimately, the mature Winner Believer reaches the point where he is entered as a subject matter expert witness in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.
- (6) **Inspection and Testing.** Just as a building inspector approves the steps of construction during the building process, the Believer’s ECS is “*tested*” [1 Pet. 1:7] by @@@ SUFFERING as it builds. In turn, the Believer must have an Instant Reaction Force [IRF] of “*red alert*” @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES to reflexively fight unexpected attacks from the Old Sin Nature and @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS. See Eph. 4:6; 2 Pet. 3:17-18.

## 2 PETER 3:17-18

You therefore, beloved [Believers], knowing this beforehand [Peter has taught this @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], be on your guard [phulasso (to guard or watch) – have an IRF] so that you are not carried away [sunapago (to lead away with or together)] by the error of unprincipled men [people in @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS who distract the Believer] and fall from [ekpipto (to drift off course)] your own steadfastness [sterigmos (firm condition) – do not go into @@@ REVERSIONISM], but grow [auxano (to cause to grow) – the positive [+P] volition Believer must reach @@@ MATURITY] in the grace [charis – @@@ GRACE] and knowledge [gnosis (the deeper more perfect and enlarged knowledge) – understanding the full realm of Bible Doctrine] of our LORD and Savior Jesus Christ. To Him be the glory [doxa], both now and to the day of eternity. Amen.

(7) **The ECS Structure.**

**FIRST FLOOR** – @@@ OPERATION Z and @@@ REBOUND.

**SECOND FLOOR** – Basic @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE Rooted in the Theology of @@@ DISPENSATIONS.

**THIRD FLOOR** – @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES.

**FOURTH FLOOR** – Spiritual Self Esteem @@@ MATURITY.

**FIFTH FLOOR** – Spiritual Autonomy @@@ MATURITY.

**SIXTH FLOOR** – Super Spiritual @@@ MATURITY.

- (8) **Divine Good.** Producing Divine @@@ GOOD in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE only occurs from an ECS. See Eph. 2:10.
- (9) **Top Priority.** The top goal in the life of the Believer is to get an ECS, not to do special things [speak tongues] – 1 Cor. 14:3-4, 12, 26. See @@@ GIFTS.
- (10) **Solves Problems.** The completed ECS deals effectively with and solves any psychological handicaps stuck in the Believer's subconscious, including invalid @@@ EMOTION and guilt complexes – Heb. 20:22.
- (11) **Detects Falsehoods.** The ECS provides the wisdom to detect false doctrine – Heb. 4:12; 5:14; Gal. 2:14; Mal. 3:18; Matt. 7:24-27.

**MATTHEW 7:24-25**

Therefore, everyone who hears these words of Mine [**Jesus**] and acts on them [**builds an @@@ EDIFICATION COMPLEX OF THE SOUL**], may be compared to a wise man who built his house on the rock. And the rain fell, and the floods came [**@@@ PROBLEMS**], and the winds blew and slammed against that house; and yet it did not fall, for it had been founded on the rock [**@@@ SALVATION**].

- (12) **Capacity for Love.** The ECS provides the capacity for the Believer to fully enjoy all the categories of @@@ LOVE to include *agape impersonal love*.

- (13) **Rapid Construction.** A Believer can erect an ECS under accelerated circumstances in @@@ TIME – Js. 1:2-4. This requires a concentrated and maximum intake of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – Eph. 5:16; Col. 4:5. See @@@ RUNNING.
- (14) **Rewards.** The ECS Winner Believer is entered as a subject matter expert witness exhibit in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT and receives fantastic Escrow Account Blessing @@@ REWARDS in time and eternity – Rev. 22:12; Matt. 25:23; 1 Tim. 4:8. See @@@ HAPPINESS.
- (15) **Local Church.** The proper local independent @@@ BIBLE teaching Church will have mature ECS Winner Believers in attendance – Acts 9:31.
- (16) **The Pivot.** The ECS Winner Believer provides stability and prosperity for all those associated with him in his sphere of life and to the nation where he resides – Jer. 42:10. This is blessing by association. See @@@ PIVOT.
- (17) **Jesus' ECS.** The humanity of Jesus Christ erected an ECS at a very early age – Lk. 2:40, 52; Jn. 1:14.

## LUKE 2:40

The Child [Jesus] continued to grow and become strong, increasing in wisdom [*sophia*]; and the grace [*charis*] of God was upon Him.

- (18) **Synonyms.** (1) “*Light*” [Ps. 43:3; 119:130; Eph. 5:8-9, 13]; (2) “*Give glory*” [Jer. 13:16; 1 Cor. 11:7]; (3) “*God’s household*” [Eph. 3:19; 5:17-20; Col. 3:16]; (4) “*Imitators of God*” [Eph. 5:1; Matt. 5:48]; (5) “*Christ in your heart*” [Eph. 3:17]; (6) “*Christ is formed in you*” [2 Cor. 13:5; Gal. 2:20; 4:6, 19]; (7) “*New man*” [Eph. 4:24; Col. 3:10; 1 Pet. 3:4]; and (8) “*Perfect*” [Js. 1:4].

## GALATIANS 4:19

My [Paul] children [*teknon*], with whom I am again [*palin* (repetition of action)] in labor [*odino* (to feel the pains of childbirth)] until Christ is formed [*morphoo*] in you [Paul taught @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE so Believers could grow to @@@ MATURITY and have the thinking of Christ].

## @@@ EMOTION

- (1) **Definition.** The emotion is a part of the human soul – Lk. 12:19-21; 2 Sam. 5:8. Ideally, it is a *responder/appreciator* mechanism to the thoughts in the mentality. While the volition can open or shut the gate on emotional response/reaction, emotion can also function on its own apart from volition. *See @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT.*
- (2) **Thinking.** Without frontal lobes in the brain a person can still emote. Emotion does not contain a vocabulary, does not contain thought or common sense, cannot reason, and does not contain @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE. Again, emotion is non-thinking and must be *subordinated* and *controlled* by proper thinking – Jer. 17:11; Ps. 26:2; Rev. 2:23; Prov. 23:15-17.
- (3) **Biblical Terminology.** Words used in the @@@ BIBLE for emotion include: *splachnon* (entrails; feelings) [2 Cor. 6:11-12]; *koilia* (hallow; inner parts) [Rom. 16:17-18; Phil. 3:18-19]; *nephros* (kidneys; feelings) [Rev. 2:23]; and *kiljah* (fat pads of the kidneys) [Ps. 7:9; 62:12; Jer. 11:20; 17:10].
- (4) **Two Functions.** Human emotion has two functions, one sinful and one good.
  - (a) **Arrogance.** Emotion expressed in arrogance and in response to the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE is evil – Js. 4:1; 1 Pet. 2:11; Phil. 3:18-19.

## PHILIPPIANS 3:18-19

For many walk [*peripateo* (a lifestyle) – the @@@ WALKING of the Loser negative [-N] volition Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM], of whom I [Paul] often told you, and now tell you even weeping, *that they are* enemies [*echthros* (hated; odious; opposing God in the mind)] of the cross [*stauros* – @@@ CROSS] of Christ, whose end is destruction [*apoleia* – they will die the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH], whose god is *their* appetite [*koilia* – their @@@ EMOTION is key to them], and *whose* glory [*doxa* – the Loser Believer glories in human @@@ GOOD] is in their shame [*aiscuhne* (sense of shame)], who set their minds [*phroneo* (to feel; to think)] on earthly things [they are firmly in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS].

- (b) **Response.** Appreciation and response to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE is good emotion. *See* Lk. 10:27; Matt. 22:37; Deut. 6:5; Mk. 12:30-31.

**MATTHEW 22:37**

And He [**Jesus**] said to him, “You shall love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] the LORD your God with all your heart [*kardia*], and with all your soul [*psuche*], and with all your mind [*dianoia* (the mind as a faculty of understanding)].”

- (5) **Not Christianity.** Emotion has nothing to do with @@@ SALVATION, @@@ REBOUND, or reaching @@@ MATURITY. See Jer. 15:16.
- (6) **Hinders Growth.** A person under pressure emotes. Emotion unchecked can quickly hinder spiritual growth – Rom. 16:17-18; 2 Cor. 6:11-12; Js. 1:19-20. However, a Believer who uses @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES can think and apply @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – Lam. 3:21.

**ROMANS 16:18**

For such men are slaves [**Believers in @@@ REVERSIONISM**], not of our LORD Christ but of their own appetites [*koilia* (emotions; belly) – under the influence of their @@@ EMOTION and @@@ OLD SIN NATURE]; and by their smooth [*chrestologia* (the smooth and plausible address which simulates goodness)] and flattering speech [*eulogia* (praise)] they deceive [*exapatao*] the hearts of the unsuspecting [*akakos* (distrusting no one)].

**JAMES 1:19**

*This* you [**Believers**] know [*heneka* (on account of)], my beloved brethren. But everyone must be quick [*tachus* (prompt)] to hear [*akouo* – the proper motivation to learn @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], slow to speak [*laleo* – no talking while in @@@ BIBLE class; respect for the teaching of the Word of God is paramount] and slow to anger [*orge* (anger) – @@@ EMOTION].

**2 CORINTHIANS 6:11-12**

Our [**Paul and his seminary team**] mouth [*stoma*] has spoken freely [*anoigo*] to you [**they taught many @@@ BIBLE classes**], O Corinthians, our heart is opened wide [*platuno*]. You are not restrained [*stenochoreo* (to be in a narrow place) – from learning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] by us, but you are restrained in your own affections [*splagchnon* – @@@ EMOTION].

## @@@ ENEMY

- (1) **Definition.** An enemy is someone or something in opposition. The Greek words for enemy are *antikeimai* (to be opposed to) or *echthros* (hated; odious).
- (2) **Enemies of the Believer.**
  - (a) **Cosmic Systems.** The Believer must stay out of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS which is the “*enemy of all righteousness*” [Acts 13:10]. See 1 Pet. 5:8; 1 Tim. 4:1; Eph. 6:10-17; Js. 4:4.

### EPHESIANS 6:10-12

Finally, be strong in the LORD and in the strength of His might. Put on the full armor [*panoplia* (complete military battle gear)] of God, so that you will be able to stand firm against the schemes of the devil [*Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD*]. For our struggle [*pale* (to wrestle) – in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT] is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers [*arche* – officer demons], against the powers [*exousia* – rank and file demons], against the world forces [*kosmokrator* – senior demons] of this darkness [*skotos* – the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], against the spiritual forces of wickedness [*ponera*] in the heavenly [*epouranios* (existing in heaven)] places.

- (b) **Self.** In terms of consistent negative [-N] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE, the Believer’s *greatest* enemy of all is himself. See Ps. 119:67; Acts 7:51; Matt. 16:23; 23:37; Mk. 8:33.

### MARK 8:33

But turning around and seeing His disciples [*Jesus about to respond to Peter’s pledge that he would not allow Him to be crucified*], He rebuked [*epitimao* (to admonish or charge sharply)] Peter and said, “Get behind Me, Satan; for you are not setting your mind [*phroneo* (to have understanding) – on the @@@ PLAN OF GOD] on God’s interests, but man’s [*human viewpoint*].”

- (c) **Old Sin Nature.** The genetically formed @@@ OLD SIN NATURE resides in the genetic code of the body of every Believer and does not depart until his @@@ DEATH. The Old Sin Nature seeks to control the soul and must be resisted – Rom. 7:24-25.



## ROMANS 7:25

Thanks be to God through Jesus Christ our LORD! So then, on the one hand I myself with my mind am serving the law of God [Paul was constantly using @@@ REBOUND and learning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], but on the other, with my flesh [*sarx* – Paul’s @@@ OLD SIN NATURE influencing him to @@@ SIN] the law of sin [*hamartia* – getting him into the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS].

- (d) **Loser Believers.** Positive [+P] volition Believers must not be influenced in their thinking by social interaction with negative [-N] volition Believers – Gal. 4:16. See @@@ SEPARATION.
- (a) **Satan and Demons.** The power of Satan is restricted by God. See @@@ ANGELS; @@@ DEMONISM. See 2 Tim. 2:26.
- (b) **Negative Influence of unBelievers.** See Heb. 10:27.
- (3) **The Loser Believer.** The “Loser Believer” is simply defined as a Believer who refuses to respond to the truth of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE. Nevertheless, even in the state of @@@ REVERSIONISM the Loser Believer will always have @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY. Loser Believers are called the “*enemies of the cross of Christ*” [Phil. 3:18-19].

## PHILIPPIANS 3:18

For many walk [*peripateo* (a lifestyle) – the @@@ WALKING of the Loser negative [-N] volition Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM], of whom I [Paul] often told you, and now tell you even weeping, *that they are* enemies [*echthros* (hated; odious; opposing God in the mind)] of the cross [*stauros* – @@@ CROSS] of Christ.

- (4) **Enemy of God.** The unBeliever is designated as under the “*wrath of God*” [Jn. 3:36] and “*accursed*” [Matt. 25:41] because he has not accepted the free gift of salvation – Rom. 5:8-10; 8:32. Thus, the unBeliever is not a “child of God” because he does not possess the Perfect Righteousness [+R] of God and is therefore unacceptable to the Trinity; he is a *nothos* (a bastard) [Heb. 12:8]. No amount of human @@@ GOOD works can change this damnable status.

## @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY

- (1) **Definition.** Eternal security refers to the irrevocable and forever secured position that the Believer has with God at the point of @@@ SALVATION.
- (2) **Salvation Secured.** Any stable relationship in life demands security as a base. The Believer cannot be free to serve God in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE while enslaved to legalism and in doubt regarding the unbreakable status of eternal security he has with his Creator. Thus, once a human being in the Church Age exhales a single act of @@@ FAITH alone towards Jesus Christ alone that person is given @@@ FORTY THINGS to include God's Perfect Righteousness [+R] and God's Eternal Life – the Believer is born again as a @@@ NEW SPECIES and his @@@ SALVATION is forever secured. *See* Lk. 10:20; Ps. 34:22.

## LUKE 10:20

Nevertheless do not rejoice in this, that the spirits [@@@ ANGELS] are subject [*hupotasso*] to you [the Believer in his @@@ RESURRECTION body will have a superior position], but rejoice that your names are recorded [*eggrapho* (to engrave) – in the @@@ SALVATION “Book of Life”] in heaven [*ouranos* – @@@ HEAVEN].

## PSALM 34:22

The LORD redeems [*padah* (to pay a ransom) – @@@ SOTERIOLOGY] the soul [*nephesh*] of His servants [Believers], and none of those who take refuge in Him will be condemned [*asham* (to be incriminated) – @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY is guaranteed].

- (3) **Lifestyle Irrelevant.** A Believer can never get “unsaved” regardless of his subsequent lifestyle post-salvation – Acts 16:31; 2 Cor. 5:21; 1 Jn. 5:11-13; Rom. 8:1; Heb. 13:5; Matt. 28:20. *See* @@@ TRINITY.

## ROMANS 8:1

Therefore [*ara* (so then)] there is now no condemnation [*katakrima* (damnatory sentence)] for those who are in Christ Jesus [all Believers are in @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST].

- (4) **Reaching Maturity.** Without understanding the fundamental basic doctrine of eternal security, the Believer will never reach @@@ MATURITY.
- (5) **One: Positional Approach.** All Believers have an *unbreakable* position with God that no person or thing can ever change – designated as a “*new creature*” [2 Cor. 3:17] in Jesus Christ at the point of @@@ SALVATION. See Rom. 8:38-39; 1 Cor. 1:2, 30. See @@@ NEW SPECIES.

### ROMANS 8:38-39

For I [Paul] am convinced that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities [*arche – senior officer demons*], nor things present, nor things to come, nor powers, nor height, nor depth, nor any other created thing [*to include the Believer himself*], will be able to separate [*chorizo (to depart; to separate; to put asunder)*] us [Believers] from the love [*agape (to love dearly)*] – because the Believer has the Righteousness [+R] of God imputed to his @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT he is under the maximum personal @@@ LOVE of God] of God, which is in Christ Jesus our LORD [*all Believers are in @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST and can never get out*].

- (a) **Retroactive Positional Truth.** Every Believer is identified with Christ in His unique spiritual @@@ DEATH on the @@@ CROSS where He died spiritually for all human @@@ SIN – Rom. 6; Col. 2:12; 3:3.
- (b) **Current Positional Truth.** Every Believer is in @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST now and forevermore. Each Believer now shares: (1) the Righteousness [+R] of Christ [2 Cor. 5:21]; (2) His Eternal Life [1 Jn. 5:11-12]; (3) His Destiny [Eph. 1:3-6; Rom. 8:29]; (4) His Sonship [2 Tim. 2:1; Gal. 3:26]; (5) His Heirship [Rom. 8:16-17; Eph. 1:4]; (6) His Sanctification [1 Cor. 1:2, 30]; (7) His Kingdom [2 Pet. 1:11]; (8) His Priesthood [Heb. 10:10-14; 1 Pet. 2:5]; and (9) His Heavenly Seat at God’s right hand [Col. 1:13; Eph. 2:6].
- (6) **Two: Logical Approach.** The *logical approach* is irrefutable *a fortiori* logic: (1) If as an unBeliever you were the @@@ ENEMY of God and nevertheless were saved by Him, then God will obviously do “*much more*” [Rom. 5:8-10; 8:32] for you now that you are His child. (2) Since Jesus Christ died on the @@@ CROSS for every sin that the Believer will ever commit, past, present, and future, there is no sin that the Believer can do to delete eternal security.

## ROMANS 5:8-10

But God demonstrates [*sunistao* (to put together by way of composition; to show; to prove)] His own love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE] toward us, in that while we were yet sinners [*hamartolos* – the unBeliever under spiritual @@@ DEATH], Christ died [*apothnesko* (of violent death; of eternal death; to be subject to eternal misery in hell) – spiritual death] for us [the Believer]. Much more [*polus mallon* (much more; it stands to greater reason)] then, having now been justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – the Believer has the Righteousness [+R] of God] by His blood [*aima* – the @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST], we shall be saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven] from the wrath [*orge*] of God through [*dia* (by means of)] Him [Jesus Christ]. For if while we were enemies [*echthros* – as unBelievers prior to @@@ SALVATION] we were reconciled [*katallasso* (to receive one into favor)] to God through [*dia* (by means of)] the death [*thanatos* (death with the implied idea of future misery in hell)] of His Son, much more, having been reconciled [*katallasso* – the Believer receives God's [+R]], we shall be saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – to deliver to the status of a @@@ RESURRECTION body and @@@ REWARDS for the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches spiritual @@@ MATURITY] by His life.

- (7) **Three: Anthropomorphic Approach.** The *hand of God* firmly holds the Believer and will never let go of him, regardless of what the Believer does or does not accomplish in time – Deut. 33:27; Ps. 37:24; Jn. 6:37; 10:28-30.

## JOHN 10:28-30

And I [Jesus Christ] give eternal [*aionios* (without end; never to cease)] life [*zoe*] to them [Believers], and they will never perish [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely) – in @@@ HELL]; and no one will snatch [*harpazo* (to carry off by force)] them out of My hand [*cheir* – @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY]. My Father [God the Father], who has given *them* to Me, is greater than all; and no one is able to snatch *them* out of the Father's hand. I and the Father are one [the @@@ TRINITY].

- (8) **Four: Experiential Approach.** Expressed in part of a @@@ BIBLE hymn at 2 Tim. 2:11-13, which Paul may have written himself, titled: “*Faithful is the Word.*” See Ps. 103:12; 138:2; Matt. 26:69-75; Isa. 1:18; 44:22; 1 Jn. 1:7; Eph. 1:7; Tit. 3:5; 2 Tim. 1:9; Gal. 2:16; Phil. 3:9.

## 2 TIMOTHY 2:11-12

It is a trustworthy [*pisots* (faithful)] statement [*logos* (the word)]: For if [**First Class Condition – and it is true**] we [**Believers**] died [*sunapothnesko* (to die together)] with Him, we will also live [*suzao* (to live together)] with Him; if [**Third Class Condition – maybe you will and maybe you won't**] we [**Believers**] endure [*hupomeno* (to persevere under testing) – undeserved Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing], we will also reign [*sumbasileuo*] with Him [**in the Millennium only Believers who reach @@@ MATURITY will rule with Christ**];\*

\* If the Believer endures unjust or undeserved Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing he will produce Divine Good and receive @@@ REWARDS in time and eternity to include the high honor of reigning with Christ in the Millennium. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.

If [**Third Class Condition – maybe you will and maybe you won't**] we [**Believers**] deny [*arneomai*] Him [**Jesus Christ**], He also will deny us [**@@@ REWARDS**].\*\*

\*\* If a Believer rejects @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE and ignores the mandates of the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE then that Believer will be denied the @@@ REWARDS that were placed in his Escrow Account in eternity past. His rewards are lost, but not his @@@ SALVATION.

## 2 TIMOTHY 2:13

If we [**Believers**] are faithless [*apisteo* (to disbelieve; to betray a trust; to have no belief)], He [**Jesus Christ**] remains [*meno* (to abide; remain persevere under testing)] faithful [*pistos* – @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY is guaranteed], for He cannot deny [*arneomai*] Himself [**the @@@ TRINITY cannot deny the imputed Righteousness [+R] that the Believer possesses**].\*\*\*

\*\*\* This particular Believer actually renounces Jesus Christ as his LORD and Savior. But since God puts His word above His name [Ps. 103:12; 138:2] it is impossible for God to go back on His word [Tit. 1:2; Heb. 6:18; Num. 23:19; Mal. 3:6; 1 Jn. 3:1-2]. Thus, once any Believer receives God's Perfect Righteousness [+R] that Believer is God's child forever. **Once saved, always saved** – Heb. 5:9; 10:10-14!

- (9) **Five: Family Approach.** The Church Age Believer is in the Royal Family of God and will always be His child. The type of child may vary [one who learns vs. one who does not] but not the fact of the fixed relationship. Thus, Christianity is a *relationship* and not a @@@ RELIGION! See Jn. 1:12; Gal. 3:26; Lk. 15:11-33; 1 Jn. 3:1-2; Rom. 8:15; 9:8; Eph. 2:19-22.

### GALATIANS 3:26

For you [Believers] are all sons [*uihos*] of God [*theos*] through faith [*pistis* – the means of @@@ SALVATION is by @@@ FAITH] in Christ Jesus.

### ROMANS 8:15

For you [Believers] have not received a spirit [*pneuma* (vital principle; mental disposition)] of slavery leading to fear [*phobos* (afraid; dread; terror) – @@@ FEAR of losing his @@@ SALVATION status] again, but you have received a spirit [*pneuma* (vital principle; mental disposition)] of adoption as sons [*uihos*] by which we cry out, “Abba! Father!”

- (10) **Six: Sovereignty of God Approach.** It is the Sovereign Will of God to keep the Believer saved. See 2 Pet. 3:9; Rom. 8:30; Jdg. 24; 1 Cor. 1:8, 30; Heb. 6:18; 13:5; Deut. 31:6, 8; Tit. 1:2; 2 Cor. 5:8.

### HEBREWS 6:18

So that by two unchangeable [*ametathetos* (unalterable)] things [God’s essence in the @@@ TRINITY and His word] in which it is impossible [*adunatos* (unable to be done)] for God to lie [*pseudomai* (to speak deliberate falsehoods)], we who have taken refuge [those who have believed in Christ for @@@ SALVATION] would have strong encouragement [*paraklesis*] to take hold of the hope [*elpis* (confidence) – Hope I of the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES] set before us [@@@ ETERNAL SECURITY].

### TITUS 1:2

In the hope [*elpis* (confidence) – Hope I of the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES] of eternal [*aionios*] life [*zoe*], which God, who cannot lie [*pseudomai* (to speak deliberate falsehoods)], promised [*egagello*] long ages ago.



- (11) **Seven: No Double Jeopardy Approach.** Since Jesus Christ died for all @@@ SIN of all humans – past, present, and future – there can be no double jeopardy. Sin is never an issue again for the Believer except as the basis for @@@ REBOUND. In fact, at the Great White Throne Judgment for the unBeliever, sin is not mentioned as the basis for the unBeliever going to @@@ HELL. The unBeliever goes to the “*Lake of Fire*” [Matt. 25:41], not for his sin but for his rejection of Jesus Christ. Under the doctrine of @@@ HEATHENISM the only unpardonable sin is the unBeliever’s rejection of Christ as Savior – “*of sin because they do not believe in Me*” [Jn. 16:9]. Once the Believer is saved, he cannot commit the unpardonable sin. *See supra* (6).
- (12) **Eight: Inheritance Approach.** God the Father guarantees the Believer a full inheritance based on the @@@ DEATH of Jesus Christ. “*For where a covenant is, there must of necessity be the death of the one who made it*” [Heb. 9:16-17]; 1 Pet. 1:4-5; Col. 1:12; Gal. 3:26-28.

### 1 PETER 1:4-5

To obtain an inheritance [*kleronomia* (property received by inheritance) – the Believer gets a @@@ RESURRECTION body and @@@ REWARDS] which is imperishable [*aohthartos* (immortal; not able to decay)] and undefiled and will not fade away [*amarantos* (perennial; perpetual)], reserved [*tereo* (to post a guard)] in heaven [*ouranos* – the third @@@ HEAVEN] for you [the Believer], who are protected by the power of God through faith [*pistis* – the truth of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE guarantees these things] for a salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – the Believer is given these things by God] ready to be revealed in the last time [at the @@@ RAPTURE].

### GALATIANS 3:26-28

For you are all sons [*uihos*] of God [*theos*] through faith [*pistis* – the means of @@@ SALVATION is by @@@ FAITH] in Christ Jesus. For all of you who were baptized [*baptizo*] into Christ [dry baptism of @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] have clothed yourselves with Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek [*ethnos*], there is neither slave nor free man, there is neither male nor female; for you are all one in Christ Jesus.

- (13) **Nine: Body Approach.** Christ is the head and cannot reject the Believer who makes up part of the “*one body*” [1 Cor. 12:20-21]; Eph. 1:22; 4:15; Col. 1:18.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 12:20-21

But now there are many members [*melos* (limbs; a member of the human body)], but one body [*soma* (the body of man or animal)]. And the eye cannot say to the hand, “I have no need of you”; or again the head to the feet, “I have no need of you.”

- (14) **Ten: Greek Tense Approach.** In Eph. 2:8-9 [see also Rom. 10:17] the word “*saved*” is *sozo* (to deliver; to rescue) and refers to @@@ SALVATION where the Believer is delivered from Satan’s realm into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN. The word *sozo* used here is in the intensive perfect tense. Thus, this key passage on the mechanics of salvation should be fully translated as: “*saved in the past with the result that you are saved forever.*” In short, the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT takes the human unBeliever’s bleep of @@@ FAITH [regardless of the amount of faith output by that particular person] and makes it efficacious for salvation. As such no Believer can ever boast about the level or so-called amount of personal faith that they exhaled upon hearing the Gospel because without this ministry of the Holy Spirit *no amount of human faith* would be sufficient and no human could ever be saved.

## EPHESIANS 2:8-9

For by grace [*charis* – @@@ GRACE is the total @@@ PLAN OF GOD] you have been saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN and guaranteed @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY] through faith [*pistis* – the mechanics of @@@ SALVATION is by @@@ FAITH]; and that [the speck of human faith exhaled plus the entire package of what God does in grace] not of yourselves, *it is* the gift [*doron* (a gift)] of God; not as a result of [human] works [*ergon*], so that no one may boast [*kauchaomai* (to boast on account of a thing) – because the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT takes the individual’s faith output and makes it efficacious for salvation no one can boast about their so-called amount of faith exhaled upon hearing the Gospel].

- (15) **Eleven: Sealing Approach.** The @@@ BIBLE describes that an eternal sealing is accomplished by the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT and is not related to the Believer’s actions subsequent to @@@ SALVATION. It is not felt by @@@ EMOTION. In fact, the Sealing by the Holy Spirit occurs at the very second of @@@ FAITH in Jesus Christ and signifies the forever ownership by God of the Believer. See 2 Cor. 1:22; Eph. 1:13; 4:30; Tit. 3:5.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 1:22

Who [God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] also sealed [*sphragizo* (to set a seal upon) – @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY] us [Believers] and gave *us* the Spirit [God the Holy Spirit] in our hearts as a pledge [(*arrhabon* (money given as a pledge or down payment))].

- (16) **Twelve: Spiritual Circumcision Approach.** All Believers are spiritually circumcised by the regeneration of God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT [born again] who also creates a human spirit at the moment of @@@ SALVATION – Col. 2:11-13; Rom. 2:28-29. Like actual physical @@@ CIRCUMCISION this spiritual circumcision is irreversible.
- (17) **Thirteen: The Washing Approach.** Per Jn. 13:4-11, while a Believer constantly needs to get back into Fellowship – “*wash his feet*” – by use of the @@@ REBOUND technique many times over the course of his life, he only needs to be saved once – “*bathed*.” See Tit. 3:5; 1 Cor. 6:11.

## JOHN 13:10

Jesus said to him [Peter], “He who has bathed [*louo* (complete bath of the whole person) – the Believer is saved only once by @@@ FAITH in Christ and needs not take another “bath”] needs only to wash his feet [*nipto* (to wash hands or feet) – the Believer will use @@@ REBOUND many times in life to wash up], but is completely [*holos*] clean [*katharos* (purified by fire) – the Believer has @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY]; and you are clean [Peter was already a Believer], but not all of you [Judas was an unBeliever who never took the “bath” of faith in Jesus Christ for @@@ SALVATION].”

## TITUS 3:5

He [God] saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN] us [Believers], not on the basis of [our] deeds [*chrestotes* (moral goodness) – human @@@ GOOD] which we have done in righteousness [*diakaiosune* – human righteousness [-r]], but according to His mercy [*eleos* – God’s @@@ GRACE in action], by the washing [*loutron* (a bath)] of regeneration [*paliggenesia* (a new birth)] and renewing [*anakainosis* (a complete change for the better)] by the Holy Spirit [the ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT in @@@ SALVATION].

- (18) **Fourteen: Elected and Predestined Approach.** Under the @@@ PLAN OF GOD, God does not direct human free will to positive [+P] volition or negative [-N] volition. However, God has always known every human who would be on positive [+P] volition to the Gospel of @@@ SALVATION and made provisions in eternity past under *election* and *predestination* not only for the presentation of the Gospel to that person, but also, consistent with the Believer's subsequent positive [+P] volitional choices in time, to advance him to the highest levels of @@@ MATURITY – Eph. 1:3-6; Rom. 8:28-30; Ps. 139:16; 1 Cor. 3:11-15. Note: The fact that God knows the future does not negate the function of human free will to make independent choices in time.

### PSALM 139:16

Your eyes [God] have seen my unformed substance [*golem* (embryo; fetus)]; and in Your book [the Divine Decrees in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD] were all written the days that were ordained [*yatsar* (to form)] *for me*, when as yet there was not one of them [God knew all about each human billions and billions of years ago].

### ROMANS 8:28-30

And we [Paul and all mature Believers] know [*heneka* (on account of)] that God causes all things to work together [*sunergeo*] for good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] to those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] God [only the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches spiritual @@@ MATURITY can @@@ LOVE God], to those who are called [*kletos* (called; invited to a banquet)] according [*kata* (according to a norm or standard)] to His purpose [*prosthesis* (a predetermined plan)]. For those whom He foreknew [*proginosko* (to have knowledge beforehand) – the humans that would believe in Christ], He also predestined [*proorizo* (to decide beforehand) – God made provisions in @@@ TIME to get the positive [+P] volition Believer to maturity] *to become* conformed [*summorphos* (having the same form as another)] to the image of His Son, so that He would be the firstborn [@@@ RESURRECTION] among many brethren [*adelphos* (brothers)]; and these whom He predestined [*proorizo*], He also called [*kaleo* (to call aloud; to invite)]; and these whom He called, He also justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – by receiving God's Righteousness [+R]]; and these whom He justified, He also glorified [*doxazo* (to honor) – by the giving of @@@ REWARDS].

- (19) **Fifteen: Vine and the Branch Approach.** All Believers are described as branches and Christ is called the core vine that the “Believers” are attached to. Some branches [**Loser** Believers on negative [-N] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] bear no fruit, while other branches [**Winner** Believers on positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine] who reach @@@ MATURITY bear much fruit and receive @@@ REWARDS – Jn. 15:1-8; 1 Cor. 3:15; Gal. 5:22. Still, productive or not, all branches are *branches of the vine*.

### JOHN 15:1-8

I [**Jesus Christ**] am the true [*alethinos* (truthful; that which has the title and the real nature)] vine [*ampelos*], and My Father is the vinedresser [*georgos*]. Every branch [*klema* (a tender and flexible branch) – a Believer] in Me that does not bear [*phero* (to carry)] fruit [*karpos* (the fruit of trees or vines) – the negative [-N] volition Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM living in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], He takes away [by administering the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH]; and every *branch* that bears fruit [the positive [+P] volition Believer to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], He prunes it [*kathairo* (to prune trees and vines from useless shoots) – a Believer who is the recipient of Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing] so that it may bear [*phero*] more [*polus* (much)] fruit [the Believer reaches spiritual @@@ MATURITY and receives @@@ REWARDS]. You [Believers] are already clean [*katharos* (purified by fire; clean; pure) – all Believers have @@@ SALVATION] because of the word [*logos* – the Gospel] which I have spoken to you. Abide [*meno* (remain)] in Me, and I in you [the Believer @@@ WALKING in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE]. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself unless it abides in the vine, so neither *can* you unless you abide in Me [the Believer must take in Bible Doctrine]. I am the vine, you are the branches; he who abides in Me and I in him [positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine], he bears much fruit [Divine Good and Rewards], for apart from Me you can do nothing. If anyone does not abide [*meno*] in Me, he is thrown [*ballo*] away [*eko* (out)] as a branch and dries up [*xeraino*]; and they gather them, and cast them into the fire [*pur*] and they are burned [*kaio* – the Loser Believer on negative [-N] volition to Bible Doctrine dies the Sin Unto Death]. If you abide in Me, and My words [*rhema* (that which is or has been uttered by a living voice)] abide in you [Bible Doctrine], ask whatever you wish, and it will be done for you [@@@ PRAYER]. My Father is glorified [*doxazo*] by this, that you bear much fruit [in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT], and so prove [*ginomai*] to be My disciples [*mathetes*].



- (20) **Destiny of the Believer.** Every Believer is an integral part of the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD** and has the privilege of serving as a witness for God to help resolve the @@@ **ANGELIC CONFLICT**. If the Believer understands and believes the doctrine of eternal security he cannot worry or get upset about his purpose or destiny. Not only is accepting the fact of eternal security totally relaxing and a source of great joy, it is a key and fundamental doctrine on the path to the Believer's growth to spiritual @@@ **MATURITY** – Lk. 10:20.

### LUKE 10:20

Nevertheless do not rejoice in this, that the spirits [@@@ **ANGELS**] are subject [*hupotasso*] to you [the Believer in his @@@ **RESURRECTION body will have a superior position**], but rejoice that your names are recorded [*eggrapho* (to engrave) – the @@@ **SALVATION Book of Life**] in heaven.

- (21) **Set Free.** The fact of eternal security is the Believer's absolute guarantee that he is *set free* from the power of the @@@ **WORLD** – Gal. 5:1; Phil. 1:21. Only his negative [-N] volition will hinder his growth and production.

### GALATIANS 5:1

It was for freedom [*eleutheria* (liberty to do or to omit to do) – @@@ **FREEDOM to now serve the LORD**] that Christ set us free [the Believer is set free from spiritual @@@ **DEATH**]; therefore keep standing firm [*steko* (to persevere)] and do not be subject again to a yoke [*zugos* (a yoke put on draft cattle)] of slavery [*douleia* – stay out of the @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS**].

- (22) **Eternal Security is Irrevocable.** In @@@ **TIME** a Believer can lose his Fellowship relationship with God, his @@@ **HAPPINESS**, his spiritual growth and momentum by @@@ **REVERSIONISM**, and even face the @@@ **SIN UNTO DEATH**, but he can never lose his eternal @@@ **SALVATION**. Indeed, the fact that any given Believer refuses to believe in the truth of eternal security is irrelevant – he will be in @@@ **HEAVEN**. Nevertheless, for an unspecified period of time at the Judgment Seat of Christ, where Jesus Christ evaluates and @@@ **REWARDS** all Church Age Believers, the **Loser** Believer will be “*ashamed*” [2 Tim. 2:15]. He will then understand for the first time what @@@ **GRACE** is all about and how he wasted his time on earth in his mortal body! See @@@ **JUDGMENT**.



## @@@ FAITH

**Definition.** There are four separate and distinct meanings for the Greek word *pistis* (faith) found in the New Testament. The Greek verb is *pisteuo* (to believe) and the adjective is *pistos* (dependable; the believing one; faithful). The meaning of *pistis* depends greatly on the context of the @@@ BIBLE passage and the presence or absence of a definite article in the structure of the sentence.

### – SALVATION FAITH –

- (1) **First: Salvation Faith.** The use of the word faith in the context of Salvation Faith is an absolute requirement for the unBeliever to utilize in order for him to enter into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN. Faith is in the active [voice] where the subject produces the action of the verb – Eph. 1:15; 2:8-9; Gal. 2:16; 3:26-29 [*pisteuo* is correctly translated (to believe), as in Acts 16:31]; Jn. 3:16, 36; 6:47; Rom. 3:20-22, 27-30; Phil. 3:9. See @@@ SALVATION

### GALATIANS 2:16

Nevertheless knowing that a man is not justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – acceptable to God] by the works of the Law [the @@@ MOSAIC LAW cannot provide God's Righteousness [+R]] but through [*dia* (by means of)] faith [*pistis* – saving @@@ FAITH] in Christ Jesus, even we have believed [*pisteuo*] in Christ Jesus, so that we may be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] by faith [*pistis* – Believer receives the [+R] of God] in Christ and not by the works of the Law; since by the works of the Law no flesh [*sarx* – unBeliever] will be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)].

### ROMANS 3:21-22

But now apart from the Law the righteousness [*dikaioosune* – the Perfect Righteousness [+R] of the @@@ TRINITY] of God has been manifested [*phaneroo* (to make manifest or visible)], being witnessed by the Law and the Prophets [they taught this @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], even the righteousness of God through [*dia* (by means of)] faith [*pistis*] in Jesus Christ for all those who believe [*pisteuo* – the Believer receives God's Perfect [+R]]; for there is no distinction [*diastole* (difference) – Jews and Gentiles alike are saved by @@@ FAITH].

- (a) **No Merit.** Salvation Faith demands a minus reliance on all human @@@ GOOD. It is 100% non-meritorious and all the attention in Salvation Faith belongs to the object – Jesus Christ. He alone paid the price for @@@ SIN on the @@@ CROSS. There is nothing that can be added by man to his exhale of Salvation Faith towards the Gospel, to include all the false claims of @@@ RELIGION. *See Phil. 3:9.*

### PHILIPPIANS 3:9

And [Paul] may be found [*heurisko* (after searching, to find a thing sought)] in Him [Jesus Christ], not having a [self] righteousness [*dikaiosune* – human righteousness [-r]] of my own derived from *the* Law [*nomos* – by keeping the @@@ MOSAIC LAW], but that which is through [*dia* (by means of)] faith [*pistis* – saving @@@ FAITH] in Christ, the righteousness [*dikaiosune*] which *comes* from God [God's Righteousness [+R] imputed to the Believer] on the basis [*epi*] of faith [*pistis* – the [+R] is imputed to the Believer at the point of saving @@@ FAITH].

- (b) **Only a Speck Needed.** Per Eph. 2:8-9, @@@ SALVATION only requires a bleep of faith from a spiritually dead human. This bleep of Salvation Faith output, regardless of the degree/amount, is then made efficacious by the work of God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT. Without this ministry of the Holy Spirit no amount of human faith output would provide salvation – even if a person had all the faith output of every human that ever lived it would still not be sufficient to save him.

### EPHESIANS 2:8-9

For by grace [*charis* – @@@ GRACE is the total @@@ PLAN OF GOD] you have been saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN and guaranteed @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY] through faith [*pistis* – the mechanics of @@@ SALVATION is by @@@ FAITH]; and that [the speck of human faith exhaled plus the entire package of what God does in grace] not of yourselves, *it is* the gift [*doron* (a gift)] of God; not as a result of [human] works [*ergon*], so that no one may boast [*kauchaomai* (to boast on account of a thing) – because the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT alone takes the individual's faith output and makes it efficacious for salvation no one can boast about their so-called superior amount of faith exhaled upon hearing the Gospel].

- (c) **Illustrations.** Salvation Faith is a system of human perception without merit, unlike human rationalism or logic. There are many ways of illustrating non-meritorious Salvation Faith belief in the Gospel: (1) eating [Jn. 6:58]; (2) buying without money [Isa. 55:1]; (3) drinking [Jn. 7:37; 1 Cor. 10:4; Isa. 55:1]; (4) speaking aloud or to self [Rom. 10:10]; and (5) hearing [Isa. 55:3]. Anyone can perform these things – Heb. 4:2; Gal. 3:22.

## HEBREWS 4:2

For indeed we [Believers] have had good news preached [*euangelizo* – the Gospel] to us, just as they [unBelievers] also; but the word [Gospel] they heard did not profit [*opheleo* (to be advantageous; to benefit)] them, because it was not united [*sugkerannumi* (to mix together)] by faith [*pistis* – the unBeliever hearer of the Gospel did not believe it via @@@ FAITH] in those who heard.

## GALATIANS 3:22

But the Scripture [*graphe* (the writing) – the @@@ BIBLE] has shut up [*sugkleio* (to enclose as in a shoal of fishes in a net)] everyone under [*hupo*] sin [*hamartia* – the Bible clearly states that man is a sinner with an @@@ OLD SIN NATURE and God is Perfect], so that the promise [*egaggelia*] by faith [*pistis* – @@@ SALVATION by @@@ FAITH in Christ] in Jesus Christ might be given [*didomai*] to those who believe [*pisteuo* – saving faith].

### – BIBLE DOCTRINE FAITH –

- (2) **Second: Bible Doctrine Faith.** Bible Doctrine Faith sees the word faith employed to refer to that body of information about God's truth, called @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE, that is accumulated by the Believer as he grows to spiritual @@@ MATURITY. Obviously, Bible Doctrine Faith is *relative* from Believer to Believer as it is based on their level of advancement in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE. Bible Doctrine Faith is found in the passive [voice] – *pistis* (what is believed; the body or content of information that is accepted as true), where the subject receives the action of the verb. Generally this is expressed by the word *pistis* with a definite article. See Gal. 1:23; 2:20; 3:11; 2 Pet. 1:1, 5; 1 Tim. 1:19; 3:9; 4:1, 6; 5:8; 6:10; 2 Tim. 2:18; 4:7; Heb. 4:1-3; 11:6; 12:1; Rom. 4:20; 10:17; 12:3; 14:1; Acts 6:7; 2 Cor. 5:7; 10:15; 13:5; Jd. 3, 20; Eph. 3:17; 4:5.

## ROMANS 12:3

For through [*dia* (by means of)] the grace [*charis* – God’s plan, policy, and purpose is @@@ GRACE] given [*didomi*] to me I [Paul] say to everyone among you not to think more highly of himself [*huperphroneo* (not to think in terms of arrogance)] than he ought to think [*phroneo* (to have understanding)]; but to think so as to have sound judgment [*sophroneo* (to be of sound mind)], as God has allotted to each a measure [*metron*] of faith [*pistis* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE learned on the road to @@@ MATURITY].

## 1 TIMOTHY 1:19

Keeping faith [*pistis* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] and a good conscience [*suneidesis* (the soul as distinguishing between what is morally good and bad) – applying Bible Doctrine], which some [Loser Believers] have rejected [*apotheomai* (to thrust away)] and suffered shipwreck [*nauageo*] in regard to their faith [*pistis* – the Loser Believer has no retention of Bible Doctrine].

- (a) **Belief.** The Believer must believe the Doctrine that is taught before it can be transferred to the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT where it is retained. @@@ OPERATION Z turns *gnosis* (knowledge) into *epignosis* (full knowledge), the material used for the construction of the @@@ EDIFICATION COMPLEX OF THE SOUL.
- (b) **Tested.** The accumulated Bible Doctrine Faith will be “*tested*” [1 Pet. 1:7] by God so that the positive [+P] volition Believer can advance in @@@ MATURITY. See *infra* (7).

## 1 PETER 1:7

So that the proof of your faith [*pistis* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT], being more precious than gold [*chrusion*] which is perishable [*apollui* (to destroy) – Bible Doctrine never goes away], even though tested [*dokimazo* (to test; to examine; to prove)] by fire [*pur* – Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing so the Believer can reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY], may be found [*heurisko* (to come upon) – @@@ REWARDS at the Judgment Seat of Christ] to result in praise and glory [*doxa*] and honor [*time*] at the revelation [*apokalupsis* (manifestation) – at the @@@ RAPTURE] of Jesus Christ.

– FAITHFULNESS TO THE WORD –

- (3) **Third: Faithfulness to the Word.** Faithfulness to the Word *pistos* (faithful; consistent) is employed as it pertains to an object, which in this regard is the entire @@@ PLAN OF GOD – Tit. 2:10; 2 Thess. 1:4. In other words, Faithfulness to the Word refers to the Winner Believer who dedicates himself to learning and staying with @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE, consistently making good decisions by regular exposure to the teaching of a prepared @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER and thereby *seeing* all things through the prism of Bible Doctrine to then – “*walk by faith, not by sight*” [2 Cor. 5:7]; Col. 4:7; Matt. 25:23; 1 Tim. 1:12. See @@@ WALKING.

### 1 TIMOTHY 1:12

I [Paul] thank Christ Jesus our LORD, who has strengthened me, because He considered me faithful [*pistos* (faithful; consistent) – faithful to the @@@ PLAN OF GOD], putting me into service [*diakonia* – as the chief of the @@@ APOSTLES and writer of parts of the @@@ BIBLE].

### MATTHEW 25:23

His master [Christ at the Judgment Seat of Christ] said to him [the Winner Believer], “Well done, good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good is produced] and faithful [*pistos* (faithful; consistent) – faithful to the @@@ PLAN OF GOD] slave. You were faithful with a few things [living in the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE], I will put you in charge [*kathistemi* (to set one over a thing)] of many things [*polus* (many, much, large) – fantastic eternal @@@ REWARD]; enter into the joy of your master [God].”

– FAITH/REST –

- (4) **Fourth: Faith/Rest.** The use of Faith/Rest as one of the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES. Here the word faith, *pistis*, is in the middle [voice] where the subject is benefited by the action of the verb [generally without a definite article] – 1 Cor. 13:13; Rom. 4:17-21; 1 Pet. 1:7-8; Matt. 6:25-30 8:10-13; Heb. 11:6; Lk. 8:24-25. It is picking up and using “*the shield of faith with which you will be able to extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one*” [Eph. 6:16]. The Believer has Faith/Rest *pistis* in a promise of God and then *rests* in the LORD, relying on Him to handle the @@@ PROBLEM.



## MATTHEW 6:28-30

And why are you [**the Believer**] worried [*merimnao* (to be anxious)] about clothing? Observe how the lilies of the field grow; they do not toil nor do they spin, yet I say to you that not even Solomon in all his glory clothed himself like one of these. But if God so clothes the grass of the field, which is *alive* today and tomorrow is thrown into the furnace, *will He* not much more *clothe* you? You of little faith [*pistis* – no @@@ FAITH/Rest in God]!

## HEBREWS 11:6

And without faith [*pistis* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE Faith but with emphasis on @@@ FAITH/Rest] it is impossible [*adunatos* (unable to be done)] to please *Him*, for he who comes to God must believe [*pisteuo* (to place confidence in)] that He is and *that* He is a rewarder [*misthapodotes* (one who pays wages)] @@@ REWARDS to the Believer who reaches spiritual @@@ MATURITY of those who seek Him [**the Believer positive [+P] volition to God in his @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT**].

## LUKE 8:24-25

And they [**the disciples**] came to Jesus and woke Him up, saying, “Master, Master, we are perishing [**a storm erupted on the Sea of Galilee and Jesus was asleep in the boat**]!” And He got up and rebuked the wind and the surging waves, and they stopped, and it became calm. And He [**Jesus**] said to them, “Where is your faith [*pistis* – the lack of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in their @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT and the failure to apply what little @@@ FAITH/Rest they had to the @@@ PROBLEM of the storm on the Sea of Galilee]?” They were fearful [*phobeo* (afraid; dread; terror) – @@@ FEAR] and amazed, saying to one another, “Who then is this, that He [**Jesus**] commands even the winds and the water, and they obey [*hupakouo*] Him?”

## 1 CORINTHIANS 13:13

But now faith [*pistis* – @@@ FAITH/Rest], hope [*elpis* (confident expectation)], love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE], abide [*meno* (remain)] these three [**@@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES**]; but the greatest [*megas*] of these is love [*agape* – impersonal love is the greatest of the three].



## MATTHEW 8:10-13

“Truly [*amen* (of a truth)] I [*Jesus*] say to you [*Jews*], I have not found such great faith [*pistis* – @@@ FAITH/Rest as one of the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES] with anyone in Israel [the Roman centurion who told Jesus Christ that it was not necessary for Jesus to go to his home and that He should only command from a distance and his son would be healed]. I say to you that many will come from east and west [Believers in all @@@ DISPENSATIONS], and recline *at the table* with Abraham, Isaac and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven [*ouranos* – @@@ SALVATION]; but the sons of the kingdom [*Jews who are unBelievers*] will be cast out [*ekballo*] into the outer [*exoteros*] darkness [*skotos*]; in that place [*elei* (a location)] there will be weeping [*klauthmos* (lamentation)] and gnashing of teeth [*brugmos* (utter despair) – in @@@ HELL].” And Jesus said to the centurion, “Go; it shall be done for you as you have believed [*pisteuo*].” And the servant [*paheece* (a child, boy or girl)] was healed that *very* moment [@@@ MIRACLES].

- (a) **Promise.** Faith/Rest claims a written promise of God, such as: 1 Jn. 1:9; Ps. 37:4-7; 1 Pet. 5:7; Isa. 41:10; Lk. 1:37; Matt. 21:22.
- (b) **Reverse Rationales.** The advanced use of Faith/Rest can concentrate on reverse rationales: (1) “If God saved me when I was a sinner, which required more effort, He will do even more for me now that I am His child;” or (2) “God knew all my problems billions of years ago and made provisions for them at that time;” or (3) “God will repay the wrong done to me and handle the problem.” See Ps. 55:22; 1 Pet. 5:7; Deut. 32:35; Rom. 12:19.
- (c) **Vast Areas.** Faith/Rest requires the Believer to apply the @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE he has stored in his @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT. When the Believer reaches @@@ MATURITY he can apply vast areas, categories, and principles of Bible Doctrine.
- (5) **Faith in the Old Testament.** In the Old Testament a variety of Hebrew words were used to indicate faith: *amen* (to believe it) – Gen. 15:6; *batach* (to body slam your troubles) – Ps. 37:3; 91:2; *chasah* (a rabbit hiding in a cleft in a rock from a predator) – Ps. 57:1; *jachal* (to trust in suffering) – Job 13:15; Lam. 3:21, 24; *quawah* (many threads woven into an unbreakable rope) – Isa. 40:31; Lam. 3:25.

(6) **The Faithfulness of God.**

- (a) In @@@ REBOUND – 1 Jn. 1:9, a @@@ GRACE process.
- (b) In @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing – 1 Cor. 10:12-13; 1 Pet. 4:19.
- (c) In Logistical @@@ GRACE Provisions – 1 Thess. 5:24.
- (d) In Protection – 2 Thess. 3:3; 1 Cor. 1:9; 3:3; Heb. 10:23.
- (e) In @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY – 2 Tim. 2:13.
- (f) In Keeping His Promises – Heb. 10:23.
- (g) In Following His Own @@@ PLAN OF GOD – 1 Cor. 1:9.

(7) **Testing of Faith.** The Bible Doctrine Faith resident in the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT of the Believer must be “*tested*” [1 Pet. 1:7-8] by @@@ PROBLEMS and Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing – 1 Cor. 10:12-13; Js. 1:3. Testing is integral for the Believer to reach @@@ MATURITY.

**1 CORINTHIANS 10:12-13**

Therefore [*hoste* (so then)] let him who thinks [*dokeo* (to be of opinion)] he stands [*the Believer using human viewpoint*] take heed that he does not fall [*pipto* (to descend from a higher place to a lower place)]. No temptation [*peirasmós* (a test; an experiment; a putting to proof by trial) – @@@ SUFFERING] has overtaken [*lambano* (to grab)] you [*the Believer*] but such as is common to man [*anthropinos* (applied to things belonging to mankind)]; and God is faithful [*pistos*], who will not allow [*aeo*] you to be tempted [*peirazo* (tested) – Divine Suffering for Blessing to the positive [+P] volition Believer] beyond [*huper* (for the sake of)] what you are able [*dunamai* – the test will not exceed the Believer’s level of spiritual @@@ MATURITY], but with the temptation [*peirasmós*] will provide [*poieo* (to make)] the way of escape [*ekbasis* (the way out; an egress)] also [*the Believer must apply the applicable @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES to the test*], so that you will be able to endure it [*hupophero* (to bear by being under; to undergo; to bear patiently) – pass the test and receive @@@ REWARDS].

## @@@ FEAR

- (1) **Definition.** The Greek word for fear is *phobas* and is used in two ways. Fear can mean either (respect; awe) or (cowardly thought or behavior). The Hebrew equivalent is *yare* or *megorah* and is employed in the same manner.
- (2) **Respect for God.** The word fear when used to express deep respect is always focused toward a member of the @@@ TRINITY – “*live in the fear of the LORD always*” [Prov. 23:17]; Job. 1:8; 8:28; Ps. 19:7-9; 34:11-14; 119:63; Prov. 1:7; 10:27; Isa. 50:10; Eccl. 7:17-18; 12:13.

### JOB 1:8

The LORD said to Satan, “Have you considered My servant Job? For there is no one like him on the earth [*erets (land, earth)*], a blameless and upright man [Job had reached @@@ MATURITY], fearing [*yare (to have respect)*] God and turning away from evil [*ra – of human @@@ GOOD*].”

### PSALM 119:63

I am a companion [*chaber (united with)*] of all those who fear [*yare (respect)*] You [God], and of those who keep [*shamar (to keep; to guard)*] Your precepts [*piqud (statutes) – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE*].

### PSALM 19:7-9

The law of the LORD [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] is perfect [*tamiym (complete; whole)*], restoring [*shub (to turn back)*] the soul; the testimony of the LORD is sure, making wise [*chakam*] the simple [*pethiy (open-minded)*]. The precepts of the LORD are right, rejoicing the heart [*leb*]; the commandment of the LORD is pure, enlightening the eyes [*allowing the positive [+P] volition Believer to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY*]. The fear [*yirah (respect)*] of the LORD is clean, enduring forever; the judgments of the LORD are true; they are righteous [*the integrity of God*] altogether.

### ECCLESIASTES 12:13

The conclusion, when all has been heard, is: fear [*yare (to respect)*] God and keep His Commandments, because this *applies to* every person.

## ISAIAH 50:10

Who is among you that fears [*yare (respect)*] the LORD, that obeys the voice of His servant [*Isaiah the Prophet*], that walks in darkness and has no light? Let him trust in the name of the LORD and rely on his God.

## MATTHEW 10:28

Do not fear those who kill the body but are unable to kill the soul [*psuche*]; but rather fear Him [*God*] who is able to destroy [*apollumi (to put out of the way entirely, abolish)*] both soul and body in hell [*geenna – the Lake of Fire*].

## ECCLESIASTES 7:17-18

Do not be excessively wicked and do not be a fool. Why should you die before your time? It is good that you grasp one thing [*Bible Doctrine*] and also not let go of the other [*living a long and fruitful life*]; for the one who fears God [*yare (to revere) – the mature Believer*] comes forth with both of them.

- (3) **Respect for Authority.** The Believer is commanded to have proper respect for the office and position of those in @@@ AUTHORITY – Col. 3:22.

## COLOSSIANS 3:22

Slaves [*doulos – Believers in slavery*], in all things obey [*hupakouo (to harken to a command)*] those who are your masters on earth, not with external service [*ophthalmodouleia (service performed only under the master's eyes)*], as those who *merely* please men [*anthropareskos (courting the favor of men)*], but with sincerity [*haplotes (mental honesty; not self-seeking)*] of heart [*kardia*], fearing [*phobeo (respecting) – @@@ FEAR*] the LORD.

- (4) **Cowardice.** The word fear is sometimes used in the negative sense to denote emotional cowardice – 1 Sam. 17:11, 24; 18:12, 29; Prov. 10:24; 29:25; 2 Tim. 1:7. See @@@ EMOTION.

## PROVERBS 10:24

What the wicked fears [*megorah*] will come upon him, but the desire of the righteous will be granted.

- (5) **Do Not Fear.** The Believer is told not to fear when facing any of the myriad **@@@ PROBLEMS** in life – “*No weapon that is formed against you will prosper ... this is the heritage of the servants of the LORD*” [Isa. 54:17]; Ex. 14:13-14; Deut. 31:6, 8; Jos. 8:1; 1 Chron. 28:20; Jn. 6:20; Heb. 13:5-6; 1 Pet. 3:1-6; Isa. 41:10; Ps. 71:2.

## JOSHUA 8:1

Now the LORD said to Joshua, “Do not fear [*yare*] or be dismayed.”

## HEBREWS 13:5-6

*Make sure that* your [**Believer**] character [*tropos (a manner of life)*] is free from the love of money, being content [*arkeo (to be satisfied)*] with what you have; for He Himself has said, “I will never desert you, nor will I ever forsake you,” so that we confidently say, “The LORD is my helper [*bothos*], I will not be afraid [*phobeo*]. What will man do to me?”

## 1 PETER 3:1-6

In the same way, you [**mature Believer**] wives [*gune*], be submissive [*hupotasso (obey; to be subordinate to)* – under the **@@@ AUTHORITY**] to your own husbands so that even if any of them [**the husband is a Loser Believer or perhaps an unBeliever**] are disobedient [*apeitheo (not to allow one's self to be persuaded; to refuse or withhold belief)*] to the word [*logos – negative to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE*], they may be won without a word by the behavior [*anastrophe (manner of life) – the use of agape impersonal @@@ LOVE*] of their wives, as they observe your chaste [*hagnos (pure from carnality)*] and respectful [*phobos*] behavior [*anastrophe – the witness of the life in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE*]. Your adornment must not be *merely* external – braiding the hair, and wearing gold jewelry, or putting on dresses; but *let it be* the hidden person of the heart [*kardia*], with the imperishable quality of a gentle [*praus (mildness of disposition)*] and quiet spirit [*pneuma (the vital principal by which the body is animated)*], which is precious in the sight of God. For in this way in former times the holy women also, who hoped in God, used to adorn themselves, being submissive to their own husbands; just as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him lord [*kurios (a title of honor)*], and you have become her children if you do what is right without being frightened by any fear [*ptoesis (to be afraid with terror)*].

## PSALM 27:1

The LORD is my light [*or (the light of day)*] and my salvation [*yesha (deliverance) – into the Kingdom of Heaven*]; whom shall I fear [*yare*]? The LORD is the defense [*maoz (a stronghold)*] of my life; whom shall I dread [*pachad (tremble)*]?

## ISAIAH 41:10

Do not fear [*yare*], for I [*God*] am with you; do not anxiously look [*shaah (to look at in dismay)*] about you, for I am your God. I will strengthen [*amats (harden; strengthen)*] you, surely I will help [*azar (to help; to support)*] you, surely I will uphold you with My righteous [*tsedeq (justice; righteous)*] right hand.

- (6) **Casts Out Fear.** @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE metabolized in the Believer's @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT can be used to cast out and/or confront with confidence emotional fear and @@@ PROBLEMS – Ps. 3:6; 56:11; 2 Tim. 1:7; Deut. 7:18 [recall what God did to Pharaoh]; Heb. 11:27; Rom. 8:15; Lk. 8:25; Isa. 12:2; 1 Pet. 5:8-9; Matt. 8:26.

## 2 TIMOTHY 1:7

For God has not given us [*Believers*] a spirit [*pneuma (the disposition or influence which fills and governs the soul of anyone)*] of timidity [*deilia (cowardness; fearfulness) – the Believer has no @@@ FEAR of the @@@ WORLD*], but of power [*dunamis*] and love [*agape – impersonal @@@ LOVE*] and discipline [*sophronismos (self-control) – it takes thousands of positive [+P] volition decisions for the Believer to expose self to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in order to reach @@@ MATURITY*].

## MATTHEW 8:26

He [*Jesus*] said to them [*disciples in the boat woke Jesus up because of the storm on the Sea of Galilee*], “Why are you afraid [*deilos (fearful; cowardly)*], you men of little faith [*pistis – the lack of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE and the failure to apply @@@ FAITH/Rest to the @@@ PROBLEMS of the storm on the Sea of Galilee*]?” Then He got up and rebuked the winds and the sea, and it became perfectly clam.



## ISAIAH 12:2

Behold, God is my salvation [*yeshuah* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven], I will trust [*batach*] and not be afraid [*pachad*]; for the LORD God is my strength and song, and He has become my salvation [*yeshuah* – delivering the Believer from @@@ PROBLEMS].

## ROMANS 8:15

For you [Believers] have not received a spirit [*pneuma* (vital principle; mental disposition)] of slavery leading to fear [*phobos* (afraid; dread; terror)] again, but you have received a spirit [*pneuma* (vital principle; mental disposition)] of adoption as sons [*uihos*] by which we cry out, “Abba! Father!”

- (7) **Impersonal Love Displaces Fear.** The use of *agape* impersonal @@@ LOVE defeats emotional fear – 1 Jn. 4:18; Heb. 2:15; Ps. 27:1.

## 1 JOHN 4:18

There is no fear [*phobos* – @@@ FEAR] in love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE]; but perfect [*teleios*] love [*agape* – impersonal love] casts out fear, because fear involves punishment, and the one who fears [*phobeo* (to frighten)] is not perfected [*teleioo* – the negative [-N] volition Believer who has not reached @@@ MATURITY] in love.

- (8) **Respect for Bible Doctrine.** The Believer is commanded to be respectful to those who seek answers about @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – 1 Pet. 3:15. See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE, Law of Love.

## 1 PETER 3:15

But sanctify [*hagiazō* (to set apart from profane things)] Christ as LORD in your hearts [*kardia* – thinking in the positive [+P] volition Believer’s @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT], always being ready [*hetoimos* (prepare ready)] to make a defense [*agologia* (verbal defense)] to everyone who asks [*aiteo*] you to give an account for the hope [*elpis* (confident expectation) – the particular @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE resident in the Believer’s soul and spirit] that is in you, yet with gentleness [*prautes* (mildness of disposition) – use the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES] and [*kai*] reverence [*phobos* (respect)].

- (9) **Prolongs Life.** Fear [respect] for the LORD and His @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE will prolong the allotted @@@ TIME on the earth for the positive [+P] volition Winner Believer – Prov. 10:27; Ex. 20:12; Ps. 34:11-14; Eccl. 7:17-18. See @@@ LIFE.

### PSALM 34:11-14

Come, you children, listen [*shama* (to hear intelligently)] to me; I will teach [*lamad* (to teach)] you the fear [*yirah* (respect) – @@@ FEAR] of the LORD. Who is the man [the Believer on positive [+P] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] who desires [*chaphets*] life [*chay*] and loves *length of* days that he may see good [*tob* – obtaining @@@ REWARDS and glorifying God in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT]? Keep your tongue from evil [stay out of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS] and your lips from speaking deceit [use @@@ REBOUND]. Depart [*toor* (to set aside)] from evil [*ra* – human @@@ GOOD is rejected] and do good [*tob* – Divine Good]; seek peace [*shalam* (to cause to be at peace) – prosperity in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD] and pursue it [Bible Doctrine as the number one priority leads to spiritual @@@ MATURITY].

### EXODUS 20:12

Honor [*kabad* (to be honored)] your father and your mother, that your days may be prolonged [*arak* (to make long)] in the land which the LORD your God gives you.

- (10) **Fear and Maturity.** Fear [respect] for the LORD and His command to reach @@@ MATURITY via living the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE must always be the guiding light for the Winner Believer.

### 1 PETER 1:17

If you [the Believer] address as Father the One who impartially judges according to each one's work [the Believer will stand before the @@@ JUDGMENT Seat of Christ], conduct yourselves in fear [*phobos* – realizing the @@@ TIME of your life is very short to reach @@@ MATURITY] during the time of your stay [*paroikia* (a sojourning, dwelling in a strange land)] on earth.

---

## @@@ FOOTSTOOL

- (1) **Definition.** In the ancient world, a ruler would place his foot on a person or thing to symbolically indicate supreme power. Operation Footstool refers to the accession and session of Jesus Christ who in a @@@ RESURRECTION body passed through the two @@@ HEAVENS to arrive at the Third Heaven where He entered the true Holy of Holies and presented Himself to God the Father for evaluation. He was accepted by God as the first true human in Heaven and told that His enemies would be placed under his feet per the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT – Jer. 30:21; Jn. 20:17; Heb. 9:11; Eph. 4:10.
- (2) **Evaluation and Acceptance.** God the Father evaluated and accepted Jesus Christ as a true human in a @@@ RESURRECTION body [see @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION] into the Third Heaven and pronounced His acceptance – Ps. 110:1; Dan. 7:13-14. See Lk. 20:42-43; Mk. 12:36; Matt. 22:44 [Jesus quoted Ps. 110:1]; Heb. 1:3, 13; 8:1; 10:12-15; 12:2; 1 Pet. 3:22; Col. 3:1; Rom. 8:34; Eph. 1:20; Acts 2:31-34; 1 Cor. 15:25, 27. Perfectly acceptable and qualified, God the Father sat Him at His right hand, the highest place of honor. Deity cannot sit, so this refers to Jesus' humanity. The enemies to be placed as a footstool for His feet refer to Satan, his demons, and all unBelievers. Note: All Old Testament Believers which Christ brought with Him out of @@@ HELL were now allowed into Heaven – Rom. 3:25.

### PSALM 110:1

The LORD [*Jehovah – God the Father*] says to my LORD [*adonay (the title for God spoken in place of Jehovah) – Jesus Christ*]: “Sit at My right hand until I make Your enemies [*ayab (to be hostile)*] a footstool for Your feet [*regel*].”

### DANIEL 7:13-14

I [*Daniel*] kept looking in the night visions and behold, with the clouds of heaven One like a Son of Man [*Jesus Christ*] was coming, and He came up to the Ancient of Days [*God the Father*] and was presented [*qerab (to approach; come forward)*] before Him. And to Him [*Jesus Christ*] was given dominion [*sholtan (sovereignty)*], Glory and a kingdom, that all peoples, nations and *men of every language* might serve Him [*Believers will be drawn across all humanity*]. His dominion is an everlasting [*alam (forever)*] dominion which will not pass away; and His kingdom is one which will not be destroyed.

- (3) **Satan's Strategic Defeat.** Satan was defeated at the @@@ CROSS and Operation Footstool finishes him off. Since Jesus Christ unlocked the door of spiritual death and @@@ HELL and all Church Age Believers are in @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST they are also accepted. “*And the living One (Jesus Christ); and I was dead, and behold, I am alive forevermore, and I have the keys of death and of Hades*” [Rev. 1:18]. In other words, the accession and session of the LORD Jesus Christ guarantees the Believer's acceptability by the @@@ TRINITY in Heaven and is the key strategic victory in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT – Satan's head is “*crushed*” [Gen. 3:15]; Col. 2:15.

### COLOSSIANS 2:15

When He [Jesus Christ in His @@@ RESURRECTION body] had disarmed the rulers [*arche – senior officer demons*] and authorities [*exousia – officer demons*], He made a public display of them [in @@@ HEAVEN at the *accession*], having triumphed [*thriambeuo*] over them through Him.

- (4) **Intensified Angelic Conflict.** With the LORD Jesus Christ now seated at the right hand of God the Father in the Third Heaven and absent from the earth, Satan has shifted his main attack to target Church Age Believers.
- (a) **Body of Christ.** The Royal Family of Jesus Christ is being formed in the Church Age and is superior to the Old Testament family of God – Jn. 7:37-39; Matt. 11:11; Lk. 7:28. In the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT, Church Age Believers are called the “*body of Christ*” [1 Cor. 12:12-14, 27] and consist of all Church Age Believers – Rom. 12:3-5; Eph. 1:22-23; 2:16; 4:4-6; 5:23-24; Col. 1:18, 24; 2:10, 19.
  - (b) **Bride of Christ.** Once the Church Age is filled as to the total number of Believers set by God, the Rapture occurs and the body of Christ is taken off the earth and becomes the “*bride of Christ*” [Rev. 21:2, 9].
  - (c) **Bride Prepared.** During the Tribulation, the bride of Christ is prepared in Heaven at the Judgment Seat of Christ for the wedding feast which occurs just after the 2nd Advent. At the Rapture, the bride gets a @@@ RESURRECTION body with no Old Sin Nature. All the human good performed by the Believer during his lifetime will be “burned up” and destroyed at the Judgment Seat of Christ. See @@@ GOOD – Phil. 3:21; 1 Jn. 3:1-2; 1 Cor. 3:11-15; 15:51-57.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 3:12-13

Now if any man [the Believer on positive [+P] volition] builds on the foundation with gold, silver, precious stones [Divine Good produced during the Believer's life], [or] wood, hay, straw [human @@@ GOOD produced by the Believer on negative [-N] volition], each man's work will become evident [*phaneros* (apparent; manifest)]; for the day will show it [at the Judgment Seat of Christ] because it is *to be* revealed with fire, and the fire itself will test [*dokimazo* (to test; to examine)] the quality of each man's work.

- (d) **Wedding Feast.** The bride [all Church Age Believers in resurrection bodies] returns to the earth from @@@ HEAVEN with Jesus Christ at the 2nd Advent for the wedding feast – Rev. 19:6-8, 14; 1 Thess. 3:13. Later, mature Believers will reign with Christ during the Millennium. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.
- (5) **Confined for 1,000 Years.** Satan and all his demons are taken off the earth and imprisoned [Rev. 20:1-3] in the Abyss at the 2nd Advent of Christ. Jesus Christ then rules for 1,000 years in the Millennium. Perfect environment is restored to the earth. As human @@@ HISTORY started with perfection but fell, so too will the Millennium start with perfect environment but will also fall apart culminating with the Gog and Magog @@@ REVOLUTION – Isa. 11:1-16; Rev. 20:8. This once again proves that perfect environment is not the solution to @@@ SALVATION or any of mankind's @@@ PROBLEMS. See 1 Cor. 15:20-26.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 15:20-26

But now Christ has been raised from the dead [*nekros* (physical death) – in a @@@ RESURRECTION body], the first fruits [*aparche*] of those who are asleep [*koimao* – Church Age Believers who have died will also get a resurrection body]. For since by a man [Adam] came death [*thanatos* (death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – spiritual @@@ DEATH], by a man [Jesus Christ] also came resurrection [*anastasis* (rising up)] of the dead [*nekros*]. For as in Adam all die [*apothnesko* (of eternal death; to be subject to eternal misery in hell) – spiritual death], so also in Christ all [the opportunity for @@@ SALVATION per @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT] will be made alive [*zoopoieo* (to produce alive)]. But each in his own order [*tagma* (organized as in a body of soldiers)]: Christ the first



fruits, after that those who are Christ's at His coming [*parousia* (arrival; advent) – @@@ RAPTURE], then *comes* the end [*telos* – of the Jewish age at the 2nd Advent], when He hands over the kingdom to the God and Father, when He has abolished [*katargeo* (to deprive of force)] all rule [*arche* – demon officers] and all authority [*exousia* – demon senior officers] and power [the @@@ WORLD at the 2nd Advent]. For He [Jesus Christ] must reign [*basileuo* (to be and exercise kingly authority)] until He has put all His enemies under His feet [Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL]. The last enemy that will be abolished [*katargeo* (to deprive of force)] is death [*thanatos*].

- (6) **Satan's Final Revolt.** Satan is released at the end of the Millennium and leads many humans in a short "Gog and Magog" revolt against Jesus Christ. This revolt is put down [Rev. 20:9] followed by the subsequent Great White Throne @@@ JUDGMENT of all unBelievers. This concludes Operation Footstool – Zech. 13:2; Col. 2:15; 1 Cor. 15:24-25; Rev. 20:1-3, 11-15. All unBelievers join Satan and his demons in the "*Lake of Fire*" [Rev. 20:15].
- (7) **Glorification Completed.** The glorification of the LORD Jesus Christ is completed by Operation Footstool – Acts 2:33; 5:31; Phil. 2:9-11; 1 Pet. 3:22; Dan. 7:13-14.

## DANIEL 7:14

And to Him [Jesus Christ] was given [*yehab* – by God the Father] dominion [*sholtan* (sovereignty)], Glory and a kingdom [*malku* (kingdom; realm of territory)], that all peoples, nations and *men of every* language might serve Him. His dominion is an everlasting dominion which will not pass away; and His kingdom is one which will not be destroyed.

## PHILIPPIANS 2:9-11

For this reason also, God highly exalted Him [Jesus Christ], and bestowed on Him the name [*onoma* (a rank)] which is above every name, so that at the name of Jesus every knee will bow, of those who are in heaven [*epouranios* – Church Age Believers who physically died and went to @@@ HEAVEN] and on earth [*epigeios* – the Believers taken off the earth at the @@@ RAPTURE] and under the earth [*katachthonios* (those that exist in the world below) – Old Testament Believers who were once in Paradise], and that every tongue will confess that Jesus Christ is LORD, to the glory of God the Father.



## @@@ FORTY THINGS AT SALVATION

**Definition.** Forty things that inure to the Believer at @@@ SALVATION.

- (1) **One: Common and Efficacious Grace.** The @@@ HOLY SPIRIT's function to save the Believer – Eph. 1:13; Jn. 14:26.

### EPHESIANS 1:13

In Him [**Jesus Christ**], you [**the Believer**] also, after listening [*akouo* (to consider what is or has been said)] to the message of truth, the gospel [*euaggelion* (good news)] of your salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven]—having also believed [*pisteuo* – @@@ SALVATION by @@@ FAITH in Christ], you were sealed [*sphragizo* (to set a seal upon)] in Him with the Holy Spirit of promise [*epaggelia* (a promised good) – the ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT in salvation].

- (2) **Two: Sealing.** The @@@ HOLY SPIRIT places an unbreakable guarantee seal on the Believer – Eph. 1:13; 4:30; 2 Cor. 1:22; 1 Jn. 5:6; 14:16; 2 Jn. 1:2.
- (3) **Three: Eternal Inheritance.** The Believer is given an eternal inheritance – Eph. 1:14, 18; 3:6; Rom. 8:17; Gal. 3:29; 4:6-7; 1 Pet. 1:4; 3:7; Heb. 9:15.

### EPHESIANS 1:14

Who is given as a pledge [*arrhabon* (money as a down payment) – the Indwelling and Sealing of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] of our inheritance [*kleronomia* (property received)], with a view to the redemption [*apolutrosis* (a releasing effected by the payment of a ransom)] of God's own possession [*peripoiesis* (one's own property)], to the praise of His glory [*doxa*].

- (4) **Four: Given Eternal Life.** The Believer gets God's Eternal Life – Jn. 3:15-16, 36; 5:24; 6:47; 17:32-33; 1 Jn. 2:25; 5:11-13, 20; Tit. 1:2; 3:7; Acts 13:48.

### TITUS 1:2

In the hope [*elpis* (confidence)] of eternal [*aionios*] life, which God, who cannot lie [*pseudomai*], promised [*egaggello*] long ages ago.

- (5) **Five: Regeneration.** The Believer is “*born again*” and gets a human spirit which is merged onto his soul forever – Jn. 3:3-8; 13:10; 1 Cor. 6:11; Tit. 3:5.
- (6) **Six: Righteousness [+R] of God.** God the Father imputes His own Perfect [+R] Righteousness to the Believer – Gen. 15:6; Rom. 1:16-17; 3:21-22, 25; 5:17; 10:3-4; Gal. 2:16; 1 Cor. 1:30; 2 Cor. 5:21; Phil. 3:9; Matt. 6:33.
- (7) **Seven: Receives Justification.** The Believer is Justified by means of the imputation of God’s own Perfect Righteousness [+R]. See Rom. 3:24, 30; 4:1-5, 25; 5:1-2, 9, 16, 18; 8:30; Gal. 2:16; 3:8; Tit. 3:7; 1 Cor. 6:11.

### ROMANS 3:24

Being justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – because the Believer receives God’s Righteousness [+R] he is justified] as a gift by His grace [*charis*] through the redemption [*apolutrosis* (to pay a ransom) – because of the work of Christ on the @@@ CROSS] which is in Christ Jesus.

- (8) **Eight: Receives Reconciliation.** The Believer is Reconciled to Perfect God by the work of Jesus Christ on the @@@ CROSS. See 2 Cor. 5:18-20; Rom. 5:8-10; Col. 1:20, 22; Eph. 2:14-17.
- (9) **Nine: God is Propitiated.** Under @@@ SOTERIOLOGY, God’s Perfect Holiness is satisfied – Rom. 3:22-26; 1 Jn. 2:2; 4:10.

### 1 JOHN 2:2

And He Himself [Jesus Christ] is the propitiation [*hilasmos* (an appeasing)] for our sins [*hamartia* – all personal @@@ SIN of the Believer]; and not for ours only, but also for *those of* the whole [*holos* (completely)] world [*kosmos* – under @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT Christ bore all human sin].

- (10) **Ten: Unlimited Atonement.** The fact that Jesus Christ died for all @@@ SIN makes every human a candidate for @@@ SALVATION. The Believer took advantage of this fact. See 2 Cor. 5:14-15, 19; 1 Tim. 2:6; 4:10.
- (11) **Eleven: Redemption.** Jesus Christ purchases the Believer from the slave market of @@@ SIN – Gal. 3:13; Tit. 2:14; Eph. 1:7; 1 Pet. 1:18-19; Rom. 3:24; Col. 1:14; 1 Cor. 6:20; 2 Pet. 2:1; Isa. 1:18; 44:22; Job 19:25; Acts 20:28.

- (12) **Twelve: Union with Christ.** The @@@ HOLY SPIRIT puts the Believer into @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST – Acts 11:15-17; 1 Cor. 12:13.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 12:13

For by one [Holy] Spirit we were all baptized [*baptizo*] into one body, whether Jews or Greeks [*hellen*], whether slaves or free, and we were all made to drink of one Spirit [the ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT].

- (13) **Thirteen: New Species.** The Believer is made a spiritual @@@ NEW SPECIES – 2 Cor. 5:17; Gal. 6:15; 2 Pet 1:4; 1 Jn. 3:1-2; Phil. 3:21.
- (14) **Fourteen: Royal Family of God.** See 1 Pet. 2:9; Gal. 6:10; Eph. 2:19; Matt. 11:11; Lk. 7:28. The Believer is a full member of the Royal Family of God.

### 1 PETER 2:9

But you [Believers in the Church Age] are a chosen race, a royal [*basileios*] priesthood, a holy nation, a people for God's own possession, so that you may proclaim the excellencies of Him who has called you out of darkness [*skotos* – the status of spiritual @@@ DEATH] into His marvelous light [*phos*].

- (15) **Fifteen: Equal Opportunity.** Under the @@@ PLAN OF GOD each Believer has equal privilege and equal opportunity to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY. See Eph. 1:19; Rom. 2:11; Acts 10:34.

### ROMANS 2:11

For there is no partiality [*time*] with God.

- (16) **Sixteen: Positional Sanctification.** The Believer is positionally sitting with Jesus Christ in @@@ HEAVEN at this very moment. See Eph. 2:6; Col. 3:4; 1 Cor. 6:11; Heb. 10:14; 13:12; 2 Thess. 2:13.

### EPHESIANS 2:6

And raised us [Believers] up with Him [@@@ UNION WITH CHRIST], and seated us [*sugkathizo* (to cause to set down together)] with Him in the heavenly [*epouranios* (existing in heaven)] places in Christ Jesus.

- (17) **Seventeen: Election.** Jesus Christ is the only one said to be elected – Isa. 42:1; 1 Pet. 2:6. However, the Believer shares Christ’s election – 1 Cor. 1:2, 30; Rom. 8:28-33; Col. 3:12; 1 Thess. 1:4; Tit. 1:1; 1 Pet. 1:2:6.
- (18) **Eighteen: Adoption as Sons.** The Believer is immediately adopted by God into His Royal Family as an *adult* son of God. *See* Eph. 1:4-5.

## EPHESIANS 1:4-5

Just as He chose us [**Believers**] in Him [**Jesus Christ**] before the foundation of the world, that we would be holy [*hagios (set apart)*] and blameless before Him. In love He predestined us to adoption [*uihothesia*] as sons through Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the kind intention of His will.

- (19) **Nineteen: Predestination.** God’s work for the Believer on positive [**+P**] volition to reach @@@ MATURITY. *See* Eph. 1:5, 11; Rom. 8:29-30.
- (20) **Twenty: Royal Priest.** *See* 1 Pet. 2:5-9; 2:5; Rev. 1:6; 5:10; 20:6.

## 1 PETER 2:5

You also, as living stones [*lithos*], are being built up as a spiritual house for a holy [*hagios*] priesthood [*hierateuma (the office of priest)*], to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ.

- (21) **Twenty One: Royal Ambassador.** *See* 2 Cor. 5:20; Eph. 6:20.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:20

Therefore, we [**Paul and all Christians**] are ambassadors [*presbeuo – the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE*] for Christ, as though God were making an appeal [*parakaleo*] through us; we [**Paul and his team**] beg you on behalf of Christ, be reconciled [*katallasso (to have correct thoughts)*] to God.

- (22) **Twenty Two: Indwelling of God.** *See* Jn. 15:23; 2 Jn. 9; Eph. 3:19; 4:6.

## EPHESIANS 4:6

One God and Father of all who is over all and through all and in all [**Believers**].

- (23) **Twenty Three: Indwelling of Jesus Christ.** See Jn. 14:20; 17:22-23; 2 Cor. 13:5; 1 Jn. 2:24; Col. 1:27; Gal. 2:20; 4:6; 2 Tim. 4:22. “*But if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Him*” [Rom. 8:9-10].

### ROMANS 8:10

If Christ is in you, though the body is dead because of sin, yet the [human] spirit [*pneuma*] is alive because of righteousness [*dikaiosune* – [+R] of God].

- (24) **Twenty Four: Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit.** See Rom. 5:5; 8:11; 1 Cor. 3:16; 6:19-20; Eph. 1:14; 4:20; 1 Jn. 2:27; 5:6, 10.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 3:16

Do you [Believer] not know that you are a temple of God and *that* the Spirit of God [@@@ HOLY SPIRIT] dwells [*oikeo* (to dwell inside)] in you?

- (25) **Twenty Five: Entered Into the Plan of God.** See Eph. 1:10.
- (26) **Twenty Six: Filling of God the Holy Spirit.** This is lost once the Believer sins but is regained upon @@@ REBOUND – Eph. 5:18; Col. 3:16.

### EPHESIANS 5:18

And do not get drunk with wine, for that is dissipation, but be filled [*pleroo*] with the Spirit [Filled with @@@ HOLY SPIRIT by @@@ REBOUND].

- (27) **Twenty Seven: Divine Power Available.** (1) God’s power regarding a portfolio of invisible assets [1 Pet. 1:4-5]; (2) Son’s power in holding up the universe [Col. 1:17; Heb. 1:3]; and (3) Holy Spirit’s @@@ OPERATION Z power. See Jn. 14:26; Acts 1:8; Zech. 4:6; Lk. 4:14; Rom. 1:4.
- (28) **Twenty Eight: Spiritual Gift.** At least one spiritual gift is given to each Believer – 1 Cor. 12:11, 27-31; 31:1-2. See @@@ GIFTS.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 12:11

But one and the same [Holy] Spirit works all these things, distributing [*diaiero* – spiritual @@@ GIFTS] to each one individually just as He wills.

- (29) **Twenty Nine: Direct Access to God.** The Believer can go boldly to the throne of God in @@@ PRAYER. *See* Eph. 2:18; Heb. 4:14; 1 Jn. 1:9.

### EPHESIANS 2:18

For through Him [Jesus Christ] we [Believers] both have our access [prosagoge (the act of bringing to)] in one [Holy] Spirit to the Father [pater].

- (30) **Thirty: Gift From God to Christ.** *See* Jn. 10:29; 17:2, 6, 9, 24; Rev. 21:2.

### JOHN 17:24

Father, I [Jesus Christ] desire [thelo] that they also, whom You have given Me [all Believers], be with Me where I am, so that they may see My glory [doxa] which You have given Me, for You loved [agapao (to love dearly)] Me before the foundation of the world.

- (31) **Thirty One: Judgment Removed.** No judgment at the Great White Throne for the Believer. *See* Jn. 3:18; 5:24; Heb. 9:27-28; Rom. 8:1; Ps. 34:22.

### JOHN 5:24

Truly, truly, I [Jesus Christ] say to you, he who hears My word [logos – about @@@ SALVATION], and believes [pisteuo] Him who sent Me [the @@@ PLAN OF GOD], has eternal life, and does not come into judgment [krisis – no Great White Throne Judgment for the Believer], but has passed out of death [thanatos (death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – the second spiritual @@@ DEATH] into life [zoe – eternal life with God].

- (32) **Thirty Two: Deliverance From Satan.** *See* Col. 1:13-14; 2:15; Acts 26:18.

### COLOSSIANS 1:13-14

For He [God] rescued us [Believers] from the domain of darkness [skotos – spiritual @@@ DEATH], and transferred [methistemi (of change of situation or place)] us to the kingdom [basileia (royal domain)] of His beloved Son, in whom we have redemption, the forgiveness [aphesis] of sins [hamartia].

- (33) **Thirty Three: Into the Kingdom of God.** *See* Col. 1:13; Jn. 3:5; Acts 26:18.



- (34) **Thirty Four: Breaks Old Sin Nature.** The power of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE is broken. It can only operate in the Believer if he allows it to do so. *See* Eph. 4:22; Rom. 8:4-5; Phil. 3:3; Col. 2:11; Gal. 5:16; Jn. 3:5-6.
- (35) **Thirty Five: Escrow Rewards Available.** *See* Eph. 1:3; 2:6-7.

### EPHESIANS 1:3

Blessed *be* the God and Father of our LORD Jesus Christ, who has blessed us [Believers] with every spiritual [*pneumatikos* (relating to the spirit)] blessing [*eulogeo* – @@@ REWARDS] in the heavenly *places* in Christ [tailored rewards for every Believer were placed on deposit in @@@ HEAVEN].

- (36) **Thirty Six: Scar Tissue Removed.** *See* Isa. 43:25; 44:22; Ezk. 11:19; 36:26. But the Loser Believer will quickly accumulate new scar tissue.
- (37) **Thirty Seven: Secure Foundation.** “*The firm foundation of God*” [2 Tim. 2:19]. *See* Matt. 7:24; 1 Cor. 3:11; 10:4; Eph. 2:20.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 3:11

For no man [*oudeis* (no one; nothing)] can lay a foundation [*themelios* (the foundation of a building)] other than the one which is laid, which is Jesus Christ [@@@ SALVATION by @@@ GRACE].

- (38) **Thirty Eight: Eternal Security.** *See* 2 Tim. 2:13; Gal. 3:26; Jn. 3:15-16.
- (39) **Thirty Nine: Resurrection Body.** The Believer will have a new body like that of Jesus. *See* Jn. 11:25-27; Phil. 3:21; 1 Jn. 3:1-2; 1 Cor. 15:51-52.

### JOHN 11:25

Jesus said to her [Martha], “I am the resurrection [*anastasis* (to raise up from the dead in a new body) – @@@ RESURRECTION] and the life [*zoe*]; he who believes [*pisteuo*] in Me will live [*zao* – eternal life] even if he dies [*apothnesko* – physical @@@ DEATH].

- (40) **Forty: Problem Solving Devices.** For the Believer’s use. *See* 1 Cor. 13:13.

## @@@ FREEDOM

- (1) **Definition.** Human freedom is an extension of the various functions of the soul with the emphasis on volition. It mandates personal responsibility.
- (2) **Areas of Freedom.** Human freedom has two basic categories.
  - (a) **Heritage of Birth.** Freedom as a heritage of physical birth.
  - (b) **Born Again.** Freedom as the heritage of being born again as a Christian – Jn. 3:6; 2 Cor. 3:17; Gal. 5:1. The Believer is set free from the kingdom of Satan and spiritual @@@ DEATH.

## GALATIANS 5:1

It was for freedom [*eleutheria* (liberty to do or to omit to do) – @@@ FREEDOM to now serve the LORD] that Christ set us free [the Believer is set free from spiritual @@@ DEATH]; therefore keep standing firm [*steko* (to persevere)] and do not be subject again to a yoke [*zugos* (a yoke put on draft cattle)] of slavery [*douleia* – stay out of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS].

- (3) **Necessity of Freedom.** By Divine design free will is a characteristic which man has in common with @@@ ANGELS. Freedom is a key component in the extension of the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT into human @@@ HISTORY where human free choices functioning on a nonmeritorious basis determine the outcome of certain phases of the conflict.
- (4) **Protection of Freedom.** @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS are designed to preserve freedom – they protect the @@@ PRIVACY and property of the individual. In this way evangelization is made possible in every generation. See @@@ WITNESSING; @@@ HEATHENISM.
- (5) **Spiritual Function of Freedom.** The once-and-for-all function of non-meritorious positive [+P] volition toward Jesus Christ not only saves but relates the Believer to the strategic victory of the @@@ CROSS.
- (6) **Freedom and Authority.** Jesus Christ set the precedent of free will orientation to God at the @@@ CROSS – Heb. 5:8; Phil. 2:6-9. Contrary to His human volition [Matt. 26:39, 42], Christ went to the cross anyway.

## PHILIPPIANS 2:6-9

Who, although He [**Jesus Christ**] existed [*huparcho* (to come forth)] in the form [*morphe* (external appearance)] of God [*theos* – in the @@@ **TRINITY**], did not regard equality [*isos* (equal in quantity and quality)] with God [*theos*] a thing to be grasped [*harpagmos* (the act of seizing to hold fast)], but emptied [*kenoo* (to deprive of force)] Himself, taking the form of a bond-servant [*doulos* (slave) – Jesus would follow the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD**], and being made in the likeness of men [*anthropos* – the @@@ **HYPOSTATIC UNION**]. Being found in appearance [*schema* (as comprising everything in a person which strikes the senses)] as a man, He humbled [*tapeinoo* (to make low)] Himself by becoming obedient to the point of death [*thanatos* (of eternal death; to be subject to eternal misery in hell) – spiritual @@@ **DEATH**], even death [*thanatos*] on a cross [*stauros* – the place of the @@@ **CROSS** is where Christ paid the price for @@@ **SALVATION**]. For this reason also, God [**the Father**] highly exalted [*huperupsoo* (to exalt to the highest rank)] Him, and bestowed [*charizomai* (to do something pleasant)] on Him the name [*onoma*] which is above every name.

- (7) **Freedom and Christianity.** Jesus Christ provided freedom for the Believer to serve God and to move toward the strategic objective of reaching spiritual @@@ **MATURITY** – Gal. 5:1; 3:13; Rom. 5:15; Acts 4:33. @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** is related to freedom [Jn. 8:31-32; Ps. 119:45; Isa. 61:1] and in using the @@@ **REBOUND** technique [2 Cor. 3:17].

## JOHN 8:31-32

So Jesus was saying to those Jews who had believed [*pisteuo*] Him, “If you continue in My word [**the Believer who is on positive [+P] volition to learn @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE**], then you are truly disciples of Mine; and you will know the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – Bible Doctrine will produce @@@ **MATURITY**], and the truth will make you free [*eleutheroo* – from the thinking of the @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS** and of human @@@ **GOOD**].”

- (8) **Freedom to National Heritage.** Freedom is related to the national heritage of all Americans as a function of citizenship. The Preamble to the U.S. Constitution states:

*We, the people of the United States, in order to form a more perfect union, established justice, ensure domestic tranquility, provide for the common defense, promote the general welfare, and secure the blessings of liberty to ourselves and to our posterity, do ordain and establish this Constitution for the United States of America.*

- (9) **Freedom and Military Victory.** National freedom demands respect for law and order, self-sacrifice, and self-discipline. When that freedom is threatened, it demands the moral courage to defend it. Thus, national freedom is maintained by military victory in @@@ WAR – Neh. 4:14. While military preparedness preserves the freedom of a nation, the free men who join the military voluntarily surrender their freedom as civilians to submit to a system of strict discipline to effectively train to fight for their country’s survival through military victory.

#### NEHEMIAH 4:14

When I [Nehemiah the Prophet] saw *their fear* [the Jews anticipating fighting the enemy], I rose and spoke to the nobles, the officials and the rest of the people: “Do not be afraid of them; remember [zakar (to recall)] the LORD who is great and awesome, and fight [lacham (to do battle; make war)] for your brothers, your sons, your daughters, your wives and your houses.”

- (10) **Principle of Bible Doctrine.** True freedom will always exist in the content of the living and enduring word of God, per 1 Pet. 1:23-25. See @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.

#### 1 PETER 1:23-25

For you have been born again [anagennao – @@@ SALVATION by @@@ FAITH in Christ] not of seed which is perishable but imperishable [aphthartos (not liable to decay)], *that is*, through the living [zao] and enduring [meno] word [logos] of God [theos]. For, “All flesh [sarx] is like grass, and all its glory like the flower of grass. The grass withers, and the flower falls off, but the word [logos] of the LORD [kurios (God) – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] endures [meno (to remain)] forever [aion (eternity)].” And this is the word which was preached [eugangelizo (to bring good news)] to you.

---

## @@@ GIFTS

- (1) **Definition.** The @@@ HOLY SPIRIT provides at least one spiritual gift to each Believer at the point of @@@ SALVATION – 1 Cor. 12:7-11, 18, 20; Eph. 4:11; Heb. 2:4. The Greek word is *charisma*.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 12:7-10

But to each one [Believer] is given the manifestation of the [Holy] Spirit for the common good. For to one is given the word of wisdom [*sophia*] through the Spirit, and to another the word of knowledge [*gnosis*] according to the same Spirit; to another faith by the same Spirit, and to another gifts [*charisma*] of healing by the one Spirit, and to another the effecting of miracles [*dunamis*], and to another prophecy, and to another the distinguishing of spirits, to another various kinds of tongues [*glossa (the language or dialect used by a particular people)*], and to another the interpretation of tongues.

### HEBREWS 2:4

God also testifying with them [teachers of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], both by signs [*semeion (miracle)*] and wonders [*terros*] and by various miracles [*dunamis (power)*] and by gifts of the Holy Spirit according to His own will [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT provides spiritual @@@ GIFTS to Believers].

### EPHESIANS 4:11

And He [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] gave some as apostles [*apostolos*], and some as prophets [*prophetes*], and some as evangelists [*euaggelistes (the bringer of good news)*], and some as pastors and teachers [*poimen kai didaskalos – the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER*].

- (2) **Temporary Gifts.** Existed from A.D. 30 - 96. Temporary spiritual gifts were akin to the grand opening of a new business with special public events and crowd attracting displays for a limited period only. Temporary gifts also authenticated the @@@ AUTHORITY of certain leaders in the early Church to include the 12 @@@ APOSTLES, plus pioneer missionaries, e.g., Barnabas, James, Timothy, Apollos, Titus, and Silvanus.

- (a) @@@ MIRACLES – 2 Cor. 12:12.

- 
- (b) **Healing** – 1 Cor. 12:9, 28-30. For example, in Acts 19:11-12, Paul had the temporary spiritual gift of immediate healing in the beginning of his public ministry, but in Phil. 2:27 and 2 Tim. 4:20, Paul had already lost the gift entirely and could not heal members of his own team.
  - (c) **Prophecy** – Acts 13:1; Rom. 12:6; 1 Cor. 12:10; 14:1-4. These were individuals that could predict near term historical events. Examples: Agabus, Barnabas, Silas, Simeon, Lucius, Judas, and the four daughters of Philip. Agabus predicted a famine in Acts 11:27-28 and provided a dire warning to the Apostle Paul in Acts 21:10-11.
  - (d) **Tongues** – 1 Cor. 14:21-22. The Gospel given in Gentile languages to Jews was a prophetic sign by Isaiah warning of the imminent destruction of the Jewish nation – Isa. 28:9-13; Lev. 26:14-33. *See* Acts 2:4-47. Tongues ended in A.D. 70, when Rome destroyed Judea. Satan uses the @@@ **EMOTION** of so-called tongues today to confuse. *See* Isa. 8:19; *cf.* 29:4; Rev. 16:13-14; @@@ **DEMONISM**.
  - (e) **Interpretation of Tongues** – 1 Cor. 12:10; 14:26-28. The ability to translate the actual foreign language that was spoken in public.
  - (f) **Knowledge** – 1 Cor. 12:8; 13:8. Knowing certain @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** not yet recorded in the developing New Testament.
  - (g) **Wisdom** – 1 Cor. 12:8. Discernment of the correct @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**.
  - (h) **Discerning Spirits** – 1 Cor. 12:10. The ability to spot a false @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHER**.
  - (i) **Faith** – 1 Cor. 12:9. The ability to pray for a supernatural act per God's will. Note: Matt. 17:20; 21:21, speaks prophetically to a specific future @@@ **PRAYER** by besieged Tribulational Jews in Jerusalem for Christ to save them from besieging armies. Christ will answer this request when His foot touches the Mount of Olives at His 2nd Advent and that mountain will literally split and "*move from here to there!*"
- (3) **Temporary Gifts End.** By the close of the New Testament Cannon all temporary spiritual gifts had ceased to function – 1 Cor. 13:8-10.



## 1 CORINTHIANS 13:8-10

Love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE] never fails [*pipto* (phased out)]; but if *there are gifts* of prophecy [*propheteia*], they will be done away [*katargeo* (abolished; ceased; canceled out)]; if *there are* tongues [*glossa* (the language or dialect used by a particular people)], they will cease [*pauo* (to stop)]; if *there is* [the gift of] knowledge [*gnosis*], it will be done away [*katargeo*]. For we [Believers] know [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] in part [in the pre-canon period of the Church Age] and we prophesy in part; but when the perfect [*teleios* (completed) – the word *teleios* is in the neuter which refers to a thing and not a person, i.e., the completed @@@ BIBLE] comes [Revelation was written in A.D. 96 and completed the Bible], the partial [*meros* – the temporary spectacular @@@ GIFTS of the early Church] will be done away [*katargeo* (to render inoperative)].\*

\*The word [*teleios* (completed)] is in the neuter gender and Jesus Christ is never in the neuter. Thus, this word refers to a thing, not a person. This *thing* is the completed @@@ BIBLE which was closed out completely in A.D. 96.

- (4) **Permanent Gifts.** The following list of permanent gifts is not inclusive.
- (a) **Pastor/Teacher** – Eph. 4:11-16. Although this gift is limited to a select few Believer males, it requires an extraordinary amount of preparation prior to activation. See @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER.
  - (b) **Evangelism** – 2 Tim. 4:5; Eph. 4:11. To give the Gospel to crowds of unBelievers. This is apart from the command for all Believers to provide normal @@@ WITNESSING to unBelievers.
  - (c) **Administrators** – Rom. 12:8, 13. Local Church officers.
  - (d) **Deacons** – Rom. 12:7. Board of Deacons in a large local Church.
  - (e) **Service in the Church** – Rom. 12:7; 16:3-15.
  - (f) **Helps** – 1 Cor. 12:28. Helping people in various needs.
  - (g) **Giving** – Rom. 12:8. A special gift of @@@ GIVING money, distinguished from normal giving.

- (h) **Showing Mercy** – Rom. 12:8.
- (i) **Exhortation** – Rom. 12:8. Encouraging fellow Believers, but always mindful of their @@@ PRIVACY.
- (j) **Refreshment** – Phm. 1:7 [Onesimus]; 2 Tim. 1:16 [Onesiphorus]. A Believer having a relaxing effect on other Believers.

### PHILEMON 1:7

For I [Paul] have come to have much joy and comfort [*paraklesis* (solace)] in your [Onesimus'] love [*agape* (to love dearly)], because the hearts of the saints have been refreshed [*anapauo*] through you, brother [*adelphos*].

- (5) **Gifts and Spirituality.** The @@@ GRACE of God provides each Believer a gift, regardless of their status of *absolute* or *relative* spirituality. For example, the church in Corinth had the most temporary gifts and yet they were among the worst in terms of living the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE. Thus, Believers are told not to be fat-headed about their spiritual gifts as all gifts are effective only with the Filling of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT and advancement to maturity – Rom. 12:3; 1 Cor. 12:11. In fact, some Believers may not know what their gift(s) were until in @@@ HEAVEN.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 12:11

But one and the same [Holy] Spirit works all these things, distributing [*diaiero* (to divide into parts) – spiritual @@@ GIFTS] to each one [each Believer at the point of @@@ SALVATION] individually just as He [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] wills [*boulomai* (to will deliberately)].

### ROMANS 12:3

For through the grace [*charis* – God's plan, policy, and purpose is @@@ GRACE] given to me I [Paul] say to everyone among you not to think more highly of himself [*hyperphroneo* (not to think in terms of arrogance)] than he ought to think; but to think so as to have sound judgment [*sophroneo* (to be of sound mind)], as God has allotted to each a measure [*metron*] of faith [*pistis* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE learned on the road to @@@ MATURITY].

## @@@ GIVING

- (1) **Definition.** Refers to the Believer providing – *giving* – his @@@ MONEY to: (1) support the logistical functions of a Church; (2) support the mission of @@@ WITNESSING; (3) support the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER of a local Church; or (4) giving to the poor.
- (2) **Giving vs. Tithing.** While Church Age “giving” has its parallel in the Old Testament’s “offerings” under the @@@ MOSAIC LAW, it is absolutely not associated with Old Testament “tithing.” In the several Jewish national entities covered in the @@@ BIBLE [Israel began as a Theocracy circa 1450 B.C., and later a Monarchy circa 1000 B.C.] there was always a bright line distinction between the required tax on every citizen of the nation [Believer and unBeliever] called tithing and the separate providing of offerings which were established for Believers only. *See* Mal. 3:8-10. *See* Ex. 25:1-2.

### MALACHI 3:8-10

Will a man rob [*qaba*] God? Yet you [*Jewish citizens*] are robbing Me [*God*]! But you say, “How have we robbed You?” In tithes [*maawer (the tenth part)*] and offerings [*terumah (any contribution)*]. You are cursed with a curse, for you are robbing Me, the whole nation *of you*! Bring the whole tithe into the storehouse [*the Temple treasury*], so that there may be food in My house, and test Me now in this, says the LORD of hosts, if I will not open for you the windows of heaven and pour out for you a blessing until it overflows.

- (3) **Tithing.** Tithing refers to the Old Testament income tax system based on a fixed percentage of personal income set up under the @@@ MOSAIC LAW for all people residing in the Jewish nation – Believers and unBelievers. In fact, most of the historical periods saw the majority of Jews as unBelievers per Rom. 9:6-7, 30-33. The Old Testament tithing was not a graduated tax system [the higher the income the more the tax]. A graduated tax system tends to destroy free enterprise and is an invasion of personal @@@ PRIVACY operating in the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS. The fixed tithing types recorded in the Old Testament included the following:
  - (a) **Levities.** A 10% tax on all to support the tribe of the Levites – Num. 18:20-21; Deut. 12:17-19. The Levites were designated to teach @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE via performance of various rituals – Ezk. 44:23.

- (b) **Sacrifices.** Another 10% for various religious sacrifices and upkeep of the Temple complex – Deut. 14:22-27; Heb. 7:5, 9.
  - (c) **Poor.** Another 10% every third year for the poor – Deut. 14:28-29. Such welfare was not yearly as that would encourage slothfulness.
  - (d) **Monarchy.** The monarchy and government also took a percentage – Matt. 17:24-27. Generally, a special tax imposed by the political ruler was a minimum of 10% on land valuation and another 10% on personal property. *See* 1 Sam. 8:15, 17.
- (4) **Legalism and Tithing.** All references to tithing in the New Testament condemn legalism and cheating – Lk. 11:42; Matt. 23:23, 26.

### MATTHEW 23:23

Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees [**recruited from the scribes**], hypocrites [**hupokrites**]! For you tithe [**apodekatoo (to exact a tenth)**] mint [**heduosmon (a sweet smelling mint)**] and dill [**anethon**] and cummin [**kuminon (a cultivated plant used for medicinal purposes)**], and have neglected the weightier provisions [**barus (heavy in weight)**] of the law [**@@@ MOSAIC LAW**]: justice [**krisis**] and mercy [**eleos**] and faithfulness [**pistis**]; but these are the things you should have done without neglecting the others [**these Jewish leaders and judges should have judged rightly and impartially under the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS and taught @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE**].

### MATTHEW 23:26

You blind Pharisee, first clean the inside of the cup [**poterion**] and of the dish, so that the outside of it may become clean also.

- (5) **Offerings.** Offerings in the Old Testament were designed for Believers only and unlike tithing there was never a percentage stated as to the amount to be given by the Believer. It was a matter of the Believer giving back to God as he independently determined in @@@ GRACE, understanding that God had provided the funds in the first place – Prov. 11:24-25; Job 1:21! Being entirely voluntary, the offerings [money] were deposited in a special wooden chest-type box placed in the outer Temple area. *See* Mk. 12:41-44; Lk. 21:1-4.

## MARK 12:41-44

And He [**Jesus**] sat down opposite the treasury [*gazophylakion* (a public repository of money)], and *began* observing how the people were putting money [*chalkos* (metallic coins)] into the treasury; and many rich people were putting in large sums. A poor widow came and put in two small copper coins, which amount to a cent [*kodrantes* (a fourth part of a coin)]. Calling His disciples to Him, He said to them, “Truly I say to you, this poor widow put in more than all the contributors to the treasury; for they all put in out of their surplus, but she, out of her poverty, put in all she owned, all she had to live on.”

- (6) **Principles of Giving.** See 1 Cor. 16:1-2; 2 Cor. 8-9.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 16:1-2

Now concerning the collection [*logia* (of money gathered for the relief of the poor)] for the saints [*hagios* (set apart ones) – in Jerusalem only], as I [**Paul**] directed [*diatasso* (to arrange; prescribe)] the churches [*ekklesia*] of Galatia, so do you also. On the first day of every week each one of you is to put aside and save [*thesaurizo* (to gather up)], as he may prosper [*euodoo*], so that no collections be made when I come.

- (a) **The Tenth Scam.** The so-called “ten percent” giving required by some modern Churches is not Biblical. Again, Church Age *giving* is parallel to Old Testament *offerings*. There is no percentage. The Believer gives as the LORD has blessed him and as “*he has purposed in his heart, not grudgingly or under compulsion*” – 2 Cor. 9:7-8.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 9:7-8

Each one [**Believer**] *must do* just as he has purposed in his heart, not grudgingly or under compulsion [*anagke* (imposed either by circumstances or the law)], for God loves a cheerful [*hilaros* (a grace oriented)] giver. And God is able to make all grace [**logistical @@@ GRACE**] abound to you [**God provides wealth**], so that always having all sufficiency [*auarkeia* (a perfect condition of life in which no aid or support is needed)] in everything, you may have an abundance [*perisseuo* (to exceed a fixed number of measure)] for every good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] deed [*ergon*].

- (b) **Attitude.** The basic principle of giving is set out in 1 Cor. 16:2 and 2 Cor. 9:7, where the Believer is told to give with the mental attitude of @@@ GRACE. Again, it is never the amount that counts with God per the widow's offering of two mites – Lk. 21:1-4; Mk. 12:41-44.
- (c) **Family.** Before the Believer engages in giving, he is commanded to provide first for his family as needed – 1 Tim. 5:8; 2 Thess. 3:10.

## 1 TIMOTHY 5:8

But if anyone [a negative [-N] volition Believer] does not provide [*pronoio*] for his own, and especially for those of his household [*oikeios*], he has denied the faith [*pistis* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE commands] and is worse [*cheiron*] than an unbeliever [*apistos* – who takes care of his family].

- (d) **God.** God does not need the Believer's @@@ MONEY – 2 Cor. 9:10. He gives the Believer the funds to be able to give them back – Ps. 50:10.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 9:10

Now He [God] who supplies seed to the sower and bread for food will supply and multiply your seed for sowing and increase the harvest of your righteousness.

## PSALM 50:10

For every beast of the forest is Mine [God], the cattle on a thousand hills.

- (e) **Forget.** The Believer must never dwell on the amount given – “*do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing*” [Matt. 6:2-3].

## MATTHEW 6:2-3

So when you [the Believer] give [*poieo*] to the poor, do not sound a trumpet before you, as the hypocrites [*hupokrites*] do in the synagogues and in the streets, so that they may be honored by men. Truly I [Jesus] say to you, they have their reward in full. But when you give to the poor, do not let your left hand [*aristeros*] know [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] what your right hand [*dexios*] is doing [the Believer forgets about it in @@@ GRACE].



- (f) **Cautions on Giving.** Per (1) *supra*, a primary recipient of giving includes provision for the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER of the local Church – 2 Thess. 3:7-9; Gal. 6:6; 1 Cor. 9:14. Also included would be: (1) a temporary provision to impoverished Believers [rare cases]; (2) maintaining the logistics of the Church facility; and (3) funding Biblically correct evangelical missions. In this light, Paul was always cautious about making @@@ MONEY an issue in his ministry [2 Cor. 11:8-9; 2 Thess. 3:7-9]. For example, Paul paid for himself and his theological seminary students as he taught daily for two years at the school of Tyrannus in Ephesus. See Acts 19:1, 8-10; 20:33-35.

### ACTS 20:33-35

I [Paul] have coveted no one's silver or gold or clothes. You yourselves know that these hands ministered to my *own* needs and to the men [Paul's traveling seminary team] who were with me. In everything I showed you that by working hard in this manner you must help the weak and remember the words of the LORD Jesus, that He Himself said, "It is more blessed to give than to receive [this quotation from Jesus is not found in the Gospels but is most certainly true as part of the @@@ BIBLE]."

### 2 CORINTHIANS 11:8-9

I [Paul] robbed [*sulao* (to rob; strip)] other churches [*ekklesia* (an assembly of Christians gathered for worship) – Paul took support @@@ MONEY from other churches outside of Corinth due to the Corinthians failure to provide funds] by taking wages [*opsonion* (a soldier's pay; allowance)] from them to serve [*diakonia* (service; ministering)] you [Paul provided @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE on a consistent basis to the churches of Corinth]; and when I was present with you and was in need, I was not a burden to anyone; for when the brethren [*adelphons* (brothers) – fellow Believers] came from Macedonia they fully supplied [*prosanaplerro* (to fill up by adding to)] my need, and in everything, I kept myself from being a burden to you, and will continue to do so.

- (g) **Two Handlers.** The @@@ MONEY collected by the local Church in giving should be handled by at least two people to avoid the appearance of impropriety – 2 Cor. 8:16-22.

## @@@ GOOD

**Definition.** The @@@ BIBLE describes three types of “good” – (1) Human Good; (2) Morality Good; and (3) Divine Good. The first is pure **evil**, the second is **neutral**, and the third is **Perfect** and **Holy**. It is imperative that the Believer understand and distinguish each of the types.

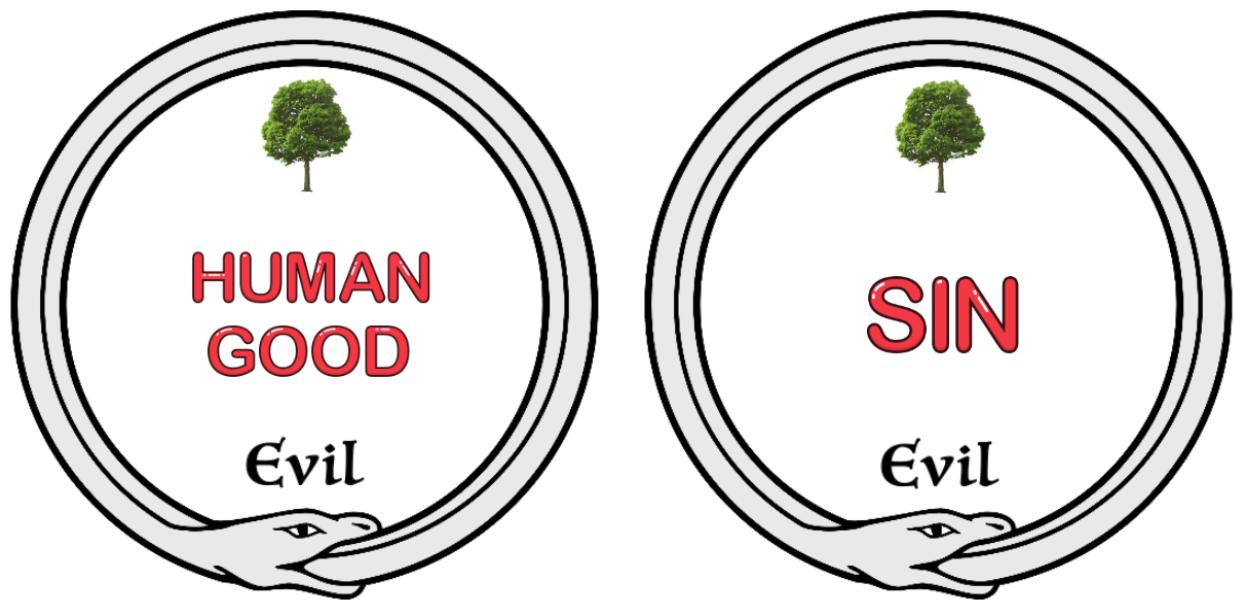
## – HUMAN GOOD –

- (1) Definition. **Human good** refers to the insidious lie that the practice of human deeds of worthiness constitutes, or can substitute for, the production **Divine Good** [see *infra*] – “*there is a way which seems right to a man (human good deeds for fellowship with God), but its end is the way of death (spiritual death in the Lake of Fire)*” [Prov. 14:12]. Accordingly, when human good activities are employed as a vehicle to provide salvation for the unBeliever or spirituality for the Believer [Matt. 16:23] it is pure evil. Only Perfect Divine Good is acceptable to God, never human good. In this context, human good is called a “*filthy \_\_\_ garment*” [Isa. 64:6] in the sight of God and only those Believers who have “*not soiled their garments (with human good deeds) will walk with Me in white, for they are worthy*” [Rev. 3:4]. Note: Human good must also be distinguished from the utility of “**Morality good**” [see *infra*] which is necessary for the effective operation of God’s Divine Institutions. See Rev. 3:4; Ps. 14:3.

## ISAIAH 64:6

For all of us have become like one who is unclean [*tame* (impure)], and all our [*self*] righteous deeds [*tsedaqah* – human good works [-r]] are like a filthy [*ed* (the menstrual flux)] garment [relative to God’s Perfect Holiness of [+R]]; and all of us wither like a leaf, and our iniquities [*avon* – human good and @@@ SIN], like the wind, take us away [from the presence of Perfect God].

- (2) **Evil’s Coin.** Like a common coin, evil has two sides. One side of the coin is human good, which is variously described as *kakos* (bad), *phaulos* (bad), or *nekros ergon* (dead works), or sometimes simply shortened to *ergon* (works), depending on the context. On the flip side of the coin is @@@ SIN. While all can agree that engaging in sin constitutes evil, few understand that human good also constitutes gross evil. It is directly associated with the “*tree of the knowledge of good & evil*” [Gen. 2:17].



– Evil’s Coin –

- (3) **Total Depravity.** Arrogantly immersed in human self-sufficiency, human good rejects the @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE of the “total depravity of man” [-r], relative to Perfect God [+R] and actually offers itself to Perfect God who absolutely rejects it – Rom. 3:23; 1 Jn. 1:7-10; Ps. 14:3-4; 39:5; Eccl. 7:20.

### ROMANS 3:23

For all [mankind] have sinned [*hamartano* – personal @@@ SIN and the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] and fall short [*hustereo* (to be left behind in the race) – human works of righteousness [-r]] of the glory [*doxa* – the absolutely pure Divine essence of the @@@ TRINITY to include His Perfect Righteousness [+R] and Justice] of God.

### PSALM 39:5

Behold, You [God] have made my days [*yom* (lifetime)] as handbreadths [*ephach* (the width of the hand; a unit of measurement)], and my lifetime [*cheled* (duration of life)] as nothing in Your sight; surely every man at his best [*natsab* (to take ones stand) human righteousness [-r]] is a mere breath [*hebel* (vapor; breath; vanity)]. Selah.

## ECCLESIASTES 7:20

Indeed, there is not a righteous [*tsaddiyq* (just; righteous) – human works of righteousness [-r]] man on earth who continually does [Divine] good [*tob*] and who never sins [*chata*].

## 1 JOHN 1:10

If we [Church Age Believers] say that we have not sinned [*hamartano* – Believers still commit personal @@@ SIN], we make Him a liar [*pseustes*] and His word [*logos* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] is not in us.

- (4) **Christ's Paid for Sin Only.** The unBeliever's human good is a basis for his indictment at the Great White Throne Judgment [Rev. 20:12-15]. Christ died on the @@@ CROSS for the evil of human @@@ SIN, not for the evil of human good. In turn, for the Believer all of his human good production will be destroyed at the Judgment Seat of Christ [1 Cor. 3:11-16]. *See infra* (12).
- (5) **Three Elements of Human Good.** The evil of human good is woven throughout Satan's @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS to oppose the @@@ PLAN OF GOD. Satan sponsors three key elements of human good.
  - (a) **Equality.** The false cry for *equality* is a central component of human good. It is pure arrogance. Satan deceived Eve in perfect environment with the false offer of "equality with God" and she chose it from her negative [-N] volition resulting in her immediate spiritual @@@ DEATH – Gen. 3:1-12; Deut. 30:19. Adam followed suit in his @@@ SIN, but he was not deceived. Then, in a state of spiritual death, their first act was to make fig leaves into a covering for their nakedness. In essence they sought the human good of equality under the lie that "*if we are right with each other*" – they covered up their obvious physical differences to look equal – "*then we will be right with God.*" In other words, they wanted God to acknowledge their human good efforts for equality. However, when Perfect God approached them in the "*cool of the day*" they hid, as human good and spiritual death cannot stand in the presence of Perfect God. God rejected their human good work and offered them His Divine Good work for @@@ SALVATION [the promised "seed of the woman"] as the only means to regain a relationship with their Creator. *See* Gen. 2:16-17, 3:7-15; Lk. 16:15.

### GENESIS 2:16-17

The LORD God commanded the man, saying, “From any tree [*ets*] of the garden you may eat [*akal* (to eat)] freely; but from the tree of the knowledge of good [*tob*] and evil [*ra* – @@@ GOOD] you shall not eat [*akal* – disobeying God is a @@@ SIN], for in the day [*yom*] that you eat from it you will surely [*muth* (die) – spiritual @@@ DEATH] die [*muth* (die) – physical death; literally dying *spiritually* you will die *physically*].”

### GENESIS 3:5

[Satan speaking to Eve] For God knows that in the day you eat from it [*the tree of the knowledge of good and evil*] your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God [*equality*], knowing good and evil.

### GENESIS 3:7-10

Then the eyes of both of them [*Adam and the woman after they sinned*] were opened, and they knew [*yada* (to learn to know)] that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves loin coverings [*they engaged in acts of human @@@ GOOD*]. They heard the sound of the LORD God [*Jesus Christ as a @@@ THEOPHANY*] walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and the man and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God among the trees of the garden [*human good cannot stand in the presence of Perfect Divine Good*]. Then the LORD God called [*qara* (to call out; utter a loud sound)] to the man [*Adam*], and said to him, “Where are you [*ay* (why are you where you are)]?” He said, “I heard the sound of You in the garden, and I was afraid [*yare* (to be fearful)] because I was naked [*eyrom*]; so I hid [*chaba* (secretly conceal)] myself.”

### LUKE 16:15

And He [*Jesus*] said to them, “You are those who justify themselves in the sight of men [*human viewpoint approving their practices*], but God knows [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] your hearts [*kardia* – the thoughts in their soul were against God’s plan for @@@ SALVATION]; for that which is highly esteemed [*hupselos*] among men [*the equality factor of human good and human deeds of @@@ RELIGION*] is detestable [*delugma* (a foul thing)] in the sight of [*enopion* (in the presence of)] God.”

1. **God's Work.** After Adam and Eve believed the Gospel of @@@ SALVATION about the promised coming "seed of the woman" [Gen. 3:15] who would die for their sins, God took off the fig leaves and He then clothed them with the skin of an animal which represented the Messiah's future work on the @@@ CROSS. Only God's work is acceptable, not mankind's work.
  2. **The Sacrifice.** From the very start of humanity on the earth post-Eden, the sacrifice of the innocent animal was a teaching tool about @@@ SALVATION ordained by God and related to the @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST – Phil. 2:6; Lk. 16:15; Gen. 3:5.
- (b) **Religion.** Human good is also deeply rooted in the lie of *works religion*. @@@ RELIGION does not recognize or accept @@@ GRACE – Acts 15:1, 5. Instead, God is supposed to accept man on the basis of his personal worthiness. For instance, Cain offered to God his "vegetable stand" produced by his human good works to gain the approbation of God – Gen. 4:3. Note: The ground which produced Cain's offering was something God had previously "*cursed*" [Gen. 3:17] as a consequence of the Fall. The ground represented the lie of human good works for approval from God – Gal. 3:10. Human good deeds cannot satisfy Perfect God, either in @@@ SALVATION or in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE – Isa. 64:6; Matt. 7:21-23.

### GALATIANS 3:10

For as many as are of the works [*ergon*] of the Law [*nomos*] are under a curse [*katara* (accursed) – only Jesus kept all the precepts of the @@@ MOSAIC LAW]; for it is written, "Cursed is everyone who does not abide by all things written in the book [*biblion*] of the Law, to perform [*poieo* (to do)] them."

Dr. Lewis Sperry Chafer, *Systematic Theology*, Vol. 1&2, (1947) pp. 110-111:

Great religious activities are possible without coming into complication with saving faith. It is possible to fight against sin and not present the Savior, or to urge the highest Scriptural ideals and yet offer no reasonable way of attainment. There is a strange fascination about these undertakings which are humanitarian, and are religious only in form and title. *And there is a strange attractiveness in the leader who announces that he is not concerned with the*



*doctrines of the Bible, because the helping of humanity is his one passion and care . . . . Who can be the god of these systems?* . . . Certain religious systems which are in no way related to the Bible and have continued for millennia—including the ancient pagan systems and spiritism—have held the devotion of uncounted millions and bear every evidence of being inspired by Satan. The moral problem, which is felt to some degree by every human being, is seized upon by almost every unscriptural system. *The idea that man will stand on a basis of personal worthiness has been the chief heresy, opposing the central doctrine of grace, from the time of Christ's death to the present hour.* It so permeates the church that few who preach are able to exclude it from their attempts at gospel preaching. It is safe to say that wherever the element of human merit is allowed to intrude into the presentation of the plan of salvation, the message is satanic to that extent. *The ministers of Satan proclaim personal righteousness as the ground of the individual's right relations to God* (2 Cor. 11:13-15) [emphasis added].

- (c) **False Personal Love.** Human good strongly promotes *personal love* for all mankind as a third key element of gross deception. The belief that God will accept anyone who loves or has “compassion” for his fellow man, particularly those in dire straits, is a lie. Furthermore, proponents falsely assert that God is the “father of all mankind,” making all humans “brothers” – the so-called fatherhood of God and brotherhood of man. However, the @@@ BIBLE clearly teaches that God is the Father of Believers only – Jn. 8:44-45. In truth, the Devil is the *father* of the unBeliever who is called a *nothos* (bastard) in Heb. 12:8, and hostile/alienated to God in Rom. 5:10; 9:6-13; Col. 1:21; Eph. 2:11-15. Every single unBeliever is the “*son of the devil*” [Acts 13:10] – 1 Jn. 3:10. They only become the children of God at salvation.

## JOHN 8:44-45

You [**Jesus was speaking to unBeliever religious leaders**] are of *your* father [*pater*] the devil [*diabolos* (slanderer) – **Satan**], and you want to do the desires [*epithumia* (to crave)] of your father. He was a murderer [*anthropoktonos* (manslayer)] from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth [*aletheia* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own *nature*, for he is a liar [*pseustes*] and the father of lies [@@@ GOOD; @@@ RELIGION]. But because I [**Jesus**] speak the truth [**Bible Doctrine**], you do not believe Me.

## 1 JOHN 3:10

By this the children [*teknon*] of God [**Believers**] and the children [*teknon*] of the devil [**unBelievers**] are obvious [*phaneros* (apparent)]: anyone who does not practice [*poieo* (to do)] righteousness [*dikaiosune* – the **unBeliever rejects God's @@@ GRACE** and seeks @@@ SALVATION by his own human righteousness [-r]] is not of God, nor the one who does not love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE] his brother [the Believer is commanded to use impersonal *agape* love to include those in @@@ REVERSIONISM].

## ROMANS 9:8, 13

That is, it is not the children of the flesh [*sarx* – all mankind] who are children [*teknon* (offspring; children)] of God, but the children of the promise [*epaggelia* (a promised good or blessing) – those humans that respond to God's @@@ GRACE solution for @@@ SALVATION] are regarded [*logizomai* (to reckon, count)] as descendants [*sperma* – God only accepts the Believer as His child].... Just as it is written, “Jacob I loved [*agapao* (to love dearly) – Jacob was a Believer in the family of God because he possessed God's [+R] Righteousness], but Esau I hated [*miseo* (to hate; detest) – Esau was not in the family of God because he refused the offer of salvation and only had his human [-r]].”

- (6) **The Great Lie.** All three legs of human good – *equality*, *religion*, and *love* – mix together to form the great lie, inspired by Satan himself. The great lie places the focus on human righteousness [-r] to gain the approbation of God and not Divine Righteousness [+R]. The Great Lie:

*All religions lead to God. As long as you sincerely try your best to be moral, seek equality, work for social justice, make the world a better place, and love your fellow man you will be accepted into Heaven.*

- (7) **Human Good Rejected.** As with Adam and Eve, whether offered for @@@ SALVATION or for living the so-called “Christian” life, human righteousness [-r] is always rejected by God – Isa. 64:6; Gen. 4:5. Again, while Believers are strongly commanded to be model citizens that follow the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS, they must stay out of all socialistic programs in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS that strive to improve or “white-wash” the Devil's @@@ WORLD – 2 Tim. 2:26.

## 2 TIMOTHY 2:26

And they [**Believers**] may come to their senses [*ananepho* (recover self) – choose @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**] and escape from the snare [*pagis* (sudden trap) – @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS**] of the devil, having been held captive [*zogreo* (to take alive)] by him to do his will.

- (a) **Social Problems.** Society's problems can never be solved by man-made legislation washed in human good. Social engineering in the name of the greater good always causes greater problems. Leadership and culture must adhere to the @@@ **DIVINE INSTITUTIONS**.
- (b) **Change.** The Believer can't change those involved in human good but these types of people can change the Believer. Likewise, no one can alter the truth of the @@@ **BIBLE** but the Bible can alter the Believer to make him rich in @@@ **REWARDS**. See 2 Tim. 3:5.

## 2 TIMOTHY 3:5

Holding to a form of godliness [*eusebeia* (respect towards God) – practicing @@@ **RELIGION**], although they have denied its power [*rejecting* @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**]; Avoid [*@@@ SEPARATION*] such men as these.

- (c) **Illustration.** Believers in the Roman Empire were never told to revolt against the societal wrong of slavery – Col. 3:22-24. In fact, Believers who were slaves were told to do their jobs with dedication as “*slaves of Christ*” [Eph. 6:5-8] and wait for an opportunity for their freedom [1 Cor. 5:20-21]. The Creator has a unique purpose for the life of every Believer regardless of his economic condition or social status. In other words, God knew all about every Believer “*before the foundation of the world*” [Eph. 1:4] and provided for all their material needs.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 7:20-21

Each man must remain in that condition in which he was called [*kaleo* – the point of @@@ **SALVATION**]. Were you called while a slave? Do not worry about it; but if you are able also to become free, rather do that. For he who was called in the LORD while a slave, is the LORD's freedman; likewise he who was called while free, is Christ's slave.

- (8) **Altruistic.** Many unBelievers who engage in human good can be altruistic and also follow the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS. See Lk. 6:32; 11:13; 16:27-28; Rom. 9:8-16 [Esau was a “good” person relative to brother Jacob, but remained an unBeliever]. Jesus Christ forcefully told the good works crowd: “*I never knew you; depart from Me, you who practice lawlessness (substituting their good works for Jesus’ work on the cross)*” [Matt. 7:22-23].

## LUKE 11:13

If you then, being evil [*phonerōs*], know how to give [*didomi*] good gifts [*dōma*] to your children [*teknon*], how much more will *your* heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to those who ask Him [*the Old Testament Believer could ask for the enduing ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT*]?

- (9) **Overcoming Human Good.** Since human good is a matter of Satanic thinking – “*the schemes of the devil*” [Eph. 6:11]” – coming out of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS it can only be overcome by the accumulation of maximum @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE residing in the Believer’s @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT and the application of that Bible Doctrine to the various @@@ PROBLEMS of life – Num. 14:40-45; Heb. 5:12-14; Matt. 16:23.

## MATTHEW 16:23

But He [*Jesus Christ*] turned and said to Peter, “Get behind Me, Satan! You are a stumbling block [*skandalon (the movable stick or trigger of a trap)*] to Me; for you are not setting your mind [*phroneo (to have understanding)*] on God’s interests [*the @@@ PLAN OF GOD for @@@ SALVATION*], but man’s [*@@@ GOOD*].”

- (10) **Salvation.** The @@@ TRINITY is Perfect and human good or human worthiness has absolutely no place in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD to provide @@@ SALVATION [2 Tim. 1:9; Tit. 3:5; Phil. 3:9] as human good always distorts @@@ GRACE [Ps. 50:16-21; 52:1-5; Isa. 65:12]. Further, as with the case of the @@@ MOSAIC LAW, human good is called “*dead works*” [Heb. 6:1; 9:14; Col. 1:21] because it will not save anyone [Rom. 8:3; 9:30-31; 11:16; Gal. 2:16, 21; 3:11; Tit. 3:5; Phil. 3:9; Eph. 2:8-9; 2 Tim. 1:9; Acts 8:20; 1 Cor. 10:21; Isa. 57:12-13]. Further, incorporating a mixture of “grace” and works in a religious formula for salvation, is also a dead-end. Any amount of human good destroys grace and is rejected by God. See @@@ LEAVEN.

## 2 TIMOTHY 1:9

Who has saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN] us [the Believer] and called [*kaelo*] us with a holy calling [the ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT in @@@ SALVATION], not according [*kata* (according to a norm or standard)] to our works [*ergon* – human acts of righteousness [-r]], but according to His own purpose [*prothesis* (the setting forth of a thing)] and grace [*charis*] which was granted [*didomi*] us in Christ Jesus from all eternity [*aionios* (without beginning and end) – God knew who would respond to @@@ GRACE].

## ISAIAH 57:12-13

I [God] will declare [*nagad* (to inform of)] your [self] righteousness [*tsedaqah*] and your deeds [*maaweh* (deed; work) – human good], but they will not profit you [no @@@ SALVATION]. “When you cry out, let your collection of idols [man-made @@@ RELIGION ideas of @@@ SALVATION] deliver you. But the wind will carry all of them up, and a breath will take them away [human good cannot stand up to Divine Good]. But he who takes refuge [*chasah* (to have confidence in)] in Me [Believers] will inherit the land and will possess My holy mountain.”

## TITUS 3:5

He [God] saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN] us [Believers], not on the basis of [our] deeds [*chrestotes* (moral goodness) – human @@@ GOOD] which we have done in righteousness [*diakaiaosune* – human righteousness [-r]], but according to His mercy [*eleos* – @@@ GRACE in action], by the washing [*loutron* (a bath)] of regeneration [*paliggenesia* (a new birth)] and renewing [*anakainosis* (a complete change for the better)] by the Holy Spirit [the ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT in @@@ SALVATION].

- (11) **No Spirituality.** Neither human good nor the @@@ MOSAIC LAW will make the Believer spiritual or provide for growth towards spiritual @@@ MATURITY [Gal. 2:16; 3:2-5]. Like Cain, do-gooders want God to accept their human righteousness [-r] – Gen. 4:3. However, God always rejects human good and is only impressed with Divine Good and His own Perfect Righteousness [+R] and work – Eph. 2:8-9; Lk. 3:22; Ps. 11:7.



## GALATIANS 2:16

Nevertheless knowing that a man [*anthropos* (mankind)] is not justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – acceptable to God] by the works [*ergon*] of the Law [the @@@ MOSAIC LAW cannot provide God's Righteousness [+R]] but through [*dia* (by means of)] faith [*pistis* – saving @@@ FAITH] in Christ Jesus, even we have believed [*pisteuo*] in Christ Jesus, so that we may be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] by faith [*pistis* – as a result of saving faith the Believer receives the [+R] of God] in Christ and not by the works of the Law; since by the works of the Law no flesh [*sarx* – unBeliever] will be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)].

- (a) **Human Good and Rebound.** A Believer does not @@@ REBOUND from human good. Jesus Christ did not die on the @@@ CROSS for human good. He only paid the price for human @@@ SIN.
  - (b) **Impressing God.** A person may impress others with the human good he performs, but God is only impressed with two items: (1) the Believer's Righteousness [+R] which He imputed at the point of @@@ SALVATION; and (2) the subsequent @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE that the Believer acquires. See Job 35:4-8; Rom. 4:2.
- (12) **A Continuing Test.** Since Jesus Christ was not judged for human good, human good remains as a primary test of human volition for the Believer in reaching maturity and for the unBeliever in @@@ SALVATION.
- (a) **Not in Heaven.** The Believer's human good will not be allowed in @@@ HEAVEN – 2 Pet. 3:10, 13. It will be judged and destroyed at the Judgment Seat of Christ by “fire” [1 Cor. 3:11-16] and find no place in eternity – 2 Cor. 5:10; Rom. 14:10; 1 Pet. 1:7; Heb. 6:7-8.

## 2 PETER 3:10

But the day of the LORD [the creation of a new universe at the end of the Millennium] will come like a thief [*kleptes*], in which the heavens will pass away with a roar [*rhoizedon* (a loud noise)] and the elements [*stoicheion* (the elements from which all things have come)] will be destroyed [*luo* (to loose)] with intense heat [*kausoo* (to burn up)], and the earth and its works [*ergon* – human @@@ GOOD] will be burned up [*katakaio* (to consume by fire)].



- (b) **Indictment.** The unBeliever may falsely and arrogantly claim that he did God's work while on the earth, but his human good is actually a basis for his damning indictment at the Great White Throne @@@ JUDGMENT – Matt. 7:21-23; Rev. 20:12-15; Jn. 3:19-21; Heb. 9:27; Eccl. 12:14. Without the Righteousness [+R] of God acquired by faith in Jesus Christ, the unBeliever's [-r] human good righteousness is incompatible with the Perfect @@@ TRINITY and will not save him. Although the unBeliever's @@@ SIN is not mentioned at all, because Jesus Christ died for the sins of all humans under @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT, the unBeliever is still the enemy of God [Heb. 12:8] and Perfect God can only judge imperfection – Heb. 12:23; Ps. 34:16.

### JOHN 3:19-20

This is the judgment [*krisis* (at a trial)], that the Light [*phos* – Jesus Christ the God/man] has come into the world [*kosmos* – Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD], and men [*anthropos* (mankind) – unBelievers] loved [*agapao* (to be well pleased with; to love dearly)] the darkness [*skotos* (of night darkness)] rather than the Light [*phos* – Jesus Christ], for their deeds [*ergon*] were evil [*poneros* (of a bad nature) – the unBeliever with his own righteousness [-r] is in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS and is attracted only to human @@@ GOOD]. For everyone who does [*prasso* (to practice)] evil [*phaulos* (worthlessness; wickedness)] hates [*miseo* (to detest)] the Light [the unBeliever hates @@@ GRACE], and does not come to the Light for fear that his deeds will be exposed [*elegcho* (to refute, generally with shame) – the human works of the unBeliever are not acceptable to God].

- (13) **Leadership.** Human good that is allowed to infiltrate the national leadership does tremendous harm to the nation – Neh. 1:11; Dan. 3:1, 6; Prov. 17:11.
- (14) **Separation.** Because human good puts the emphasis on self-worthiness it leads to the worst forms of @@@ SIN to include arrogance and boasting – Prov. 6:16-19; Rom. 4:2. Again, Believers are commanded to separate from human good – Phil. 3:2; 1 Thess. 5:22; Rom. 12:1-2; Gen. 48:16; 50:20; Ps. 91:10; 97:10; 119:101; 121:7; Prov. 1:33; 2:10-14; 3:7; 12:21; 19:23.

### 1 THESSALONIANS 5:22

Abstain [*apecho*] from every form of evil [*poneros* (wickedness)].

## ROMANS 12:1-2

Therefore I [Paul] urge you, brethren, by the mercies of God, to present your bodies [*soma* – reach @@@ MATURITY] a living and holy sacrifice, acceptable [*euarestos* (well pleasing)] to God, *which is* your spiritual [*logikos*] service of worship. And [Believer] do not be conformed [*suschematizo* (to conform one's self to another's pattern)] to this world [*aion* – Satan's @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], but be transformed [*metamorphoo*] by the renewing [*anakainosis* (complete change for the better)] of your mind [*nous* – transformation of the Believer's thinking requires maximum @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], so that you may prove what the will of God is [reach @@@ MATURITY and not to engage in human @@@ GOOD], that which is good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] and acceptable [*euarestos* (well pleasing)] and perfect [*teleios* (to make complete)].

## PSALM 97:10

Hate evil [*raah*], you who love the LORD, who preserves the souls [*nephesh*] of His godly ones [Believers]; He delivers them from the hand of the wicked.

- (15) **Distorting Matthew 25.** The Biblical passage routinely distorted by legalists to promote and even celebrate the false doctrine of human good for @@@ SALVATION [Matt. 7:21-23 clearly rejects “good works”] and/or the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE is Matt. 25:34-46. Although these verses have absolutely nothing to do with salvation, they are nonetheless championed by the human good crowd as the means to curry favor and acceptance from God – engaging in do-good efforts for other humans to include feeding, housing, clothing, or visiting them in prison. This absolutely spurious interpretation of Matt. 25:34-46, contradicts the hundreds upon hundreds of Biblical verses which unequivocally proclaim salvation by @@@ GRACE alone, totally apart from any human good deeds whatsoever. In the clear context of chapters 24 and 25 of *Matthew*, which deal exclusively with Jesus Christ speaking to the disciples about the future Tribulation and His 2nd Advent, Matt. 24:34-46, specifically refers to those Tribulational Gentile Believers [already saved by grace during the Tribulation] who risked their lives to house, clothe, feed, and give comfort to the 144,000 Jewish evangelists around the globe that were hunted down and killed by the forces of Satan – Rev. 7:4-17; 14:1-20. Per the subject passage these hero **Winner** Believers, many of whom will be murdered themselves for helping, will receive special @@@ REWARDS.

– MORALITY GOOD –

- (1) **Definition.** **Morality good** refers to the necessity for all humans to follow the precepts of conduct set out in the @@@ **DIVINE INSTITUTIONS** which protect human @@@ **FREEDOM** – Rom. 13:1-7; Job 35:4-8.
- (2) **Mosaic Law.** The @@@ **MOSAIC LAW** was given, in part, to restrain the evil of human good, but also to recognize the necessity of morality good for the proper functioning of a healthy society.
- (3) **Human Good vs Morality Good.** Human good is not the same as morality good. Morality good supports rather than distorts the efficacy of the @@@ **DIVINE INSTITUTIONS**, while human good generally attacks the Divine Institutions, and always attacks the @@@ **GRACE** of God – 1 Cor. 15:33.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 15:33

Do not be deceived [*planao* (to cause to stray)]: “Bad company corrupts [*phtheiro* (to destroy; corrupt)] good [*chrestos* (virtuous)] morals [*ethos* – morality good].”

- (4) **Believers.** Morality good should be embraced by all mankind and Believers are specifically commanded to practice the highest levels of morality good as model citizens in the nation of residency – 1 Pet. 2:12; Col. 3:23-24.

### 1 PETER 2:12

Keep your [**Believers**] behavior [*anastrophe* (manner of life)] excellent [*kalos* (commendable)] among the Gentiles [*ethnos* – **unBelievers**], so that in the thing in which they slander [*katalaleo*] you as evildoers [*kakopois* – **for being Christians and promoting @@@ GRACE**], they may because of your good [*kalos*] deeds [*ergon* – morality good], as they observe [*epopteuo* (to watch)] *them*, glorify God in the day of visitation [*episcope* (inspection) – **when they too become Believers**].

- (5) **Can't Save/Can't Make Spiritual.** Since Christianity is not a system of morality but a relationship with God, morality good will not provide @@@ **SALVATION** nor will it make the Believer spiritual – either in Fellowship with the @@@ **HOLY SPIRIT** or growth to spiritual @@@ **MATURITY**.

## – DIVINE GOOD –

- (1) **Definition. Divine Good** [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value)] refers to God's Perfect nature, thoughts, and actions. Not only is Divine Good the antithesis of human good, it cannot be produced by the unBeliever or the Believer apart from @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – “*They have all turned aside, together they have become corrupt; there is no one who does (Divine) good, not even one*” [Ps. 14:3]; Isa. 55:8-9; Eccl. 7:20; Ps. 14:3. Divine Good is often referred to as *phos* (light), see, e.g., Jn. 3:19; Lk. 8:16-17. Human good, which is called darkness [Jn. 3:19, *skotos* (of night darkness)], has man making up his own “light” which leads to his inevitable destruction – Isa. 50:10-11.

## ISAIAH 50:10-11

Who is among you [*Jews in the Southern Kingdom of Judah*] that fears the LORD, that obeys the voice of His servant [@@@ PASTOR/TEACHER], that walks in darkness [*chashekah* – the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS] and has no light [*nogahh* (bright light) – Divine Good]? Let him trust in the name of the LORD and rely on his God. Behold, all you who kindle a fire [*esh* – human good works], who encircle yourselves with firebrands [*ziyqah* (a burning arrow)], walk in the light of your fire [*esh*] and among the brands you have set ablaze. This you will have from My hand: you will lie down in torment [*maatsebah* – Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING].

- (2) **Production of Divine Good.** Divine Good is produced by @@@ GRACE – Col. 1:9-10; 2 Tim. 2:21; 3:17; Tit. 2:7; Eph. 2:10. Divine Good is manifested in the life of the Believer whenever he is: (1) Filled with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT; (2) learns @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE; and (3) applies his retained Bible Doctrine to solve @@@ PROBLEMS. See 1 Cor. 10:13.
- (3) **Loser Believers.** The Believer on negative [-N] volition to Bible Doctrine is in a state of perpetual evil [human good and @@@ SIN] and cannot produce Divine Good – Prov. 5:12-14; 11:18-19; 14:22; 15:3; 16:6; 22:3; 24:1-4.

## PROVERBS 14:22

Will they not go astray [*taah*] who devise [*charash* (to engrave)] evil [*ra*]? But kindness and truth [*emeth* (faithfulness; truth)] will be to those who devise good [*tobe* – Divine Good].

- (4) **Divine Good Viewpoint.** The Divine Good viewpoint is commanded to be held by every Believer – 2 Cor. 10:4-5; 2 Tim. 1:7. Since @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** is “*the mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16] such intake slowly shapes the Believer’s mental attitude as he grows to @@@ **MATURITY** [1 Cor. 15:10; 2 Cor. 9:8; Phil. 2:5; Ps. 54:5; Rom. 12:21; Eph. 5:16; 2 Thess. 2:17; 3:2-3; Prov. 23:7] until the Believer’s daily thinking is actually reflecting God’s thinking and his senses are “*trained to discern good and evil*” [Heb. 5:14]; Eccl. 12:14! The production of the Divine Good stabilizes the Believer.
- (5) **The Angelic Conflict.** Believers help resolve the ongoing @@@ **ANGELIC CONFLICT** each time they produce Divine Good – Rom. 12:21. This is done by spending maximum time in the @@@ **DIVINE DYNASPHERE** [see @@@ **REBOUND**] and by fully engaging in all the gates in order to reach spiritual @@@ **MATURITY** and become a **Winner** Believer subject matter expert witness exhibit.

## ROMANS 12:21

Do not be overcome by evil [*kakos* (worthlessness) – human @@@ **GOOD**], but overcome evil with good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good].

- (6) **Rewards.** The Believer’s degree and level of production of Divine Good during his lifetime is the basis for his eternal @@@ **REWARDS** – 2 Cor. 5:10. Time spent in Fellowship with the @@@ **HOLY SPIRIT** provides *basic* Divine Good Rewards and reaching spiritual @@@ **MATURITY** provides *advanced* Divine Good Rewards. See 1 Tim. 4:8-10.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:10

For we must all appear [*phaneroo* – the Church Age Believer in his @@@ **RESURRECTION body**] before the judgment seat [*bema* (raised place of the official seat of a judge) – occurs immediately after the @@@ **RAPTURE**] of Christ, so that each one may be recompensed [*kolumbao* (to care for)] for his deeds in the body [*soma* – the Believer’s mortal body while he was on the earth], according to what he has done [*prasso* (to practice)], whether good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good produced in the @@@ **CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE**] or bad [*phaulos* (worthless) – human good].



## @@@ GRACE

- (1) **Definition.** Grace is all that God is free to do for mankind on the basis of the @@@ CROSS totally apart from any human input whatsoever. Man cannot work for it, deserve it, or earn it. See 1 Cor. 4:7.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 4:7

For who regards you as superior? What do you have that you did not receive [by God's @@@ GRACE]? And if you did receive it [by God's grace], why do you boast [*kauchaomai* – that you did it] as if you had not received it?

- (2) **Subject and Title.** Given the truth that what the Righteousness [+R] of God demands the Justice of God executes, grace is not only revealed through the absolute mercy of God but it is also the subject and title of the @@@ PLAN OF GOD. Without compromise to His Perfect Divine attributes, God is able through His grace to save unBelievers on positive [+P] volition and to then provide Winner Believers with @@@ REWARDS – Isa. 30:18-19; 55:8-9.

### ISAIAH 30:18

Therefore the LORD longs to be gracious to you, and therefore He waits on high to have compassion on you. For the LORD is a God of justice [*mishpat* (the act of deciding a case)]; how blessed are all those who long [*chakah* (to wait)] for Him [all unBeliever humans on positive [+P] volition will be saved and all Believers on positive [+P] volition will reach @@@ MATURITY].

### ISAIAH 55:8-9

“For My [God] thoughts [*machashabah* (thought; plan; purpose) – the essence of the @@@ TRINITY and @@@ GRACE] are not your [mankind] thoughts [of human @@@ GOOD], nor are your ways [*derek* – the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS and @@@ RELIGION] My ways [@@@ PLAN OF GOD to provide @@@ SALVATION],” declares the LORD. “For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are My ways higher [*gabahh* (to be exalted)] than your ways and My thoughts than your thoughts.”

- (3) **Mercy.** Because grace depends entirely on who and what God is, *eleos* (mercy) is the term used to describe “grace in action” – 1 Pet. 1:3; Tit. 3:5.



- (4) **Stands Alone.** The great and ultimate issue for all humans is always God's Divine Good grace work vs. human @@@ GOOD work – Gal. 4:29-31.

### GALATIANS 4:29-31

But as at that time he who was born according to the flesh [*sarx* – Ishmael the unBeliever] persecuted him *who was born* according to the Spirit [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT's @@@ SALVATION ministry to Isaac], so it is now also. But what does the Scripture say? “Cast out the bondwoman [*Hagar*] and her son [the unBeliever cannot be saved by human works], for the son of the bondwoman shall not be an heir [*klernonmeo* (to receive a part in an inheritance)] with the son of the free woman [*eleutheros* (a freeborn) – liberated from the power of spiritual @@@ DEATH by @@@ GRACE the Believer has nothing in common with the unBeliever].” So then, brethren [*Believers*], we are not children of a bondwoman, but of the free woman.

- (5) **Grace in Phase I – Salvation.** The unmatched “*grace of God has appeared*” – is available – “*to all men*” [Tit. 2:11]. God is Perfect and His @@@ PLAN OF GOD for @@@ SALVATION is Perfect. If imperfect man had anything to do with the Plan of God to provide salvation, the entire plan would be imperfect. Therefore, works @@@ RELIGION hates the Perfect Plan of God – Gal. 4:29-31; Rom. 11:6.

### ROMANS 11:6

But if [*First Class Condition, and it is*] it [@@@ SALVATION] is by grace [*charis* – @@@ GRACE], it is no longer on the basis of [*human*] works [*ergon* – the lie of @@@ RELIGION], otherwise grace is no longer grace.

- (6) **Salvation Mechanics.** At the entrance point into @@@ SALVATION every single born again Believer has “*tasted*” [1 Pet. 2:3] the grace of God at least once in their life – 1 Jn. 2:2; Tit. 2:11.

### TITUS 2:11

For the grace [*charis*] of God has appeared [under @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT Christ died for all], bringing [*epiphaino* (to bring to light)] salvation [*soterion* – the opportunity for @@@ SALVATION] to all men [*anthropos* (mankind) – @@@ HEATHENISM].

## 1 PETER 2:3

If you [**born again Believer**] have tasted [*geuomai*] the kindness [*chrestos* (goodness)] of the LORD [*kurios* (God)] – in terms of @@@ SALVATION all Believers are the beneficiaries of the @@@ GRACE of God].

- (a) **Common** [Calling] **Grace**. The mechanics of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT's Divine invitation for the unBeliever to believe in Jesus as his Savior. The spiritually dead unBeliever on positive [+P] volition in his soul will respond to God's invitation of the Gospel by @@@ FAITH.
- (b) **Efficacious Grace**. The @@@ HOLY SPIRIT takes the positive [+P] volition unBeliever's weak bleep of @@@ FAITH [whatever the output amount] and makes it effectual for eternal @@@ SALVATION – Eph. 1:13; 2:8-9; Rom. 8:28-30. @@@ FORTY THINGS are immediately given to the Believer – Tit. 3:5; Rom. 3:23-24; 4:4; 5:20.

## EPHESIANS 2:8-9

For by grace [*charis* – @@@ GRACE is the total @@@ PLAN OF GOD] you have been saved [*sozo* (to deliver)] – into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN and guaranteed @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY] through faith [*pistis* – the mechanics of @@@ SALVATION is by @@@ FAITH]; and that [the speck of human faith exhaled plus the entire package of what God does in grace] not of yourselves, *it is* the gift [*doron* (a gift)] of God; not as a result of [human] works [*ergon*], so that no one may boast [*kauchaomai* (to boast on account of a thing)] – because the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT takes the individual's faith output and makes it efficacious for salvation no one can boast about their so-called amount of faith exhaled upon hearing the Gospel].

(7) **Grace in Phase II – Believer's Life on Earth.**

- (a) The Church Age is a special *period of grace* due to all the special privileges given to the Royal Family – Jn. 1:16; Eph. 3:2, 8; 4:7; Col. 1:6; 2 Thess. 1:12; 2 Cor. 16:23; Rom. 5:17; 12:3; Js. 4:6; Acts 4:33; 15:11. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS. Maximum living grace is fully available for the Believer and is found in the following categories:

1. **Grace in @@@ REBOUND.**

2. **Gifts.** Grace in the bestowing of a spiritual gift to the Believer – Rom. 12:6. Note: The Church in Corinth had more spiritual @@@ GIFTS than most all others and it was generally apostate.
3. **Grace in @@@ PRAYER.** See Heb. 4:16.
4. **Grace in @@@ SUFFERING.** In a hopeless situation the Believer realizes that he must rely on God – 2 Cor. 12:9-10.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 12:9-10

And He [God] has said to me [Paul], “My grace [*charis* – @@@ GRACE] is sufficient [*arkeo* (to be possessed of unfailing strength)] for you, for power [*dunamis* (inherent power) – living inside the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE] is perfected [*teleo* (to bring to a close) – reaching @@@ MATURITY] in weakness [*astheneia* (lack of strength) – Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing].” Most gladly, therefore, I will rather boast about my weaknesses, so that the power of Christ may dwell [*episkenoō* (to fix a tent)] in me. Therefore I am well content with weaknesses, with insults, with distresses, with persecutions, with difficulties, for Christ’s sake; for when I am weak [*astheneo* – under Divine Suffering for Blessing], then I am strong [*dunatos* (mighty) – using the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES].

5. **Grace in Reaching @@@ MATURITY.** The Believer realizes his place and purpose in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD – 2 Pet. 3:18; Phil. 1:7; Acts 20:32.

## PHILIPPIANS 1:7

For it is only right for me [Paul] to feel this way about you all [the Philippian Believers], because I have you in my heart, since both in my imprisonment [*desmon* – Roman house arrest circa A.D. 60] and in the defense [*apologia*] and confirmation of the gospel [*euaggelion* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], you all are partakers of grace [*charis* – @@@ GRACE] with me.

6. **Grace Stabilizes Life.** The Believer’s day to day life in the use of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE is rooted in grace as he reaches spiritual @@@ MATURITY – 1 Pet. 5:5-7, 12; 2 Tim. 2:1; 2 Cor. 1:12; Heb. 12:28; 13:19; Eph. 6:24; Js. 4:6.

## 1 PETER 5:5

You younger men, likewise, be subject to *your* elders [*presbuteros* (the old man) – @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER]; and all of you, clothe yourselves with humility toward one another, for God is opposed [*antitassomai* (to range in battle against)] to the proud [*huperephanos* (showing one's self above others)], but gives grace [*charis*] to the humble [*tapeinos* – a @@@ GRACE oriented positive [+P] volition Believer will reach @@@ MATURITY].

- (b) **Logistical Grace.** Logistical grace is provided by God for the Believer – 2 Cor. 9:7-8; Phil. 4:19; Matt. 6:25-34; Ps. 33:18-19; 37:25; 56:13; 68:19; 79:11. It applies to all Believers due to the fact that all possess His Righteousness [+R] which attracts His Justice for Blessings.
- (c) **Grace Rewards in Time.** Through grace, Escrow Account Blessing @@@ REWARDS are released to the mature Believer in @@@ TIME – Eph. 1:3, 11; 1 Pet. 1:4. In addition, the mature Believer has the *capacity* to actually enjoy the blessings provided throughout his life.
- (d) **Greater Grace.** Reaching @@@ MATURITY is called the “*greater grace*” [Js. 4:6]. Again, the purpose of Phase II is for the Believer to take in @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE and reach maturity – 2 Pet. 3:18!

## JAMES 4:6

But He [God] gives a greater [*megas*] grace [*charis* – the @@@ GRACE provisions to reach the highest level of spiritual @@@ MATURITY]. Therefore *it* says, “God is opposed [*antitassomai* (to rage in battle against)] to the proud [*huperephanos* (to show one's self above others) – Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING], but gives grace to the humble [*tapeinos* – the Believer on positive [+P] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE].”

## 2 PETER 3:18

But grow [*auxano* (to cause to grow) – the positive [+P] volition Believer must reach @@@ MATURITY] in the grace [*charis* – @@@ GRACE] and [*grow in the*] knowledge [*gnosis*] – understanding the full realm of Bible Doctrine] of our LORD and Savior Jesus Christ. To Him *be* the glory, both now and to the day of eternity. Amen.

- (8) **Problem Solving Device.** Grace is one of the @@@ **PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES** in dealing with others. The Believer understands that since God's grace saved him as a worthless sinner, *a fortiori*, he should treat others in grace [particularly other Believers] – Lam. 3:22-23; Matt. 18:22-35.

### LAMENTATIONS 3:22-23 (KJV)

*It is of the LORD's mercies [chesed (mercy) – @@@ GRACE] that we are not consumed [tamam (to completely consume to come to an end) – what we deserve] because His compassions [racham] fail not. They are new every morning: great is thy [God's] faithfulness [emunah (fidelity; steadfastness)].*

### MATTHEW 18:21-35

Then Peter came and said to Him, "LORD, how often shall my brother sin against me and I forgive him? Up to seven times?" Jesus said to him, "I do not say to you, up to seven times, but up to seventy times seven. For this reason the kingdom of heaven may be compared to a king who wished to settle accounts with his slaves. When he had begun to settle *them*, one who owed him ten thousand talents [\$3.5 billion] was brought to him. But since he did not have *the means* to repay, his lord commanded him to be sold, along with his wife and children and all that he had, and repayment to be made. So the slave *fell to the ground* and prostrated himself before him, saying, 'Have patience with me and I will repay you everything.' And the lord of that slave felt compassion and released him and forgave the debt. But the slave went out and found one of his fellow slaves who owed him a hundred denarii [\$37]; and seized him and *began* to choke *him*, saying, 'Pay back what you owe.' So his fellow slave *fell to the ground* and *began* to plead with him, saying, 'Have patience with me and I will repay you.' But he was unwilling and went and threw him in prison until he should pay back what was owed. So when the fellow slaves saw what had happened, they were deeply grieved and came and reported to their lord all that had happened. Then summoning him, his lord said to him, 'You wicked slave, I forgave you all that debt because you pleaded with me. Should you not also have had mercy on your fellow slave, in the same way that I had mercy on you?' And his lord, moved with anger, handed him over to the torturers until he should repay all that was owed him.. My heavenly Father will also do the same to you [@@@ **DIVINE DISCIPLINE**], if each of you does not forgive his brother from your heart."

(9) **Grace in Phase III – Eternity.**

- (a) **Dying Grace.** This occurs at the transfer of the Believer from the earth to the Third @@@ HEAVEN – Ps. 23; 116:13. The only exception is the Believer at the @@@ RAPTURE who is transformed out of his mortal body and into a supernatural @@@ RESURRECTION body.

**PSALM 116:15**

Precious [*yaqar* (valuable; prized)] in the sight of the LORD is the death [*maveth* – physical @@@ DEATH] of His godly ones [all Believers possess the Righteousness [+R] of God].

- (b) **Escrow Account Grace.** Bestowing of eternal @@@ REWARDS on the Believer – Eph. 1:3, 11; 1 Pet. 1:4; Rom. 8:28; Ps. 116:15; Js. 1:12; 1 Cor. 15:10, 58; 2 Cor. 6:1; 1 Tim. 1:14.
- (10) **Disorientation to Grace.** Disorientation to grace describes the ungrateful **Loser** Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM who lives his life in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS – Heb. 12:15; 2 Cor. 6:1; Gal. 1:6-7; 2:21; 5:4.

**GALATIANS 5:4**

You [the Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM] have been severed [(*katargeo* (to render idle; unemployed) – Operational @@@ DEATH)] from Christ, you who are seeking to be justified [(*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] by law [nomos – these Believers rejected the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE and sought to please God by keeping the @@@ MOSAIC LAW]; you have fallen [(*ekpipto* (to fall out))] from grace [*charis* – these Believers are still saved under @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY but @@@ GRACE cannot operate with @@@ RELIGION].

- (11) **Grace Answers Satan.** Grace answers Satan's false @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT objection that God is unfair – 2 Cor. 12:7-10. The @@@ PLAN OF GOD was designed to provide @@@ SALVATION for all humans. Those who reject grace, simply reject their Creator's @@@ LOVE. In short, all those who reject God's grace send themselves to @@@ HELL.
- (12) **Pride Rejects Grace.** Four areas of pride [arrogance] that rejects grace.



- (a) **Eternal Security.** The grace of @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY is rejected. The Believer erroneously assumes that some aspect of his personal @@@ SIN is bigger than the @@@ PLAN OF GOD.
- (b) **Traditions of Men.** Pseudo-spirituality associated with the various “traditions of men” where @@@ RELIGION, personal morality, human good, and taboos are more important than the @@@ PLAN OF GOD – “*you hold to the tradition of men*” [Mk. 7:7-13].
- (c) **Suffering Syndrome.** The **Loser** Believer’s attitude of “no one has @@@ SUFFERING as I do” syndrome – 1 Cor. 10:9-13.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 10:9-11

Nor let us try the LORD, as some of them did [**Exodus Jews in the Wilderness**], and were destroyed by the serpents [**died the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH**]. Nor grumble [*gogguzo*], as some of them did, and were destroyed by the destroyer. Now these things happened to them as an example, and they were written for our instruction, upon whom the ends of the ages have come.

- (d) **Emotion.** The emotional type, where personal feelings of @@@ EMOTION and experience are greater than the Word of God.
- (13) **Not for Sale.** The grace provisions of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE are not for sale – “*who suppose that godliness is a means of gain*” [1 Tim. 6:5]; 2 Cor. 12:14-18; Mic. 3:11-12; Acts 3:6.

### ACTS 3:6

But Peter said, “I do not possess silver or gold, but what I do have I give to you: In the name of Jesus Christ the Nazarene – walk [**he was healed**]!”

### MICAH 3:11

Her leaders pronounce judgment for a bribe, her priests instruct [*yarah (to teach)*] for a price [*mechiyr (payment)*] and her prophets divine for money]. Yet they lean on the LORD saying, “Is not the LORD in our midst? Calamity [*ra (evil)*] will not come upon us.”

---

## @@@ HAPPINESS

**Definition.** Happiness generally refers to a state of enjoyment/contentment and is expressed in the Bible in three categories: (1) **God's Happiness** [+H]; (2) **Pleasure Happiness** [-H]; and (3) **Neutral Happiness** [nH].

## – GOD'S HAPPINESS –

- (1) **God's Happiness** [+H]. There never was a time when God was not perfectly [+H] in a state of contentment, tranquility, and enjoyment. This [+H] is a part of His Perfect character in the Trinity – “*According to the glorious gospel of the blessed (makarios (happiness) – happinesses) God*” [1 Tim. 1:11].
  - (a) **[+H] in the Plural.** Whenever [+H] is described in the @@@ BIBLE it is always in the plural and should be rendered: *happinesses*. For Believers, exercising [+H] refers to both spiritual and temporal aspects.
  - (b) **Biblical Words for [+H]:** Hebrew = *asheri* (blessed; happiness); *kara* (joy; happiness); Greek = *makarioi* (blessed; happiness).
- (2) **Sharing God's Happiness.** In eternity past God desired to share His [+H] with Believers – “*the joy of the LORD*” [Neh. 8:10]. The relationship, however, must be compatible with His Holiness and this can only be acquired in @@@ TIME by the **Winner** Believer – Eccl. 3:1; Heb. 2:10; Ps. 16:11.

## JOHN 15:10-11

If you keep My [Jesus Christ] commandments [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], you will abide in My love; just as I have kept My Father's commandments and abide in His love. These things I have spoken to you [His disciples] so that My joy [*chara* – God's Perfect @@@ HAPPINESS] may be in you, and that *your* joy may be made full [*pleroo* (to fill to the full) – *sharing the Happiness of God is a key @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICE*].

## PSALM 16:11

You [God] will make known to me [Believer] the path of life; in Your presence is fullness of joy [*simchah* – @@@ HAPPINESS]; in Your right hand there are pleasures forever [*netsach* – @@@ REWARDS].

- (3) **Grace.** The mechanics whereby God can share with the Believer His own [+H] without compromise to His Perfect essence is rooted in @@@ GRACE – Ps. 9:14; 31:7; 51:12; 97:12; Hab. 3:18.

### HABAKKUK 3:18

Yet I will exult [*alaz (to be jubilant)*] in the LORD, I will rejoice in the God of my salvation [*yesha (deliverance) – into the Kingdom of Heaven*].

- (4) **Believer's Potential.** Man enters the @@@ PLAN OF GOD by @@@ FAITH in Christ and the possibility for [+H] in time begins at the point of @@@ SALVATION, but sharing His [+H] in time is only a potential. Given that the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE does not go away and the evil of human @@@ GOOD must be washed out of the Believer's soul, there is no such thing as instant [+H] for the Believer – Rom. 7:17-19. In short, as the Christian grows to spiritual @@@ MATURITY in the Devil's @@@ WORLD his [+H] grows.

- (5) **Two Sources.** There are two sources contributing to [+H].

- (a) **The Filling of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT.** Accomplished through @@@ REBOUND – Gal. 5:22-23; Prov. 16:20; 28:14; Ps. 146:5.

### GALATIANS 5:22-23

But the fruit [*karpos (production)*] of the [Holy] Spirit is love [*agape – impersonal @@@ LOVE*], joy [*chara (gladness; joy) – @@@ HAPPINESS*], peace [*erlene*], patience [*makrothumia*], kindness [*chrestotes (integrity; moral goodness)*], goodness [*agathosune (uprightness of life)*], faithfulness [*pistis*], gentleness [*prautes (mildness of disposition)*], self-control [*egkrateia*]; against such things [*the Believer at spiritual @@@ MATURITY operating inside the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE*] there is no law [*nomos*].

- (b) **Application of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.** The application of Bible Doctrine to life's @@@ PROBLEMS provides [+H] – Jn. 17:13.
- (6) **Eternal Life.** [+H] is firmly woven into the Believer's eternal life in Phase III of the @@@ PLAN OF GOD – Jude 24; Rev. 21:4.

- (7) **Maintaining Happiness.** [+H] is maintained by placing the true emphasis on @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – Jer. 15:16; Matt. 4:4; 1 Jn. 1:4; Ps. 119:130; Eph. 4:23. Believers are commanded to be [+H] – Phil. 3:1; 4:4; Rom. 14:22. This is really a command to reach @@@ MATURITY – Jn. 15:11; 17:13.
- (8) **Problem Solving Device.** [+H] is one of the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES – Prov. 4:21; 1 Cor. 2:16; Jn. 15:11; 17:17; 1 Jn. 1:4; Jer. 15:16; Col. 1:9-11; 2 Cor. 8:2; 12:9-12; Js. 1:25; 2 Jn. 12. It is expressed in various circumstances of life – Phil. 4:11-12; Heb. 12:2; 13:5-6; Col. 3:1. Jesus Christ constantly used [+H] – Heb. 12:2; 1 Tim. 6:15.

## HEBREWS 12:2

Fixing our [Believers] eyes [*aphorao* (to turn the eyes away from other things)] on Jesus, the author [*archegos* (the chief leader)] and perfecter [*teleiotes*] of faith [*pistis* – saving @@@ FAITH], who for the joy [*chara* – @@@ HAPPINESS] set before Him endured [*hupomeno* (to remain)] the cross [*stauros* – @@@ SUFFERING spiritual @@@ DEATH on the @@@ CROSS], despising [*kataphroneo* (to disregard)] the shame [*aischune* – of coming into judgment for all human @@@ SIN], and has sat down [*kathizo*] at the right hand of the throne of God [Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL].

- (9) **Divine Suffering for Blessing.** There is great [+H] in Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY [1 Cor. 10:13] and receive fantastic @@@ REWARDS – 1 Pet. 3:14; Js. 1:1-3; 12.

## JAMES 1:12

Blessed [*makarios* (happiness) – @@@ HAPPINESS] is the man [the positive [+P] volition Believer] who perseveres [*hupomeno* (to remain)] under trial [*peirasmos* – Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing]; for once he has been approved [*dokimos* (acceptable; pleasing) – God approves the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches spiritual @@@ MATURITY], he will receive [*lambano* (to take with the hand)] the crown [*stephanos* (a wreath given as a prize)] of life [*zoe* – eternal @@@ REWARDS] which the LORD has promised [*epaggello* (to announce that one is about to do or furnish something)] to those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] Him [the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches maturity loves the LORD].

- (10) **Positive Outcomes.** (1) [+H] is related to military victory in @@@ WAR [Ps. 137:8-9; Jos. 23:10]; (2) [+H] is related to national prosperity [Ps. 144:15; Neh. 12:43]; (3) [+H] is related to association with mature Believers [Phil. 2:28-29; Rom. 15:32; 1 Cor. 16:17-18; 2 Cor. 7:13; Phm. 7]; and (4) [+H] is related to a clear conscience [Rom. 14:22; 2 Cor. 1:12].

## 2 CORINTHIANS 1:12

For our [Paul and his traveling seminary team] proud confidence [*kauchesis* – @@@ HAPPINESS] is this: the testimony of our conscience [*suneidesis*], that in holiness and godly sincerity, not in fleshly [*sarkikos*] wisdom [*sophia* – the human viewpoint of life] but in the grace [*charis*] of God, we have conducted [*anastrepho*] ourselves in the world [*kosmos* – @@@ WORLD], and especially toward you.

- (11) **The Millennium.** There will be great emotional [+H] joy amongst human Believers in the 1,000 years when the LORD Jesus Christ rules from Jerusalem in the Millennium – Isa. 35:1-2; 64:4-5; 65:18-19; 66:10; Matt. 5:5; 1 Cor. 2:9. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.

### – PLEASURE HAPPINESS –

- (1) **Pleasure Happiness [-H].** Pleasure Happiness [-H] occurs throughout human life and is experienced by the Believer and the unBeliever.
- (2) **Two Types of [-H].** First, [-H] results when one engages in the sphere of personal @@@ SIN to include revenge, fornication, drunkenness, abuse of power, gossip, criminal activity, etc. Second, [-H] results when one exploits or enjoys the details of life apart from @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE. In either case, pleasure [-H] is superficial and extremely unstable with the associated “enjoyment” or stimulation always short lived. Accordingly, those who habitually practice pleasure [-H] with its “highs and lows” are inevitably bored and miserable, particularly Believers – 2 Sam. 1:19-20; Eccl. 1:14.

## ECCLESIASTES 1:14

I [Solomon] have seen all the works [*maaweh* (deeds)] which have been done under the sun, and behold, all is vanity [*hebel* (vapor; vanity) – [-H]] and striving after wind [Solomon had no capacity to enjoy his possessions].

## – NEUTRAL HAPPINESS –

- (1) **Neutral Happiness [nH].** Neutral Happiness [nH] is based on one's adherence to the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.
- (2) **Eligible [nH].** Neutral Happiness [nH] can be experienced by the unBeliever and the Believer. *See* Eccl. 9:9; 11:8-9; Ps. 89; 144:15; Prov. 23:24-25; 29:18; Rom. 13:1-10. For example, an unBeliever with a good spouse [Deut. 24:5] and a good job can derive [nH] enjoyment in time by simply following the establishment institutions set up by God to maintain order in the human race. Thus, he can enjoy levels of [nH] before he dies and goes to @@@ HELL. Furthermore, while the Believer can also experience the benefits of [nH] it is not designed as a substitute for his expected possession of [+H] which comes only via living the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.

## ECCLESIASTES 9:9

Enjoy life with the woman whom you [unBeliever] love all the days of your fleeting life [chay] which He [God] has given to you under the sun; for this is your reward in life and in your toil in which you have labored under the sun.

## ROMANS 13:1-7

Every person is to be in subjection to the governing authorities. For there is no authority except from God, and those which exist are established by God [@@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS]. Therefore whoever resists authority has opposed the ordinance of God; and they who have opposed will receive condemnation upon themselves. For rulers are not a cause of fear for good behavior, but for evil. Do you want to have no fear of authority? Do what is good and you will have praise from the same; for it is a minister of God to you for good. But if you do what is evil, be afraid; for it does not bear the sword [capital punishment] for nothing; for it is a minister of God, an avenger who brings wrath on the one who practices evil. Therefore it is necessary to be in subjection, not only because of wrath, but also for conscience [@@@ HAPPINESS by the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS] sake. For because of this you also pay taxes, for *rulers* are servants of God, devoting themselves to this very thing. Render to all what is due to them: tax to whom tax *is due*; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honor to whom honor.

---



## @@@ HEATHENISM

- (1) **Definition.** The term heathenism describes the status of the spiritually dead unBeliever. It comes from the Gothic word *haithi* (open spaces). The Greek word *ethne* is also often used as a technical term to describe the unBeliever.
- (2) **God's Directive Will.** God in His @@@ PLAN OF GOD desires that all humans should be saved – 2 Pet. 3:9; 1 Tim. 2:4; 1 Jn. 3:23; Isa. 45:22.

### 2 PETER 3:9

The LORD is not slow [*braduno* (to delay; to tarry)] about His promise [*egaggelia* (the act of promising) – the @@@ RAPTURE will occur at some point], as some count slowness, but is patient [*makrothumeo* (to persevere patiently)] toward you, not wishing [*boulomai* (to will deliberately)] for any to perish [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely) – the will of God is for all humans to be saved and none go to @@@ HELL] but for all to come to repentance [*metanoia* (a change of mind) – reject @@@ RELIGION and accept God's @@@ SALVATION].

- (3) **God is Fair.** God is Perfect and it is impossible for Him to be unfair – “*God does not show partiality*” [Deut. 10:17; Rom. 2:11; 1 Pet. 1:17]. Accordingly, the unmatched “*grace of God has appeared*” – is available – “*to all men*” [Tit. 2:11] as a real potential for their @@@ SALVATION. See Acts 17:6; 1 Tim. 3:16; Col. 1:6; Isa. 55:1. See @@@ GRACE.

### TITUS 2:11

For the grace [*charis*] of God has appeared [under @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT Christ died for all], bringing [*epiphaino* (to bring to light)] salvation [*soterion* – the opportunity for @@@ SALVATION] to all men [*anthropos* (mankind) – @@@ HEATHENISM].

### ISAIAH 55:1

Ho! Every one who thirsts [*tsame* – positive [+P] volition in their soul], come to the waters [*mayim* – of @@@ SALVATION]; and you who have no money [@@@ GRACE is free] come, buy and eat. Come, buy wine and milk without money and without cost [*mechiyr* (price)].

- (4) **God's Plan.** God the Father formed a Perfect @@@ **PLAN OF GOD** to save fallen man and He did all the necessary work under @@@ **UNLIMITED ATONEMENT** to accomplish His objective. Thus, all humans have an equal opportunity to be saved – Lk. 2:10-11; Isa. 52:15. Furthermore, all peoples and nations that have ever existed on the earth will be represented in @@@ **HEAVEN** – Rev. 5:9; Dan. 7:13-14; Jn. 12:32. See *supra* (7) (c); @@@ **SALVATION**.

## LUKE 2:10-11

But the angel said to them [**herdsmen**], “Do not be afraid [**phobeo**]; for behold, I bring you good news of great joy [**chara**] which will be for all the people; for today in the city of David there has been born for you a Savior [**soter (to deliver)** – **into the Kingdom of Heaven**], who is Christ the LORD [**kurios**].”

## REVELATION 5:9

And they [**senior @@@ ANGELS**] sang a new song, saying, “Worthy are You [**Jesus Christ**] to take the book and to break its seals; for You were slain [**sphazo (to put to death by violence)** – **Christ died to provide @@@ SALVATION**], and purchased [**agorazo (to do business in the market place)** – under @@@ **SOTERIOLOGY** **God is satisfied with the work of Christ on the @@@ CROSS**] for God with Your blood [**aima – the @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST**] **men** [**Believers**] from every tribe [**phule (Jewish tribes)**] and tongue [**glossa (language)**] and people [**laos (a group of people)**] and nation [**ethnos**].”

- (5) **Faith in Christ.** Entrance into the Royal Family of God [Church Age] is through @@@ **FAITH** in Jesus Christ. The unBeliever rejects God's @@@ **GRACE** provision and is not in His family – Heb. 4:2; 12:8; Matt. 7:21-23.

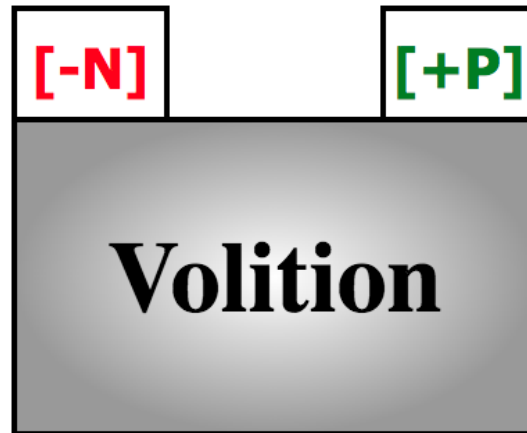
## HEBREWS 4:2

For indeed we [**Believers**] have had good news preached [**euangelizo – the Gospel of @@@ SALVATION**] to us, just as they [**unBelievers**] also; but the word [**logos – the Gospel**] they heard [**akoe**] did not profit [**opheleo (to be advantageous; to benefit)**] them, because it was not united [**sugkerannumi (to mix together)**] by faith [**pistis – the unBeliever hearer of the Gospel did not believe it via @@@ FAITH**] in those who heard.

## HEBREWS 12:8

But if you are without discipline [the unBeliever on negative [-N] volition who rejects the @@@ PLAN OF GOD], of which all have become partakers [metochos (sharing in) – under @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT all humans can accept God’s free gift of @@@ SALVATION], then you are illegitimate [nothos (a bastard) – the unBeliever is not in @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST] children and not sons [uihos – not in the family of God].

- (6) **God Awareness.** Because the human mind can comprehend the idea that God exists, every normal human reaches God awareness [or God consciousness] at some point in early childhood. However, because it is impossible for the human mind to comprehend the character or person of God, the Creator in His @@@ GRACE must reveal Himself. Thus, the agnostic unBeliever, who acknowledges that there is a God, is far more honest than the atheist who vainly denies the existence of God. See Rom. 1:18-32. The following methodologies by which humans conclude that God exists include:
- (a) **Cosmological Approach.** The law of “cause and effect” requires something to exist – what Socrates called “the unmoved mover.”
  - (b) **Anthropological Approach.** Man’s soul has volition and a conscience that understands right and wrong. Thus, there must be an absolute Being who set up a system of intrinsic morality – Rom. 1:18-23.
  - (c) **Ontological Approach.** Man’s inner ability to think about the concept of maximal greatness in terms of “God” indicates His existence in reality – Jer. 29:13; Acts 17:27; Ps. 42:1-2.
  - (d) **Teleological Approach.** The universe is “tuned” with a mathematical complexity – both microscopic and telescopic – that is so precise that it demands a Creator to explain; both its creation and preservation. The *“heavens are telling the glory of God; and their expanse is declaring the work of His hands”* [Ps. 19:1]; Col. 1:16-17. **Anthropic Principle.**
- (7) **Volitional Response.** When the normal child reaches God consciousness or awareness that person is held accountable. The volition in his soul either goes **NEGATIVE [-N]** or **POSITIVE [+P]** towards wanting to know about and/or have a relationship with the true God, his Creator.



– Human Free Will –

- (a) **If Positive Volition.** If **[+P]** volition occurs in the unBeliever then God is obligated by His own Perfect character to provide Gospel information for @@@ SALVATION to that person – Rom. 1:18-32; 10:17; Acts 17:27; Jer. 29:13; Jn. 6:44; 7:17; 12:32; Ps. 14:2; Isa. 45:22. Accordingly, across all @@@ DISPENSATIONS the Gospel is available, e.g., the surprising exchange of Abram from Ur with Melchizedek the King of Salem who called the Messiah *eil Elyon*, “**God Most High**” [Gen. 14:19-20; Heb. 7:6-7] in his own language. They both discovered that they were fellow children of God who had revealed Himself and His salvation mechanics to them in their own language and cultural context. Also, Nebuchadnezzar knew Him as *illy edah* “**Most High God**” [Dan. 4:2]. In all circumstances, the ritual of the innocent animal sacrifice was a critical teaching tool about the Messiah’s work.
- (b) **If Negative Volition.** If **[-N]** volition controls the unBeliever then God is not required to present the Gospel as that person will not under any circumstances respond to it – 2 Cor. 4:3-4; Rom. 1:18-20; 2 Pet. 2:20-22; 2 Cor. 4:3-4. Nevertheless, in innumerable cases the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT does provide the Gospel to the negative **[-N]** volition unBeliever, as illustrated by the numerous presentations to the Pharaoh of the Exodus [Ex. 10:27]. See Jn. 3:5-7; 2 Cor. 6:2. Indeed, the unBeliever on negative **[-N]** volition will not believe the Gospel even if someone from the dead came back to life and gave it to them – Lk. 16:19-31! Even in the perfect environment of the Millennium, where the message and evidence of salvation information saturate the entire planet, unBelievers will multiply in fantastic numbers – Rev. 20:7-8.

## LUKE 16:26-31

“And besides all this, between us [@@@ SOUL & SPIRIT of the Believer] and you [soul of the unBeliever] there is a great chasm [gulf] fixed [sterizo (to render constant)], so that those who wish to come over from here to you will not be able, and *that* none may cross over from there to us.” And he [unsaved unBeliever in @@@ HELL] said, “Then I beg you, father [Abraham], that you send him [Lazarus, the Believer in Paradise] to my father’s house—for I have five brothers [unBelievers]—in order that he may warn [diamarturomai (to give a solemn testimony)] them, so that they will not also come to this place of torment [basanos (torture) – the compartment of Sheol for the unBeliever called Torments].” But Abraham said, “They have Moses and the Prophets; let them hear [akouo (to perceive the sense of what is said)] them.” But he said, “No, father Abraham, but if someone goes to them from the dead, they will repent [metanoeo (to change the mind) – about Christ]!” But he [Abraham] said to him, “If they do not listen to Moses and the Prophets, they will not be persuaded [peitho (to convince by words)] even if someone rises from the dead [nekros – Jesus Christ would in fact rise from the dead and unBelievers on negative [-N] volition still would not believe in Him].”

## 2 CORINTHIANS 4:3-4

And even if our gospel [euaggelion (good news)] is veiled [kalupto (concealed) – a particular unBeliever on negative [-N] volition that does not hear the Gospel presentation], it is veiled to those who are perishing [apollumi (to be lost; to be put out of the way entirely) – God has always known who would respond to the Gospel and who would not], in whose case the god of this world [aion (a period of time) – Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD] has blinded [tuphloo (to make blind)] the minds [noema (a mental perception)] of the unbelieving [apistos – the unBeliever on negative [-N] volition actually blinds himself although Satan always takes credit] so that they might not see the light [phos – Jesus is the Light of the World] of the gospel of the glory [doxa] of Christ, who is the image [eikon (exact likeness)] of God.

- (c) **Automatically Saved.** All children who die before they reach the point of accountability [God awareness or consciousness] are automatically saved and will be in @@@ HEAVEN – 2 Sam. 12:23; Rom. 2:11-12; Acts 10:34; Ps 51:5. By implication, morons that never reach the point of accountability are also saved.

## 2 SAMUEL 12:23

But now he [David's son by Bathsheba] has died [*muth* – after a short illness the baby died]; why should I [David] fast? Can I bring him back again? I will go to him [in Paradise David will see his minor son as a @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT], but he will not return to me [while David is living on the earth].

- (8) **Quality of Presentation.** Since a person's volitional attitude towards God determines if they will respond to the Gospel, a good or bad presentation of the Gospel will not hinder @@@ SALVATION – Jn. 10:4, 27; 18:38; 2 Cor. 6:2. For example, Jesus Christ gave perfect presentations of the salvation message but with few responses. Again, a person on negative [-N] volition will reject the Gospel no matter how well it is presented and a person on positive [+P] volition will filter out the truth via the Holy Spirit and be saved.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 6:2

For He [@@@ HOLY SPIRIT] says, “At the acceptable time [God's timing is perfect] I [God the Holy Spirit] listened to you [the unBeliever on positive [+P] volition], and on the day of salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – @@@ SALVATION] I helped you [the Holy Spirit ensures Gospel hearing].” Behold, now is “the acceptable time,” behold, now is “the day of salvation.”

- (9) **Forced Salvation.** Why doesn't God force the unBeliever to believe in Him? Axiom: If you destroy negative [-N] volition you also destroy positive [+P] volition. Created as a free agent, man is truly free to make his own decisions and to reap the consequences of same – Matt. 7:13-14. **Most reject salvation.**

## MATTHEW 7:13-14

“Enter through the narrow gate; for the gate is wide and the way is broad that leads to destruction [*apoleia* (utter destruction) – @@@ HELL], and there are many who enter through it. For the gate is small and the way is narrow that leads to life [eternal life with God], and there are few who find it.”

- (10) **Clustering.** Under the @@@ PLAN OF GOD the Gospel shifts back and forth across history as positive [+P] volition goes – Rom. 10:19-21; Col. 1:23. “*For this very purpose I raised you (Pharaoh) up, to demonstrate my power in you*” [Rom. 9:13-17]. In addition, God “clusters” groups of positive [+P]



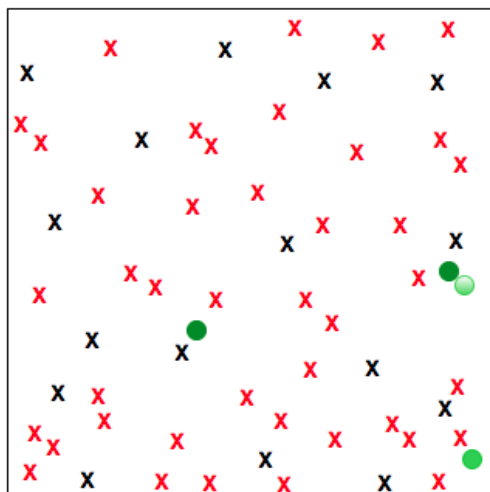
volition in each generation without infringing on the overall function of free will – Isa. 55:11; Matt. 8:10-13. Thus, the town of Sychar had maximum positive [+P] volition responders to the Gospel [Jn. 4:1-42], but in other spots, like Nazareth, Jesus noted that there were few – “*and He wondered at their unbelief*” [Mk. 6:1-6]. God sent the Prophet Jonah to Nineveh where thousands in that generation were on positive [+P] volition – Jon. 3:1-10.

### ISAIAH 55:11

So will My word [*dabar*] be which goes forth from My mouth; it will not return to Me empty [*reyqam (in an empty condition)*], without accomplishing what I desire [*chaphets (to delight in) – @@@ PLAN OF GOD*], and without succeeding [*tsalach (to advance; to prosper)*] *in the matter* for which I sent it.

### ROMANS 10:20

And Isaiah is very bold and says, “I [@@@ SALVATION] was found by those who did not seek Me [by means of following the @@@ MOSAIC LAW], I became manifest to those [non-Jews] who did not ask for Me.”



- x UnBelievers who never received the Gospel
- x UnBelievers who rejected the Gospel
- Baby Believers who accepted the Gospel
- Teenage Believers
- Mature Believers

### – Generational Clusters of Positive [+P] Volition –

- (11) **Conclusion.** The heathen are heathen because *they reject* a relationship with their Creator, not because they never heard, or had an opportunity to hear, the Gospel – Jn. 3:36. Thus, all unBelievers will take responsibility for their own volitional choices – Jn. 3:18; Isa. 65:12; Rom. 1:18-25. See @@@ HELL.

## PROVERBS 5:6

She does not ponder the path of life [*chay* – negative [-N] volition towards God]; her ways are unstable [*nua* – the unBeliever in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], she does not know *it* [God's truth for @@@ SALVATION].

## ROMANS 1:18-25

For the wrath [*orge* – God's attitude towards unBelievers] of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness [*asebeia* (unBelievers)] and unrighteousness of men who suppress the truth [@@@ PLAN OF GOD] in unrighteousness, because that which is known about God is evident within them; for God made it evident to them. For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes, His eternal power and divine nature, have been clearly seen, being understood [*noieo* (to perceive with the mind)] through what has been made, so that they are without excuse. For even though they knew God, they did not honor Him as God or give thanks, but they became futile [*mataioo* (to make empty)] in their speculations [*dialogismos* (a man deliberating with himself)], and their foolish [*asunetos* (without understanding)] heart was darkened [*skotiz* – negative [-N] volition]. Professing to be wise [*sophos* – by Human @@@ GOOD], they became fools, and exchanged the glory of the incorruptible God for an image in the form of corruptible man and of birds and four-footed animals and crawling creatures [false ideas about God from @@@ RELIGION]. Therefore God gave them over in the lusts [*epithumia* (cravings)] of their hearts [@@@ OLD SIN NATURE controls them] to impurity [*akatharsia* (uncleanness in a moral sense)], so that their bodies would be dishonored among them. For they exchanged the truth of God for a lie [*pseudos* (an intentional falsehood)], and worshiped and served the creature [*ktisis*] rather than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen.

## JOHN 3:18

He who believes [*pisteuo* – by @@@ FAITH] in Him [Jesus Christ] is not judged [*krino* – only the unBeliever is judged and sent to the Lake of Fire]; he who does not believe has been judged already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten [*monogenes* (single of its kind; uniquely born)] Son of God [the unBeliever is unacceptable to the Justice of God because he does not possess the Righteousness [+R] of God].

## @@@ HEAVEN

- (1) **Definition.** The Bible designates the term “heaven” to describe three different places. Context dictates – “*heaven (2nd) and the highest heaven (3rd)*” [1 Kng. 8:27]; “*He ascended above all the heavens (1st and 2nd)*” [Eph. 4:10].
  - (a) **First Heaven.** The First Heaven consists of the band of atmosphere covering the earth. *See* Gen. 1:6-8 [*raqiya (expanse covering the earth; heaven)*]; Eph. 2:2 [*aer (the atmospheric region)*]; Rev. 8:3; 19:17; Ps. 68:8; Deut. 30:4.
  - (b) **Second Heaven.** The Second Heaven is the entire universe – Jer. 31:37 [it is beyond measurement]. *See* Acts 7:42 [*ouranos (the universe)*]; Deut. 4:19 [*shamayim (the abode of the stars; the visible universe)*]; Gen. 14:19; 2 Pet. 3:5-10; Rev. 8:10.
  - (c) **Third Heaven.** The Third Heaven is language of accommodation for God’s headquarters [HQ] which exists outside the universe – where His Throne is located. *See* Heb. 8:5; 9:11, 23 [*epouranos (the abode of God and angels)*]; Eph. 1:3; 2:6; 3:10; 4:10; 6:12; 1 Kng. 8:27; 2 Cor. 12:2-4; Neh. 9:27; Ps. 68:33; Phil. 3:20; Matt. 5:3; 7:11, 21; Rev. 4:1; 9:1.
- (2) **First Human in Heaven.** In His resurrection body Jesus Christ passed through the First and Second Heavens to present Himself to God the Father in the Third Heaven per Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL. Jesus Christ was the first human to ever enter the Third Heaven where He was accepted. He also lead all Old Testament Believers out of Paradise into Heaven – Eph. 4:8-10.

## EPHESIANS 4:8-10

Therefore it says, “When He [*Jesus Christ in His @@@ RESURRECTION body*] ascended on high [*hupsos (of a place, heaven)*], He led captive [*aichmaloteuo*] a host of captives [*the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT of the Old Testament Believers in Paradise*], and He gave gifts to men.” (Now this expression, “He ascended,” what does it mean except that He also had descended into the lower parts of the earth [*ge (the land mass of the earth) – into Paradise*]? He who descended is Himself also He who ascended far above all the heavens [*ouranos – Third @@@ HEAVEN*], so that He might fill [*pleroo (to fill to the top) – Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL*] all things).

- (a) **In Paradise.** Prior to the ascension of Jesus Christ [forty days after His @@@ RESURRECTION] the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT of all Old Testament Believers went to Paradise, a compartment of @@@ HELL, at their physical @@@ DEATH. Note: Elijah was taken up in the First Heaven at his death and then sent to Paradise – 1 Kngs. 2:11.
- (b) **In Heaven.** Since the ascension of Jesus Christ, the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT of all Believers go directly to the Third Heaven where they wait for the @@@ RAPTURE to occur at which time they will receive their @@@ RESURRECTION bodies and soon thereafter any eternal @@@ REWARDS. See 2 Cor. 5:8; Jn. 14:1-3; 1 Thess. 4:16-17.

### JOHN 14:1-3

Do not let your heart be troubled; believe in God, believe also in Me [**Jesus Christ**]. In My Father's house [*oikia* (an inhabited dwelling)] are many dwelling places; if it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare [*hetoimazo* (to make ready)] a place for you. If [**and I do**] I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you to Myself [**at the @@@ RAPTURE**], that where I am, *there* you may be also [**in @@@ HEAVEN**].

### 1 THESSALONIANS 4:16-17

For the LORD [**Jesus Christ**] Himself will descend [*katabaino* (to go down)] from heaven with a shout [*keleuma* (an order)], with the voice of *the* archangel [*archaggelos* (a chief angel)] and with the trumpet of God, and the dead [*nekros* (physical death)] in Christ will rise [*anistemi* (to cause to rise up) – **in @@@ RESURRECTION bodies**] first. Then we who are alive and remain will be caught up [*harpaxo* (to snatch out or away) – **in resurrection bodies**] together with them [**the dead Church Age Believers**] in the clouds [*nephele* (a cloud)] to meet [*apantesis* (to meet one)] the LORD [*kurios* – **Jesus Christ**] in the air [*aer* (the atmospheric region) – **the place of the @@@ RAPTURE**], and so we shall always be [*pantote* (at all times, always)] with the LORD [**@@@ HEAVEN**].

- (c) **Right Now.** Currently, being in @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST, all living Believers have Positional Sanctification and their “***citizenship is in heaven***” [Phil. 3:20-21] now! See Eph. 2:6; Col. 3:4; 1 Cor. 6:11; 13:12; 2 Thess. 2:13. See @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.

## EPHESIANS 2:6

And raised us [**Believers**] up with Him [@@@ **UNION WITH CHRIST**], and seated us [*sugkathizo* (to cause to sit down together)] with Him in the heavenly [*epouranios* (existing in heaven – the Third @@@ **HEAVEN**)] places in Christ Jesus.

- (3) **Demons in Heaven.** Unsaved @@@ **ANGELS** are allowed in the Third Heaven [Job 1:6-8] during the appellate portion of the @@@ **ANGELIC CONFLICT**, but once Satan is cast out of the Third Heaven in the middle of the Tribulation no unsaved angel will ever be allowed into the Third Heaven again. See @@@ **DEMONISM** – Rev. 12:7-17; Isa. 14:12; Ezk. 28:16.

## REVELATION 12:7-9

And there was a war in heaven [*ouranos* – in the middle of the Tribulation], Michael and his angels [*aggelos*] waging war [*polemos*] with the dragon. The dragon and his angels [**demon @@@ ANGELS**] waged war, and they were not strong enough, and there was no longer a place found for them in heaven [*ouranos* – the Third @@@ **HEAVEN**]. And the great dragon was thrown down [*ballo*], the serpent of old who is called the devil and Satan, who deceives [*planao* (to cause to stray)] the whole world; he was thrown down to the earth [*ge*], and his angels were thrown down with him.

- (4) **New Heavens.** After the Great White Throne @@@ **JUDGMENT**, which sees all unBelievers separated to the “**Lake of Fire**” [along with all demons], God will destroy the current earth, First Heaven, and Second Heaven. A new earth and new universe will follow – 2 Pet. 3:10-13; Heb. 1:10-12; Rev. 21:4.

## HEBREWS 1:10-12

And, “You, LORD, in the beginning laid the foundation of the earth [*ge*], and the heavens are the works of Your hands; they will perish [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely)], but You remain; and they all will become old like a garment, and like a mantle [*peribolaion* (a covering thrown around)] You will roll them up; like a garment they will also be changed [*allasso* (to exchange one thing for another) – at the end of the Millennium God destroys the old universe and create a new one]. But You are the same, and Your years will not come to an end [*ekleipo* (to cease)].”

## 2 PETER 3:10

But the day of the LORD [the creation of a new universe at the end of the Millennium] will come like a thief [*kleptes*], in which the heavens [*ouranos*] will pass away with a roar [*rhoizedon* (a loud noise)] and the elements [*stoicheion* (the elements from which all things have come)] will be destroyed [*luo* (to loose)] with intense heat [*kausoo* (to burn up)], and the earth and its works [*ergon* – human @@@ GOOD] will be burned up [*katakaio* (to consume by fire)].

- (5) **Eternity in Heaven.** The Believer in his indestructible @@@ RESURRECTION body will spend eternity with God in the new earth, the new universe, and the Third Heaven, a concept that is beyond human comprehension. See 1 Cor. 2:9; Ps. 23:5-6; 2 Tim. 4:18; 1 Thess. 4:17; 1 Pet. 1:4-5; Jn. 14:1-3; Rev. 21:4.

## PSALM 23:5-6

You [God] prepare a table before me [King David] in the presence of my enemies; You have anointed my head with oil; my cup [*kos*] overflows [with @@@ REWARDS in @@@ TIME and eternity]. Surely goodness and lovingkindness [*chesed* (mercy) – @@@ GRACE in action] will follow [*radaph* (to pursue; to run after)] me all the days of my life, and I will dwell in the house [*bayith* (home; house containing a family)] of the LORD forever [@@@ ETERNAL SECURITY in @@@ HEAVEN].

## 1 PETER 1:4-5

To obtain an inheritance [*kleronomia* (property received by inheritance) – the Believer receives a @@@ RESURRECTION body and @@@ REWARDS] which is imperishable [*aothartos* (immortal; not able to decay)] and undefiled [*amiantos* (unspoiled)] and will not fade away [*amarantos* (perennial; perpetual)], reserved [*tereo* (to post a guard)] in heaven [*ouranos* – the third @@@ HEAVEN] for you [the Believer], who are protected by the power of God through faith [*pistis* – the truth of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE guarantees these things] for a salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – the Believer is given these things by God] ready to be revealed in the last time [at the @@@ RAPTURE the Believer receives a resurrection body and any rewards].



## 1 CORINTHIANS 2:9

But just as it is written, “Things which eye has not seen and ear has not heard, and *which* have not entered the heart of man, all that God has prepared [*hetoimazo* (to make ready beforehand) – the @@@ REWARDS placed in an Escrow Account in eternity past are beyond human comprehension] for those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly) – only the positive [+P] volition Believer at @@@ MATURITY can @@@ LOVE God] Him.”

- (6) **No Equality.** There is no “equality” in the Third Heaven for Believers or for @@@ ANGELS. In fact, the Third Heaven and the new universe is a place of vast inequality where the few **Winner** Believers who advanced to spiritual @@@ MATURITY in time will receive fantastic @@@ REWARDS which extend on out for all eternity. On the other hand, the vast majority of Believers will have little, if any, eternal rewards bestowed. In short, Heaven can be viewed as a very flat pyramid. While all Believers are guaranteed a slot at the bottom of the pyramid, very few reach the top echelons. See Matt. 25:23.

## MATTHEW 25:23

His master [**Jesus Christ at the Judgment Seat of Christ**] said to him [**Winner Believer**], “Well done, good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good is produced by Winner Believer] and faithful [*pistos* (faithful; consistent) – faithful to the @@@ PLAN OF GOD] slave. You were faithful [*pistos*] with a few things [*staying inside the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE*], I will put you in charge [*kathistemi* (to set one over a thing)] of many things [*polus* (many, much, large) – fantastic eternal @@@ REWARDS in @@@ HEAVEN for the Winner Believer]; enter into the joy of your master [**God is glorified by the Believer advancing to spiritual @@@ MATURITY**].”

- (7) **No Human Good.** Absolutely no human good will be allowed to enter into the new universe and eternity. All the Church Age Believer’s human good production accomplished in his mortal body will be destroyed at the Judgment Seat of Christ [similar @@@ JUDGMENTS will separately occur for all other Believers in all the other @@@ DISPENSATIONS] – 1 Cor. 3:11-15; 2 Pet. 3:10. See Human @@@ GOOD. In addition, with the destruction of the old universe and its “works” following the end of the Millennium all things that are not associated with Divine Good will be destroyed so that the new universe is entirely purged of imperfection.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 3:11-15

For no man [*oudeis* (no one; nothing)] can lay a foundation [*themelios* (the foundation of a building)] other than the one which is laid, which is Jesus Christ [there is no other way for a human to be saved except by the @@@ GRACE system set out in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD]. Now if any man [the Believer on positive [+P] volition] builds on the foundation with gold, silver, precious stones [Divine Good produced during the Believer's life], [or] wood, hay, straw [human @@@ GOOD produced by the Believer on negative [-N] volition], each man's work will become evident [*phaneros* (apparent; manifest)]; for the day will show it [at the Judgment Seat of Christ] because it is *to be* revealed with [through] fire [*pur*], and the fire itself will test [*dokimazo* (to test; to examine)] the quality of each man's work. If any man's [the Believer on positive [+P] volition] work [*ergon* (production) – Divine Good] which he has built on it remains [*meno*], he will receive a reward [*misthos* (dues paid for work) – @@@ REWARDS]. If any man's [the Believer on negative [-N] volition] work is burned up [*katakaio* (to consume by fire) – the wood, hay, and straw], he will suffer loss [*zemioo* (to sustain damage; forfeit) – no rewards]; but he himself will be saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – the Loser Believer is delivered into @@@ HEAVEN per @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY], yet so as through fire.

- (8) **No Pain, Death, or Old Sin Nature.** No more pain, or @@@ DEATH, or sorrow, or the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE will be in the Third Heaven or the new universe – Rev. 21:4. “*For from days of old they have not heard or perceived by ear, nor has the eye seen a God besides You, who acts in behalf of the one who waits for Him*” [Isa. 64:4]. Even **Loser** Believers will have great joy in eternity as they understand and celebrate the glory and @@@ GRACE of God. See @@@ TRINITY.

## REVELATION 21:4

And He [God] will wipe away [*exaleipho* (to anoint or wash in every part; to erase)] every tear [*dakru*] from their [the Believer] eyes; and [in @@@ HEAVEN] there will no longer be *any* death [*thanatos* (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)]; there will no longer be *any* mourning [*penthos*], or crying [*krauge*], or pain [*ponos* (great trouble)]; the first [*protos* (first in time)] things have passed away [*aperchomai* (to go away; depart)].

## @@@ HELL

- (1) **Definition.** The word “hell” is not a transliteration of a Greek or Hebrew word. Hell is an English word that in the context of various Biblical passages is used to describe one of two general locations.
  - (a) **Sheol/Hades.** First: *Sheol* or *Shachath (the pit)* [Hebrew] and *Hades* [Greek – when the Hebrew Scriptures were translated into the Greek circa 250 B.C., the word *Hades* was used for the words *Sheol* and *Shachath*]. It is described as an abode for the souls of dead humans and certain demons. It is located under the earth’s surface. *See infra* (2).
  - (b) **Lake of Fire.** Second: *Tophet/GeHinnom (place of fire)* [Hebrew] or *Limne Pur (lake of fire)* [Greek], where the souls of all unBelievers, demons, and Nephilim will spend eternity in a state of @@@ SEPARATION from God. No creature is currently in “*Lake of Fire*” [Rev. 20:10-15], but it will be populated fully by all unsaved beings following the Great White Throne Judgment at the close of the Millennium. *See infra* (3). The word *Sheol* in the Old Testament is also sometimes used to designate this place – Eccl. 9:10; Job 33:23-24.
- (2) **Four Compartments in Sheol/Hades.** The @@@ BIBLE describes four separate compartments in *Sheol* [Job 11:8; Isa. 14:9; Hos. 13:14; Ps. 88:3-5; 1 Sam. 2:6] or *Hades*. The four compartments are respectively: (A) Paradise; (B) Torments; (C) Tartarus; and (D) the Abyss. In many cases, the context of the passage determines which compartment of *Sheol/Hades* is meant. For example, in the Old Testament the Believer’s @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT at his physical death went to the compartment of *Sheol/Hades* called Paradise [also called Abraham’s Bosom].

## COMPARTMENT A

**Paradise or Abraham’s Bosom.** This is the place where the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT of all Believers in the Old Testament went at physical @@@ DEATH waiting to be transferred to @@@ HEAVEN by the Messiah Himself at some point in the future. Thus, no Old Testament Believer went to the Third Heaven, but to the “holding place” of Paradise. *See* Gen. 42:38; Lk. 16:19-31; 23:39-43; Hos. 13:14; Matt. 27:51-53; Ps. 16:10; 30:2-3; 116:1-5; 2 Cor. 11:25; 12:2; Acts 2:27, 31; 13:35-37; 1 Sam. 28:19; Eph. 4:8-10.

## PSALM 30:2-3

O LORD my God, I [David] cried to You for help, and You healed me [after David's @@@ REBOUND]. O LORD, You have brought up my soul [nephesh] from Sheol [Sheol (the Old Testament designation for the abode of the dead) – David almost died the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH and as a Believer his @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT would have then gone to Paradise in @@@ HELL]; You have kept me alive, that I would not go down to the pit [physical @@@ DEATH].

## GENESIS 42:38

But Jacob said, “My son [Benjamin] shall not go down [travel to Egypt] with you [the other older brothers of Benjamin]; for his brother [Joseph] is dead, and he alone is left. If harm should befall him on the journey you are taking, then you will bring my gray hair down to Sheol [Sheol (the Old Testament designation for the abode of the dead) – as a Believer Jacob's @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT would go to the compartment called Paradise] in sorrow.

## LUKE 16:26-31

“And besides all this, between us [the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT of the Believer] and you [the soul of the unBeliever] there is a great [megas] chasm [gulf] fixed [sterizo (to render constant)], so that those who wish to come over from here to you will not be able, and *that* none may cross over from there to us.” And he [the soul of the unsaved unBeliever rich man in @@@ HELL] said, “Then I beg you, father [Abraham], that you send him [Lazarus, the Believer in Paradise] to my father's house—for I have five brothers [unBelievers]—in order that he may warn [diamarturomai (to give a solemn testimony)] them, so that they will not also come to this place of torment [basanos (torture) – the compartment of Sheol for the unBeliever called Torments].” But Abraham said, “They have Moses and the Prophets; let them hear [akouo (to perceive the sense of what is said)] them.” But he said, “No, father Abraham, but if someone goes to them from the dead [nekros], they will repent [metanoeo (to change the mind) – about Christ]!” But he [Abraham] said to him, “If they do not listen [akouo] to Moses and the Prophets, they will not be persuaded [peitho (to convince by words)] even if someone rises from the dead [nekros – Jesus Christ would in fact rise from the dead and unBelievers on negative [-N] volition still would not believe].”

## PSALM 16:10

For You [God the Father] will not abandon my [Jesus] soul [*nephesh*] to Sheol [*Sheol* (the Old Testament designation for the abode of the dead) – Paradise or Abraham's Bosom]; nor will You allow Your Holy One [Jesus Christ] to undergo decay [Jesus' physical body would not rot away prior to His @@@ RESURRECTION in three days].

- (a) **Christ in Paradise.** After His physical death Christ descended into Paradise and shortly thereafter [forty days], at His ascension, He carried all those Old Testament Believers [Eph. 4:8-10] with their “*passed over sins previously committed*” [Rom. 3:25] to the Third Heaven in His @@@ RESURRECTION body. See @@@ FOOTSTOOL.

## EPHESIANS 4:8-10

Therefore it says, “When He [Jesus Christ in His @@@ RESURRECTION body] ascended [*anabano*] on high [*hupsos* (of a place, heaven)], He led captive [*aichmaloteuo* (to make captive)] a host of captives [the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT of the Old Testament Believers in Paradise], and He gave gifts [*doma*] to men.” (Now this *expression*, “He ascended,” what does it mean except that He also had descended into the lower parts of the earth [*ge* (the land mass of the earth) – into Paradise]? He who descended is Himself also He who ascended far above all the heavens [*ouranos* – He entered the Third @@@ HEAVEN], so that He might fill [*pleroo* (to fill to the top) – Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL] all things).

- (b) **Empty.** The compartment called Paradise in *Sheol/Hades* is now empty as all subsequent Believers [including the Church Age] go directly to the Third Heaven at their physical @@@ DEATH to be face to face “*at home with the LORD*” [2 Cor. 5:8]; Phil. 1:21-23.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:8

We [Believers] are of good courage, I [Paul] say, and prefer rather to be absent [*ekdemeo* (to go or live abroad)] from the body [*soma* – at physical @@@ DEATH the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT departs the body] and to be at home [*endemeo* (to be among one's own people)] with the LORD [*kurios* (God) – in @@@ HEAVEN].



## COMPARTMENT B

**Torments.** This is the place where the souls of all the unBelievers, in all @@@ DISPENSATIONS, go to at their physical @@@ DEATH. It is called “*torments*” [Lk. 16:23] along with other unpleasant language of accommodation terminology to describe it such as: “*burning*,” “*gnashing of teeth*,” and “*thirst*” [Matt. 8:11-12; 22:13; 24:51; 25:30; Lk. 13:28]. The unBeliever remains in confinement here until he is called before the Great White Throne @@@ JUDGMENT for a final trial by the LORD Jesus Christ. Because the unBeliever does not possess God’s Righteousness [+R], he is judged from the book of his *ergon* (good deeds) human righteousness [-r], which only serves to condemn him [Matt. 7:21-23]. This event takes place at the end of the Millennium. Torments is seen in Lk. 16:19-31; Ps. 9:17; 49:16-17; Ezk. 31:15-17; Rev. 20:13; Num. 16:30; Job 33:24.

## PSALM 9:17

The wicked [*rasha* (guilty one) – the unBeliever] will return [*shub* (to turn back from God)] to Sheol [*Sheol* (the Old Testament designation for the abode of the dead) – Torments], even all the nations who forget God.

## JOB 33:24

Then let him [God] be gracious to him [the Believer], and say, “Deliver him from going down to the pit [*shachath* – Torments], I have found [*matsa* (to secure)] a ransom [*kopher* (price of a life; ransom) – under @@@ SOTERIOLOGY Jesus Christ paid the price on the @@@ CROSS].”

## REVELATION 20:13

And the sea [*thalassa*] gave up [*didomi*] the dead [*nekros*] which were in it [these are the Nephilim who were all killed by the waters in the Great Flood and are now held in a special compartment of @@@ HELL that is closely associated with Tartarus], and death [*thanatos* (death with the implied idea of future misery in Hell)] and Hades gave up the dead [*nekros*] which were in them [all the unBeliever humans in Torments]; and they were judged [*krino* (to separate)], every one of them according [*kata* (according to a norm or standard)] to their [good] deeds [*ergon* – the indictment at the Great White Throne Judgement lists the good deeds of the unBeliever, not his @@@ SIN].



## COMPARTMENT C

**Tartarus.** Called *tartaroo* [2 Pet. 2:4], Tartarus is the place where certain offending demons, the *beni ha elohim* of Gen. 6:2, are kept “*for the day of judgment*” [Jude 6]; Job 1:6; 2:1; 38:7; Dan. 3:25; Mk. 9:48-49; 1 Pet. 3:18-22; Heb. 2:9-16. Gen. 6:1-13, describes the Satanic plot to stop the coming of a human Messiah by having certain fallen @@@ ANGELS breed out the human race by copulating with human females. Their offspring were called the Nephilim [*ha Nephilim*] and they are confined nearby in a place termed by the way in which they were destroyed – the waters of the Flood. See “*under the waters*” [Job 26:5] and “*the sea gave up the (Nephilim) dead*” [Rev. 20:13]. Before His ascension, the resurrected Christ visited Tartarus and proclaimed His victory to these demons – 2 Pet. 2:4; 1 Pet. 3:18-20; Heb. 2:9-16. Note: The “*Rephaim*” [1 Chron. 20:4-6; Deut. 3:11] were human “giants” in the size of some of the Nephilim. The Israelites who encountered them declared: “*we became like grasshoppers in our own sight*” [Num. 13:32-33].

## 2 PETER 2:4

For if God did not spare angels when they sinned [*the demons that had sex with women producing the Nephilim*], but cast them into hell [*tartaroo (the abode of the wicked) – Tartarus a compartment of @@@ HELL*] and committed them to pits of darkness, reserved [*tereo (guarded)*] for judgment [*karsis (a trial) – judged at the Great White Throne @@@ JUDGMENT*].

## JUDE 6

And angels who did not keep their own domain [*arche – a certain class of demons that had sex with human women*], but abandoned [*apoleipo (to depart)*] their proper abode [*oiketerion (habitation)*], He [*God*] has kept in eternal bonds under darkness [*zophos (blackness) – in Tartarus*] for the judgment of the great day [*Great White Throne @@@ JUDGMENT*].

## JOB 26:5

The departed spirits [*the set of demons that had sex with human women*] tremble under the waters and their inhabitants [*the Nephilim*]. Naked is Sheol [*Sheol (the Old Testament designation for the abode of the dead) – Tartarus*] before Him [*God*], and Abaddon [*a senior officer demon*] has no covering.

## COMPARTMENT D

**The Abyss.** This is the place where the following happens:

- (a) **Demons.** Termed the “*abyss*” [Lk. 8:30-31], this is the site of certain huge demon armies which will be released during the Tribulation – Rom. 10:7; Rev. 9:1-2; 11:7. The senior demon commander is Abaddon – Rev. 9:11; Job 26:5. In addition, other demons who violate certain parameters of activity on earth during the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT can be sent to the Abyss now – Lk. 8:30-31.

### LUKE 8:30-31

And Jesus asked him [*the senior demon indwelling an unBeliever*], “What is your name?” And he said, “Legion [*legeon (a Roman Legion was about 5,000 men)*]”; for many demons had entered him. They were imploring Him not to command [*epitasso (to order)*] them to go away into the abyss [*abussos*].

- (b) **Super Demon.** A special high-ranking demon, *therion* (a brutal, bestial man), will come out of the Abyss during the Tribulation to influence the rise of the Revived Roman Dictatorship – Rev. 17:8. Also, a second demon army is located under the Euphrates River per Rev. 9:13-21.

### REVELATION 17:8

The beast [*therion*] that you saw was, and is not, and is about to come up out of the abyss [*abussos (the abode of demons in the lower parts of the earth)*] and go to destruction. And those who dwell on the earth, whose name has not been written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, will wonder when they see the beast, that he was and is not and will come [*refers to Rome*].

- (c) **Jailed.** The Abyss is where Satan will be held for 1,000 years, from the 2nd Advent of Christ to the end of the Millennium – Rev. 20:1-3.

### REVELATION 20:1-2

Then I saw an angel coming down from heaven, holding the key of the abyss [*abussos*] and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold of the dragon, the serpent of old, who is the devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years.

- (3) **The Lake of Fire.** The “*Lake of Fire*” [Rev. 20:14-15] is the final place where all unBelievers, demons, and Nephilim are sent following the Great White Throne @@@ JUDGMENT. In spiritual death, they are all eternally separated from God in a status of *neshiyah* (oblivion) [Ps. 88:12] or essentially as *nothingness* [Eccl. 9:9-10]. See Matt. 5:21-22, 30; 25:4; 2 Thess. 1:7-9; Isa. 40:43; 66:24. Rejecting @@@ GRACE, the basis for their indictment is that they do not possess God’s Righteousness [+R] – Jn. 3:18-21, 36; Heb. 9:27; Eccl. 12:14; Matt. 8:11-12; 28-32; Dan. 12:2. Most descriptions of the Lake of Fire are set in language of accommodation. Jesus often used the word *gehenna* – Mk. 9:43, 48-49; Lk. 12:5; Matt. 10:28; 23:5. The earthly *gehenna* was a dump outside of Jerusalem where refuse and animal remains were burned. Formally, it was the same place where the apostate Jews of the Old Testament would burn their own children alive to demon “gods” – Jer. 7:31.

### MATTHEW 5:21-22

“But I [Jesus] say to you that everyone who is angry with his brother shall be guilty before the court [God’s judgment on mental attitude sin], and whoever says to his brother, ‘You good-for-nothing’ shall be guilty before the supreme court [God’s judgment on sins of the tongue]; and whoever says, ‘You fool’ [moros (foolish; godless) – unBelievers that denounce the Gospel as false] shall be guilty enough to go into the fiery hell [*geenna* – the Lake of Fire].”

### MATTHEW 10:28

Do not fear those who kill the body but are unable to kill the soul [*psuche*]; but rather fear Him [God] who is able to destroy [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely, abolish)] both soul and body in hell [*geenna* – the Lake of Fire].

### 2 THESSALONIANS 1:7-9

And to give relief to you who are afflicted and to us [Paul’s seminary team] as well when the LORD Jesus will be revealed from heaven with His mighty angels in flaming fire, dealing out retribution [*ekdikesis* (vindication punishment)] to those who do not know God [unBelievers on negative [-N] volition] and to those who do not obey [unBelievers reject the Gospel] the gospel of our LORD Jesus. These [unBelievers] will pay the penalty [*dike* (a suit at law)] of eternal destruction [*olethros*], away from the presence of the LORD [eternal separation in the Lake of Fire] and from the glory of His power.

**MARK 9:48-49**

Where their [**unBeliever**] worm does not die, and the fire [*pur*] is not quenched [**Lake of Fire is irreversible**]. For everyone will be salted [*halizo*] with fire.

**REVELATION 20:14-15**

Then death [*thanatos* – spiritual @@@ **DEATH**] and Hades were thrown [*ballo*] into the lake [*limne* (a lake)] of fire [*pur* (burning)]. This is the second [*deuteros*] death [*thanatos*], the lake of fire [**eternal separation from God in the Lake of Fire**]. And if anyone's name was not found written [*grapho*] in the book [*biblos*] of life [*zoe* – **the unBeliever has been blotted out of the Book of Life**], he was thrown into the lake of fire.

**DANIEL 12:2**

Many [*rab* (abounding in numbers)] of those who sleep in the dust of the ground [**physical @@@ DEATH**] will awake, these to everlasting [*olam* (without end)] life [*chay* – **the Believer gets his @@@ RESURRECTION body**], but the others to disgrace *and* everlasting contempt [**the unBeliever is judged at the Great White Throne and cast into the Lake of Fire**].

**MATTHEW 5:30**

If your right hand makes you stumble, cut it off and throw it from you; for it is better for you to lose one of the parts of your body, than for your whole body to go into hell [*geenna*] – **unBeliever must let nothing stop him from responding to the Gospel, so that they avoid the eternal Lake of Fire**].

**ECCLESIASTES 9:9-10**

Enjoy life with the woman whom you love all the days of your fleeting life which He [**God**] has given to you under the sun; for this is your reward in life and in your toil in which you have labored under the sun. Whatever your hand finds to do, do *it* with *all* your might; for there is no activity [*maaweh* (work; business)] or planning [*chashab* (to invent; to think about)] or knowledge [*daath* (premeditation; knowledge)] or wisdom [*chokmah*] in Sheol [*sheol* (the abode of the dead) – **the Lake of Fire**] where you [**the unBeliever**] are going.

---

## @@@ HISTORY

- (1) **Definition.** History is the true understanding of the causes and effects of events and occurrences as they unfold in the ebb and flow of @@@ TIME.
- (2) **Jesus Christ Controls.** Although Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD as part of the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT, Jesus Christ controls history in accordance with the @@@ PLAN OF GOD – 2 Cor. 4:4; Isa. 55:11; Col. 1:16-17. In fact, Satan cannot control his own Kingdom. *See infra* (7).

### COLOSSIANS 1:16-17

For by Him [**Jesus Christ**] all things were created, *both* in the heavens and on earth, visible and invisible [*aoratos (unseen)*], whether thrones or dominions or rulers or authorities—all things [*pas*] have been created through Him and for Him. He is before all things, and in Him all things hold together.

### ISAIAH 55:11

So will My word be which goes forth from My mouth; it will not return to Me empty, without accomplishing what I desire [**@@@ PLAN OF GOD**], and without succeeding [*tsalach (to advance)*] *in the matter* for which I sent it.

- (3) **Key Considerations.** Anyone who reads a “history book” is simply reading the writer’s interpretation of what he thinks drives events and actions. In fact, “*the Most High God is ruler over the realm of mankind*” [Dan. 5:21]. “*There is no authority except from God*” [Rom. 13:1]. “*It is He who changes the times and the epochs; He removes kings and establishes kings*” [Dan. 2:12]. “*For this very purpose I raised you (Pharaoh) up, to demonstrate my power in you*” [Rom. 9:13-17]. It is God who controls human history which He set out long ago by His Divine Decrees in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD so that without violating the operation of human free will, the primary and precise outcome of every part of history is “bent” around two key Divine Directives.
  - (a) **First Divine Directive Will: All Humans Should Be Saved.** Any human on positive [**+P**] volition in his soul will receive the message of @@@ SALVATION and be saved – Ps. 27:1. On the other hand, those humans on [**-N**] volition will not respond to the @@@ GRACE message [Satan always takes full credit for their unbelief] – 2 Cor. 4:4.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 4:4

In whose case the god of this world [*aion* (a period of time) – Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD] has blinded [*tuphloo* (to make bind)] the minds [*noema* (a mental perception)] of the unbelieving [*apistos* – the unBeliever on negative [-N] volition] so that they might not see the light [*phos*] of the gospel [*euaggelion* (good news)] of the glory [*doxa*] of Christ, who is the image [*eikon* (exact likeness)] of God.

- (b) **Second Divine Directive Will: All Believers Should Reach Maturity.** God provides the necessary tools to do so by learning and applying the fullness of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – Phil. 2:12-13.

## PHILIPPIANS 2:12-13

So then, my beloved [*agapetos* – Paul is writing to Believers, not unBelievers], just as you have always obeyed [*hupakouo* (to obey commands) – these were positive [+P] volition Believers who desired to learn @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out [*katergazomai* (to perform; to accomplish; to do that from which something results)] your salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – to deliver self from a state of an adolescent Believer to the state of a mature Believer] with fear [*phobos* (respect) – the highest respect for Bible Doctrine and the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER] and trembling [*tromos* (the anxiety of one who distrusts his ability completely to meet all requirements to perform a duty)]; for it is God who is at work in you, both to will and to work for *His* good pleasure [through Predestination and Election God has made it possible for the positive [+P] volition Believer to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY].

- (4) **Mechanics of Control.** In conference with the two Divine Directives at *supra* (3) and looking down through the annuals of time in His Omniscience, God allows certain events to occur or not to occur, but in a manner that does not infringe on individual human free will. He controls history by the following:
- (a) **Permissive Will.** In concert with his own Perfect @@@ PLAN OF GOD, God allows/permits human free will to operate to certain degrees of functionality in order to resolve the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT. God also allows indirect actions to occur under the workings of the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.



- (b) **Directive Will** – Isa. 40:14-15. God’s Sovereign Directive Will operates throughout human history. *See supra* (3); @@@ TRINITY.

### ISAIAH 40:14-15

With whom did He [**God**] consult [*yaats*] and *who* gave Him understanding [*biyn (to discern)*]? And *who* taught [*lamad (to teach; to learn)*] Him in the path of justice [*mishpat*] and taught Him knowledge and informed Him of the way of understanding? Behold, the nations are like a drop from a bucket, and are regarded as a speck of dust on the scales; behold, He lifts up the islands like fine dust.

- (c) **Preventative or Overruling Will.** God intervenes directly in history – Isa. 37:26. Again, this does not alter the workings of human free will. *See @@@ DIVINE GUIDANCE supra* (5) (d), regarding Balaam.

### ISAIAH 37:26

Have you not heard [*shama (to hear; to obey)*]? Long ago I [**God**] did it, from ancient times [*qedem (antiquity)*] I planned [*yatsar*] it. Now I have brought it to pass [*bo*] that you should turn fortified cities into ruinous heaps.

- (d) **Angels Participate.** In strict accordance with precise Divine directions, certain types of @@@ ANGELS actively participate in controlling the “wheels” of history by “*patrolling*” the earth and other actions – Ezk. 1:4-25; 9:2-11; 10:3-22; Zech. 1:9-11; 6:1-8. They also engage in combat missions with demons – Dan. 10:20; Rev. 14:14-18; 15:6-8. *See @@@ HOLY SPIRIT; @@@ DEMONISM.*
- (5) **Believer in History.** To interpret history the Believer must fully understand the @@@ PLAN OF GOD and the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT. As George Washington exemplified, one must endeavor to do their duty but always acknowledge the supremacy of Divine Providence in all things, meaning that there are no “mistakes” or “tragedies” in history. In fact, for the **Winner** Believer no disaster in life is greater than the Plan of God. Indeed, if the Believer allows the @@@ PROBLEMS and details of life to get him down for any length of time, it is his own failure and fault because all mature Believers are actually above and even *outside* of human history – Ps. 27:1. For them, God causes “*all things to work together for good*” [Rom. 8:28-31].

## PSALM 27:1

The LORD is my light [*or* (the light of day)] and my salvation [*yesha* (deliverance) – into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN and then on to spiritual @@@ MATURITY]; whom shall I fear [*yare* – @@@ PROBLEMS are irrelevant]? The LORD is the defense [*maoz* (a stronghold)] of my life; whom shall I dread [*pachad* (tremble)]?

## ROMANS 8:28-31

And we [Paul and all mature Believers] know [*heneka* (on account of)] that God causes all things to work together [*sunergeo*] for good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] to those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] God [only the Believer who reaches spiritual @@@ MATURITY can @@@ LOVE God], to those who are called [*kletos* (called; invited to a banquet)] according to *His* purpose [*prothesis* (a predetermined plan)]. For those whom He foreknew [*proginosko* (to have knowledge beforehand) – the humans that would believe in Christ], He also predestined [*proorizo* (to decide beforehand) – God made provisions in @@@ TIME to get the positive [+P] volition Believer to maturity] to become conformed [*summorphos* (having the same form as another)] to the image of His Son, so that He would be the firstborn [@@@ RESURRECTION] among many brethren [*adelphos* (brothers)]; and these whom He predestined [*proorizo*], He also called [*kaleo* (to call aloud; to invite)]; and these whom He called, He also justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – by receiving God's Righteousness [+R]]; and these whom He justified, He also glorified [*doxazo* (to honor) – by the giving of @@@ REWARDS]. What then shall we say to these things? If God *is* for us, who *is* against us?

- (6) **Dispensational Theology.** A Believer properly oriented to the @@@ PLAN OF GOD must fully understand the doctrine of @@@ DISPENSATIONS. For instance, under the concept of @@@ FREEDOM there will always be national entities throughout human history – Matt. 24:7; 2 Chron. 15:6; Rev. 20:8. In turn, God blesses the nation when there is a large number of mature Believers via the @@@ PIVOT.
- (7) **Satan's Frustration.** Human @@@ SIN greatly frustrates Satan's rulership of the @@@ WORLD. See Human @@@ GOOD – Rom. 5:12.

## @@@ HOLY SPIRIT

- (1) **Definition.** God the Holy Spirit is the Third Person of the Godhead @@@ TRINITY. The Holy Spirit is absolutely coequal and coeternal in essence with the Father and Son – 2 Cor. 13:17; 1 Cor. 2:10-11; 3:16; 12:11; Acts 5:3-4; Ps. 143:10; Gen. 1:1-2; Isa. 6:8-9; *cf.* Acts 28:25; Isa. 63:10; Jer. 31:31-34; *cf.* Heb. 10:15-17.

### GENESIS 1:1-2

In the beginning God created [*bara*] the heavens [*shamayim*] and the earth [*erets* – this action took place in the unknown past and resulted in a perfect universe and earth]. The earth was [*became*] formless [*tohu*] and void [*bohu (waste)*], and darkness was over [*al (covered)*] the surface of the deep [*tehom (deep waters)*] – as a consequence of the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT, the earth was corrupted and suffered negatively due to angelic @@@ SIN, to the point of being frozen in an icepack], and the [Holy] Spirit of God was moving over the surface of the waters [*mahyim* – at some point in @@@ TIME God then restored the earth in the “six” days of restoration of life to the planet].

- (a) **God.** The Holy Spirit is called God *kurios* (LORD) in the @@@ BIBLE – 2 Cor. 3:17.

### 2 CORINTHIANS 3:17

Now the LORD [*kurios* (God)] is the Spirit [*pneuma* – @@@ HOLY SPIRIT], and where the Spirit of the LORD is, *there* is liberty [*eleutheria* (liberty to do or to omit things having no relationship to salvation) – the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE].

- (b) **Jehovah.** The Holy Spirit is called God *Jehovah* – Isa. 6:8-9.

## (2) The Old Testament.

- (a) **Salvation.** As in the Church Age, in the Old Testament period the Holy Spirit regenerated – to be “*born again*” [Jn. 3:5-7] – the Believer at the point of @@@ SALVATION, creating a human spirit and also sealing him for @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY. See @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT; @@@ DISPENSATIONS.

## JOHN 3:5-7

Jesus answered [**Nicodemus**], “Truly [**amen** (a point of truth)], truly, I say to you, unless one is born [**gennao** (to be born)] of water [**hudor** – the @@@ **WATER** of the Gospel] and the Spirit [**pneuma** – the @@@ **SALVATION** ministry of the @@@ **HOLY SPIRIT** to save the unBeliever] he cannot enter into [**eiserchomai** (to come in or go out)] the kingdom of God. That which is born of flesh [**sarx**] is flesh [**sarx** – the unBeliever], and that which is born of the [**Holy**] Spirit [**pneuma**] is spirit [**pneuma** – the Believer’s human spirit given at the point of @@@ **SALVATION**]. Do not be amazed [**thaumazo** (to wonder at)] that I [**Jesus Christ**] said to you, ‘You must [**dei** (it is necessary)] be born [**gennao**] again [**anochen** (of things which come from heaven)].”

- (b) **No Indwelling.** The Holy Spirit did not “Indwell” anyone in the Old Testament – Jn. 14:17. He could be **para** (beside) a particular Old Testament Believer, but never **en** (in) as in all Church Age Believers.
- (c) **Fellowship.** All Old Testament “Fellowship” with God by the Believer was via the Faith/Rest technique – Ps. 37:1-7; Heb. 11.
- (d) **Endue.** The Holy Spirit was given as a power source to “endue” a few Believers to assist them to perform special functions: (1) Joseph [Gen. 41:38]; (2) artists [Ex. 28:3; 31:3]; (3) Moses’ seventy elders [Num. 11:25]; (4) Joshua [Num. 11:25; 27:18]; the Judges – (5) Othniel [Jdg. 3:10], (6) Gideon [Jdg. 6:34], (7) Jephthah [Jdg. 11:29], (8) Samson [Jdg. 14:6; 15:14]; (9) certain Kings of Israel [1 Sam. 10:9-10; 16:13]; (10) Daniel [Dan. 4:8; 5:11-12; 6:3]; (11) David [Ps. 51:11]; and (12) all the writers of Holy Scripture [1 Pet. 1:11].
- (e) **Departs.** This enduement or “resting” of the Holy Spirit could be taken away or depart from the Old Testament Believer, e.g., under Divine Discipline – 1 Sam. 16:14; Ps. 51:11; Lk. 11:13.

## 1 SAMUEL 16:14

Now the [**Holy**] Spirit of the LORD departed [**sur** (to turn aside)] from Saul, and an evil [**ra**] spirit [**ruach**] from the LORD terrorized [**baath**] him [**Per @@@ **DEMONISM**, God allowed a demon to torment King Saul who was in @@@ **REVERSIONISM****].

**PSALM 51:11**

Do not cast me [King David] away from Your [God] presence and do not take [laqach (to take from)] Your Holy [qodesh] Spirit [ruach] from me.

- (f) **Ask.** The Old Testament Believer could request the enduement of the Holy Spirit – 2 Kng. 2:9-10; Lk. 11:13; Js. 1:17. In this context, Jesus gave, *para*, the Holy Spirit to endue certain Old Testament Jerusalem Believers, His disciples, without their request in order to sustain them for the 10 days until the start of the Church Age at Pentecost – Jn. 20:22.

**LUKE 11:13**

If you then, being evil [*phonerous* – humans all possess the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE], know how to give good gifts [*dona*] to your children [*teknon*], how much more will *your* heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to those who ask Him [Old Testament Believers could ask for enduing of the Holy Spirit]?

- (g) **Christ Glorified.** Jesus Christ had to be glorified before the Holy Spirit could be given for Indwelling the Believer – Jn. 7:39; 14:16-17, 26. *See* Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL.

**(3) In the New Testament.**

- (a) **Enables Salvation.** The Holy Spirit enables the @@@ SALVATION of the Believer exactly as in the Old Testament – 2 Cor. 6:2.

**2 CORINTHIANS 6:2**

For He [@@@ HOLY SPIRIT] says, “At the acceptable time [God’s timing is perfect] I [God the Holy Spirit] listened to you [the unBeliever on positive [+P] volition], and on the day of salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – @@@ SALVATION] I helped you [the Holy Spirit ensures Gospel hearing].” Behold, now is “the acceptable time,” behold, now is “the day of salvation.”

1. **Common @@@ GRACE** – The Holy Spirit takes the place of a *human spirit* to make the Gospel understandable to the unBeliever who has no human spirit – 1 Cor. 2:11-14; Gen. 6:3; Jn. 16:8-11; 2 Thess. 2:13. *See* @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT.

2. **Efficacious @@@ GRACE** – Eph. 1:13; 2:8-9; Rom. 8:28-30; 9:24; 11:29; 1 Cor. 1:2, 9, 26; Gal. 1:14; Matt. 9:13; 1 Tim. 6:12; 1 Pet. 2:9. The Holy Spirit takes the Believer's @@@ FAITH [any amount] and makes it effectual for @@@ SALVATION.

## EPHESIANS 2:8-9

For by grace [*charis* – @@@ GRACE is the total @@@ PLAN OF GOD] you have been saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN and guaranteed @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY] through faith [*pistis* – the mechanics of @@@ SALVATION is by @@@ FAITH]; and that [the speck of human faith exhaled plus the entire package of what God does in grace] not of yourselves, *it is* the gift [*doron* (a gift)] of God; not as a result of [human] works [*ergon*], so that no one may boast [*kauchaomai* (to boast on account of a thing) – because the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT takes the individual's faith output and makes it efficacious for salvation no one can boast about their so-called amount of faith exhaled upon hearing the Gospel].

- (b) **Human Spirit.** The Holy Spirit creates a human spirit which immediately merges with the human soul of that person – Jn. 1:13; 3:3-7; Tit. 3:5; 1 Cor. 2:12; 1 Pet. 1:23. This is called being “*born again*.” See @@@ FORTY THINGS; @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT. Again, this also occurred in the Old Testament period at @@@ SALVATION.
- (c) **Baptizes.** The Holy Spirit “baptizes” each Believer in the Church Age into @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST at the moment of salvation – Eph. 4:4-5; 1 Cor. 12:13. This is a supernatural dry @@@ BAPTISM and is not manifested with any special phenomena, nor felt by the new Believer as an @@@ EMOTION. *But see infra* (c) (1).

## EPHESIANS 4:4-5

*There is* one body [*soma* – all Believers are in @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST] and one [Holy] Spirit, just as also you were called [*kaleo* (to utter with a loud voice)] in one [*heis*] hope [*elpis* (confidence)] of your calling; one LORD [*kurios* (God) – Jesus Christ the Savior], one faith [*pistis* – @@@ SALVATION by @@@ FAITH in Christ], one baptism [*baptisma* – the dry @@@ BAPTISM mechanics of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT accomplished at salvation].



1. **Predicted.** Jesus Christ predicted this dry baptism which started the Church Age [Jn. 14:20; Acts 1:5; Matt. 16:15] and initial manifestations on certain Believers in Jerusalem were extremely overt, e.g., tongues of fire over their heads – Acts 11:15-17.
  2. **Mechanics of the Baptism** – 1 Cor. 12:13 [aorist]. Once and for all the Believer is identified with Jesus Christ in His unique @@@ DEATH. Retroactive Positional Truth – Eph. 4:5; Col. 2:12; 3:4; Rom. 6:3-4; 1 Pet. 3:21.
  3. **Resolves Angelic Conflict.** The dry baptism of the Holy Spirit resolves the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT – Heb. 2:7-15.
  4. **Basis for Current Positional Truth.** Where the Believer is entered into @@@ UINON WITH CHRIST [Eph. 1:3-6; Col. 3:1] and shares His Sonship, Heirship, and Eternal Life. See @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY.
- (d) **Indwells.** The Holy Spirit Indwells the body of every Believer in the Church Age – 1 Cor. 3:16; 6:19-20; 1 Jn. 3:23-24; 4:4; Rom. 8:9; 11:29; Gal. 3:2; 4:6; Jn. 7:39; 14:16-17; Acts 2:38; 11:16-17.

## GALATIANS 3:2

This is the only thing I [Paul] want to find out from you: did you receive [lambano] the Spirit [the Indwelling of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] by the works [ergon] of the Law [nomos – the @@@ MOSAIC LAW], or by hearing [akoe (the thing heard) – the Gospel of @@@ SALVATION] with faith [pistis – saving @@@ FAITH in Jesus Christ]?

1. **Temple.** The Holy Spirit makes the Believer's body a temple for the @@@ INDWELLING OF CHRIST – Jn. 1:14; 7:49; 16:14; 1 Cor. 3:15-18; 6:19; 2 Cor. 6:16; Heb. 9:5; Rom. 8:11.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 6:19

Or do you [the Believer] not know [heneka (on account of)] that your body [soma] is a temple of the Holy Spirit who is in you, whom you have from God, and that you are not your own [the Believer is in the Royal Family of God]?

2. **Enables Metabolization.** Believers metabolize @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE under @@@ OPERATION Z via the Holy Spirit.
- (e) **Divine Dynasphere.** At @@@ SALVATION, the Holy Spirit enters the Believer into the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE.
- (f) **Seals.** The Holy Spirit “seals” all Believers for @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY and as an absolute guarantee of Escrow Account Blessing @@@ REWARDS – 2 Cor. 1:22; Eph. 1:13-14; 4:30; Rev. 7:2-8.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 1:22

Who [God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] also sealed [*sphragizo* (to set a seal upon) – @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY] us [Believers] and gave us the Spirit [God the Holy Spirit] in our hearts as a pledge [*arrhabon* (money which in purchases is given as a pledge or down payment)].

- (g) **Spiritual Gift.** The Holy Spirit gives at least one of the spiritual @@@ GIFTS to the Believer for service – 1 Cor. 12:4-12.
- (4) **Indwells Forever.** The Holy Spirit will Indwell the Believer for all eternity in the @@@ RESURRECTION body – Jn. 14:16.
- (5) **Filling of Holy Spirit.** The Holy Spirit’s post salvation ministry is centered on the Church Age Believer being “*filled with the Spirit*” [Eph. 5:18].

## EPHESIANS 5:17-18

So then do not be foolish [*aphron* (without reason)], but understand [*suniami* (to bring together)] what the will [*thelema*] of the LORD is [@@@ DIVINE GUIDANCE in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD is for the Believer to reach @@@ MATURITY which glorifies God]. And do not get drunk [*methusko* (to intoxicate)] with wine [*oinos*], for that is dissipation [*asotia* (a dissolute life) – self-induced @@@ SUFFERING], but be filled [*pleroo* (to make full)] with the Spirit [stay in Fellowship with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT by @@@ REBOUND].

- (a) **Command to Walk.** Believers are commanded to “*walk by the Spirit*” [Gal. 5:16] in their daily lives.

- (b) **An Absolute Status.** At any given moment the Believer is either *spiritual pneuma* [in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit] or *carnal sarkikos* [out of Fellowship with the Holy Spirit] – 1 Jn. 3:4-9; Gal. 5:16-17; 1 Cor. 3:3. This is the **absolute** concept of “spirituality” [the *relative* concept of spirituality is growing to spiritual @@@ MATURITY]. In the Church Age the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE for the Royal Family of God is a supernatural way of life and demands a supernatural and non-meritorious means of execution – the Filling of the Holy Spirit. While an unBeliever can follow the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS, no unBeliever can be Filled with God the Holy Spirit. See Rom. 5:5; 8:1-4; 1 Jn. 3:5-6, 9; Gal. 2:21.

### GALATIANS 5:16-17

But I [Paul] say, walk [*peripateo* (lifestyle) – @@@ WALKING] by the [Holy] Spirit [*pneuma* – stay in Fellowship by @@@ REBOUND], and you [the Believer] will not carry out [*teleo* (to bring to a close)] the desire [*epithumia* (lust)] of the flesh [*sarx* – the lust patterns of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE]. For the flesh sets its desire against the [Holy] Spirit, and the [Holy] Spirit against the flesh; for these are in opposition [*antikeimai*] to one another, so that you may not do the things that you please [*thelo* (to intend; to desire) – the Believer must reject the influences of the Old Sin Nature].

### 1 CORINTHIANS 3:3

For you [Believers] are still fleshly [*sarkikos* (carnal) – carnal Believer under control of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE]. For since there is jealousy and strife [*eris* (wrangling; contention)] among you, are you not fleshly [*sarkikos* – the Old Sin Nature], and are you not walking [@@@ WALKING as a lifestyle] like mere men [*anthropos* (mankind) – imitating the unBeliever]?

- (c) **Lost.** Spirituality for the Believer is lost through personal @@@ SIN and recovered through the @@@ REBOUND technique – 1 Jn. 1:9. Again, at any given moment the Believer is either *spiritual* or *carnal*. See Temporal @@@ DEATH.
- (d) **Grace System.** The Filling of God the Holy Spirit is not based on human @@@ EMOTION or something that can be worked for – Rom. 16:17; 18:2; 2 Cor. 6:11-12; Gal. 3:2-6. It is a @@@ GRACE system.

- (e) **Operational.** The Filling of the Holy Spirit allows the Believer to make good decisions to take @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE into the human @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT – 1 Cor. 2:9-16; Jn. 14:26; 16:12-16; 2 Cor. 3:16-18; 4:6; Rom. 5:3-5; 8:9; 1 Jn. 2:27. This process of growth involves the *relative* side of spirituality. See @@@ OPERATION Z.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 2:12-13

Now we have received [*lambano* (to claim)], not the spirit [*pneuma* (the disposition or influence which fills and governs the soul of anyone) – the general thinking] of the world [*kosmos* – the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], but the [Holy] Spirit who is from God, so that we may know [*heneka* (on account of)] the things freely given to us by God, which things we [Paul and his team] also speak [*laleo* – the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER communicating @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], not in words taught by human wisdom [*sophia*], but in those taught [*didaktos* (to teach)] by the [Holy] Spirit, combining [*sugkrino* (to join together fitly)] spiritual [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit)] *thoughts* with spiritual [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit)] *words*.

- (f) **Glorify God.** Believers glorify God through the Filling of the Holy Spirit – Phil. 1:20-21; Eph. 4:30. Indeed, every second logged in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit is subject to some degree of @@@ REWARDS. Thus, it is critical that the Believer stays in Fellowship and does not “*quench*” [1 Thess. 5:19] the Holy Spirit by @@@ SIN.

## 1 THESSALONIANS 5:19

Do not quench [*sbennumi* (to extinguish)] the [Holy] Spirit.

- (g) **Priesthood.** Being Filled with the Holy Spirit is a function of the Royal Priesthood and is not subject to any of the requirements of the Levitical priesthood – Rom. 8:2-4; 10:4; 13:8; Gal. 5:18; 1 Pet. 2:9.
- (h) **Guidance.** The Filling of the Holy Spirit provides @@@ DIVINE GUIDANCE for the Believer – Rom. 8:14-16.
- (i) **Prayer.** All prayer by the Believer must be made when Filled with God the Holy Spirit – “*pray at all times in the Spirit*” [Eph. 6:18].

## EPHESIANS 6:18

With all prayer [*proseuche* (prayer addressed to God)] and petition pray at all times [*kairos* (a fixed and definite time)] in [Fellowship with] the [Holy] Spirit, and with this in view, be on the alert with all perseverance [*proskarteresis*] and petition for all the saints [*hagios* (set apart ones)].

- (j) **Worship Activity.** All forms of Christian worship to include learning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE and the LORD's Supper must be done when Filled with the Holy Spirit – Jn. 4:24; Phil. 3:3.

## PHILIPPIANS 3:3

For we [Believers on positive [+P] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] are the *true* circumcision [*peritome*], who worship in the Spirit of God [@@@ REBOUND and producing the fruit of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT at @@@ MATURITY] and glory [*doxa*] in Christ Jesus and put no confidence [*peitho* (to make friends with; to trust)] in the flesh [*sarx* – human @@@ GOOD].

- (k) **Divine Good.** Every second of the Filling of the Holy Spirit produces Divine Good – 1 Cor. 3:12-14. See Divine @@@ GOOD.
- (l) **Descriptions.** The Filling of the Holy Spirit is described by Paul as @@@ WALKING in the Holy Spirit – Gal. 5:16, 25; Eph. 5:18; Rom. 8:2-5. John described the Filling of the Holy Spirit as Believers who “*walk in the Light*” [1 Jn. 1:7]. Peter described the Filling of the Holy Spirit as being “*partakers of the Divine nature*” [2 Pet. 1:4].

## ROMANS 8:4-5

So that the requirement [*dikaionoma* (the force of a right law)] of the Law [*nomos* – the @@@ MOSAIC LAW demands Perfection] might be fulfilled [*pleroo*] in us, who do not walk [*peripateo* (lifestyle)] according to the flesh [*sarx* – the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE controlling the Believer] but according [*kata* (according to a norm or standard)] to the Spirit [the Believer @@@ WALKING in Fellowship with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT]. For those who are according to the flesh set their minds [*phroneo* (to think)] on the things of the flesh [@@@ SIN and human @@@ GOOD], but those who are according to the [Holy] Spirit, the things of the [Holy] Spirit.

- (m) **Fruit.** By reaching @@@ MATURITY the positive [+P] volition Believer produces the “*fruit*” [Gal. 5:22-23] of the Holy Spirit. Such fruit is the byproduct of the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE and living inside of the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE, and increases in quantity and quality as the Believer reaches the higher progressive levels of maturity. A top fruit is the use of *agape* impersonal @@@ LOVE as one of the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES.

### GALATIANS 5:22-23

But the fruit [*karpos* (production)] of the [Holy] Spirit is love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE], joy [*chara* (gladness; joy) – @@@ HAPPINESS], peace [*erience*], patience [*makrothumia*], kindness [*chrestotes* (integrity; moral goodness)], goodness [*agathosune* (uprightness of life)], faithfulness [*pistis*], gentleness [*prautes* (mildness of disposition)], self-control [*egkrateia*]; against such things [the Believer at @@@ MATURITY operating in the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE] there is no law [*nomos*].

### (6) Sin and the Holy Spirit.

- (a) **Unpardonable Sin.** The unBeliever resists the Holy Spirit’s ministry to provide @@@ SALVATION by refusing the Gospel – Acts 7:51; Jn. 16:8-11. Unless there is a change of mind in this regard, resisting of the Holy Spirit [in many cases under the evil of @@@ RELIGION] will result in the unpardonable @@@ SIN called “*blasphemy against the Holy Spirit*” [Matt. 12:31-32; Mk. 3:28-29; Jn. 3:18-21]. Jesus Christ did not die for the sin of rejecting the Holy Spirit’s Gospel ministry. Note: The Believer cannot commit this unpardonable sin.

### MARK 3:28-29

“Truly [*amen* (of a truth)] I [Jesus Christ] say to you, all sins [*hamartema*] shall be forgiven [*aphiemi* (to send away)] the sons of men, and whatever blasphemies they utter [Jesus Christ died on the @@@ CROSS for all @@@ SIN except for the sin of rejection of the Gospel]; but whoever blasphemes [*blasphemia* (slander)] against [*eis*] the Holy Spirit never has forgiveness, but is guilty [*enochos* (in a forensic sense of guilt)] of an eternal [*aionios* (without beginning or end)] sin [the unpardonable sin is rejection of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT’s ministry of providing the Gospel].”



## ACTS 7:51

You men [**Stephen speaking to Jews**] who are stiff-necked [*sklerotrachelos* (stubborn; obstinate)] and uncircumcised in heart and ears are always resisting [*antipto* (to strive against)] the Holy Spirit [**they will not respond to the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT's common and efficacious @@@ GRACE**]; you are doing just as your fathers did [**most Jews were unBelievers**].

- (b) **Not Filled.** When out of Fellowship with God the Holy Spirit the Believer is said to: “*lie to the Holy Spirit*” [Acts 5:1-3]; “*grieve the Holy Spirit*” [Eph. 4:30]; and “*quench the Holy Spirit*” [1 Thess. 5:19]. Without @@@ **REBOUND** Believers remain in perpetual carnality.

(7) **Restraining and Convicting.**

- (a) **Restraining.** The restraining ministry of the Holy Spirit counters the forces of @@@ **DEMONISM** from destroying the human race. It will be removed at the @@@ **RAPTURE** giving Satan the opportunity to fulfill his boast to construct a “perfect environment” – 2 Thess. 2:6-7.

## 2 THESSALONIANS 2:6-7

And you [**Believers**] know what restrains [*katecho* (to hold back)] him [**Satan**] now, so that in his time he will be revealed [**during the Tribulation Satan will have vast additional powers**]. For the mystery [*musterion* – @@@ **MYSTERY**] of lawlessness [*anomia* (the condition without law)] is already at work [**Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD now**]; only he [**@@@ HOLY SPIRIT**] who now restrains [**Satan rules the world but God controls @@@ HISTORY**] *will do so* until he [**the Holy Spirit**] is taken out of the way [**at the @@@ RAPTURE**].

- (b) **Holy Spirit Convicts.** The unBeliever of his helpless state – Jn. 16:7-11; 1 Cor. 2:11-14; Gen. 6:3; 2 Cor. 3:14-18; Eph. 1:13; Rom. 1:6; 9:24.
- (8) **Holy Spirit and Scripture.** The Holy Spirit directly moved the writers of the @@@ **BIBLE** to pen the Word of God – “*the sword of the (Holy) Spirit, which is the word of God*” [Eph. 6:17]; 2 Pet. 1:20-21. The Holy Spirit also provides for a @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHER** [or other means in other @@@ **DISPENSATIONS**] to teach @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**. See Neh. 9:30.

(9) **Holy Spirit and Jesus Christ.**

- (a) **23 Pure Male Chromosomes.** For Mary to conceive the Savior, the Holy Spirit supernaturally provided the “male” genetic material so Jesus was born perfect – Matt. 1:18-21; Lk. 1:35; Heb. 10:5-10.
- (b) **Jesus Indwelt and Filled.** The humanity of Jesus Christ was Indwelt and Filled by the Holy Spirit “*without measure*” [Jn. 3:34] and the Holy Spirit *rested* on Him. See Jn. 1:32; Lk. 4:1, 14-18; Isa. 11:2-3; 42:1; 61:1-2; Matt. 3:16; 12:18. Thus, the Holy Spirit guided Jesus during His earthly ministry – Matt. 4:1; Isa. 61:1.

**MATTHEW 4:1**

Then Jesus was led up by the [Holy] Spirit into the wilderness [*eremos (deserted places)*] to be tempted [*peirazo (to test; to make a trial)*] by the devil.

- (c) **Power.** Jesus used the power of the Holy Spirit and not His own Deity, e.g., to perform @@@ **MIRACLES**, unless absolutely in the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD** – Lk. 4:18-21; Matt. 12:28; Acts 10:38 [Jesus used His own Deity to read the minds of the religious leaders – Matt. 12:25].
- (d) **The Cross.** Jesus and was sustained in part by the Holy Spirit while on the @@@ **CROSS** – “*who through the eternal Spirit*” [Heb. 9:13-14].
- (e) **Resurrection.** Holy Spirit assisted in the @@@ **RESURRECTION** of Jesus Christ and will provide every Believer with his own indestructible resurrection body in the future – Rom. 8:11; 1 Pet. 3:18.

**ROMANS 8:11**

But if the Spirit [@@@ **HOLY SPIRIT**] of Him who raised [*egeiro (to cause to rise)*] Jesus from the dead [*nekros (physical death)*] dwells [*oikeo*] in you [*the Believer*], He [*the Holy Spirit*] who raised Christ Jesus from the dead [*nekros*] will also give life [*zoopoieo (to produce alive)*] to your mortal [*thnetos (liable to death)*] bodies [*soma – the Believer will get a @@@ **RESURRECTION** body*] through His Spirit [*the Holy Spirit performs this task*] who dwells in [*oikeo (to dwell in)*] you.

## @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION/CHRIST

- (1) **Definition.** In the person of Jesus Christ are “two natures, inseparably united, without mixture or loss of separate identities, without loss or transfer of properties or attributes, the union being personal and eternal.” The Greek word to describe this union is *hupostasis* (to take on a substance) – Heb. 1:3. In turn, the title Christ, *christos* [in the Greek] is the exact equivalent of the Hebrew Messiah, *mashiyach* [Dan. 9:25; Isa. 61:1]. Both words mean “**the anointed one**” – “*The LORD has anointed Me to bring good news*” [Isa. 61:1] of providing @@@ SALVATION to sinful man. See Jn. 4:7-41.

### JOHN 4:25-26

The woman said to Him [**Jesus of Nazareth**], “I know that Messiah [*Messias* (anointed)] is coming (He who is called Christ); when that One comes, He will declare all things to us.” Jesus said to her, “I who speak to you am *He*.”

- (2) **No Transfer of Attributes.** The hypostatic union is Divine and personal. Undiminished Deity and true humanity come together as the Incarnate Union. There is no loss of attributes from either side and no *transfer of attributes* between His Deity and His humanity, making Jesus Christ the unique person of the universe – Deity remains Deity and humanity remains humanity. Thus, the LORD Jesus Christ was weak and strong at the same time. On the @@@ CROSS Jesus stated, “*I thirst*” [Jn. 4:6-7; 19:28], while at that very moment He was holding the universe together [Heb. 1:3; Col. 1:17]! See 1 Tim. 3:16; Heb. 1:1-4-8; 2:9, 14; 13:8; Phil. 2:5-11, 26; Jn. 1:1-14; 8:24, 58; 10:30-33; Rom. 1:2-5; 9:5; Isa. 7:14; 9:6-7; Matt. 1:23; 2:2; Mk. 2:5-10; Rev. 1:17-18.

### PHILIPPIANS 2:6-9

Who, although He [**Jesus Christ**] existed in the form of God [*theos* – @@@ TRINITY], did not regard equality with God a thing to be grasped, but emptied Himself, taking the form of a bond-servant [@@@ PLAN OF GOD], and being made in the likeness of men. Being found in appearance as a man, He humbled Himself by becoming obedient to the point of death [*thanatos* – spiritual @@@ DEATH], even death on a cross [*stauros* – @@@ CROSS is where Christ paid the price for @@@ SIN]. For this reason also, God [**the Father**] highly exalted [*huperupsoo* (exalt to the highest rank)] Him, and bestowed on Him the name which is above every name.

- (3) **Jesus Christ is God.** Jesus Christ is a full member of the @@@ TRINITY. See Mic. 5:2; Rom. 9:5; Jn. 1:1-5, 29-30; 5:18; 8:58; 10:30; 1 Jn. 5:20; Tit. 2:13; Heb. 1:8-10; Col. 1:15; Isa. 9:6; 44:8. In eternity past Christ was present as God, the Second person of the Trinity. As a **true mediator** – true God and true humanity – He agreed to fulfill the @@@ PLAN OF GOD by taking on human form and dying on the @@@ CROSS for @@@ SIN – Heb. 9:15; 1 Tim. 2:5; Jn. 1:1-2; Ps. 2:7-9; 22:1-6; 40:7 [cf. Heb. 10:5-7]; 110:1; Dan. 9:7.

## JOHN 1:1-5

In the beginning [*arche*] was the Word [*logos* – Jesus Christ], and the Word was with God [*theos*], and the Word was God. He [Jesus Christ] was in the beginning with God [Jesus Christ in the @@@ TRINITY]. All things came into being [*ginomai* (to come into existence)] through [*dia* (by means of)] Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being. In Him was life [*zoe*], and the life was the Light [*phos*] of men [the only means of @@@ SALVATION]. The Light [*phos* – the @@@ PLAN OF GOD] shines in the darkness [*skotia* (darkness due to want of light) – the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], and the darkness did not comprehend [*katalambano* (to lay hold of with the mind; to seize upon) – negative [-N] volition] it.

## ISAIAH 9:6

For a child will be born to us, a son [Jesus] will be given to us; and the government will rest on His shoulders [the true King of Israel rules forever]; and His name will be called [the following describes His character] Wonderful Counselor [the perfect advisor], Mighty God [Jesus Christ is God], Eternal Father [the Creator and Sustainer of all things], Prince of Peace [Jesus will reconcile man with Perfect God by His atoning work on the @@@ CROSS].

## JOHN 1:29-30

The next day he [John the Baptist] saw Jesus coming to him and said, “Behold, the Lamb of God who takes away [*airo* (to move from its place)] the sin [*hamartia* – spiritual @@@ DEATH and @@@ SIN] of the world [*kosmos* – Christ provided @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT]! This is He on behalf of whom I said, ‘After me comes a Man [*aner* (nobleman)] who has a higher rank than I, for He existed [*emi*] before [*protos* (first in time or place) – Jesus Christ as the 2nd Person of the @@@ TRINITY] me.’”

(4) **Pre-Incarnate Work.**

- (a) **Creation.** All initial acts of creation were done by Jesus Christ and He continues to hold the universe together right now – “*I Myself am working*” [Jn. 1:3; 5:17]. See Col. 1:16; Heb. 1:2-4, 10; Gen. 1:1.

**HEBREWS 1:2-3**

In these last [*eschatos* (last, referring to time)] days [*hemera* – the Church Age @@@ MYSTERY period] [God] has spoken [*laleo*] to us in His Son [Jesus Christ], whom He appointed [*tithemi*] heir [*kleronomos* – in the Messianic usage, the Church] of all things, through whom also He [Jesus Christ] made the world [*aion* (the universe)]. And He is the radiance [*apaugasma* (reflected brightness)] of His glory [*doxa* – all three members of the @@@ TRINITY share the same essence] and the exact representation [*charakter* (the mark stamped upon an instrument for engraving)] of His nature [*hupostasis* (the thing put under; substructure) – in @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION Jesus Christ is still God], and upholds [*phero* (to carry)] all things by the word [*rhema* (that which has been uttered by a living voice)] of His power [*dunamis* (inherent power)]. When He had made purification [*katharismos* (a cleansing from sins) – the work of Jesus Christ on the @@@ CROSS] of sins [*hamartia*], He sat down [*kathizo*] at the right hand of the Majesty on high [Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL].

- (b) As a @@@ THEOPHANY. In the Old Testament, Jesus Christ made visible appearances to certain people in various forms.
- (5) **Humanity of Jesus.** Jesus Christ is true humanity minus an @@@ OLD SIN NATURE and without Adam’s original @@@ SIN imputed at His virgin birth [Isa. 7:14; Lk. 1:30-35]. At His physical @@@ DEATH: (1) His body went into the grave/tomb [Lk. 23:53]; (2) His soul went to Paradise [Lk. 23:43; Acts 2:27, 31; 13:35-37; Eph. 4:9; Ps. 16:10]; and (3) His human spirit went to the Third Heaven [Lk. 23:46; Jn. 19:30]. See @@@ HELL.

**LUKE 23:46**

And Jesus, crying out [*phoneo* (to speak loudly)] with a loud voice, said, “Father [*pater*], into Your hands I commit [*paratithemi* (to set forth)] My [human] spirit [*pneuma*].” Having said this, He breathed His last.

## LUKE 23:43

And He [Jesus] said to him, “Truly I say to you [the thief being executed next to Jesus], today [semeron (this very day)] you shall be with Me in Paradise [paradeisos – Paradise or Abraham’s Bosom is a separate compartment in @@@ HELL which was the temporary abode of Old Testament Believers].”

## PSALM 16:10

For You [God the Father] will not abandon my [Jesus] soul [nephesh] to Sheol [Sheol (the Old Testament designation for the abode of the dead) – Paradise or Abraham’s Bosom]; nor will You allow Your Holy One [Jesus Christ] to undergo decay [Jesus’ physical body would not rot away prior to His @@@ RESURRECTION in three days].

- (6) **The Name.** LORD *Kurios* [Deity] Jesus *Iesous* [humanity] Christ *Christos* [the anointed mission]. He is absolutely coequal with the Father and the Holy Spirit – Jn. 5:18; 6:63; 10:30; Gal. 4:6; Acts 16:6-7; Phil. 1:19; 2 Cor. 4:4; Ps. 110:1; Isa. 44:6; Matt. 22:41-46. *See supra* (3); @@@ TRINITY.

## PSALM 110:1

The LORD [Jehovah – God the Father] says to my LORD [adonay (the title for God spoken in place of Jehovah) – Jesus Christ]: “Sit at My right hand until I make Your enemies [ayab (to be hostile to)] a footstool for Your feet [regel – Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL].”

## MATTHEW 22:41-46

Now while the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them a question: “What do you think about the Christ [*Christos* (the anointed; Messiah)], whose son [*uihos*] is He?” They said to Him, “The son of David.” He said to them, “Then how does David in the Spirit [David wrote Scripture under the ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] call Him ‘LORD,’ [*kurios* (God)] saying, ‘The LORD [*kurios* (God)] said to My LORD [*kurios* (God)], sit at My right hand, until I put Your enemies [*echthros* (hostile)] beneath Your feet” [Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL]? “If David then calls Him ‘LORD’ [*kurios* (God)], how is He his son?” No one was able to answer Him a word, nor did anyone dare from that day on to ask Him another question.



**JOHN 5:18**

For this reason therefore the Jews were seeking all the more to kill [*apokteino* (to kill in any way whatever)] Him [*Jesus*], because He not only was breaking the Sabbath [*Jewish leadership distorted the @@@ MOSAIC LAW*], but also was calling God His own Father, making Himself equal [*isos*] with God.

**2 CORINTHIANS 4:4**

In whose case the god of this world [*Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD*] has blinded [*tuphloo* (to make bind)] the minds [*noema* (a mental perception)] of the unbelieving [*apistos – the unBeliever on negative [-N] volition*] so that they might not see the light [*phos*] of the gospel [*euaggelion* (good news)] of the glory [*doxa*] of Christ, who is the image [*eikon* (exact likeness)] of God.

**ISAIAH 44:6**

Thus says the LORD, the King of Israel and his Redeemer [*gaal – Jesus Christ is the God of Israel and the Savior of the @@@ WORLD*], the LORD of Hosts: “I am the first and I am the last, and there is no God besides Me.”

- (7) **The Anointed One.** Messiah/Christ. The Son of God became man to save the @@@ WORLD. In order for the humanity of Christ to qualify as Savior, Jesus was born without an Old Sin Nature which passes down to all other humans as follows: Male sex cells divide into sperm cells [23 chromosomes] without loss of genetic material. On the other hand, through meiosis and polar bodies, the female sex cell casts off “contaminated” genetic nuclei leaving an ovum with 23 pure chromosomes. When the contaminated male sperm links to the pure female ovum during copulation [making 46 chromosomes], it immediately contaminates the new biological @@@ LIFE. Furthermore, at the same time God imputes human life to the biological life at birth, making each human physically alive, God also imputes Adam’s original @@@ SIN, making all babies spiritually dead. Thus, for Jesus to be born Perfect, the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT provided 23 pure male chromosomes to Mary’s ovum so that Jesus was born without an Old Sin Nature and with no subsequent imputation of Adam’s original sin at His birth [Lk. 1:35; Matt. 1:18]. Jesus is called the “*last Adam*” [1 Cor. 15:45] and the “*second man*” [1 Cor. 15:47] because He was born as Adam was created – Perfect in His being. See 1 Tim. 3:16; Heb. 10:5-7; Ps. 2:7-9. Jesus is the “seed of the woman” [Gen. 3:15].

## GENESIS 3:15

And I will put enmity [*eybath* (hatred)] between you [*Satan*] and the woman, and between your seed [*zera* – unBelievers in Satan’s @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS] and her seed [Believers]; He [the Perfect seed of the woman in @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION, Jesus Christ] shall bruise [*shuph* (to crush)] you on the head [*rosh* – Satan and @@@ SIN will be destroyed], and you shall bruise [*shuph*] him [Jesus Christ] on the heel [*aqeb* – Christ will suffer the venom of Satan, which is spiritual @@@ DEATH, on the cross].

## HEBREWS 10:5-7

Therefore [*dio* (on account of)], when He [Jesus Christ] comes into the world [*kosmos*], He says, “Sacrifice and offering You [God the Father] have not desired [*thelo* (to take delight in; to desire) – the rituals of the @@@ MOSAIC LAW are teaching tools and cannot provide @@@ SALVATION], but a body [*soma*] You [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] have prepared [*katartizo* (to equip; to arrange)] for Me [Jesus]; in whole burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin [*hamartia*] You have taken no pleasure. Then I said, ‘Behold, I [Jesus Christ] have come [*heko* (to arrive)] (in the scroll of the book it is written of Me) [all the Old Testament prophecies about Jesus Christ] to do your will [*thelema* (what one determines shall be done) – to die on the @@@ CROSS], O God [God the Father].”

## LUKE 1:35

The angel [*aggelos*] answered and said to her [Mary], “The Holy Spirit will come upon [*eperchomai* (to come; to arrive)] you [to provide 23 pure male chromosomes to fertilize her egg], and the power of the Most High will overshadow [*apiskiazo* (to envelop in a shadow)] you; and for that reason the holy Child [Jesus] shall be called the Son of God.”

## PSALM 2:7-9

I will surely tell of the decree of the LORD: He [God the Father] said to Me [God the Son], “You are My Son, today I have begotten You. Ask of Me, and I will surely give the nations as Your inheritance, and the very ends of the earth as Your possession. You shall break them with a rod of iron, you shall shatter them like earthenware [2nd Advent of Jesus Christ].”

## 1 TIMOTHY 3:16

By common confession [*homologoumenos* (by consent of all; without controversy)], great is the mystery [*mysterion*] of godliness [*eusebeia* – the @@@ MYSTERY doctrines of the Church Age]: He [Jesus Christ] who was revealed [*phaneroo*] in the flesh [*sarx*], was vindicated [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] in [by] the [Holy] Spirit, seen by angels [*aggelos*], proclaimed [*kerusso* (to publish)] among the nations [*ethnos*], believed on [*pisteuo*] in the world [*kosmos* – humans in every generation will accept the gift of @@@ SALVATION], taken up [*analambano* – the @@@ RESURRECTION and acceptance of Jesus Christ by God the Father per Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL] in glory [*doxa* – essence of the @@@ TRINITY].

## 1 CORINTHIANS 15:47

The first man [Adam] is from the earth [*ge*], earthy; the second man [Jesus Christ] is from heaven [*ouranos*].

- (8) **Promised Messiah.** As predicted throughout the books of the Old Testament, Jesus of Nazareth was the promised Messiah [Christ] who fulfilled each and every prophecy about Him in the Bible. Indeed, the Jews of His day rightly anticipated His coming per Dan. 9:24-26; Matt. 2:1-8. If Jesus was not the promised Messiah then no one else in history qualifies or can even make the claim – the Romans obliterated the Temple’s genealogy records in A.D. 70.

- (a) **Abraham.** Jesus Christ was the “son” [and God] of Abraham – Gen. 12:1-3.

## GENESIS 12:3

And I [God] will bless [*barak*] those who bless you [Abram], and the one who curses you I will curse [*arar*]. And in you all the families of the earth will be blessed [descendent of Abraham, Jesus Christ provides @@@ SALVATION to the @@@ WORLD].

- (b) **Jacob.** He was descended through the line of Jacob – Gen. 32:9-12.

- (c) **Judah.** Jesus Christ was from the tribe of Judah, the rulership tribe where all Jewish Kings must emanate – Gen. 49:10.

## GENESIS 49:10

“The scepter shall not depart from Judah [**the tribe of Judah**], nor the ruler’s staff from between his feet, Until Shiloh [*shiylah* (an epithet of the Messiah)] comes, and to him *shall be* the obedience of the peoples.”

- (d) **David’s Son.** Jesus of Nazareth was of the family of David through the line of Nathan. “*Jesus, Son of David, have mercy on me*” [Mk. 10:47]. “*How is it that they say the Christ is David’s son?*” [Lk. 20:41]. See Ezk. 37:24-28; 2 Sam. 7:12-13.

## 2 SAMUEL 7:12-13

When your [**David**] days are complete and you lie down with your fathers [**physical @@@ DEATH**], I [**God**] will raise up your descendant [*zera* (offspring) – **Jesus Christ**] after you, who will come forth from you, and I will establish his kingdom. He shall build a house [*bayith* (household; family)] for My name, and I will establish the throne of his kingdom forever.

## EZEKIEL 37:24

My servant David [**King David died 500 years ago**] will be king over them [**at the 2nd Advent the LORD Jesus Christ, the direct descendant of King David, will rule over the Jews forever**], and they will all have one shepherd; and they will walk in My ordinances and keep My statutes and observe them.

- (e) **Enters Jerusalem on a Donkey.** Zec. 9:9; Mk. 11:7-9.
- (f) **Virgin.** Jesus was born of a virgin – Isa. 7:14; Gen. 3:15. The Hebrew word for virgin is *almah* (virgin; young woman) as in the Isa. 7:14, prophecy about the Messiah. While Isa. 7:14, can also be interpreted as “young woman,” when the **Septuagint** [translation of Hebrew Bible into Greek by 70 Jewish scholars] was written about 200 years prior to the birth of Jesus, the Jewish scholars used the Greek word *parthanos* (a woman who has never had sexual intercourse) to translate the Hebrew *almah* in Isa. 7:14. The Greek word *parthanos* unequivocally means a virgin and never a young woman. Again, *parthanos* has only this single meaning and the **Septuagint** did not use the Greek word *numphe* (young woman; bride) to translate the Hebrew word *almah*.

**ISAIAH 7:14**

Therefore the LORD Himself will give you a sign: Behold, a virgin [*almah* (virgin; young woman)] will be with child [*hareh* (pregnant)] and bear a son, and she will call His name Immanuel [(God with us)].

(g) **Bethlehem.** Jesus was born in David's Bethlehem – Mic. 5:2.

**MICAH 5:2**

But as for you, Bethlehem Ephrathah, *too* little to be among the clans of Judah, from you One [*Jesus Christ*] will go forth for Me [*God*] to be ruler in Israel. His goings forth [*motsaah* (origin; place of going out from)] are from long ago, from the days of eternity [*olam* (forever, always)].

(h) **Die for the Sins of the World.** Ps. 22; Isa. 53. See @@@ CROSS.

(9) **Humanity of Christ.** Jesus was Filled and Indwelt by God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT and quickly reached @@@ MATURITY in His humanity by intake of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – Lk. 1:80; 2:40, 52; Heb. 5:8; Matt. 4:1-11.

**LUKE 2:40**

The Child [*Jesus*] continued to grow [*auxano* (to increase; become greater)] and become strong, increasing [*pleroo* (to make full)] in wisdom [*sophia*]; and the grace [*charis*] of God was upon Him.

**LUKE 2:52**

And Jesus kept increasing in wisdom [*sophia*] and stature [*helikia* (length of life; in height and comeliness of stature)], and in favor with God and men.

(10) **Expressions of Deity, Humanity, or Both.**

(a) **Attributes True of the Whole Person** – Matt. 11:28; Col. 1:14; Jn. 6:47. He is the King of Kings, the Messiah, and the Lamb of God.

(b) **Attributes True of the Deity but the Whole Person is the Subject** – “*before Abraham was born, I am*” [Jn. 8:57-58]; Heb. 1:3.

- (c) **Attributes True of the Humanity but the Whole Person is the Subject** – “*My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass from Me*” [Matt. 26:39]. See @@@ CROSS.
  - (d) **Described According to His Divine Nature but the Predicate is on the Human Nature** – “*I was dead, and behold, I am alive forevermore, and I have the keys of death and of Hades*” [Rev. 1:18].
  - (e) **Described According to His Human Nature but the Predicate is on the Divine Nature.** “*Son of Man*” [Jn. 6:62] nomenclature describes His human nature but going up “*to where He was before*” is His Deity.
  - (f) **Described According to His Divine Nature but the Predicate is on Both Natures** – “*authority to execute judgment*” [Jn. 5:25-27].
  - (g) **Described According to His Human Nature but the Predicate is on Both Natures** – “*My God, My God, why have you forsaken Me?*” [Matt. 27:46]; Jer. 30:21.
- (11) **Use of His Deity.** During the incarnation, Jesus Christ greatly restricted the exercise of His Deity – Jn. 1:43-51 [Nathanael under the tree]. He remained under the power of the Holy Spirit – Phil. 2:7; Matt. 4:1; 12:8; Lk. 4:14, 18. Flashes of His Deity did occur – Jn. 18:6; Matt. 17:2 [the Transfiguration].

### JOHN 18:6

So when He [Jesus] said to them, “I am [eimi] He,” they [the arresting contingent] drew back and fell to the ground.

- (a) **On the Cross.** The @@@ HOLY SPIRIT helped sustain Jesus Christ on the @@@ CROSS – “*who through the eternal Spirit*” [Heb. 9:14].
- (b) **Equality.** Jesus Christ did not seek to maintain equality with God per Phil. 2:6, but took on humanity to fulfill the Plan of God – Jn. 12:50.

### JOHN 12:50

I [Jesus] know that His commandment is eternal life [to believe in Christ]; therefore the things I speak, I speak just as the Father has told Me.



- (12) **Necessity of Hypostatic Union.** Jesus Christ, “*He is the mediator*” [Heb. 9:15] between God and man. A true mediator must be equal to both parties – 1 Tim. 2:5-6; Job 9:2-3, 32-33; Jer. 30:21. Because Jesus Christ is true God and true humanity He represents both parties in solving the @@@ SIN issue.

### JEREMIAH 30:21

“Their [the Jewish people] leader [*addiyr (great one; majestic one)*] shall be one of them [the Messiah], and their ruler [*mashal (to exercise dominion) – Messiah will rule forever*] shall come forth from their midst; and I [God the Father] will bring him near and he shall approach Me [only the Perfect human Jesus Christ in a @@@ RESURRECTION body is qualified to approach Perfect God]; for who would dare to risk his life [Perfect God can only condemn imperfect mankind] to approach Me?” declares the LORD.

### JOB 9:33

There is no umpire [*yakach – a mediator that is equal to God and man*] between us [between Perfect God and all humans], who may lay his hand upon us both [to represent both parties and bring them together].

- (a) **Jesus Christ is the Firstborn.** Only Jesus Christ has a @@@ RESURRECTION body now and is “*the firstborn of all creation*” [Col. 1:15], as Church Age Believers will get a resurrection body exactly like His at the @@@ RAPTURE – Phil. 3:10-11, 21; 1 Jn. 3:2.
- (b) **Jesus Christ as the Believer’s High Priest** – Heb. 2:17; 3:1-6; 7:4-28; 10:5. In the new priesthood He must be a man to represent a man. Jesus was not from the tribe of Levi. He is a new type of Priest after the order of Melchizedek, the King and as well as the High Priest of Salem.
- (c) **Jesus Christ as the Promised Davidic Covenant King** – Jer. 23:5-6, 33:14-22; Ezk. 37:24; 2 Sam. 7:8-16; Ps. 2:7; 89:20-37. Only the God/man could rule forever and ever as promised. Joseph was the legal “stepfather” of Jesus [Solomon’s line in Matt. 1]. In Joseph’s line, the 14th descendant of David through Solomon was the evil King Jeconiah [Matt. 1:11]. However, because Jeconiah’s bloodline was cut off per Jer. 22:30, Joseph could not be in the blood line of the Messiah, but Mary could as her line came from David’s son Nathan [Lk. 3:23-31].

- (d) **Jesus Christ as the Savior** – Heb. 2:14-15. Deity cannot die on the @@@ CROSS – Heb. 10:5-10. Jesus Christ provided a substitutionary spiritual @@@ DEATH “*for*” *huper* (on behalf of) all humans per Gal. 3:13; Rom. 5:8; 1 Pet. 3:18; 1 Cor. 11:24. *See also* Jn. 1:29; 1 Cor. 5:7; Heb. 9:13-14; Rom. 8:31; Ex. 12:5; Lev. 1:3; Gen. 3:15.
- (13) **Temptation and Sin.** Jesus Christ was, “*Not able to sin* [Deity] *and able not to sin* [humanity].”
- (a) **Deity is Not Temptable, it is Impeccable** – Js. 1:13; Matt. 4:7.
- (b) **His Humanity is Temptable and Peccable** – Heb. 4:15; 1 Jn. 3:5; 1 Pet. 2:22-23. “*Which one of you convicts Me of sin?*” [Jn. 8:46].

## 1 PETER 2:22-23

Who [Jesus Christ] committed no sin [*hamartia* – never committed a personal @@@ SIN], nor was any deceit [*dolos*] found in His mouth [Jesus never committed a mental attitude sin]; and while being reviled [*loidoreo* (to heap abuse upon)], He did not revile in return [@@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES]; while suffering [*pascho* – on the @@@ CROSS], He uttered no threats, but kept entrusting [*paradidomi* (to give into the hands of another)] Himself to Him [@@@ PLAN OF GOD] who judges righteously.

- (c) **Copper Around Iron. In Hypostatic Union the LORD Jesus Christ is Temptable but Impeccable** – 2 Cor. 5:21. The analogy of taking a copper wire [His humanity] and wrapping it around an iron crowbar [His Deity] is descriptive – the two items remain separate but form a new thing. The essence of Deity cannot be changed [iron], but to alter a single attribute of His humanity [copper] would destroy the Union.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:21

He [God the Father] made Him [Jesus Christ] who knew no sin [*hamartia* – Jesus never committed @@@ SIN and had no @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] to be sin [*hamartia* – He took the judgment for all sin while on the @@@ CROSS] on our behalf [*huper* (as a substitute for)], so that we might become the righteousness [*dikaiosisune* – God’s Perfect Righteousness [+R] is imputed to the Believer for @@@ SALVATION] of God in Him.

(14) **Titles of Jesus Christ.**

- (a) **Arm** – Isa. 40:10; 52:10; 53:1; 59:1; 63:12; Ps. 89:13-15. Reference to His work for @@@ SALVATION.
- (b) **Son of God** – “*You are my Son, today I have begotten You*” [Ps. 2:7]. Jn. 1:18; 6:46; 8:37; 1 Tim. 6:16; 1 Jn. 4:12; 5:10-13; Matt. 3:17. The other two members of the @@@ TRINITY are His family.
- (c) **Son of David** – “*Have mercy on me, LORD, Son of David*” [Matt. 15:22]. His humanity came through the line of David, the Davidic dynasty. See 2 Sam. 7:9-11; Matt. 20:30-31; 21:9, 15; Jer. 33:14-22.
- (d) **LORD of LORDS and King of Kings** – Rev. 17:14; 19:16; Ezk. 10:16. Jesus Christ’s family is the Royal Family of all Church Age Believers – “*but now you are the people of God*” [1 Pet. 2:9-10]; Eph. 1:5.
- (e) **Son of Man** – Dan. 7:13-14. This is the prophetic title that Jesus Christ used for Himself more than any other. This title communicated exactly to the religious leaders of the day who He was – a human that was also God! See Matt. 16:13, 27-28; 17:9, 12, 22; 18:11; 19:28; 20:18, 28; 24:27, 30, 37, 39, 44; 25:13, 31; 26:2, 24, 45, 64; Mk. 2:10, 28; 8:31, 38; 9:9, 12, 31; 10:33, 45; 13:32, 34; 14:21, 41, 62.

**DANIEL 7:13-14**

I [Daniel] kept looking in the night vision; and behold, with the clouds of heaven One like a Son of Man [Jesus Christ] was coming, and He came up to the Ancient of Days [God the Father] and was presented before Him. And to Him [Jesus Christ] was given dominion [*sholtan (sovereignty)*], Glory and a kingdom, that all peoples, nations and *men of every* language might serve Him [Believers]. His dominion is an everlasting [*alam (forever)*] dominion which will not pass away; and His kingdom is one which will not be destroyed.

- (f) **Light** – Isa. 9:2; 49:6; 60:1; Jn. 1:4; 3:19-21; 8:12. @@@ GRACE.
- (g) **Messiah (the anointed one)** – Dan. 9:26; Isa. 61:1; Jn. 20:31. The equivalent Greek word is *christos (Christ)*. Describing His mission of appointment to go to the @@@ CROSS.

- (h) **Prince of Peace** – Isa. 9:6. This title refers to His making reconciliation between Perfect God and man under @@@ SOTERIOLOGY.
- (i) **Branch** – Isa. 1:11; 4:2; 60:21; Jer. 23:5-6; 33:15-16; Zech. 3:8; 6:12.
- (j) **Lamb of God** – Jn. 1:28; Rev. 13:8. Old Testament animal sacrifices were shadows of Christ's work, focused on His mission to die for sin.
- (k) **Good Shepherd** – Jn. 10:11-18. The @@@ GRACE of God.
- (l) **I Am** – Ex. 3:14; Jn. 8:58. The self-existing one.
- (m) **Redeemer** – Jer. 50:34; Job 19:25; Isa. 43:14-15; 44:6, 24; 47:4; 48:17; 54:8; 59:20; 60:16. Reference to His work to buy back the unBeliever from his enslavement in the slave market of @@@ SIN.

## ISAIAH 43:14-15

Thus says the LORD [**Jesus Christ**] your Redeemer [*gaal*], the Holy One of Israel, "For your sake I have sent to Babylon, and will bring them all down as fugitives, even the Chaldeans, into the ships in which they rejoice. I am the LORD, your Holy One, the Creator of Israel, your King."

- (n) **Alpha & Omega** – Rev. 1:8. "*I am the Alpha and the Omega, the first and the last, the beginning and the end*" [Rev. 22:13].
- (o) **The Holy One of Israel** – Isa. 29:23; 37:23; 48:17.
- (p) **Savior** – Isa. 43:11; 45:15; 60:16; Heb. 2:14-15.
- (q) **The Breaker** – Mic. 2:13.
- (r) **Teacher** – Jn. 13:13. Jesus Christ consistently taught the Gospel and @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE classes during His incarnation.
- (s) **Chief Cornerstone** – Eph. 2:20. See @@@ CORNERSTONE.
- (t) **The Prophet** – Deut. 18:18-19; Jn. 1:21; Acts 3:22. The prediction by Moses of the Messiah who must be heard and precisely obeyed.

**DEUTERONOMY 18:18-19**

I [**God**] will raise up a prophet [*nabiy* (spokesman) – **Jesus Christ**] from among their countrymen [**Jews**] like you [**Moses**], and I will put My words in his mouth, and he shall speak to them all that I command him [**Jesus always followed the @@@ PLAN OF GOD**]. It shall come about that whoever will not listen to My words which he shall speak in My name [**the Gospel of @@@ SALVATION**], I Myself will require [*darash* (to require, of blood)] it of him.

(u) **The Rock** – 1 Cor. 10:4; Isa. 26:4; Matt. 16:18; Deut. 32:4; Ex. 17:6.

**DEUTERONOMY 32:4**

The Rock [*tsur* (giant boulder) – **Jesus Christ the Savior**]! His work is perfect [**@@@ CROSS**], for all His ways are just [**@@@ TRINITY**]; a God of faithfulness and without injustice [*evel* (iniquity; injustice)], righteous [*tsaddiyq* (just; righteousness) – the Righteousness [**+R**] of God is uncompromising] and upright [**God is Perfect in all His ways**] is He.

(v) **Leader/Ruler** – Jer. 30:21.

(w) **Master** – Lk. 17:13.

(x) **Servant** – Phil. 2:7; Isa. 42:1; 52:13; 53:11; and *Mark*.

(y) **Pillar of Fire** – Ex. 13:21-22; 40:34-38. Guiding the Hebrews.

(z) **The Sunrise** – Lk. 1:78. The Light of @@@ SALVATION to all.

**LUKE 1:78**

Because of the tender mercy [*eleos* – @@@ GRACE in action] of our God [**God the Father made the @@@ PLAN OF GOD**], with which the Sunrise from on high [**Jesus Christ**] will visit us [**the First Advent is to save us**].

(aa) **Umpire/Mediator** – “*He is the mediator*” [Heb. 9:15]; Job 9:33; 1 Tim. 2:5. Jesus Christ is the bridge as true God and true human.

(bb) **Shiloh** – Ezk. 21:26-27. Representing heavenly peace.

- (cc) **The LORD of Hosts** – Isa. 3:1; 48:2. *See @@@ THEOPHANY.*
- (dd) **Seed of the Woman** – Gen. 3:15. The first prophecy of the Savior.
- (ee) **Pillar of Cloud** – 1 Cor. 10:2; Ex. 13:21-22; 40:34-38.
- (ff) **The Word** – “*In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God*” [Jn. 1:1]; 1 Cor. 1:18.
- (gg) **Holds the Keys** – “*I have the keys of death and Hades*” [Rev. 1:18].
- (15) **Old Testament Documentation.** *See* Heb. 1:5-13 for numerous Old Testament quotations about the Messiah: (1) Heb. 1:5 [Ps. 2:7; 2 Sam. 7:14]; (2) Heb. 1:6 [Ps. 97:7]; (3) Heb. 1:7 [Ps. 104:4]; (4) Heb. 1:8 [Ps. 45:6]; (5) Heb. 1:9 [Ps. 45:7; Isa. 61:1-3]; and (6) Heb. 1:10-13 [Ps. 102:25-27; 110:1].
- (16) **Christ’s 2nd Advent.** Jesus Christ returns to the earth at the 2nd Advent to @@@ WAR against demons and unBelievers and to rule the earth from Jerusalem – Isa. 63:1-6; Zech. 14:3-4; Rev. 1:12-18; 19:11-16.

### ISAIAH 63:1-3

Who is this who comes from Edom, with garments of glowing colors from Bozrah, this One who is majestic in His apparel, marching in the greatness of His strength [**Jesus Christ at the 2nd Advent accompanied by Believers**]? “It is I [**Christ**] who speak in righteousness, mighty to save.” Why is Your apparel red, and Your garments like the one who treads in the wine press? I have trodden the wine trough alone, and from the peoples there was no man with Me [**only Christ died for sin**]. I also trod them [**unBelievers at the 2nd Advent**] in My anger and trampled them in My wrath; and their lifeblood [*netsach (blood; gore)*] is sprinkled on My garments, and I stained all My raiment [**all UnBelievers removed off the earth**].

### REVELATION 19:15

From His mouth [**Christ at the 2nd Advent**] comes a sharp sword, so that with it He may strike down the nations, and He will rule them with a rod of iron; and He treads the wine press of the fierce wrath of God, the Almighty.”

---



## @@@ INDWELLING OF CHRIST

- (1) **Definition.** At the moment of @@@ SALVATION, Jesus Christ Indwells *enoikeo* (indwell) the body of every Church Age Believer as one of the @@@ FORTY THINGS that occurs for the new Believer. This is part of the @@@ MYSTERY information of the Church Age – Col. 1:26-27.

### COLOSSIANS 1:26-27

The mystery [*musterion*] which has been hidden [*apokrupto* (to conceal; to keep secret)] from the *past* ages [*aion* (an unbroken period of time)] and generations [other @@@ DISPENSATIONS], but has now been manifested [*phaneroo* (to make manifest or visible)] to His saints [*hagios* (set apart ones)], to whom God willed [*thelo* (to have in mind; to intend)] to make known [*gnorizo*] what is the riches [*ploutos* (riches; wealth)] of the glory [*doxa*] of this mystery [*musterion* – the @@@ MYSTERY doctrine of the Church Age] among the Gentiles [*ethnos*], which is Christ in you [all Believers have the @@@ INDWELLING OF CHRIST], the hope [*elpis*] of glory [a guarantee of the Believer's @@@ RESURRECTION body and @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY].

- (2) **Baptism by Holy Spirit.** God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT prepares a place in the Believer's body, a Temple, for the Indwelling of Jesus Christ at the instant of @@@ SALVATION – 1 Cor. 3:16; 6:19-20; Rom. 8:11. This fact also serves as a function of Retroactive and Current Positional Truth – Gal. 2:20; 3:37; Rom. 6:1-8; Col. 2:12; 3:1. See @@@ SOTERIOLOGY.
- (3) **Indwelling Understood.** The fact of the Indwelling of Jesus Christ is only appreciated and reflected in the life of the Winner Believer upon reaching spiritual @@@ MATURITY – 2 Cor. 3:14-18; Gal. 4:19; Eph. 3:17; Phil. 1:20; 1 Jn. 3:23-24.

### GALATIANS 4:19

My [Paul] children [*teknon*], with whom I am again [*palin* (repetition of action)] in labor [*odino* (to feel the pains of childbirth)] until Christ is formed [*morphoo*] in you [Paul taught @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE so positive [+P] volition Believers could grow to @@@ MATURITY and have the thinking of Christ].

- (4) **Church Age Only.** Jesus Christ did not Indwell Believers in any of the other @@@ DISPENSATIONS. The prophecy of the Indwelling of Christ for all Believers in the Church Age regardless of their spiritual growth status is found at Jn. 14:19-20; 17:22-23, 26. See @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST.

## JOHN 17:26

And I [Jesus Christ] have made Your [God the Father] name known [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] to them [the @@@ PLAN OF GOD], and will make it known, so that the love [*agape* (to love dearly)] with which You loved [*agapao* (to love dearly)] Me may be in them, and I in them [God has a personal @@@ LOVE for all Believers because they possess His [+R]].

- (5) **Indwelling is Permanent.** The Indwelling of Christ is permanent and cannot be lost by the Believer, even in the state of @@@ REVERSIONISM – Jn. 14:20; 2 Cor. 13:5; Rom. 8:10; Gal. 2:20; Col. 1:27; 1 Jn. 2:24.
- (6) **Fellowship with Christ.** Having a “Fellowship” relationship with Jesus Christ is for the Winner mature Believer *only* – “*you are My friends* (fellowship) *if you do what I command you*” [Jn. 15:13-16], but can be lost by @@@ REVERSIONISM [Rev. 3:20; 2 Cor. 13:5]. Fellowship with Jesus Christ requires that the Believer uses @@@ REBOUND and remains on positive [+P] volition towards @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.

## REVELATION 3:20

Behold [*idou*], I [Jesus Christ] stand [*histemi*] at the door [*thura* – to the Believer’s volition in his @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT] and knock [*krouo* (to knock at a door) – @@@ SUFFERING of warning Divine Discipline]; if [Third Class Condition] anyone hears [*akouo* (to consider what is or has been said)] My voice and opens the door [positive [+P] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], I will come in to him [the Believer] and will dine [*deipneo* (to have supper) – Fellowship with Christ] with him, and he with Me.

- (7) **Shekinah Glory.** The relationship of the Old Testament’s Shekinah Glory and the Indwelling of Christ.
- (a) **God of Israel.** The Hebrew noun *shekinah* (to dwell) [verb *shakan*] and *kabod* (glory) spoke to Jesus Christ as the God of Israel. See, e.g.,

Lev. 26:11-12; Lk. 1:68. Jesus Christ dwelled between two golden cherubs [which represented respectively the Righteousness and Justice of God] set out on opposite sides of the mercy seat lid on top of the Ark [kept in the Holy of Holies] – Ex. 25:21-22. *See* Rom. 3:13-14, 25; Ps. 99:1; Isa. 37:16; Hab. 2:20; 1 Kng. 8:10; 2 Chron. 5:13-14; 7:1-3; 1 Sam. 4:4, 19; Num. 3:4; 26:61; Lev. 10:12; 16:1-2.

- (b) **Exodus.** During the Exodus from Egypt, the visible manifestation of the Shekinah Glory was the cloud and the pillar of fire that led the people. This represented security and guidance for the Hebrews – Ex. 13:21-22; 40:34-38. Other visible signs of the “*glory*” of Christ – Ex. 16:10; Lev. 9:23; Num. 14:10; 16:19, 42; 20:6.

- (c) **Ritual for the Shekinah Glory.**

1. **Day of Atonement.** Only the High Priest was permitted into the Holy of Holies once a year on the Day of Atonement. Under the @@@ MOSAIC LAW the High Priest made an initial animal sacrifice for his own personal sins and then one for the sins of the people – Ex. 40:35; Lev. 16:1-34; Num. 15:25; Heb. 9:6-7.

## HEBREWS 9:6-7

Now when these things have been so prepared, the priests are continually entering the outer tabernacle performing the divine worship, but into the second [*Holy of Holies*], only the high priest *enters* once a year, not without *taking* blood [*aima* – the @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST], which he offers for himself and for the sins [*hamartia*] of the people committed in ignorance [*agnoema*].

2. **The Ark.** When the Jews used the Ark as a “good luck charm” disaster followed – 1 Sam. 4:4-11.

## 1 SAMUEL 4:10-11

So the Philistines fought and Israel was defeated, and every man fled to his tent; and the slaughter was very great, for there fell of Israel thirty thousand foot soldiers. And the ark of God was taken; and the two sons of Eli, Hophni and Phinehas, died.

- (d) **Christ's Relationship.** Christ was “*among*” [Lev. 26:11; Jn. 1:14] the Hebrews, but is “*in*” [2 Cor. 6:16; Rom. 8:11] all Church Age Believers. Paul changed the Old Testament quotation to show this.
- (e) **Shekinah Glory in Structures.** (1) The Tabernacle; (2) Solomon's Temple [Ezk. 10:1-19]; (3) Zerubbabel's Temple [the 2nd Temple]; (4) in the Tribulation [no Shekinah Glory – Matt. 24:15; Rev. 11:1]; (5) Millennium Temple [Isa. 40-47]; (6) in the Third @@@ HEAVEN [Rev. 11:19; 13:6; 15:5; 21:4, 11, 22-23].
- (8) **Purpose of Indwelling.**
  - (a) **Badge.** Insignia of Royalty as a member of the Royal Family of God.
  - (b) **Saved.** A sign of eternal security – Col. 1:7; Heb. 13:5.
  - (c) @@@ REWARDS. Christ as the Escrow Officer – 2 Cor. 5:10.
  - (d) **Motivate.** The Believer's spiritual growth – Gal. 2:20; Rev. 3:20.
  - (e) **Relationship.** Basis of a “God relationship” first – 1 Jn. 2:24.
  - (f) @@@ WALKING. Occupation/Fellowship with Jesus Christ.
  - (g) **Glory.** Basis for glorification of Christ – Jn. 15:5, 8; 17:22-23, 26.
- (9) **Indwelling and Fellowship.** Indwelling never departs the Believer, but constant evaluation is required to reach @@@ MATURITY so that the Believer can have Fellowship with Jesus Christ – 2 Cor. 13:5. *See supra* (6).

## 2 CORINTHIANS 13:5

Test [*peirazo* (to ascertain his quality)] yourselves [@@@ REBOUND] to see if you are in the faith [*pistis* – the positive [+P] volition Believer learning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE to accelerate to @@@ MATURITY]; examine yourselves! Or do you not recognize this about yourselves, that Jesus Christ is in you [for the purpose of Fellowship]—unless indeed you fail the test [*adokimos* (not standing the test) – Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM]?

## @@@ JEALOUSY

- (1) **Definition.** Jealousy is one of the strongest of the mental attitude sins and produces resentment, bitterness, and envy particularly in a rivalry situation. Envy and jealousy are synonyms in the @@@ BIBLE – 1 Cor. 3:3; Prov. 27:3-4. It is in this sense that jealousy is listed as a @@@ SIN in the Ten Commandments [*chamad* (covet; envy)] – Ex. 20:17.

### PROVERBS 27:3-4

A stone is heavy and the sand weighty, but the provocation [*kaas* (anger)] of a fool [*eviyl*] is heavier than both of them. Wrath is fierce and anger is a flood, but who can stand [*amad* (endure; take a stand)] before jealousy [*qinah* (ardor of anger)]?

### 1 CORINTHIANS 3:3

For you [Believers in Corinth] are still fleshly [*sarkikos* (carnal) – the negative [-N] volition carnal Believer under the control of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE]. For since there is jealousy [*zelos*] and strife [*eris* (wrangling; contention)] among you, are you not fleshly [*sarkikos* (carnal) – following the Old Sin Nature], and are you not walking [*peripateo* – @@@ WALKING as a lifestyle] like mere men [*anthropos* (mankind) – imitating the unBeliever]?

- (2) **Old Testament Offerings.** Jealousy was so devastating to civil society that the @@@ MOSAIC LAW had special @@@ REBOUND Levitical offerings to deal with it. One offering was for jealousy with cause and one was for jealousy without cause – Num. 5:11-31.
- (3) **Destroys Love.** “*Jealousy is as severe as Sheol*” [S.S. 8:6] and can destroy Category II [man and woman] and Category III [friendship] @@@ LOVE.
- (4) **Destroys the Soul.** Left unchecked, “*jealousy kills the simple*” [Job 5:2] by destroying the normal functions of the soul – Prov. 14:30.
- (5) **Seeks Revenge.** Jealousy always seeks revenge and “*enrages a man*” [Prov. 6:34-35]. For example, Saul became perpetually jealous of David when the people first praised him for his victory over Goliath. “*Saul looked at David with suspicion from that day on (and sought to kill David)*” [1 Sam. 18:8].

PROVERBS 6:34-35

For jealousy [*qinah*] enrages [*chemah (hot displeasure)*] a man, and he will not spare in the day of vengeance. He will not accept any ransom, nor will he be satisfied [*abath (to yield)*] though you give many gifts.

- (6) **Split a Nation.** Jealousy of one group of people to another group can split a nation apart with hatred – Isa. 11:13. See @@@ REVOLUTION.
- (7) **Plots Against Jesus.** Jealousy motivated the Jewish leadership to plot the murder of Jesus of Nazareth – Matt. 27:18; Mk. 15:10.

MARK 15:10

For he [*Jesus*] was aware that the chief priests had handed [*paradidomi (to deliver one up to custody to be judged)*] Him over [*to Pilate*] because of envy [*phthonos (jealousy)*].

- (8) **Resents Authority.** Because jealousy resents all levels of @@@ AUTHORITY it is a key component of the Satanic evil of “equality” in human @@@ GOOD and is illustrated throughout the @@@ BIBLE, e.g., from Eve’s @@@ SIN to Joseph’s status over his older brothers – Acts 7:9.

ACTS 7:9

The patriarchs became jealous [*zeloo*] of Joseph and sold him into Egypt. *Yet* God was with him.

- (9) **Negative Volition.** Negative [-N] volition manifests itself in a whole host of sins to include jealousy – Rom. 1:27-29.

ROMANS 1:29

Being filled with all unrighteousness, wickedness, greed, evil; full of envy [*phthonos (jealousy)*], murder, strife, deceit, malice; *they are* gossips [*psithuristes (a whisperer; secret slanderer; detractor)*].

- (10) **Rejects Bible Doctrine.** Jealously rejects @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – Acts 13:45; 17:5; Js. 3:14-16.



**JAMES 3:14-16**

But if you [**Believer**] have bitter [*pikros*] jealousy [*zelos*] and selfish ambition [*eritheia*] in your heart, do not be arrogant [*katakauchaomai* (to boast against)] and so lie [*pseudomai* (to speak deliberate falsehoods)] against the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – **@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE**]. This wisdom [*sophia* – thinking in terms of human viewpoint] is not that which comes down from above, but is earthly [*epigeios* (existing upon the earth)], natural [*psuchikos* (soulish) – the Believer is thinking like an unBeliever in the **@@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS**], demonic [*daimoniodes*]. For where jealousy [*zelos*] and selfish ambition exist, there is disorder [*akatastasia* (confusion; instability)] and every evil [*phaulos* (wicked)] thing.

**ACTS 13:45**

But when the Jews saw the crowds [**many Jews were listening to the teaching of Paul about Jesus Christ**], they were filled with jealousy [*zelos* (an envious and contentious rivalry) – **@@@ RELIGION** lusts for big crowds around them] and began contradicting the things spoken by Paul, and were blaspheming [*blasphemeo*].

- (11) **Cosmic Systems.** Living in the **@@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS** produces jealousy and super charges the operation of the **@@@ OLD SIN NATURE** – 1 Tim. 6:3-5.

**1 TIMOTHY 6:3-5**

If anyone advocates a different doctrine [*heterodidaskaleo* (to teach another or a different doctrine) – **@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE**] and does not agree with sound [*hugiaino* (free from error)] words [*logos*], those of our LORD Jesus Christ, and with the doctrine [*didaskalia*] conforming to godliness [*eusebeia* – executing the **@@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE**], he is conceited [*tuphoo* (to envelop with smoke) – the negative [-N] volition Believer in the **@@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS**] and understands nothing; but he has a morbid interest in controversial questions [*zetesis*] and disputes about words, out of which arise envy [*phthonos* (jealousy)], strife, abusive language [*blasphemia* (slander)], evil [*poneros*] suspicions [*zetesis*].

## @@@ JUDGMENT

- (1) **Definition.** To make considered decisions, particularly as it refers to God's ultimate judgment of: (1) unBelievers at the Great White Throne Judgment; and (2) bestowing of @@@ REWARDS to Winner Believers at the Judgment Seat of Christ. *"For God will bring every act to judgment, everything which is hidden, whether good or evil"* [Eccl. 12:14]; Dan. 12:2; Jer. 17:10; Jn. 5:25-28. See @@@ Good.
- (2) **Delegated to Jesus Christ.** As author of the @@@ PLAN OF GOD, God the Father delegated to Jesus Christ, who holds the *"keys of death and Hades"* [Rev. 1:18], the authority for final judgment regarding both Believers and unBelievers – Matt. 25:31-33; Eccl. 12:14. See, e.g., *"He has given all judgment to the Son"* [Jn. 5:22]; *"resurrection of judgment"* [Jn. 5:29]; *"judge the secrets of men"* [Rom. 2:16]; *"in righteousness He judges"* [Rev. 19:11-16]; *"concerning judgment"* [Jn. 16:11]; *"there is only one Lawgiver and Judge, the One who is able to save and to destroy"* [Js. 4:12].

## JOHN 5:25-28

Truly, truly, I say to you, an hour is coming and now is, when the dead [*nekros – the spiritually dead unBelievers Jesus was addressing*] will hear the voice of the Son of God [*Jesus gave the Gospel*], and those who hear [*akouo – hear and believe*] will live [*eternal @@@ LIFE*]. For just as the Father has life in Himself, even so He gave to the Son also to have life in Himself; and He gave Him authority to execute judgment [*krisis*], because He is *the* Son of Man. Do not marvel at this; for an hour is coming [*future judgments by Christ*], in which all who are in the tombs will hear His voice, and will come forth; those who did good *deeds* [*agathos – belief in Christ*] to a resurrection of life, those committed the evil *deeds* [*phaulos (worthless) – rejection of the Gospel*] to a resurrection of judgment [*krisis – before the Great White Throne Judgment*].

## DANIEL 12:2

Many [*rab (abounding in numbers)*] of those who sleep in the dust of the ground [*@@@ DEATH*] will awake [*matsa*], these to everlasting [*olam (without end)*] life [*Believers in Heaven*], but the others to disgrace and everlasting contempt [*deraon (abhorrence) – the unBeliever is judged at the Great White Throne @@@ JUDGMENT and then cast into the Lake of Fire*].

(3) **Great White Throne Judgment.**

- (a) **God Desires Salvation for All Humans.** Under the @@@ PLAN OF GOD, Christ came into the @@@ WORLD at the 1st Advent to save the unBeliever – Jn. 3:17; Lk. 9:56. However, all those that reject God will face an eternal final judgment at the end of the Millennium – the Great White Throne Judgment. *See* 2 Pet. 3:7-9; Rev. 20:11-15.

**JOHN 3:17**

For God did not send [*apostello* – at the 1st Advent of Christ] the Son into the world to judge [*krino*] the world [*kosmos* – the @@@ WORLD here refers to all unBelievers], but that the world might be saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – all humans have equal opportunity to enter into the Kingdom of Heaven] through Him [the work of Christ on the @@@ CROSS].

**2 PETER 3:7-9**

But by His word the present heavens and earth are being reserved [*thesaurizo* (to gather and lay up)] for fire [*pur* (burning up by fire)], kept for the day of judgment [*krisis* (a decision given at a trial)] and destruction of ungodly [*asebes*] men [the unBeliever at the Great White Throne Judgment]. But do not let this one fact escape your notice, beloved, that with the LORD one day is like a thousand years, and a thousand years like one day. The LORD is not slow about His promise [*epaggelia* (announcement)], as some count slowness, but is patient toward you, not wishing for any to perish [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely) – in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD His will is that all should receive @@@ SALVATION] but for all [unBelievers] to come to repentance [*metanoia* (to change the mind) – about Jesus Christ and receive salvation].

- (b) **UnBelievers Only.** The Great White Throne Judgment is for unBelievers only. *See* Heb. 6:2; 9:27; 1 Pet. 4:5.

**HEBREWS 6:2(B)**

And the resurrection [*anastasis* – @@@ RESURRECTION] of the dead [*nekros* – physical death] and eternal [*aionios* (without beginning and without end)] judgment [*krima* – Great White Throne @@@ JUDGMENT for the unBeliever and fallen @@@ ANGELS].

## 1 PETER 4:5

But they [all unBelievers] will give account to Him [Jesus Christ] who is ready to judge [krino] the living and the dead [nekros – the then living and all deceased unBelievers brought before the Great White Throne Judgment].

## HEBREWS 9:27

And inasmuch as it is appointed [apokeimai] for men [anthropos (mankind) – the unBeliever] to die [apothnesko] once [hapax (one time)] and after this comes judgment [krsis – based on justice, the unBeliever will face the Great White Throne Judgment and suffer the “second” @@@ DEATH].

(c) **No Believers Present.** See Rom. 8:1-2; Jn. 3:18.

## ROMANS 8:1-2

Therefore there is now no condemnation [katakrima (a damnatory sentence)] for those who are in Christ Jesus [Believers are in @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST]. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has set you free from the law of sin and of death [thanatos (implied future misery in hell)].

## JOHN 3:18

He who believes [pisteuo] in Him [Jesus Christ] is not judged [krino – only the unBeliever is judged at the Great White Throne Judgment]; he who does not believe has been judged [krino] already, because he has not believed in the name [onoma] of the only begotten [monogenes (single of its kind; uniquely born)] Son of God [the unBeliever is unacceptable to the Justice of God because he does not possess the Righteousness [+R] of God].

(d) **The Indictment.** Because Jesus Christ died for all @@@ SIN, the unBeliever’s sins are not the basis for his appearance at the end of the Millennium before the Great White Throne Judgment of Rev. 20:11-15. Sin is not mentioned at all. The Divine indictment is that the unBeliever does not have God’s Righteousness [+R] and the unBeliever’s personal righteousness [-r] consisting of accumulated worthless human @@@ GOOD works are absolutely insufficient for an eternal relationship with God. See Heb. 6:2; 9:27; Mk. 9:47-49.

## REVELATION 20:11-15

Then I [Apostle John] saw a great white throne [*thronos* – the Great White Throne Judgment] and Him [Jesus Christ] who sat upon it, from whose presence earth and heaven fled away, and no place was found for them. And I saw the dead [*nekros* – all unBelievers], the great and the small, standing before the throne, and books were opened [recording all the good deeds of each unBeliever]; and another book was opened, which is *the book* of life; and the dead were judged from the things which were written in the books, according to their deeds [*ergon* – all their good deeds which equals [-r]]. And the sea [*thalassa*] gave up the dead [*nekros*] which were in it [the Nephilim killed in the Great Flood and held in a compartment of @@@ HELL], and death [*thanatos* (death with the implied idea of future misery in Hell)] and Hades gave up the dead which were in them [all the unBeliever humans in Torments]; and they were judged [*krino* (to separate)], every one of them according to their [good] deeds [*ergon* – the indictment at the Great White Throne Judgment lists the good deeds of the unBeliever, not his @@@ SIN]. Then death [*thanatos* – spiritual @@@ DEATH] and Hades were thrown [*ballo*] into the lake [*limne* (a lake)] of fire [*pur* (burning)]. This is the second [*deuteros*] death [*thanatos*], the lake of fire [eternal separation from God in the Lake of Fire]. And if anyone's name was not found written [*grapho*] in the book [*biblos*] of life [*zoe* – the unBeliever has been blotted out of the Book of Life], he was thrown [*ballo*] into the lake of fire.

- (e) **On Hold.** Currently, all deceased unBelievers are being held in a compartment of @@@ HELL called Torments, waiting to be brought before the Great White Throne Judgment – 2 Pet. 2:9; Dan. 12:2.

## 2 PETER 2:9

The LORD knows how to rescue the godly from temptation, and to keep the unrighteous [*adikos* – the unBelievers] under punishment [*kolazo* – at physical @@@ DEATH all unBelievers go to @@@ HELL where they await the final judgment at the Great White Throne] for the day of judgment [*krisis*].

- (f) All @@@ DEMONS and the Nephilim will also be cast into the “*Lake of Fire*” [Rev. 20:11-15]; 2 Pet 2:4. Those demons who fathered the Nephilim [see Gen. 6:1-6] are in Tartarus, “*kept in eternal bonds under darkness for the judgment of the great day*” [Jude 6].

## 2 PETER 2:4

For if God did not spare [*pheidomai*] angels [*aggelos*] when they sinned [*hamartano* – the demons that had sex with human women and produced the half human/half angel Nephilim], but cast them into hell [*tartaroo* (the abode of the wicked) – Tartarus is a compartment of @@@ HELL] and committed them to pits of darkness [*zophos* (used of the darkness of the nether world)], reserved [*tereo* (guarded)] for judgment [*karsis* (a trial) – the final judgment and sentence execution at the Great White Throne Judgment].

- (g) **The Lake of Fire.** Called *Tophet/GeHinnom* (place of fire), the “**Lake of Fire**” [Rev. 20:11-15] is where all unBelievers, Nephilim, and demons are sent following the Great White Throne Judgment. They are eternally separated in *neshiyah* (oblivion) [Ps. 88:12] from God under spiritual @@@ DEATH – Matt. 5:21-22, 30; 25:4; 2 Thess. 1:7-9; Isa. 40:43; 66:24. Rejecting @@@ GRACE, the basis for their indictment is that they do not possess God’s Righteousness [+R] – Jn. 3:18-21, 36; Heb. 9:27; Eccl. 9:9-10; 12:14; Matt. 8:11-12; 28-32; Dan. 12:2. Descriptions of the Lake of Fire are set in language of accommodation. Jesus used the word *gehenna* – Mk. 9:43, 48-49; Lk. 12:5; Matt. 10:28; 23:5. The earthly *gehenna* was outside of Jerusalem where refuse and animal remains were burned. Formally it was where the Jews would sacrifice their children to “gods” – Jer. 7:31. See @@@ HELL.

## MATTHEW 10:28

Do not fear those who kill the body but are unable to kill the soul [*psuche*]; but rather fear Him [God] who is able to destroy [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely, abolish)] both soul and body in hell [*geenna* – the Lake of Fire].

## ECCLESIASTES 9:9-10

Enjoy life with the woman whom you love all the days of your fleeting life which He [God] has given to you under the sun; for this is your reward in life and in your toil in which you have labored under the sun. Whatever your hand finds to do, do *it* with all your might; for there is no activity [*maaweh* (work; business)] or planning [*chashab* (to invent; to think about)] or knowledge [*daath* (premeditation; knowledge)] or wisdom [*chokmah*] in Sheol [*sheol* – the final Lake of Fire] where you [the unBeliever] are going.



- (4) **The Judgment Seat of Christ.** All Church Age Believers will be called before the “*judgment seat of Christ*” [2 Cor. 5:10] following the @@@ **RAPTURE** to give an account for the @@@ **TIME** God provided to them to reach spiritual @@@ **MATURITY**. Since all Believers have the potential for temporal @@@ **REWARDS** in time and for unimaginable eternal rewards in eternity [Rev. 3:11; 22:12; 1 Cor. 2:9; 3:11-15; 9:24-25; 2 Cor. 4:16-18; Rom. 14:10-14; Jn. 12:26; 2 Tim. 2:12; 4:8; 1 Pet. 1:7-8; 5:4; Js. 1:12; 1 Thess. 2:19], @@@ **HEAVEN** is a place of vast inequality for Believers. As with a flat pyramid, most Believers will find themselves at the base levels with only a few at the higher levels. Believers in other @@@ **DISPENSATIONS** will also have their own Judgment Seat of Christ evaluation. For instance, all Old Testament Believers and deceased Tribulational Believers will be evaluated just prior to the 2nd Advent of Christ. Millennial Believers will be evaluated later at their Judgment Seat.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:10

For we must all appear [*phaneroo* – all Church Age Believers in their @@@ **RESURRECTION** bodies] before the judgment seat [*bema* (raised place of the official seat of a judge)] – this event occurs immediately after the @@@ **RAPTURE**] of Christ, so that each one may be recompensed [*kolumbao*] for his deeds in the body [*soma* – the Believer’s level of @@@ **MATURITY** attained while he was on the earth], according [*kata* (according to a norm or standard)] to what he has done [*prasso* (to practice)], whether good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good produced in the @@@ **CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE**] or bad [*phaulos* (worthless) – human @@@ **GOOD** works produced by the Believer in the @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS**].

## 2 TIMOTHY 4:8

In the future [*loipoi*] there is laid up [*apokeimai* (to be laid away)] for me [*the Roman’s would execute Paul soon*] the crown [*stephanos* (a wreath of garland which was given as a prize to victors in public games)] of righteousness [*dikaiosune*], which the LORD, the righteous Judge, will award [*apodidomi* (to deliver)] to me on that day [*hemera* – Paul’s @@@ **REWARDS** at the Judgment Seat of Christ]; and not only to me, but also to all who have loved [*agapao* (to love dearly)] His appearing [*epiphaneia* – all Believers who reach spiritual @@@ **MATURITY**].

## @@@ LEAVEN

- (1) **Definition.** Any substance, like yeast, used to foment fermentation in liquid or dough is called leaven. The Greek word is *zume*.
- (2) **Human Works.** In the @@@ BIBLE leaven is most often used to illustrate the point that legalism and human effort will cancel out @@@ GRACE for @@@ SALVATION and also hinder the teaching @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – Gal. 5:9. However, *see infra* (5) and (6).

## GALATIANS 5:9

A little leaven [*zume* – @@@ RELIGION] leavens the whole lump of dough.

- (3) **The Passover.** Per the @@@ MOSAIC LAW, no leaven was to be used for the food or drink in the Passover ritual because leaven was analogous to human @@@ GOOD works and in opposition to the Divine work of God who alone brought the Hebrews out of their status of slavery in Egypt [Ex. 12:8, 15, 19-20] and it is He alone who provides @@@ SALVATION.

## EXODUS 12:19-20

Seven days there shall be no leaven [*weor*] found in your houses; for whoever eats what is leavened, that person shall be cut off from the congregation of Israel, whether *he is* an alien or a native of the land. You shall not eat anything leavened; in all your dwellings you shall eat unleavened bread [*matstsah*].

- (4) **Leaven and Religion.** The condemnation of leaven was used by Jesus in His earthly ministry to underscore the evil of the religious Jews who mixed human philosophy with the dogmatic truth of the @@@ BIBLE [the Sadducees] and/or their religious man-made traditions with the Bible [the Pharisees] – “*But in vain do they worship Me, teaching as doctrines the precepts of men*” [Matt. 15:9]; Mk. 8:15; Lk. 12:1; Matt. 16:6, 12; 22:29-30.

## MATTHEW 16:6

And Jesus said to them, “Watch out [*horao* (to take heed)] and beware [*prosecho* (to turn the mind to)] of the leaven [*zume* – legalism and @@@ RELIGION] of the Pharisees and Sadducees.”

## MATTHEW 16:12

Then they [**Jesus' disciples**] understood that He did not say to beware of the leaven of bread, but of the teaching [*didache* (that which is taught)] of the Pharisees and Sadducees [**teaching legalism, lies, and @@@ RELIGION**].

- (5) **Salvation Faith.** Jesus Christ used the concept of leaven to represent the fact that only a tiny amount of human positive [**+P**] volition @@@ **FAITH** is sufficient for @@@ **SALVATION** – Lk. 13:20-21; Matt. 13:33.

## LUKE 13:20-21

And again He [**Jesus speaking to a crowd of unBelievers**] said, “To what shall I compare [*homoioo* (to be made like)] the kingdom of God [**Jesus is explaining how to receive @@@ SALVATION into the kingdom of God**]? It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid [*krupto* (to escape notice)] in three pecks [*saton* (a kind of dry measure; 3 gallons)] of flour until it was all leavened [**salvation results from only a tiny amount of @@@ FAITH**].”

- (6) **Thinking Doctrine.** Believers are to be “unleavened” in their thinking which means to reject the human and demonic viewpoints of the @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS** and human @@@ **GOOD** – 1 Cor. 5:5-7.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 5:5-7

*I [Paul] have decided to deliver [paradidomi (to give into the hands of another)] such a one [a Believer having sexual relations with his own mother] to Satan for the destruction [olethros] of his flesh [sarx – the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH], so that his [human] spirit [pneuma] may be saved [sozo (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven] in the day of the LORD Jesus [at the @@@ RAPTURE]. Your boasting [kauchema] is not good [some members of the congregation had boasted about this person]. Do you not know that a little leaven [zume] leavens the whole lump of dough? Clean out [ekkathairo (to clean thoroughly)] the old leaven so that you may be a new lump, just as you are in fact unleavened [azumos (free from leaven) – @@@ LEAVEN]. For Christ our Passover also has been sacrificed [thuo].*

- (7) **Tribulation Apostasy.** Leaven defines rampant religious apostasy in the Tribulation. See @@@ **DISPENSATIONS**.
-

## @@@ LIFE

- (1) **Definition.** Only God can create a human life, not man [Eccl. 11:5]. Human life consists of a biological **physical body** which is *material* and *real*, coupled with a **human soul** which is *immaterial* and *real*. Human life for the Believer in eternity will consist of a @@@ **SOUL & SPIRIT** encased in a @@@ **RESURRECTION** body. Note: Animals lack souls – Lev. 17:10-14.
- (2) **Non-Biblical Views on Human Life.**
  - (a) **Traducianism.** Human life, which consists of the soul encased in biological life, is transmitted solely through natural generation processes via human copulation to create a new human being.
  - (b) **Creationism.** At some point – from initial conception to actual birth – human life is imputed directly by God to the biological life with its waiting “format soul.”
  - (c) **Metempsychosis.** This is reincarnation. The soul goes from the old human body at physical @@@ **DEATH** into a new human body that is born to new parents. *See @@@ RELIGION.*
  - (d) **Pre-existence of the Soul.** The soul exists in @@@ **HEAVEN** prior to being imputed to the human biological body by God.
  - (e) **Evolution.** Human life/biological life developed randomly through chance and natural selection, without God. *See Ps. 14:1; 100:3.* Evolution denies the existence of an immaterial human soul.
- (3) **Biblical View.** God imputes the “breath of life” [*neshamah (the breath of life; to breathe)*] to the viable fetus’ biological life at the point it emerges from the mother’s womb at birth which immediately activates an immaterial soul into reality/existence. Thus, there is no soul/human life in the womb as the fetus grows and develops biologically during pregnancy. Only the biological life of the fetus and a format for the soul is located in the womb. Furthermore, while human life only comes directly from God at the point of birth, the biological makeup of the mortal body consists of the same chemical elements that make up earth’s “*dust*” [Gen. 3:19] and are set up and configured by God through His natural laws of biology [Job 3:3, 10; Isa. 49:5; Ps. 139:13-16].

**JOB 3:3, 10**

Let the day perish on which I was to be born [*yalad* (to be born) – human life given], and the night *which* said, “A boy is conceived [*harah* (to become pregnant)]” . . . Because it did not shut the opening of my *mother’s* womb [*biological life precedes human life*], or hide trouble from my eyes.

- (a) **Hebrew Words.** Old Testament words used to describe God’s Sovereign act of creating a human life include: *ruach* (breath; soul life; spirit) and *neshamah* (the breath of life; to breathe).
- (b) **Soul Activated.** The soul is activated via the *neshamah* and the word *bara* (to make something out of nothing) describes the entire package of the soul coming into existence out of “nothing” – Isa. 43:7; Ezk. 37:6, 10. “*God in whose hand are your life-breath*” [Dan. 5:23]. This pattern is set with Adam in Gen. 2:7 [*neshamah chay* (breath of lives)], and is in the plural – “*the breath of lives*.” Also, with perfectly created Adam and Eve, God imputed to them a human spirit.

**EZEKIEL 37:6, 10**

“I [*God*] will put sinews on you, make flesh grow back on you, cover you with skin and put breath [*ruach* (breath of the living; breathing being in man)] in you that you may come alive [*chayah* (to live; to remain alive)]; and you will know that I am the LORD ....” So I [*Ezekiel*] prophesied as He commanded me, and the breath [*ruach*] came into them, and they came to life [*chayah*] and stood on their feet, an exceedingly great army.

**ISAIAH 43:7**

Everyone [*the Believer*] who is called [*qara* (to call out)] by My name [*God*], and whom I have created [*bara* (to make something out of nothing) – the human soul] for My glory, whom I have formed [*yatsar* (formed) – biological life], even whom I have made [*awah* (to make; to fashion) – the human being].

- (c) **Biological Life.** In contrast, the Hebrew word *yatser* (formed) is used to describe the formation of biological life. In addition, the biological body of the first woman, Eve, was *banah* (built) from the chemical elements of her husband’s rib [DNA] per Gen. 2:22.

- (d) **God Imputes Human Life.** For all humans after Adam and Eve the spark or breath of life *neshamah* is imputed to the biological life/format soul [located in the brain] when the biological fetus emerges from the mother's womb at birth and is viable – “*O God, God of the spirits [ruach (soul life)] of all flesh*” [Num. 16:22].
- (e) **Biological Functions.** Reflex motility in/of the fetus in the womb is the natural functioning of biological life. Thus, the fetus' motility, neurogenic function, and reflex are actions of biological life only. Lk. 1:41-44, deals with biological life which “*leaped in her womb*” – the mother's response to excitement she experienced caused the fetus in her womb to react as a motor function only. See Gen. 2:7; Ps. 100:3; 139:13; Isa. 42:5; Eccl. 3:20; 5:15-16; 12:7; Job 3:3, 10; 33:4.

## GENESIS 2:7

Then the LORD God [*elohim* – Jesus Christ] formed [*yatsar* (to form something out of existing materials)] man of dust [*aphar*] from the ground [biological @@@ LIFE], and breathed [*naphach* (to blow; to breathe)] into his nostrils the breath [*neshamah*] of life [*chay* (living) – in the plural and should be (lives)]; and man became a living [*chay*] being [*nephesh* (soul) – Christ went to the @@@ CROSS to save the human soul not the body].

## PSALM 139:13

For You [God] formed [*qanah*] my inward parts; You wove [*sakak*] me [biological @@@ LIFE] in my mother's womb.

## JOB 33:4

The Spirit of God has made me [biological life], and the breath [*neshamah*] of the Almighty gives me life [*chayah* (to give life) – human soul life].

## ISAIAH 42:5

Thus says God the LORD, who created the heavens and stretched them out, who spread out the earth and its offspring, who gives breath [*neshamah* (the breath of life; to breathe)] to the people on it and spirit [*ruach* (soul life)] to those who walk in it.



**ECCLESIASTES 12:7**

Then [at physical @@@ DEATH] the dust [*aphar* – the elements of biological @@@ LIFE] will return [*shub*] to the earth as it was, and the spirit [*ruach* (soul life)] will return to God who gave [*nathan* (to bestow)] it.

**PSALM 100:3**

Know that the LORD Himself is God; it is He who has made [*awah* (to make)] us, and not we ourselves [only God can create life]; *we are* His people and the sheep of His pasture.

- (4) **Mosaic Law.** The Jews always understood the @@@ MOSAIC LAW truth that there was no human life in the womb, only biological life – Ex. 21:22-25. The penalty for “killing” the fetus when two men were brawling and bumped into a pregnant woman causing a miscarriage was a monetary fine, not capital punishment. If there was a “human being” in the woman’s womb the penalty would have been death per “*an eye for any eye*” [Lev. 24:19-21]. Also, the husband of the pregnant woman who had the miscarriage could sue them in civil court for monetary damages. *See also*, Hammurabi’s Code. Law 209.

**EXODUS 21:22-25**

If men struggle [*natsah* (fighting)] with each other and strike [*nagaph* (to smite)] a woman with child [*hareh* (a pregnant woman)] so that she gives birth [*valad* (to bring forth)] prematurely [*vatsa* (bear out) – a miscarriage], yet there is no injury [*ason* (hurt; harm) – to the woman], he [the man fighting] shall surely be fined [*anash* (paying a fee)] as the woman’s husband may demand of him, and he shall pay [*nathan* (to give; bestow)] as the judges decide. But if there is *any further* injury [*ason* – to the woman], then you shall appoint *as a penalty* life for life, eye for eye, tooth for tooth, hand for hand, foot for foot, burn for burn, wound for wound, bruise for bruise.

- (5) **Omniscience of God.** While human life is clearly described as coming into being out from [*mibeten* (out from; away from; separated from)] the mother’s womb this does not negate God’s Omniscience which always “*knew from the beginning*” [Jn. 6:64], in eternity past, all about every person that would ever come into being – Isa. 44:2, 24; 49:1, 5; Job 1:21; 3:3, 10; Jer. 1:5; Ps. 22:9-10; 139:16; Rom. 9:8-11. *See @@@ PLAN OF GOD.*

## PSALM 139:16

Your eyes [God] have seen my unformed substance [*golem* (embryo; fetus)]; and in Your book were all written the days that were ordained [*yatsar* (to form)] *for me*, when as yet there was not one of them [God knew all about each human billions and billions of years ago].

## ROMANS 9:8-11

That is, it is not the children [*teknon*] of the flesh [*sarx* – unBelievers] who are children [*teknon*] of God, but the children [*teknon*] of the promise [*epaggeelia* (the act of promising a good or blessing) – @@@ SALVATION by @@@ FAITH in the coming Christ] are regarded [*logizomai* (to count)] as descendants [*sperma* (the seed of Abraham)]. For this is the word [*logos*] of promise [*epaggeelia* (the act of promising a good or blessing)]: “At this time I will come, and Sarah shall have a son.” And not only this, but there was Rebekah also, when she had conceived [*koite* (the marriage bed; sexual intercourse)] *twins* by one man, our father Isaac; for though *the twins* were not yet born [*gennao* (of women giving birth to children)] and had not done [*prasso* (to practice)] anything good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] or bad [*phaulos* (wicked)], so that God’s purpose [*prosthesis* (setting forth a thing)] according to *His* choice [*ekloge* (the act of picking out; choosing)] would stand, not because of works [*ergon* – salvation cannot be obtained by human works of @@@ RELIGION] but because of Him who calls [*kaleo* – ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT].

## JEREMIAH 1:5

Before I [God] formed [*yatsar* (to form; to fashion) – God forms biological @@@ LIFE by means of His laws of biology] you [Jeremiah] in the womb [*beten* (belly; womb)] I knew [*yada* (to perceive and see; to know) – God in His Omniscience knew all about Jeremiah in eternity past] you, and before you were born I consecrated [*qadash* (to set apart)] you [Jeremiah, a positive [+P] volition Believer was selected to be a Prophet to Judah].

## PSALM 22:10

Upon You [God] I was cast [*shalak* (to be propelled)] from birth; You have been my God from [*mibeten* (out from) – when God imputed the breath of life to biological @@@ LIFE] my mother’s [*em*] womb [*behten*].

- (6) **Old Sin Nature.** The @@@ OLD SIN NATURE is passed down genetically through Adam, who intentionally committed the first @@@ SIN, to all subsequent humans – Ps. 51:5; 1 Cor. 15:21-22; Gen. 3:15; 5:3; 1 Tim. 2:13-14; Rom. 5:12, 17-19. The mechanics for how the Old Sin Nature is passed down to all subsequent humans is as follows: The male sex cell divides into sperm cells [23 chromosomes each] without loss of genetic material. However, the female sex cell, through meiosis and polar bodies, casts off “contaminated” genetic nuclei leaving an ovum with 23 pure chromosomes. When the contaminated male sperm links to the pure female ovum during copulation, it immediately contaminates the new biological life [46 chromosomes] that begins to form in the mother’s womb. Further, at the same time that God imputes human life *neshamah* to the biological life at birth, making each human physically alive, God also imputes Adam’s original sin to the genetically formed Old Sin Nature, making all babies spiritually dead.

### ROMANS 5:17

For if by the transgression [*paraptoma* (a lapse or deviation from truth; misdeed)] of the one [Adam’s original @@@ SIN], death [*thanatos* (physical death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – spiritual @@@ DEATH] reigned [*basileuo* (to be king)] through the one, much more those [all Believers] who receive the abundance of grace [*charis* – @@@ GRACE of God] and of the gift [*dorea* (a gift without cost)] of righteousness [*dikaiosisune* – God’s Righteousness [+R] given to the Believer at @@@ SALVATION] will reign in life through [*dia* (by means of)] the One, Jesus Christ.

- (7) **Jesus’ Remarks.** Jesus corrected the rude woman who interrupted Him during a Bible class about venerating His mother for giving Him “life in the womb.” Jesus Christ retorted with the true issue of being “*born again*” [Jn. 3:5-7], not conceived again, into the family of God. The first birth is the beginning of human life. See Lk. 11:27-28; Ps. 139:16; Rom. 9:8-11.

### LUKE 11:27-28

While Jesus was saying these things, one of the women in the crowd raised [*epairo*] her voice [*phone* – she rudely interrupted Him as He was teaching] and said to Him, “Blessed is the womb that bore You and the breasts at which You nursed.” But He said, “On the contrary [*oun* (wrong)], blessed are those who hear [*akouo*] the word of God [the @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE of @@@ SALVATION] and observe [*phulasso* (to keep watch; to guard)] it.”

- (8) **Prolonging Life.** Respecting the @@@ PLAN OF GOD can extend the physical life of the **Winner** Believer – Prov. 3:1-2; 10:27; Eccl. 7:17-18.

### PROVERBS 3:1-2

My son, do not forget my [Solomon taught and wrote @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] teaching [*torah* – Bible Doctrine], but let your heart [*leb* – the Believer's positive [+P] volition decisions from the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT] keep my commandments [*mitsvah* (instruction)]; for length of days [*yom*] and years of life [*chay*] and peace [*shalom* (prosperity) – @@@ MATURITY and @@@ REWARDS] they will add to you.

### ECCLESIASTES 7:17-18

Do not be excessively [*rabah*] wicked [*rasha* (to act wickedly) – stay out of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS] and do not be a fool [*sakal* (foolish) – do not reject @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]. Why should you [a Believer] die [*muth*] before your time [*eth* – the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH]? It is good that you grasp one thing [Bible Doctrine] and also not let go of the other [living a long and fruitful life in @@@ TIME to reach @@@ MATURITY and receive @@@ REWARDS]; for the one who fears God [*yare* (to revere) – the Believer on positive [+P] volition] comes forth with both of them.

### PROVERBS 10:27

The fear [*yirah* (respect) – @@@ FEAR] of the LORD prolongs [*yasaph* (to add; to increase)] life [*yom* (days) – the life of the Believer on positive [+P] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], but the years [*shaneh*] of the wicked [*rasha*] will be shortened [*qatsar*].

- (9) **Believer's Life.** The Believer must use the time God has provided to him to reach @@@ MATURITY in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT – “*though our outer man is decaying* (biological life), *yet our inner man* (the soul) *is being renewed day by day* (spiritual growth)” [2 Cor. 4:16]; Prov. 8:33.

### PROVERBS 8:33

Heed instruction [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] and be wise [reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY], and do not neglect it [positive [+P] volition].

---

## @@@ LOVE

- (1) **Definition.** As in the @@@ BIBLE the word *love* in the English language is used to describe a variety of categories of thought. The context will determine the meaning. For the Christian there are four categories of love.
  - (a) **Category I To God** – Deut. 6:5; Rom. 8:35; 1 Jn. 4:19.
  - (b) **Category II To Spouse** – S.S. 8:6-7.
  - (c) **Category III To Friends** – Jn. 15:13; 2 Sam. 1:26; Jn. 11:5.
  - (d) **Category IV To Mankind** – Jn. 3:16. Maintaining a relaxed mental attitude to others – Gal. 6:10. This is the “technical” use of *agape* love denoting *impersonal love*.
- (2) **Two Greek Words.** There are two primary words translated from the Greek as “love” in the New Testament – *agape* and *philos*. While both words are regularly used to denote “personal love” [e.g., in Phm. 7, *agape (to love dearly)* is used to describe the mature Believer’s personal love towards God], in many other passages the word *agape* is employed solely in a *technical sense* to describe an *agape impersonal love* attitude, not personal love, towards other members of the human race. **Understanding this distinction is critical.**
- (3) **Impersonal Love.** The noun *agape* and verb *agapao* are often employed to describe a technical theological concept which is the preeminent of the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES for the Believer. When used in this manner, *agape* is properly defined as “*agape impersonal love*,” a relaxed mental attitude free of any sin regardless of the circumstances. In short, *agape impersonal love* places all the focus and attention on the integrity of the subject, not the attractiveness, or unattractiveness, of the object.
  - (a) **Subject Dependent.** Since *agape impersonal love* is dependent on the subject’s character [the Believer employing it in a given situation] and not the object’s character, the object can be hateful, deceitful, jealous, vindictive, or spiteful, and yet the subject does not react/respond with any of the various types of @@@ SIN – verbal, mental, or overt. Per *infra* (c), *agape impersonal love* is fueled by Bible Doctrine possessed by the subject, not the attractiveness of the object. See 1 Cor. 13:4-7.

I [subject] love [transitive verb, *agapao*] you [object].

– Impersonal Love –

1 CORINTHIANS 13:4-7

Love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE] is patient [*makrothumeo* (to persevere bravely under unjust treatment)], love [*agape* – impersonal love] is kind [*chresteuomai* (to show one's self mild)] and is not jealous; love [*agape* – impersonal love] does not brag [*perpereuomai* (to boast one's self)] and is not arrogant [*phusioo* (to cause to swell up)], does not act unbecomingly [*aschemoneo* (has good manners, not rude)]; it does not seek its own [not preoccupied with self], is not provoked [*paroxumo* (to arouse to anger)], does not take into account a wrong suffered, does not rejoice in unrighteousness [*adikia* (injustice)], but rejoices with the truth [*aletheia* – the @@@ PLAN OF GOD]; bears [*stego* (to keep secret the errors or faults of others)] all things, believes [*pisteuo*] all things, hopes [*elpizo*] all things, endures [*hupomeno* (to persevere under misfortunes and trials)] all things.

- (b) **Turn the Cheek.** With the employment of *agape impersonal love*, the Believer cannot get upset, frustrated, jealous, disappointed, revengeful, etc. For example, if the object lies about the Believer, the Believer employs *agape impersonal love* and doesn't respond in kind – he employs the idiom of “turn the other cheek” – “*whoever slaps you on your right cheek, turn the other to him also*” [Matt. 5:38-44]. Note: The command to “turn the other cheek” does not apply to an actual physical attack. In such a case, the Believer is authorized to employ self-defense which he can do while maintaining a relaxed mental attitude towards the offending perpetrator – Lk. 6:29-36.

MATTHEW 5:44

But I [Jesus] say to you [His disciples], love [*agapao* – impersonal @@@ LOVE] your enemies [*echthros* (a man that is hostile)] and pray for those who persecute [*dioko*] you.



## MATTHEW 5:38-39

You have heard that it was said [the @@@ MOSAIC LAW], “An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth.” But I [Jesus Christ] say to you, do not resist [anthistemi (to set one’s self against)] an evil [poneros] person; but whoever slaps you on your right cheek, turn the other to him also [idiom for agape impersonal @@@ LOVE].

- (c) **Origin.** The availability of *agape impersonal love* only comes from maximum @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE [epignosis (full knowledge)] in the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT and is fully available to the Winner Believer at spiritual @@@ MATURITY – 1 Jn. 3:23; Phil. 1:9; 2 Pet. 1:8. Again, the motivation for the Believer to use *agape impersonal love* in the face of the exigencies of life flows from Bible Doctrine – 1 Jn. 4:15-21; 2 Cor. 5:14; Matt. 5:44. See @@@ FAITH.

## 1 JOHN 3:23

This is His [God the Father] commandment [entole (an order)], that we believe [pisteuo] in the name of His Son Jesus Christ, and love [agape – impersonal @@@ LOVE] one another [allelon (one another of the same kind) – other Believers under the Law of Love], just as He [Jesus] commanded us.

- (d) **Number One.** The use of *agape impersonal love* is the strongest of all the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES – 1 Cor. 13:13.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 13:13

But now faith [pistis – @@@ FAITH/Rest], hope [elpis (confident expectation)], love [agape – impersonal @@@ LOVE], abide [meno (remain)] these three [@@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES]; but the greatest [megas] of these is love [agape – impersonal love is the greatest of the three].

- (e) **Commanded.** Believers are commanded to have *agape impersonal love* for all mankind in all circumstances of life, pleasant or unpleasant – “*love your enemies, do good to those who hate you*” [Lk. 6:27]. See Gal. 5:14; Mk. 12:31; 1 Jn. 3:23; 4:7, 11, 20-21; Lk. 10:27; Matt. 5:38-39; 22:39; Jn. 15:12, 17; Js. 2:8; Lev. 19:18; Rom. 13:9; Lk. 6:35.

- (f) **Take Up Your Cross.** The command to “take up your cross” is a command to have *agape impersonal love* – Matt. 10:38-40; Mk. 8:34. In turn, the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE is said to be “*crucified with Him*” [Rom. 6:6], motivating the Believer to use @@@ REBOUND to regain the Filling of the Holy Spirit – 1 Jn. 3:6; Gal. 5:16.

## MATTHEW 10:38-40

And he [Believer] who does not take his cross [the @@@ CROSS here represents testing via Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing] and follow after Me [Christ] is not worthy of Me. He who has found his life [*psuche* (soul) – the Believer saved by @@@ GRACE] will lose [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely)] it [the Believer should reject the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS of the @@@ WORLD], and he who has lost his life [*psuche* (soul) – the Believer that is positive [+P] to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE will turn away from the Cosmic Systems] for My sake [*heneka* (on account of)] will find it [@@@ REWARDS for the positive [+P] volition Believer].

- (4) **Imitation by UnBelievers.** An unBeliever can attempt to imitate *agape impersonal love* by stoicism, denial, meditation, or other pseudo activities, but only the mature Believer [Filled with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] can rely on reverse rationales of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE and glorify God in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT and not self in stoicism. See Matt. 5:38-39.
- (5) **Brotherly Love.** Believers are commanded to have *philadelphia* (brotherly love) for other Believers – 1 Pet. 1:22. This command is based on the fact that all Believers are in @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST, but in many instances the apostate Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM must be “loved” [*agape impersonal love*] from afar – @@@ SEPARATION. In other cases, the Believer is to greet Winner Believers “*with a holy kiss*” [Rom. 16:16] and to rejoice in their company – what King David called the “*majestic ones* (mature Believers) *in whom is all my delight*” [Ps. 16:3].

## 1 PETER 1:22

Since you [Believers] have in obedience to the truth purified your souls [advanced to spiritual @@@ MATURITY] for a sincere love [*philadelphia* (brotherly love)] of the brethren, fervently love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] one another from the heart [*kardia* – recognizing that all share God’s [+R]].

- (6) **Personal Love.** Personal love puts all the emphasis on the attractiveness of the object. Personal love is commonly denoted in the @@@ BIBLE by either the noun *philos* (to have personal attachment as a matter of sentiment or feeling; affection for) [verb *phileo*] or the general use of the word *agape* (to love dearly). Richard Trench, *Synonyms of the New Testament*, states that *philos* is the “stronger” expression for personal love in the Greek than the general use of the word *agape* (to love dearly) [the non-technical use of *agape* love]. Indeed, the only personal *philos* love which operates with absolute virtue is the Believer’s love for God because the @@@ TRINITY, as the object, is absolutely Perfect. Of course, the capacity for the Believer to use personal *philos* love for Perfect God only comes via @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – Jn. 11:33-37; 16:27; Js. 2:23. God’s Perfect characteristics progressively revealed by growing to spiritual @@@ MATURITY attract the Winner Believer and motivate him to learn even more Bible Doctrine.

I [subject] love [transitive verb, *phileo* or *agapao*] **YOU** [object].

– **Personal Love** –

**JOHN 11:33-37**

When Jesus therefore saw her [**Mary**] weeping [*klaio* (to mourn; to weep)], and the Jews who came with her *also* weeping, He was deeply moved in spirit [*pneuma*] and was troubled [*tarasso* (to agitate)], and said, “Where have you laid him [**Lazarus**]?” They said to Him, “LORD, come and see.” Jesus wept [*dakruo* (to shed tears) – legitimate @@@ EMOTION]. So the Jews were saying, “See how He loved [*phileo* (personal love)] him!” But some of them said, “Could not this man, who opened the eyes of the blind man, have kept this man also from dying [*apothnesko*]?”

**JOHN 16:27**

For the Father Himself loves [*phileo* (personal love)] you [**the Believer**], because you have loved [*phileo* (personal love)] Me and have believed that I came forth from the Father.

- (a) **The Tandem.** Personal love for God motivates *agape impersonal love* for all mankind. Note: The context of the Bible passage is always critical in determining if *agape* is used for personal love or **impersonal love**, as in the multiple uses of the word in 1 Jn. 4:20, where the verb *agapao* is used to make the point of the tandem relationship. In fact, in 1 Jn. 4:20, it is used once in the technical sense of *agape impersonal love* and then twice in the general sense of *agape* love (to love dearly).

## 1 JOHN 4:20

If someone [a Believer] says, “I love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] God,” and hates [*miseo* (to detest; pursue with hatred)] his brother [*adelphos* – this Believer fails to use *agape impersonal @@@ LOVE* towards his fellow Believer], he is a liar [*pseustes*]; for the one who does not love [*agapao* – maintains an *agape impersonal love*] his brother whom he has seen, cannot love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] God whom he has not seen [only the mature Believer can perform both categories of love – personal and impersonal].

- (b) **Love of God.** Every Believer falls under the maximum personal love of God because he has His Perfect Righteousness [+R] imputed directly to his human @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT at @@@ SALVATION – 1 Jn. 2:1-6; 4:10; Js. 2:23; 2 Cor. 5:21; Eph. 1:5; 2:4, 7; Rom. 3:22.

## ROMANS 3:22

Even the righteousness [*dikaiosune* – God’s Perfect Righteousness [+R] is imputed to the Believer’s @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT at @@@ SALVATION] of God through [*dia* (by means of)] faith [*pistis* – saving @@@ FAITH] in Jesus Christ for all those who believe [*pisteuo*]; for there is no distinction [*diastole* (difference)].

## JAMES 2:23

And the Scripture was fulfilled [*pleroo* (to fill up)] which says, “And Abraham believed [*pisteuo*] God, and it was reckoned [*logizomai* (to pass over to one’s account; to credit)] to him as righteousness [*dikaiosune* – Abram received God’s Righteousness [+R]],” and he was called the friend of God [*philostheou* (lover of God) – Abraham reached the status of @@@ MATURITY much later in life].

- (c) **The Son.** God can also have a personal *philos* love for every Believer because every Believer is in @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST, in addition to possessing God's Righteousness [+R]. Despite the Believer's state of @@@ MATURITY, the *relative* side of the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE, God loves each and every Believer as much as He loves the Son – 2 Pet. 1:17; Matt. 3:17; Col. 3:12; Eph. 1:6; 1 Jn. 3:2. **However, most Believers do not love God.** See *supra* (f).

### EPHESIANS 1:6

To the praise of the glory [*doxa*] of His [the @@@ GRACE of God] grace, which He freely bestowed [*charitoo* (to honor with blessing)] on us [the Believer] in the Beloved [@@@ UNION WITH CHRIST].

- (d) **Divine Discipline.** As a full member of the Royal Family, God provides Divine Discipline to all Believers in His @@@ GRACE because of the fact that the Believer possesses God's Righteousness [+R], which God loves with a personal *philos* love – Rev. 3:19.

### REVELATION 3:19

Those whom I [God] love [*phileo* (personal love) – all Believers], I reprove [*elegcho* (to correct)] and discipline [*paideuo* (a father punishing his son)]; therefore be zealous [*zeloo* (to burn with zeal; to be heated or to boil) – be positive [+P] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] and repent [*metanoeo* (change the mind) – get out of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS].

- (e) **To Love God.** Believers are commanded to have a personal *philos* love for God – 2 Cor. 5:14; 1 Cor. 16:22; Rom. 5:5; 8:28; 1 Pet. 1:6-8. A mature Believer is said to be a *philostheou* (lover of God) – Js. 2:23. In short, this is a command to reach @@@ MATURITY! See @@@ REWARDS. Note: As stated, in some verses *agape* (to love dearly) is also used in its general definition to mean “personal love.”

### 1 CORINTHIANS 16:22

If anyone does not love [*phileo* (personal love)] the LORD [*kurios* – the Loser Believer that rejects @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE and falls into @@@ REVERSIONISM], he is to be accursed. Maranatha [(LORD come!)].



- (f) **Know God.** You can't love what you don't know! Only a Believer in status quo @@@ MATURITY can love God with a personal *philos* love and also love mankind with *agape impersonal love*. While God loves all Believers equally, because all possess His Righteousness [+R], most Believers do not love God. See Rom. 8:28-30; 1 Pet. 1:6-8.

## ROMANS 8:28-30

And we [Paul and all mature Believers] know that God causes all things to work together [*sunergeo*] for good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] to those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] God [only the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches spiritual @@@ MATURITY can @@@ LOVE God], to those who are called [*kletos* (called; invited to a banquet)] according [*kata* (according to a norm or standard)] to His purpose [*prosthesis* (a predetermined plan)]. For those whom He foreknew [*proginosko* (to have knowledge beforehand) – the humans that would believe in Christ], He also predestined [*proorizo* (to decide beforehand) – God made provisions in @@@ TIME to get the positive [+P] volition Believer to maturity] to become conformed [*summorphos* (having the same form as another)] to the image of His Son, so that He would be the firstborn [@@@ RESURRECTION] among many brethren [*adelphos* (brothers)]; and these whom He predestined [*proorizo*], He also called [*kaleo* (to call aloud; to invite)]; and these whom He called, He also justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – by receiving God's Righteousness [+R]]; and these whom He justified, He also glorified [*doxazo* (to honor) – by the giving of @@@ REWARDS].

- (7) **The UnBeliever.** God can only express *agape impersonal love* for the unBeliever – Jn. 3:16; 1 Jn. 4:9-10; Rom. 5:8-10. Since the unBeliever has none of the @@@ FORTY THINGS there is absolutely no relationship with Perfect God. Instead, the unBeliever is under the “*wrath of God*” [Jn. 3:36] and “*accursed*” [Matt. 25:41] by His Perfect Justice.

## JOHN 3:36

He who believes [*pisteuo*] in the Son [Jesus Christ] has eternal [*aonios* (without beginning and end)] life; but he who does not obey [*apeitheo* (to refuse or withhold belief; not to allow one's self to be persuaded)] the Son will not see life [*zoe*], but the wrath [*orge*] of God abides [*meno* (to remain)] on him [eternal separation in @@@ HELL].



## 1 JOHN 4:9-10

By this the love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE] of God was manifested [*phaneroo*] in us [*Believers*], that God has sent His only begotten [*monogenes* (single of its kind)] Son [*Jesus Christ*] into the world so that we might live [*zao* (to have true life)] through Him. In this is love [*agape* – impersonal love], not that we loved [*agapao* (to love dearly)] God, but that He loved [*agapao* – impersonal love] us and sent His Son *to be* the propitiation [*hilasmos* (an appeasing)] for our sins [*hamartia*].

- (8) **Personal Love Plus.** God has an additional dose of personal *philos* love for the positive [+P] volition **Winner** Believer based on the degree of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in their @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT and the application of that Bible Doctrine in time – Js. 2:23; 1 Cor. 2:9; Matt. 15:13-14. Believers who reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY receive vast @@@ REWARDS.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 2:9

But just as it is written, “Things which eye has not seen and ear has not heard, and *which* have not entered the heart [*kardia*] of man, all that God has prepared [*hetoimazo* (to make ready beforehand) – the fantastic @@@ REWARDS placed in an Escrow Account in eternity past are beyond human comprehension] for those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly) – only the positive [+P] volition Believer at spiritual @@@ MATURITY can @@@ LOVE God] Him.”

- (9) **Love in Eden.** The relationship between God and man in the Garden of Eden was based on personal *philos* love – personal love can’t condemn; it can only bless. Thus, as long as the perfectly created couple didn’t sin by eating the forbidden fruit, they had a conditional contract that was only as strong as their volition. The Believer’s relationship now is based on @@@ GRACE, not love, and his point of contact with God rests entirely on God’s Righteousness [+R] making @@@ SALVATION fixed. The Believer has a much more secure relationship – it is eternal – than Adam and Eve in the Garden.
- (10) **Marriage and Friendship.** Category II and III love cannot be sustained without the constant use of Category IV love. In addition, Category II love demands some level of teaching to become operational, as it is not instinctive to humans – Tit. 2:4; Col. 3:13-14. See @@@ MARRIAGE.

## COLOSSIANS 3:13-14

Bearing [*anechomai* (to hold up)] with one another [other Believers], and forgiving [*charizomai* (to show one's self gracious; to grant forgiveness)] each other, whoever has a complaint against anyone [*momphe*]; just as the LORD [Jesus Christ] forgave [*charizomai*] you, so also should you. Beyond all these things *put on* love [*agape – impersonal @@@ LOVE*], which is the perfect bond of unity [*sundesmos* (that which binds together) – the Royal Law].

- (11) **Command to Love.** Per *supra* (3), Believers are regularly commanded in the @@@ BIBLE to utilize *agape impersonal love*, but not personal *philos* love towards all fellow Believers. Apart from being in the Royal Family of God as “*brothers*,” in many cases the **Loser** Believer is to be loved from “afar” via *agape impersonal love*. See @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES.
- (12) **Love in War.** Love in the form of *agape impersonal love* is exercised by the Believer when killing the enemy in @@@ WAR – Jos. 23:10. A Christian should strive to be the best “killer” in the regiment when serving his country.
- (13) **UnBeliever Love.** An unBeliever can express *agapao* (to love dearly) love as a neutral [nH] @@@ HAPPINESS when following the laws of the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS – Jn. 3:19. This [nH] love can provide some degree of enjoyment and joy in @@@ TIME – Eccl. 9:9-10.

## ECCLESIASTES 9:9-10

Enjoy [*ratsah* (to be pleased with)] life [*chay – the unBeliever living under the umbrella of the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS*] with the woman [*ishshah* (wife; female)] whom you [the unBeliever] love [*ahab*] all the days of your fleeting [*hebel*] life [*chay*] which He [God] has given to you under the sun; for this is your reward [*cheleq* (a portion; share)] in life and in your toil [*amal* (labor)] in which you have labored under the sun. Whatever your hand finds to do, do it with *all* your might [*koach* (human strength)]; for there is no activity [*maaweh* (work; business)] or planning [*chashab* (to invent; to think about)] or knowledge [*daath* (premeditation; knowledge)] or wisdom [*chokmah*] in Sheol [the Lake of Fire] where you [the unBeliever] are going [*halak* (to go)].

## @@@ MANNA

- (1) **Definition.** The word *manna* (what is it?) is a Hebrew expression for a whitish colored food that was supernaturally provided by the @@@ GRACE of God to the Exodus Jews as they wandered in the wilderness under Divine Discipline for @@@ SUFFERING for 40 years – Ex. 16:31. Manna ceased to be provided when the Jews entered the Promised Land under Joshua.

### EXODUS 16:31

The house of Israel named it manna [*manna* (what is it?)], and it was like coriander seed, white, and its taste was like wafers with honey [*debash – this was the true taste to the mature Believer*].

- (2) **Daily Provision.** Manna came every day to the Hebrews except for Saturday, whether they were mature or carnal Believers – Ex. 16:4-5. This represented the fact of @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY and logistical @@@ GRACE.

### EXODUS 16:4-5

Then the LORD said to Moses, “Behold, I will rain bread from heaven for you; and the people shall go out and gather a day’s portion every day, that I may test [*nasah*] them, whether or not they will walk in My instruction [*torah* (law)]. On the sixth day, when they prepare what they bring in, it will be twice as much as they gather daily.”

- (3) **Equal Amounts.** Those who gathered a lot of manna got no more than those who gathered a little – Ex. 16:16-18. This indicates that all Believers are equal at the point of @@@ SALVATION and are under the @@@ LOVE of God.
- (4) **Manna Spoiled.** Manna spoiled after morning – Ex. 16:19-21. The *textbook* @@@ BIBLE is loaded with @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE but it is of no use until taken into the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT. Like manna, the Believer must take in Bible Doctrine every day – 1 Cor. 2:5; Matt. 4:4; 2 Cor. 4:16-18.
- (5) **Manna in the Ark.** Although manna spoiled if kept after morning, one golden pot of it was preserved for hundreds of years in the Ark of the Covenant to represent sin – the Jews largely rejected God’s provision. *See* Ex. 16:33; Heb. 9:4; 25:10-22; Num. 21:5. *See* @@@ MOSAIC LAW.

## HEBREWS 9:4

Having a golden altar of incense and the ark of the covenant covered on all sides with gold, in which was a golden jar holding the manna [representing rejection of God's provision], and Aaron's rod which budded [representing rejection of God's @@@ AUTHORITY], and the tables of the covenant [representing rejection of God's law].

- (6) **Hatred of Manna.** Manna tasted great to some but terrible to most – Ex. 16:31; Num. 21:5. This phenomenon is a direct analogy to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – it tastes like honey to the few positive [+P] volition Believers, but sour to the many negative [-N] volition Believers. Most Jews hated manna and suffered the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH – Num. 21:5-9; 1 Cor. 10:5.

## NUMBERS 21:5

The people spoke against God and Moses, “Why have you brought us up out of Egypt to die [*muth*] in the wilderness? For there is no food and no water, and we loathe [*quts* (to abhor)] this miserable [*qeloqel* (contemptible)] food [@@@ MANNA].”

- (7) **Manna Melted.** Manna melted in the sun – Ex. 16:21. This fact represents the @@@ PROBLEMS in life. If the Believer has not gathered in the manna of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE he cannot deal with @@@ SUFFERING.
- (8) **No Eternal Life.** Manna could not provide eternal life – Jn. 6:31-35.
- (9) **Special Manna.** Believers who reach @@@ MATURITY will receive eternal @@@ REWARDS to include a special “*hidden manna*” [Rev. 2:17].

## REVELATION 2:17

He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes [*nikao* (to carry off the victory) – the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches @@@ MATURITY], to him I [Jesus Christ] will give some of the hidden [*krupto* (to conceal)] manna [@@@ MANNA of special access @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], and I will give him a white stone, and a new name written on the stone which no one knows but he who receives it.

---

## @@@ MARRIAGE

- (1) **Definition.** Ordained by God from the beginning, marriage is the legal union of one biological man and one biological woman – Gen. 2:24-25.

### GENESIS 2:24-25

For this reason a man shall leave [*azab* (to depart from)] his father and his mother, and be joined [*dabaq* (to join to)] to his wife; and they shall become one flesh [*this was a prediction*]. And the man and his wife were both naked [*arom*] and were not ashamed [*bush* (to feel shame) – prior to the Fall].

- (2) **Stability in Society.** Marriage is one of the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS set for Believers and unBelievers to maintain stability in the human race. Thus, *per se* marriage is a legal not a “religious” function.
- (3) **Sanctification of Love.** Marriage is the sanctification of male/female @@@ LOVE – Heb. 13:4; 1 Thess. 4:2-4; Mk. 10:6-9. The couple is to subordinate all other relationships in life, to include parents, as their commitment to the marriage relationship is now supreme – “*a man shall leave his father and his mother, and be joined to his wife*” [Gen. 2:24-25]. See S.S. 8:6-7.

### 1 THESSALONIANS 4:2-4

For you know what commandments [*paraggelia* (a command)] we [Paul and his team] gave you by *the authority of* the LORD Jesus. For this is the will [*thelema*] of God, your sanctification [*hagiasmos* (consecration) – to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY]; *that is*, that you abstain [*apecho* (to hold back)] from sexual immorality [*porneia* (illicit sexual intercourse)]; that each of you know how to possess [*ptaomai* (to marry a wife) – how to properly treat your spouse in @@@ MARRIAGE] his own vessel [*skeuos* – the spouse’s body] in sanctification and honor [*time*].

- (4) **No Polygamy.** One man joining with one woman is the Divine standard in marriage – Gen. 2:18-22, 24; 1 Cor. 7:2; Prov. 18:22; Matt. 19:3-8. Even though polygamy was seen in the Old Testament it was always against the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS and the @@@ MOSAIC LAW and a source of great @@@ SUFFERING for those who engaged in it – Gen. 4:19-24; Deut. 22:28-29; 2 Sam. 3:2-5. See @@@ DIVORCE.

MATTHEW 19:3-8

Some Pharisees came to Jesus, testing Him and asking, “Is it lawful *for a man* to divorce [*apoluo (to dismiss; to send away)*] his wife for any reason [*aitia*] at all?” And He answered and said, “Have you not read that He who created *them* from the beginning made them male and female, and said, ‘For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined [*kollao (to glue together)*] to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh’? So they are no longer two, but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let no man separate.” They said to Him, “Why then did Moses command to give her a certificate of divorce and send *her* away?” He said to them, “Because of your hardness of heart Moses permitted you to divorce your wives; but from the beginning [*in the Garden of Eden*] it has not been this way.”

- (5) **Christian Marriage.** The Christian marriage has the potential to function far above the establishment of marriage. This is because the Christian marriage is also a candidate for special recognition and @@@ REWARDS as a subject matter *corporate* expert witness exhibit in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT. For this reason, Satan disrupted the first marriage [Adam & Eve] and seeks to destroy all Christian marriages, particularly those between two mature **Winner** Believers. False teachers even “*forbid marriage*” [1 Tim. 4:3] for Believers. Accordingly, the Christian marriage that remains intact and sees spiritual growth demonstrates that Satan cannot do it in a particular case – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE is far stronger.
- (6) **Do Not Marry An unBeliever.** The Believer is commanded not to marry an unBeliever – 2 Cor. 6:14. However, if he does marry an unBeliever he is to @@@ REBOUND and stay as he is. See @@@ DIVORCE.

2 CORINTHIANS 6:14

Do not be bound together [*heterozugeo (to be unequally yoked)*] with unbelievers [*apistos*]; for what partnership [*metoche (a sharing)*] have righteousness [*dikaiosune – the Believer possesses God’s Righteousness [+R]*] and lawlessness [*anomia (wickedness; contempt and violation of the law) – the unBeliever rejects God’s @@@ GRACE and does not possess His [+R]*], or what fellowship [*koinonia (association)*] has light [*phos – the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE*] with darkness [*skotos – the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS is where the unBeliever resides*]?



- (7) **Same Sex.** So-called “gay marriage” – between members of the same sex – is a @@@ SIN and extremely destructive to the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS regarding the stability of general social order and the positive working functions of the nuclear family – Rom. 1:26-27; 1 Cor. 6:9.

### ROMANS 1:26-27

For this reason [unBelievers on negative [-N] volition to the @@@ PLAN OF GOD] God gave them over to degrading [atimia] passions [pathos (an affliction of the mind)]; for their women exchanged the natural [phusikos (produced by nature)] function [chresis (of the sexual use of a woman)] for that which is unnatural [phusis (perverse; abnormal)], and in the same way also the men abandoned [aphiemi (to send away)] the natural function of the woman and burned [ekkaio (to set on fire)] in their desire [orexis] toward one another [allelon (one another of the same kind)], men with men committing [katergazomai (to perform)] indecent acts [aschemosune (of one’s nakedness, shame)] and receiving [apolambano] in their own persons the due penalty of their error [plane – Divine Discipline for @@@ SUFFERING].

- (8) **Happiness.** Christian marriage is not primarily designed for @@@ HAPPINESS. Only @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE is designed for happiness. Thus, for a Christian marriage to operate properly as intended it is essential that the parties each reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY.
- (9) **A Unique Partnership.** Although marriage is a unique partnership, as the “initiator” the man [women are “responders”] is the @@@ AUTHORITY senior partner in the marriage – 1 Tim. 2:12; Col. 3:18-19; Tit. 2:3-5; Eph. 5:22-23; 1 Pet. 3:1-6. As the responder the wife is commanded to submit *hupatasoo* (obey; submit) to the authority of her husband. Ideally, she must have respect and *agape* impersonal @@@ LOVE in order to do so. Why? Since life is made up of systems of authority, marriage cannot function without it, e.g., 1 Cor. 14:34. On the other hand, the husband is commanded to exercise his authority in wisdom and love. Both must use Eph. 4:32.

### EPHESIANS 5:22-23

Wives, *be subject* to your own husbands [*aner*], as to the LORD. For the husband is the head [*kephale*] of the wife, as Christ also is the head of the church [*ekklesia*], He Himself *being* the Savior of the body.

## EPHESIANS 4:32

Be kind [*chrestos* (virtuous; benevolent)] to one another [*allelon* (one another of the same kind) – other Believers], tender-hearted [*eusplagchnos* (compassionate; having strong bowels)], forgiving [*charizomai* (to show one's self gracious)] each other [the Royal Law], just as God in Christ also has forgiven you [no Believer deserves @@@ SALVATION].

- (a) **Delegation.** The husband delegates @@@ AUTHORITY to his wife. A wife can engage in all types of commercial activities and hold high positions in the business or political world. See Prov. 31:10-31.
- (b) **Women Taught.** A single woman must be taught how to properly love her husband – “*just as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him lord*” [1 Pet. 3:6]; Tit. 2:3-5; Prov. 21:9, 19. Ironically, she actually desires to control him as part of the female's curse from the Fall – Gen. 3:16; Ex. 4:24-26.

## TITUS 2:3-5

Older women [*presbutis* (an aged woman)] likewise are to be reverent in their behavior, not malicious gossips [*diabolos* (to slander)] nor enslaved to much wine, teaching what is good [*kalodidaskalos*], so that they may encourage [*sophronizo* (to make of sound mind)] the young women [*neos*] to love [*philandros* (to love her husband)] their husbands, to love their children, to be sensible, pure [*hagnos* (chaste; modest)], workers at home [*oikouros* (keeper of the house)], kind, being subject to [*hupotasso* (under the authority)] their own husbands, so that the word of God will not be dishonored [*blasphemeo*].

- (c) **Something Better.** By saying “I do,” a woman uses her own volition to surrender herself to the marriage bond. If she has married a mature Believer man and she is a mature Believer, she does not desire to be a free agent as she now has something far better. Indeed, if the Believer wife is mature and her husband is not she still does not desire to be free. Instead, she follows God's mandates to do her duty “*as for the LORD*” [Col. 3:23]. Naturally, this situation requires maximum application of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in her @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT and is often encountered as a prime testing factor in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT – 1 Pet. 3:1-6; Eph. 4:32.

## 1 PETER 3:1-2

In the same way, you [**the positive [+P] volition Believer**] wives [*gune*], be submissive [*hupotasso* (obey; to be subordinate to) – **under the @@@ AUTHORITY**] to your own husbands so that even if any of them [**the husband is a Loser Believer on negative [-N] volition or perhaps an unBeliever**] are disobedient [*apeitheo* (not to allow one's self to be persuaded; to refuse or withhold belief)] to the word [*logos* – **negative [-N] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE**], they may be won [*kerdaino*] without a word by the behavior [*anastrophe* (manner of life) – **the use of impersonal @@@ LOVE**] of their wives, as they observe your chaste [*hagnos* (pure from carnality)] and respectful [*phobos*] behavior [*anastrophe* – **the witness of the life in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE**].

- (d) **Sex.** In sexual relations in marriage there is no @@@ AUTHORITY. Each may initiate and/or respond in sexual advances and activities – 1 Cor. 7:4-5. The husband should not demand sex, but the wife should not refuse sex. Exceptions to suspending the “love life” are to be for short periods of time *per* 1 Cor. 7:5.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 7:4-5

The wife [*gune* (woman, of any age)] does not have authority over [*exousiazō* (to have full and entire authority over the body)] her own body [*soma*], but the husband *does*; and likewise also the husband [*aner*] does not have authority over [*exousiazō*] his own body, but the wife *does*. Stop depriving [*apostereo*] one another [**of sex**], except by agreement for a time, so that you may devote yourselves to prayer, and come together again [**in sex**] so that Satan will not tempt [*peirazo* (to test)] you because of your lack of self-control.

- (e) **Husbands.** The Believer husband is commanded to @@@ LOVE his wife as his own body and also as Jesus Christ loved the Church – Eph. 4:32; 5:25-29; 1 Pet. 3:7. These seemingly impossible dual commands can only be fulfilled when the husband possesses sufficient @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE. Like all honorable leaders the husband exercises his @@@ AUTHORITY in wisdom, sacrifice, and patience, putting his wife's needs above his own. At a minimum, each partner does not seek to change the other's personality, style, interests, volition, etc.

## 1 PETER 3:7

You husbands [*aner* (gentlemen)] in the same way, live with *your wives* in an understanding way [*gnosis*], as with someone weaker, since she is a woman [*gunaikeios* (belonging to a woman) – women are wired to be responders to their husbands]; and show her honor [*time* (utmost respect)] as a fellow heir [*sugkleromomos*] of the grace [*charis*] of life, so that your prayers [*proseuche*] will not be hindered [*egkopto* (impede)].

## EPHESIANS 5:25

Husbands, love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] your wives, just as Christ also loved [*agapao* (to dearly love) – the @@@ TRINITY can only express impersonal @@@ LOVE for the unBeliever but has personal love for the Believer] the church [*ekklesia*] and gave Himself up for her [Jesus Christ suffered spiritual @@@ DEATH on the @@@ CROSS in order to provide @@@ SALVATION].

## EPHESIANS 5:28

So husbands ought also to love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] their own wives as their own bodies. He who loves his own wife loves himself.

- (f) **Protection.** The husband protects her femininity when he is present – “*banner*” [S.S. 2:4] – and when he is absent [S.S. 1:13; 4:6]. He stays in her soul always.
- (g) **Wives.** Since the woman is a responder *per* Gen. 3:16, the wife should respond to her husband with affection when he is present [S.S. 2:6; 8:3] and when he is absent [S.S. 3:1]. *See supra* (9) (c).
- (10) **Time Allotted.** God has set aside a fixed amount of @@@ TIME for Category II @@@ LOVE in marriage – Eccl. 3:8. However, certain negative functions in the Believer’s volition can destroy or shorten this time. *See @@@ ADULTERY/FORNICATION.*
- (11) **Mental Attitude Sins.** Mental attitude @@@ SIN attacks marriage – 1 Jn. 5:18; S.S. 8:6-7. Indeed, the pernicious sin of @@@ JEALOUSY can totally destroy the marriage.

- (12) **Wife as Blessing.** A mature wife is a blessing to her husband and to all around her. Prov. 31:10-31, sees the wife as a successful business executive, wonderful mother, and fantastic lover. *“Rejoice in the wife of your youth. As a loving hind and a graceful doe, let her breasts satisfy you at all times; be exhilarated always with her love”* [Prov. 5:18-19].
- (13) **Wrong Reasons to Marry.** Many people marry for the wrong reasons: (1) sex; (2) status; or (3) security. In addition, common sense would dictate that the Believer should stay clear of marrying a jealous person, a compulsive gambler, a drunk, an irrational person, a gossip, or a violent tempered person.
- (14) **Problems in Marriage.** There are many trials and tribulations in marriage which sees two @@@ OLD SIN NATURES living together. The unhappily married man seeks “substitutes” or engages in sublimation. The unhappily married woman gets pushy and gossipy and seeks satisfaction/stimulation by social unfaithfulness [e.g., Eve and the snake]. Problems in marriage include: personality conflicts; legalism parlayed into moral degeneracy [Rom. 11:6]; lack of reciprocation; unfaithfulness parlayed into immoral degeneracy, where the mate seeks the company of others in either sexual or social unfaithfulness; lack of concentration; initial attractiveness departs; no rapport; and failure to follow Eph. 4:32 – *forgive and forget wrongs as Christ forgive!*
- (15) **The Right Partner.** In eternity past God provided for each Believer a specific member of the opposite sex as part of that Believer’s temporal @@@ REWARDS in @@@ TIME – Gen. 2:18-22; Prov. 5:18-19; Matt. 19:3-8. Therefore, this @@@ GRACE provision from God excludes all cheap substitute activities for the single Winner Believer such as fornication and autoeroticism [masturbation] – 1 Cor. 7:4; Prov. 18:22; 30:18-19.

### PROVERBS 30:18-19

There are three things which are too wonderful for me, four which I do not understand: The way of an eagle in the sky, The way of a serpent on a rock, The way of a ship in the middle of the sea, And the way of a man with a maid [*almah* (virgin; newly married young woman)].

### PROVERBS 18:22

He who finds a wife finds a good thing and obtains favor from the LORD.

- (16) **Recognizing the Proper Mate.** Finding a proper mate is a gift from the @@@ GRACE of God, no one earns it – Prov. 12:4; 18:22; 19:14; Col.3:19; Eph. 5:31. Although a particular right man/woman was designed by God for the Believer, this fact can only be fully realized and appreciated by the **Winner** Believer that reaches spiritual @@@ MATURITY.
- (a) **Time.** God has set aside @@@ TIME for a Category II @@@ LOVE in marriage for the Believer – “*a time to love*” [Eccl. 3:8]. Although rare exceptions to this axiom exist – 1 Cor. 9:5; Matt. 19:12.
- (b) **Capacity.** However, there is really no benefit in meeting a proper mate if the Believer has *no capacity* to “recognize” or appreciate them. Capacity to enjoy the opposite member comes only through the intake of Bible Doctrine. In short, it is not about “meeting the right person” as Hollywood movies suggest it is really about “**being the right person**” before the LORD. For example, King Solomon never married his “right” mate due to his own extensive @@@ REVERSONISM, even though God allowed him to meet her [*see Song of Solomon*].
- (c) **Cheating Self.** Fornication and autoerotism [masturbation] are cheap substitutes in order to gratify a biological or emotional urge. Unchecked by @@@ REBOUND, it can destroy the person’s capacity to enjoy his future [or current] spouse in marriage – Prov. 5:1-23. *See @@@ EMOTION; @@@ ADULTERY/FORNICATION.*
- (d) **Flee Fornication** – 1 Cor. 6:18; 2 Tim. 2:22. The single Believer should not put himself in situations that are conducive to the area of weakness in his @@@ OLD SIN NATURE’s lust pattern – Heb. 13:4. Unchecked, this will destroy the capacity of the Believer to enjoy sex and/or a rapport relationship with his future partner in marriage.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 6:18

Flee [*pheugo* (to run away quickly)] immorality [*porneia* (illicit sexual intercourse)]. Every *other* sin [*hamartema* – @@@ SIN] that a man commits [*poieo* (to do)] is outside the body [*soma*], but the immoral [*porneuo* (to prostitute one’s body to the lust of another)] man sins against his own body [the capacity for true @@@ LOVE in the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT is destroyed by @@@ ADULTERY/FORNICATION].



- (17) **Dating Stages – Common Sense.** Accepting or requesting a date must come from the free will of the person; that which is not freely given isn't worth having – S.S. 3:4. In all dating activities the female should be protected and respected by the male as she is someone's future wife. As stated, in dating the Believer should not engage in activities that unduly arouse sexuality – 1 Cor. 7:1, 9. Ideally, there are three stages of social contact [dating] leading to marriage, although most choose to marry before they reach the third stage.
- (a) **Attraction.** A great many members of the opposite sex may fall into this category as “attraction” is based on a wide variety of legitimate factors ranging from physical attributes to mental acumen – 1 Cor. 7:9; *cf.* S.S. 8:6-7 [attraction may also include the arousal of lust patterns]. In this stage of dating one should closely observe how the date treats other people, particularly those who can do nothing for them, as a person's attitude towards other people is a general barometer on their capacity to love you. Above all, determine if they are Believers and actually understand @@@ **GRACE**. For the wise Believer this initial stage of dating a particular candidate is generally short – S.S. 4:1-15.
  - (b) **Compatibility.** The compatibility stage is where the dating partners pass the attraction stage and ascertain compatible norms and standards that match – likes and dislikes. This stage takes time. For the Believer it is critical to ascertain if the opposite person has positive [+P] volition to @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** – “*this is my friend*” [S.S. 5:16]. In many instances, the “proper mate” label is sensed or recognized by both, even if one or both are not yet mature Believers – S.S. 6:3; 7:10.
  - (c) **Rapport.** This is the final stage and is rarely achieved without @@@ **MATURITY** – S.S. 8:6-7; 1 Cor. 7:9. The proper mate will arouse the @@@ **SOUL & SPIRIT** and provide fragrance of @@@ **MEMORY** – S.S. 1:7, 13; 3:1; 4:6. Note: This stage is usually post-marriage.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 7:9

But if they [male and female Believers in dating] do not have self-control [egkrateuomai (to be self-controlled)], let them marry [gameo]; for it is better to marry than to burn [puroo (to burn with fire)] with passion [at the final stage of dating prior to @@@ **MARRIAGE** each will burn with mental passion in soul and body].

## SONG OF SOLOMON 8:6-7

Put me [a man telling his girl-friend] like a seal [*chotham* (a signet ring worn on a woman's necklace) – premarital sex is always forbidden] over your heart [*leb*], like a seal on your arm. For love [*ahabath* (soul and sex love)] is as strong as death [*maveth* – God provided for each Believer's physical @@@ DEATH and for a right mate], jealousy [*qinah* (to burn up)] is as severe as Sheol [the grave robs the loved one and so does @@@ JEALOUSY]; its [love] flashes [*respeph* (flame)] are flashes of fire, the very flame of the LORD. Many waters [pressures and @@@ PROBLEMS of @@@ LIFE] cannot quench love, nor will rivers overflow it; if a man were to give all the riches of his house for love, it would be utterly despised [*buz* (total scorn) – no one can earn true love].

- (18) **Faithfulness to God.** Marriage is often used in the @@@ BIBLE as an analogy to the Believer's response to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – Eph. 5:23-33. God is the initiator [as the husband] and the Believer [as the wife] is supposed to respond. In the case of Israel's rejection of God see, e.g., Ezk. 16:23-52; Isa. 54:5; Hos. 1:1-5. See @@@ REVERSIONISM.

## ISAIAH 54:5

For your husband [*baal* (to marry; rule over)] is your Maker, whose name is the LORD [*Jehovah* (the self-existing One)] of hosts [*tsaba* (an army)]. And your Redeemer [*gaal* (to redeem)] is the Holy One of Israel.

## HOSEA 1:2

When the LORD first spoke through Hosea, the LORD said to Hosea, "Go, take to yourself a wife of harlotry [*zanun* (a prostitute)] and have children of harlotry; for the land [the Northern Kingdom of Israel] commits flagrant harlotry, forsaking the LORD."

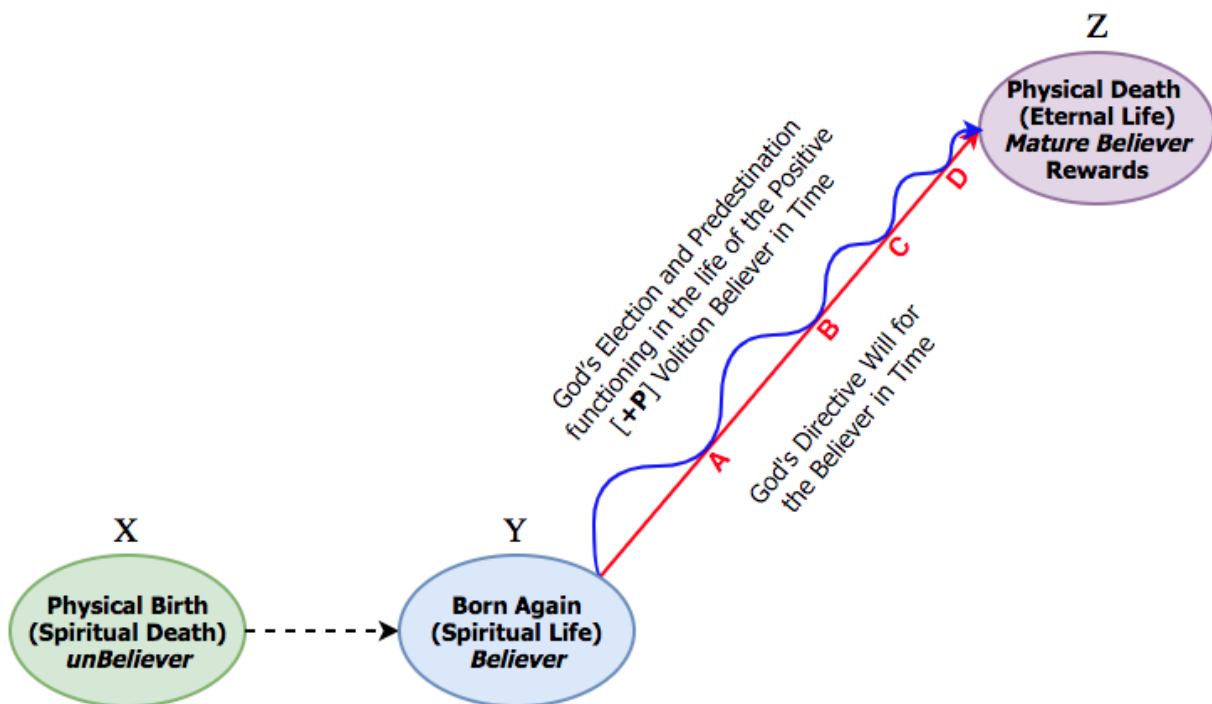
## EZEKIEL 16:32

You adulteress [*naaph* (to commit adultery)] wife [the Southern Kingdom of Judah], who takes [*laqach* (to marry)] strangers [the Jews worshiped the heathen idols of other nations] instead of her husband [the God of Israel]!

---

## @@@ MATURITY

- (1) **Definition.** The command by God in the Christian Way of Life is for the Believer to keep “*increasing in the knowledge of God*” [Col. 1:9] and “*grow in the grace and knowledge of our LORD and Savior Jesus Christ*” [2 Pet. 3:18] in order to reach spiritual maturity. “*For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments*” [1 Jn. 5:3]. Every new Believer starts out as a spiritual baby. Accordingly, in eternity past God made provisions via Election and Predestination under His Plan of God to advance the positive [+P] volition Believer to maturity – “*until Christ is formed in you*” [Gal. 4:19]; Phil. 2:12-13; Eph. 1:3-6; 3:17-19; Heb. 5:12-14; Rev. 3:2.



– Tracking The Positive [+P] Volition **Winner** Believer –

## REVELATION 3:2

Wake up [a command to grow up], and strengthen the things that remain [loipoi – the body of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], which were about to die; for I [Jesus Christ] have not found your deeds completed in the sight of My God [all Believers are expected to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY].

## PHILIPPIANS 2:12-13

So then, my beloved [Paul to Believers], just as you have always obeyed [desire to learn @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – to deliver self from a state of an adolescent Believer to the state of @@@ MATURITY] with fear [*phobos* (respect) – respect for Bible Doctrine and the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER] and trembling [*tromos* (the anxiety of one who distrusts his ability completely to meet all requirements to perform a duty)]; for it is God who is at work in you, both to will and to work for *His* good pleasure [through Predestination and Election God has made it possible for the Believer to reach maturity].

## HEBREWS 5:12-14

For though by this time you [Believers on negative [-N] volition and no longer living the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE] ought to be teachers [*didaskalos* – these Believers should have reached spiritual @@@ MATURITY long ago given the quantity of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE taught by their @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER], you have need again for someone [a prepared Pastor/Teacher] to teach [*didasko* (to be a teacher)] you the elementary principles [*stoicheion* (the basic elements from which all things have come)] of the oracles [*logion* (the words or utterances of God) – the basic foundations of Bible Doctrine] of God, and you have come to need milk [*gala*] and not solid food [*trophe*]. For everyone who partakes *only* of milk is not accustomed to the word of righteousness [*dikaiosune* – a negative [-N] volition Believer cannot metabolize advanced Bible Doctrine], for he is an infant [*nepios* (little child; infant)]. But solid food is for the mature [*teleios*], who because of practice [*hexis* (a habit whether of body or mind)] have their senses [*aistheterion* (faculty of the mind for perceiving)] trained [*gumnazo* (to exercise vigorously) – the positive [+P] volition Believer's self-discipline to make Bible Doctrine the number one priority in @@@ TIME] to discern [*diakrisis* (judging)] good [*kaloss* (precious; excellent) – Divine @@@ GOOD] and evil [*kakos* (wicked) – human good].

## 1 JOHN 5:2

By this we know that we love [*agape*] the children of God, when we love God and observe His commandments [to learn the @@@ BIBLE].

- (2) **Glorify God.** God is glorified by entering the mature Believer, who has perserved with the Word of God, as a subject matter expert witness exhibit – a *diamarturomai* (to testify) [2 Tim. 2:14] - in the Angelic Conflict. The means of reaching maturity is via @@@ OPERATION. While salvation requires only a single decision, reaching maturity requires thousands of positive [+P] decisions. All Christian production is merely the privilege of reflecting God's truth – Gal. 4:19; Rev. 2:10; Eph. 4:15-16; Ps. 19:7-9; Heb. 6:1-3; 2 Tim. 1:7; 2:15; 1 Pet. 2:2; 1 Cor. 3:1-2. See @@@ REWARDS.

## 1 PETER 2:2

Like newborn babies [*brephos*], long for the pure milk [*gala*] of the word [*logikos* (spoken word) – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], so that by it you may grow [*auxano*] in respect to [learning about] salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – deliver the positive [+P] volition Believer from the state of a baby Believer to the state of an adult Believer at spiritual @@@ MATURITY].

## EPHESIANS 1:3-6

Blessed be the God and Father of our LORD Jesus Christ, who has blessed [*eulogeo* (a concrete blessing, a benefit)] us [Believers] with every spiritual [*pneumatikos* (relating to the spirit)] blessing [*eulogeo* – @@@ REWARDS] in the heavenly [*epouranios* (existing in heaven) – location of the Believer's rewards] places in Christ [tailored rewards for every Believer were placed on deposit in @@@ HEAVEN with Christ as the Escrow Account Officer], just as He chose [*eklegomai* (to pick out)] us in Him [in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD He knew who would believe in Christ] before the foundation [*katabole* (foundation; conceive)] of the world [*kosmos*], that we would be holy [*hagios* (separated ones for Godly service) – God desires all Believers to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY and receive their Escrow Account deposited rewards] and blameless [*amomos* (unblameable)] before Him. In love [*agape* (to love dearly) – all Believers are under the maximum @@@ LOVE of God because they possess His Righteousness [+R]] He predestined [*proorizo* (a predetermined plan)] us [God made provisions to get the positive [+P] volition Believer to maturity] to adoption [*uihothesia* (adult adoption)] as sons through Jesus Christ to Himself [@@@ UNION WITH CHRIST], according to the kind intention of His will [*eudokia* (kindly intent)], to the praise of the glory [*doxa*] of His grace [*charis*], which He freely bestowed [*charitoo* (to honor with blessings)] on us in the Beloved.



## HEBREWS 6:1-3

Therefore leaving [*aphiemi* (to send forth)] the elementary [*arche* (beginning; origin)] teaching [*logos* (what is declared) – the basic categories of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] about [1] the Christ [*christos* (the anointed one) – the person and work of Jesus Christ in @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION], let us press on to maturity [*teleiotes* (the state of the more intelligent) – the positive [+P] volition Believer's goal is to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY], not laying again [*palin*] a foundation [*themelios*] of [2] repentance [*metanoia* (a change of mind)] from dead [*nekros*] works [*ergon* – the change of mind about the false claim of @@@ SALVATION by human works of @@@ RELIGION] and [3] of faith [*pistis* – @@@ FAITH/Rest] toward God, [4] of instruction about washings and laying on of hands [@@@ REBOUND], and [5] the resurrection [*anastasis* – the @@@ RESURRECTION] of the dead [*nekros* (physical death)] and [6] eternal [*aionios* (without beginning and without end)] judgment [*krima* – the Great White Throne @@@ JUDGMENT for the unBeliever and fallen @@@ ANGELS]. And [*kai*] this we will do [*poieo*], if God permits [*epitrepo* (to allow to happen)].

## 1 CORINTHIANS 3:1-2

And I [Paul], brethren, could not speak [*laleo*] to you as to spiritual men [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit) – Believers at some level of @@@ MATURITY], but as to men of flesh [*sarkinos* – under the influence of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE the negative [-N] volition Believer acts like the unBeliever], as to infants [*nepios* (an infant) – baby Believers] in Christ. I gave you milk [*gala*] to drink, not solid food [Paul could not give the Loser Believers advanced @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]; for you were not yet able to receive it. Indeed, even now you are not yet able.

## PSALM 19:7-9

The law of the LORD is perfect [*tamiym* (complete; whole)], restoring the soul [*nephesh*]; the testimony of the LORD is sure, making wise [*chakam*] the simple [*pethiy* (open-minded)]. The precepts of the LORD are right, rejoicing the heart; the commandment of the LORD is pure, enlightening the eyes [allowing the positive [+P] volition Believer to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY]. The fear [*yirah* (respect)] of the LORD is clean, enduring forever; the judgments of the LORD are true; they are righteous altogether.



## GALATIANS 4:19

My [Paul] children, with whom I am again [*palin* (repetition of action)] in labor until Christ is formed [*morphoo*] in you [Paul worked hard in studying and teaching Bible Doctrine so that positive [+P] volition Believers could grow to @@@ MATURITY and have the thinking of Christ].

## EPHESIANS 4:15-16

But speaking the truth [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] in love [*agape* (to love dearly)], we are to grow up [*auxano* (to grow; to increase) – grow to @@@ MATURITY] in all *aspects* into Him who is the head, *even* Christ, from whom the whole body [*soma* – all Church Age Believers], being fitted and held together by what every joint [*haphe* – the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER providing Bible Doctrine] supplies, according to the proper working of each individual part, causes the growth of the body [*soma* – any Believer wishing to reach maturity] for the building up [*oikodome* – the @@@ EDIFICATION COMPLEX OF THE SOUL] of itself in love.

## PHILIPPIANS 2:5

Have this attitude [*phroneo* – the Believer is commanded to think @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] in yourselves which was also in Christ Jesus.

- (3) **Stages of Growth.** An R. B. Thieme, Jr., teaching tool sets progressive stages of growth for the Believer: Childhood, Spiritual Self Esteem [SSE], Spiritual Autonomy [SA], and Spiritual Maturity [SM]. In 2 Tim. 4:8, Paul details a “*greater grace*” [Js. 4:6] level of Super Spiritual Maturity [SSM] – Gal. 4:19; Heb. 5:12-14. The below characteristics activate at SSE and grow stronger:
- (a) **Mental Stability** – A “*renewing of the mind*” [Rom. 12:2-3].
  - (b) **Impersonal Love.** Composure marked by self-assurance with *agape impersonal love* for all mankind causing the Believer’s “tolerance level” to increase so that he is less threatened by the exigencies of life.
  - (c) **Good Decisions.** Making good decisions from a position of strength, “*I have learned to be content*” [Phil. 4:11], while maintaining personal control of the life apart from negative influences. *See* Prov. 3:4-7.

- (d) **Possessing a @@@ GRACE Orientation to Life** – Rom. 14:10. A live and let live attitude that does not “sit in judgment” of others. *See @@@ PRIVACY.*
- (e) **Doctrinal Orientation.** Having a Bible Doctrine based orientation to reality with a sense of humor that is coupled with @@@ HAPPINESS.
- (f) **Instant Reaction Force [IRF].** Anticipating sudden/surprise testings in life, keeping an [IRF] of @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES at the ready, spearheaded by *agape impersonal* @@@ LOVE.
- (g) **Sense of Destiny.** Enjoying a personal sense of destiny with a complete understanding of the ramifications of the @@@ PLAN OF GOD.
- (h) **Scale of Values.** A new scale of values which puts Bible Doctrine first – 1 Cor. 2:16; Lk. 12:16-21. *See @@@ WITNESSING.*
- (i) **Testing.** Standing ready for increased tests of undeserved Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing – 1 Cor. 10:13; 1 Pet. 1:7; Js. 1:3.
- (j) **Friend of God.** At the status of SM the Believer is said to be a “*friend of God*” *philostheou* (a lover of God) [Js. 2:23; 1 Jn. 4:16] as well as a *philos* “*friend*” [Jn. 15:12-15] of Jesus Christ. God loves all Believers with a Perfect @@@ LOVE, but unless the Believer is mature he cannot love God. Axiom: “You cannot love what you do not know.”

## JAMES 2:23

And the Scripture was fulfilled [*pleroo* (to fill up)] which says, “And Abraham believed [*pisteuo*] God, and it was reckoned [*logizomai* (to pass over to one’s account; to credit)] to him as righteousness [*dikaiosune* – Abram received God’s Righteousness [+R]],” and he was called the friend of God [*philostheou* (lover of God) – when Abraham reached @@@ MATURITY later in life].

- (4) **Undeserved Suffering.** In order to advance the mature Believer, “*for the sake of righteousness*” [1 Pet. 3:14], God will administer undeserved Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing – *peirasmos* (putting to proof) “*trials*” [1 Pet. 1:6-8] or “*testing*” [Js. 1:2-3, 12]; 2 Tim. 3:11-12; Matt. 5:10-14; Lam. 3:21-24; Eph. 1:6; 3:19-21; Ps. 23:5-6; 1 Cor. 10:12-13; 2 Cor. 4:16-18.

## 1 PETER 1:6-8

In this you [**Believers**] greatly rejoice, even though now for a little, if necessary [*dei (it is necessary)*], you have been distressed by various trials [*peirasmos (putting to proof)* – **Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing**], so that the proof of your faith [*pistis* – testing the retained @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**], being more precious than gold which is perishable, even though tested [*dokimazo (to test)*] by fire [*pur* – **Suffering for Blessing so the positive [+P] volition Believer reaches @@@ MATURITY**], may be found to result in praise and glory [*doxa* – @@@ **REWARDS at the Judgment Seat of Christ**] and honor at the revelation [*apokalupsis (manifestation)* – at the @@@ **RAPTURE**] of Jesus Christ; and though you have not seen Him, you love [*apapao (to love dearly)*] Him [**the ability to @@@ LOVE Jesus is via Bible Doctrine**], and though you do not see Him now, but believe in Him, you greatly rejoice with joy inexpressible and full of glory.

- (5) **Synonyms.** Synonyms in the @@@ **BIBLE** for reaching spiritual maturity include: (1) *epignosis (full knowledge)* by developing a high spiritual IQ level through learning @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** [Eph. 1:17; 4:13]; (2) “*an altar*” [Heb. 13:10] – building an altar of Bible Doctrine in the soul; (3) “edification” [Eph. 4:12, 16]; “*godliness*” [1 Tim. 6:3-4; 2 Pet. 1:8]; @@@ **SALT**; (4) “crucifixion” [Matt. 10:38; Mk. 8:34; Lk. 9:23; 14:27]; (5) “military battle terms” – [1 Tim. 1:18; Eph. 6:11-13; Heb. 12:1-2; Col. 2:5-8; Gal. 5:1]; (6) “volition” – the command and control system of the @@@ **SOUL & SPIRIT**. See Eph. 6:10, 17; Phil 3:1-16, where Paul wrote about his new priorities following his sad lapse into @@@ **REVERSIONISM** regarding his unauthorized journey to Jerusalem from Corinth in A.D. 58, and (7) “*be holy yourselves*” [1 Pet. 1:15-16]; Num. 16:5-7.

## PHILIPPIANS 3:7-9

But whatever things were gain [*kerdos (advantages in life)*] to me [**Paul**], those things I have counted as loss [*zemia*] for the sake of Christ. More than that, I count all things to be loss in view of the surpassing value [*huperecho (to be superior in rank)*] of knowing [**via @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE**] Christ Jesus my LORD, for whom I have suffered the loss [*zemioo*] of all things, and count them but rubbish [*skubalon (the excrement of animals and humans)* – **all human good deeds and celebrityship are worthless**] so that I may gain Christ [**putting “the mind of Christ” in his mind**].

- (6) **Headwinds.** The Believer consistently engaged in self-pity, boredom, and instability has not reached spiritual maturity – Gal. 2:20-21; Phil. 3:10-14.

### PHILIPPIANS 3:13

Brethren, I do not regard myself as having laid hold of *it* [*katalambano* – the highest level spiritual @@@ MATURITY] yet; but one thing *I do*: forgetting [*epilanthanomai* (forgetting; no longer caring for; given over to oblivion)] what *lies* behind [Paul's past failures were dealt with by @@@ REBOUND] and reaching forward to [*epekteinomai* (to stretch out to or towards)] what *lies* ahead [@@@ REWARDS and a @@@ RESURRECTION body].

### GALATIANS 2:20-21

I [Paul] have been crucified with [*sustauroo*] Christ; and it is no longer I who live [*zao*], but Christ lives in me; and the *life* which I now live in the flesh [*sarx* – the physical body] I live by faith [*pistis* – @@@ FAITH/Rest] in the Son of God, who loved [*agapao*] me and gave [*paradidomi* (to give into the hands of another)] Himself up for me. I do not nullify [*atheteo* (reject)] the grace [*charis*] of God, for if righteousness [*dikaiosune* – God's imputed Righteousness [+R]] comes through [*dia* (by means of)] the Law [*nomos*], then Christ died [*apothnesko* – spiritual @@@ DEATH] needlessly [*dorea*].

- (7) **Key to Maturity.** The Winner Believer's positive [+P] to learning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE causes advancement by God [Predestination and Election] to spiritual @@@ MATURITY which glorifies God. The Winner knows that God loves him and has “*dealt bountifully with me*” [Ps. 16:3]; Jer. 9:23. In a nutshell: **SLAGG** – Study, Learn, Apply, Grow, Glorify.

### JEREMIAH 9:23

Thus says the LORD, “Let not a wise man boast of his wisdom, and let not the mighty man boast of his might, let not a rich man boast of his riches; but let him who boasts boast of this, that he understands and knows Me [@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE propels to @@@ MATURITY], that I am the LORD who exercises lovingkindness [*chesed* (mercy)], justice and righteousness [the two attributes of Holiness in the @@@ TRINITY] on earth; for I delight in these things [God is only impressed with the Divine Good],” declares the LORD.

## @@@ MEMORY

- (1) **Definition.** Memory involves the mental capacity of retaining unconscious traces of conscious impressions and of recalling those traces to consciousness with attendant perception. Memory includes the power of retention as well as the ability of recollection. Thus, memory is a combination of retention and recollection, of identification and perception. *See @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT.*
- (2) **The Soul.** Memory is a vital function of the mentality of the soul related to the Believer's capacity for life and the absorption of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE into the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT – Ps. 119:11.

### PSALM 119:11

Your [God] word [*imrah* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] I have treasured [*tsaphan* (to hide or store up treasure)] in my heart [*leb* – the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT], that I may not sin [*chata* – the positive [+P] volition Believer understands @@@ SIN and the @@@ PLAN OF GOD] against You.

- (3) **Directed to God.** Memory directed towards God is expressed in Category I @@@ LOVE. The communion table is a fragrance of memory in regards to the LORD – 1 Cor. 11:24-25. The Communion is commanded by Jesus Christ as a “*remembrance of Me*” [Lk. 22:19-20]; 2 Pet. 3:1-2; 1 Cor. 11:23-26.

### LUKE 22:19

And when He [Jesus] had taken *some* bread *and* given thanks, He broke it and gave it to them [the disciples], saying, “This is My body [*soma* – Jesus never committed a @@@ SIN] which is given for you; do this in remembrance [*anamnesis* (a recollection; a remembering)] of Me.”

### 2 PETER 3:1-2

This is now, beloved, the second letter I [Peter] am writing to you in which I am stirring up [*diegeiro* (to wake up)] your sincere mind [*dianoia* (the mind as a faculty of learning)] by way of reminder [*hupomnesis* (remembrance)], that you should remember [*mimnesko* (to be recalled to mind)] the words spoken beforehand by the holy prophets and the commandment of the LORD and Savior *spoken* by your apostles [the content of the @@@ BIBLE].

- (4) **The Holy Spirit.** Memory related to time spent in Fellowship with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT via @@@ REBOUND. Fragrance of memory begins to evolve as the Believer spends more time in Fellowship with God the Holy Spirit – 2 Cor. 2:14; 1 Jn. 1:3-4; Jn. 14:26.
- (5) **Old Langsyne.** *Old Langsyne* is a Scottish folk song regarding a fragrance of memory for the kindness and joy of certain people. For the mature Believer it is applied to Jesus Christ as a byproduct of the mature life. It then overflows to other people [Phil. 1:3] to include the @@@ MARRIAGE partner [S.S. 3:1; 4:6; 8:6] as well operating in tandem with the full use of the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES. See @@@ GIFTS.

### PHILIPPIANS 1:3

I [Paul] thank [*eucharisteo* (to give thanks) – @@@ THANKSGIVING] my God in all my remembrance [*mneia* (memory; mention; remember) – @@@ MEMORY] of you [the Believers in Philippi that were on positive [+P] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE].

- (6) **Rot.** While the memory of a mature Believer is a blessing, the name of the unBeliever or the Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM will “*rot*” [Prov. 10:7] in the subconscious.

### PROVERBS 10:7

The memory [*zakar* (remembrance)] of the righteous is blessed, but the name of the wicked will rot [*raqab*].

- (7) **Storing Good Memory.** Believers should be storing good memories all of their lives. Such use of the memory is a wonderful insulation against the difficult days of @@@ SUFFERING – Ps. 145:7-10; Eccl. 12:1.

### ECCLESIASTES 12:1

Remember [*zakar*] also your Creator in the days of your youth, before the evil days come [punishment for @@@ REVERSIONISM] and the years draw near when you will say, “I have no delight in them [the body breaks down in old age and the @@@ TIME available to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY is reduced].”



- (8) **Bible Doctrine First.** @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT memory center must have number one priority in the life of the Believer – 2 Pet. 1:12-13.

## 2 PETER 1:12-13

Therefore, I [Peter] will always be ready to remind [*hupomimnesko* (to cause one to remember) – @@@ MEMORY] you [Believers] of these things [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], even though you *already* know [*heneka* (to know on account of)] *them*, and have been established [*sterizo* (to make stable)] in the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration)] which is present [*pareimi* (to be by)] with you. I consider it right [*dikaios*], as long as I am in this *earthly* dwelling, to stir you up [*diegeiro* (to arouse the mind)] by way of reminder [*hupomnesis* – to keep going over Bible Doctrine].

- (a) **Stabilized.** Winner Believers are stabilized by remembering the @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE they possess – Lam. 3:21.

## LAMENTATIONS 3:20-23 (KJV)

My soul [*nephesh*] hath *them* still in remembrance [*zakar*], and is humbled within me [the positive [+P] volition Believer]. This I recall [*shub*] to mind [@@@ MEMORY of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], therefore I have hope [*yachal* (confidence; trust)]. *It is of* the LORD's mercies [*chesed* (mercy)] that we are not consumed [*tamam* (to completely consume to come to an end) – without God's @@@ GRACE in action all humans would be immediately consumed for just cause], because His compassions [*racham*] fail not. *They are* new every morning: great *is* thy [God's] faithfulness [*emunah* (fidelity; steadfastness)].

- (b) **Rate of Learning.** The importance of keeping @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in the memory center. The rate of learning Scripture must exceed the rate of forgetting. See Ps. 119:16, 93, 109, 141; Prov. 4:5.

## PSALM 119:16

I [Believer] shall delight in Your [God] statutes; I shall not forget [*shakach* (to cease to care)] Your word [@@@ MEMORY of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE].

- (9) **Logistical Grace.** @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in the memory center is designed to orient the **Winner** Believer so that he can also express gratitude for the principle of logistical @@@ GRACE to include the provision of angelic protection – Ps. 103:2. See @@@ ANGELS.

## PSALM 103:2

Bless the LORD, O my soul [*nephesh*], and forget [*shakach*] none of His benefits [the @@@ PLAN OF GOD to give @@@ REWARDS].

- (10) **In Rebound.** The memory center has the unpleasant but necessary job of recalling personal @@@ SIN in order to @@@ REBOUND – “*if we judged ourselves rightly*” [1 Cor. 11:31]; Num. 5:15; Heb. 10:3. However, the Believer must then forget the sin that “*lies behind and*” move “*forward to what lies ahead*” [Phil. 3:13] in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE. No self-recrimination over sin is authorized as “*God causes all things to work together for good to those who love God*” [Rom. 8:28], which always operates for the Believer heading towards @@@ MATURITY. See Acts 23:11.
- (11) **Negative Aspects.** The negative aspects of memory include:
- (a) @@@ JUDGING, Self-Pity, and Maligning. These things destroy the pleasant memories once stored – “*your memorable sayings are proverbs and ashes*” [Job 13:12].
  - (b) **Drunkenness.** Excessive @@@ DRINKING causes leaders and rulers to forget their responsibilities – Prov. 31:4-5.
  - (c) **Judgment.** God’s judgment of an evil nation blots out the memory of that nation in @@@ HISTORY – “*I will utterly blot out the memory of Amalek from under heaven*” [Ex. 17:14]. See @@@ PIVOT.
  - (d) **The Reversionist is Not Remembered** – Job 18:17. In most cases, the Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM does not remember the LORD at all, even when he is under the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH.
- (12) **Stimulated by Love.** @@@ HAPPINESS and @@@ LOVE are stimulated by good memories.
-

## @@@ METAMORPHOSE

- (1) **Definition.** The Greek word *metamorphoo* (to change in form) refers to a number of things listed in the @@@ BIBLE that change in form.
- (2) **Innocent Man to Spiritual Death.** Innocent man in the Garden becomes a spiritually dead sinner – Gen. 3:6. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.
- (3) **Woman to Child Bearer.** Woman becomes a child bearer – Gen. 3:15.
- (4) **God to Man.** The Second person of the @@@ TRINITY becomes the God/man in @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION – Heb. 10:5-10; 1 Tim. 2:5.

## HEBREWS 10:5-7

Therefore [*dio* (on account of)], when He [*Jesus Christ*] comes into the world [*kosmos*], He says, “Sacrifice and offering You [*God the Father*] have not desired [*thelo* (to take delight in; to desire) – the rituals of the @@@ MOSAIC LAW are teaching tools and cannot provide @@@ SALVATION], but a body [*soma*] You [*the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT*] have prepared [*katartizo* (to equip; to arrange)] for Me [*Jesus*]; in whole burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin [*hamartia*] You have taken no pleasure. Then I said, ‘Behold, I [*Jesus Christ*] have come [*heko* (to arrive)] (in the scroll of the book it is written of Me) [*all the Old Testament prophecies about Jesus Christ*] to do your will [*thelema* (what one determines shall be done) – to die on the @@@ CROSS], O God [*God the Father*].”

- (5) **Born Again.** The spiritually dead unBeliever is regenerated, i.e., “*born again*” [Jn. 3:1-15] to a new spiritual birth – Tit. 3:5; Gal. 4:3-7.

## TITUS 3:5

He [*God*] saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN] us, not on the basis of [*our*] deeds [*chrestotes* (moral goodness) – human works] which we have done in righteousness [*diakaiosune* – human righteousness [-r]], but according to His mercy [*eleos* – @@@ GRACE in action], by the washing [*loutron* (a bath)] of regeneration [*paliggenesia* (a new birth)] and renewing [*anakainosis* (a complete change for the better)] by the Holy Spirit [*the ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT in salvation*].

- (6) **Baby Believer to Adult Believer.** The temporal metamorphosis of the baby Believer to the spiritually mature Believer – 2 Cor. 3:18; Gal. 4:19; Rom. 12:1-2. See @@@ MATURITY; @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.

## ROMANS 12:1-2

Therefore I [Paul] urge you, brethren, by the mercies of God, to present your bodies [soma – stay inside the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE and reach @@@ MATURITY] a living and holy sacrifice, acceptable [euarestos (well pleasing)] to God, which is your spiritual service of worship. And [Believer] do not be conformed [suschematizo (to conform one's self to another's pattern)] to this world [aion (period of time) – Satan's @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS of thinking controls the @@@ WORLD], but be transformed [metamorphoo – the Believer is expected to reject the Cosmic Systems and transform himself to the status of maturity] by the renewing [anakainosis (a renewal; complete change for the better to another form)] of your mind [nous – transformation of the Believer's thinking requires maximum @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT], so that you may prove [dokimazo (to test; to prove)] what the will of God is [the Believer is commanded to reach spiritual adulthood and not to engage in human @@@ GOOD], that which is good [agathos (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] and acceptable and perfect [teleios (to make complete)].

- (7) **Earthly Body to Resurrection Body.** The Believer's earthly mortal human body changes to the eternal and indestructible @@@ RESURRECTION body. “*Martha said to Him, I know that he (Lazarus had died) will rise again in the resurrection on the last day*” [Jn. 11:24]; Phil. 3:10-11.

## PHILIPPIANS 3:10-11

That I [Paul] may know [ginosko (to learn to know)] Him [the mind of Jesus Christ] and the power [dunamis (inherent power)] of His resurrection [anastasis – the power that raised Christ from @@@ DEATH is available to all Believers] and the fellowship of His sufferings [pathema – the categories of Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing], being conformed [summorphoo (to receive the same form)] to His death [thanatos (death with the implied idea of future misery in hell)]; in order that I may attain to the resurrection from the dead [nekros – at the @@@ RAPTURE Paul will get his @@@ RESURRECTION body and eternal @@@ REWARDS].

(8) **Signifies New Status.** Changing of a name signifies a change in status or a change in terms of the Believer's spiritual growth.

- (a) **Ishshah** [woman] to **Eve** [mother of all living] – Gen. 3:20.
- (b) **Abram** [exalted father] to **Abraham** [father of a multitude] – Gen. 17:5.
- (c) **Sarai** [“*princess*”] to **Sarah** [noble woman] – Gen. 17:15.
- (d) **Jacob** [supplanter; cheater] to **Israel** [Prince of God] – Gen. 32:28.

### GENESIS 32:28

He [**Jesus Christ in a @@@ THEOPHANY**] said, “Your name shall no longer be Jacob [*yaaqob* (heel holder; supplanter)], but Israel [*yiwrael* (God prevails)]; for you have striven with God and with men and have prevailed.”

- (e) **Gideon** [“*a great warrior*”] to **Jerubbaal** [contender with Baal] – Jdg. 6:12-15.
- (f) **Simon** [hearing; listen] to **Peter** [*petros* (a little stone)] – Matt. 16:18.

### MATTHEW 16:18

I [**Jesus**] also say to you that you are Peter [*petros* (little rock chip)], and upon this rock [*petra* (gigantic rock) – **Jesus Christ is the foundation @@@ CORNERSTONE of @@@ SALVATION, the Church, and all Believers**] I will build My church [*ekklesia*]; and the gates [*pule* (likened to a vast prison)] of Hades will not overpower [*katischuo* (to prevail)] it.

- (g) **Saul** [prayed for] to **Paul** [little] – Acts 13:9.

### ACTS 13:9

But Saul [*saulos* (desired)], who was also *known as* Paul [*paulos* (small; little) – **the name Paul reflected the fact of God's @@@ GRACE**], filled [*pletho* – **in Fellowship**] with the Holy Spirit, fixed his gaze on him [**Elymas**].

## @@@ MIRACLES

- (1) **Definition.** Miracles are supernatural displays of Divine power that operate outside of God's natural laws and cannot be explained upon any natural basis.
- (2) **Immediate and Witnessed.** Almost all miracles recorded in the @@@ BIBLE were performed in the presence of a multitude of credible witnesses. In addition, the miracles were immediate in result and never slow progressive acts. For example, Jesus turned plain @@@ WATER into fantastic wine immediately – Jn. 2:1-11. See Mk. 2:9-12.

## MARK 2:9-12

Which is easier [**Jesus speaking the scribes**], to say to the paralytic, “Your sins are forgiven”; or to say, “Get up, and pick up your pallet and walk?” But so that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins [**@@@ CROSS**] He said to the paralytic, “I say to you, get up, pick up your pallet and go home.” And he got up and immediately [*euthus*] picked up the pallet and went out in the sight of everyone, so that they were all amazed and were glorifying God, saying, “We have never seen anything like this.”

- (3) **Purpose.** The purpose of miracles was to address or teach some aspect of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – Heb. 2:4. Bold claims need bold proof. Most of the hundreds and hundreds of miracles He performed were associated with the veracity of the claims of Jesus of Nazareth as the promised Messiah.

## HEBREWS 2:4

God also testifying with them [**teachers of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE**], both by signs [*semeion* (miracle; an unusual occurrence, transcending the common course of nature)] and wonders [*teras*] and by various miracles [*dunamis* (power for performing miracles)] and by gifts of the Holy Spirit according to His own will [**spiritual @@@ GIFTS to Believers**].

- (4) **Types of Miracles.** Miracles recorded in the Bible fall into several categories.
  - (a) **Certain Acts of Creation** – The “*worlds were prepared by the word of God, so that which is seen was not made out of things that are visible*” [Heb. 11:3].



- (b) **Nature.** Certain temporary suspensions of the laws or forces of nature. In the Gospels miracles proclaimed the Messiahship of Jesus of Nazareth – Matt. 8:23-27; Lk. 7:18-23; 8:25; Jn. 6:1-14; 16-21.

### JOHN 6:18-21

The sea [*Sea of Galilee*] *began* to be stirred up because a strong wind was blowing. Then, when they [*the disciples*] had rowed about three or four miles, they saw Jesus walking on the sea and drawing near to the boat; and they were frightened. But He said to them, “It is I; do not be afraid.” So they were willing to receive Him into the boat, and immediately the boat was at the land to which they were going.

- (c) **Death.** Divine power over all categories of disease, illness, and physical death. To demonstrate Messiahship, Jesus performed many miracles on both Believers and unBelievers. The method was by thought, touch, or word. Again, Jesus’ purpose in performing miracles was not to alleviate human @@@ SUFFERING in the @@@ WORLD but to fulfill the Old Testament prophecies about His person and mission. See Jn. 6:1-2; 11:41-44; Matt. 8:1-3, 5-13; 11:2-6.

### MATTHEW 8:5-13

When Jesus entered Capernaum, a centurion [*hekatontarches* (a Roman officer)] came to Him, imploring Him, and saying, “LORD, my servant [*paheece* (a child)] is lying paralyzed at home, fearfully tormented.” Jesus said to him, “I will come and heal him.” But the centurion said, “LORD, I am not worthy for You to come under my roof, but just say the word [*logos*], and my servant will be healed. For I also am a man under authority, with soldiers under me; and I say to this one, ‘Go!’ and he goes, and to another, ‘Come!’ and he comes, and to my slave, ‘Do this!’ and he does *it*.” Now when Jesus heard *this*, He marveled and said to those who were following, “Truly I say to you, I have not found such great faith [*pistis* – @@@ FAITH/Rest] with anyone in Israel. I say to you that many will come from east and west, and recline *at the table* with Abraham, Isaac and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven; but the sons of the kingdom [*unBeliever Jews*] will be cast out into the outer darkness; in that place there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth [@@@ HELL].” And Jesus said to the centurion, “Go; it shall be done for you as you have believed.” And the servant was healed that *very* moment.

**MATTHEW 8:1-3**

When Jesus came down from the mountain, large crowds followed Him. And a leper [*lepros*] came to Him and bowed down before Him, and said “LORD [*kurios* – this man is a Believer], if You are willing [*thelo* – this Believer recognizes that the @@@ PLAN OF GOD is supreme], You can make me clean. Jesus stretched out His hand and touched him, saying, “I am willing; be cleansed.” And immediately [*eutheos*] his leprosy was cleansed.”

**JOHN 6:1-2**

After these things Jesus went away to the other side of the Sea of Galilee (or Tiberius). A large crowd followed Him, because they saw the signs [*semeion* (miracle; an unusual occurrence, transcending the common course of nature)] which He was performing on those who were sick [*Jesus healed thousands of people of all types of diseases, deformities, and illnesses*].

**JOHN 11:41-44**

So they removed the stone [*Lazarus was now several days dead inside the tomb*] Then Jesus raised His eyes, and said, “Father, I thank You that You have heard Me. I knew that You always hear Me; but because of the people standing around I said it, so that they may believe that You sent Me.” When He [*Jesus*] had said these things, He cried [*kraugazo* (shout)] out with a loud [*megas*] voice, “Lazarus, come [*deuro* (hither to this place)] forth [*exo* (outside)].” The man who had died came forth, bound hand and foot with wrappings, and his face was wrapped around with a cloth. Jesus said to them, “Unbind him, and let him go.”

**MATTHEW 11:2-6**

Now when John [*the Baptist*], while imprisoned [*by King Herod Antipas*], heard of the works [*ergon*] of Christ [*christos*], he sent word by his disciples and said to Him, “Are You the Expected One, or shall we look for someone else?” Jesus answered and said to them, “Go and report to John what you hear and see: *the* blind receive sight and *the* lame walk, *the* lepers are cleansed and *the* deaf hear, *the* dead are raised up, and *the* poor [*ptochos* – the unBeliever] have the gospel preached to them [*John should apply the proper @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE*]. And blessed is he who does not take offense at Me.”

- (d) **Demons.** Casting out of demons who possessed the bodies of unBelievers. This demonstrated God’s superior power over demons – Matt. 8:28-32. Note: Demons know that they are under a prior sentence to the “*Lake of Fire*” [Rev. 20:11-15], per Matt. 25:41. See @@@ HELL; @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT; @@@ DEMONISM.

### MATTHEW 8:28-32

When He [**Jesus**] came to the other side into the country of the Gadarenes, two men who were demon-possessed met Him as they were coming out of the tombs. *They were* so extremely violent that no one could pass by that way. And they cried out, saying, “What business do we have with each other, Son of God? Have You come here to torment [*basanizo*] us before the time [**the Great White Throne @@@ JUDGMENT**]?” Now there was a herd of many swine feeding at a distance from them. The demons *began* to entreat Him, saying, “If You *are going to* cast us out, send us into the herd of swine.” And He said to them, “Go!” And they came out and went into the swine, and the whole herd rushed down the steep bank into the sea and perished in the waters.

- (5) **Not Fake.** Extra Biblical sources indicate Jesus performed miracles. Due to the amazing quantity and quality of the miracles, His enemies never denied Jesus’ supernatural power as acts of fakery. Instead, they attributed Jesus’ miracles to Satan’s power. See Matt. 12:22-24; Lk. 11:14-23. Interestingly, some religious leaders asked Jesus to perform a miracle of military victory – “*to show them a sign from heaven*” [Matt. 16:1] – to destroy the Romans and usher in Jewish domination of the planet via the Messiah.

### MATTHEW 12:22-24

Then a demon-possessed man *who was* blind and mute was brought to Jesus, and He healed him, so that the mute man spoke and saw. All the crowds were amazed, and were saying, “This man cannot be the Son of David, can he?” But when the Pharisees heard *this*, they said, “This man casts out demons [*daimonion*] only by Beelzebub, the ruler [*archon*] of demons.”

- (6) **Apostles.** The miracles performed by the @@@ APOSTLES such as Peter and John were not denied by the Pharisees, scribes, and elders. Rather, the Jewish leaders sought to use threats of violence to halt the impact of the eye witness testimonies upon the general population – Acts 4:13-17.

## ACTS 4:13-17

Now as they [the religious leaders] observed the confidence of Peter and John and understood that they were uneducated and untrained men, they were amazed, and *began* to recognize them as having been with Jesus. And seeing the man who had been healed [see Acts 3:1-10, the man born lame] standing with them, they had nothing to say in reply. But when they had ordered them to leave the Council, they *began* to confer with one another, saying, “What shall we do with these men? For the fact that a noteworthy miracle [semeion] has taken place through them is apparent to all who live in Jerusalem, and we cannot deny it. But so that it will not spread any further among the people, let us warn them to speak no longer to any man in this name.”

- (7) **Salvation and Spirituality.** Miracles cannot save the unBeliever or make the Believer grow up to maturity – “*if the miracles had occurred in Tyre and Sidon which occurred in you, they would have repented long ago*” [Matt. 11:21]; Ex. 15:22-25; Lk. 8:25; 16:26-31. Indeed, those on negative [-N] volition will not respond to God under any circumstances to include someone rising from the dead. Still, as in the case of Jesus bringing Lazarus back to life, “*many ... saw what He had done and believed in Him*” [Jn. 11:41].

## LUKE 16:26-31

“And besides all this, between us [dead Believer] and you [dead unBeliever] there is a great chasm fixed [sterizo (to render constant)], so that those who wish to come over from here to you will not be able, and *that* none may cross over from there to us.” And he [the unBeliever rich man in @@@ HELL] said, “Then I beg you, father [Abraham], that you send him [Lazarus, the Believer in Paradise] to my father’s house—for I have five brothers [unBelievers]—in order that he may warn [diamarturomai (to give a solemn testimony)] them, so that they will not also come to this place of torment [basanos (torture) – the compartment of Sheol for the unBeliever called Torments].” But Abraham said, “They have Moses and the Prophets; let them hear them.” But he said, “No, father Abraham, but if someone goes to them from the dead [nekros], they will repent [metanoeo (to change the mind) – about Christ]!” But he [Abraham] said to him, “If they do not listen to Moses and the Prophets, they will not be persuaded [peitho (to convince by words)] even if someone rises from the dead [Christ would rise from the dead and those on negative [-N] volition still would not believe].”

## EXODUS 15:22-25

Then [immediately after God parted the Red Sea the Jews sang songs of praise and joy, *see Ex. 14:10-30 – 15:1-21*] Moses led Israel from the Red Sea, and they went out into the wilderness of Shur; and they went three days in the wilderness and found no water. When they came to Marah, they could not drink the waters of Marah, for they were bitter, therefore it was named Marah. So the people grumbled at Moses, saying, “What shall we drink?” Then he cried out to the LORD, and the LORD showed him a tree; and he threw *it* into the waters, and the waters became sweet. There He [God] made for them a statute and regulation, and there He tested them [*the Hebrews flunked every test related to @@@ FAITH/Rest in the LORD*].

- (8) **Miracles Ceased.** The supernatural gift of miracles by certain Believers ceased with the completion of *Revelation*. In 1 Cor. 12:8-10, Paul predicted that all temporary spiritual @@@ GIFTS would cease. The completed New Testament in A.D. 96, signaled the final cessation of miracles performed by certain Believers per 1 Cor. 13:8-10.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 13:8-10

Love [*agape – impersonal @@@ LOVE*] never fails [*pipto (phased out)*]; but if *there are gifts* of prophecy [*propheteia*], they will be done away [*katargeo (abolished; ceased; canceled out)*]; if *there are* tongues [*glossa (the language or dialect used by a particular people)*], they will cease [*pauo (to stop)*]; if *there is* [the gift of] knowledge [*gnosis*], it will be done away [*katargeo*]. For we [Believers] know [*ginosko (to learn to know)*] in part [*in the pre-canon period of the Church Age*] and we prophesy in part; but when the perfect [*teleios (completed) – the word teleios is in the neuter which refers to a thing and not a person, i.e., the completed @@@ BIBLE*] comes [*Revelation was written in A.D. 96 and completed the Bible*], the partial [*meros – the temporary spectacular @@@ GIFTS of the early Church*] will be done away [*katargeo (to render inoperative)*].

- (a) **Early On Only.** The 12 @@@ APOSTLES performed numerous miracles as Jesus predicted [Jn. 14:12 – “greater in quantity”]. The purpose was to establish their supreme @@@ AUTHORITY over any group of Believers and announce the start of the Church Age – Col. 1:1; Acts 5:15-16; 16:16-18; 19:11; 28:8-9; 1 Cor. 12:7-11; Rom. 15:19.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 12:7-11

But to each one [Believer] is given the manifestation [*phanerosis*] of the [Holy] Spirit for the common good [*sumphero* (to bear together at the same time)]. For to one is given the word of wisdom [*sophia*] through the [Holy] Spirit, and to another the word of knowledge [*gnosis*] according to the same [Holy] Spirit; to another faith [*pistis*] by the same [Holy] Spirit, and to another gifts [*charisma*] of healing [*iama*] by the one [Holy] Spirit, and to another the effecting of miracles [*dunamis*], and to another prophecy, and to another the distinguishing of spirits, to another various kinds of tongues [*glossa* (the language or dialect used by a particular people)], and to another the interpretation of tongues. But one and the same [Holy] Spirit works all these things, distributing [*diaiero* (to divide into parts)] to each one individually just as He [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] wills [*boulomai* (to will deliberately)].

## ACTS 5:15-16

To such an extent that they even carried the sick out into the streets and laid them on cots and pallets, so that when Peter came by at least his shadow might fall on any one of them. Also the people from the cities in the vicinity of Jerusalem were coming together, bringing people who were sick or afflicted with unclean spirits, and they were all being healed [@@@ MIRACLES].

- (b) **Removed.** The gift of miracles was removed during the lifetime of the Apostles. In Acts 19:11-12, Paul could heal sick people at will. Then in Phil. 2:27 and 2 Tim. 4:20, Paul had lost the gift of healing.

## ACTS 19:11-12

God was performing extraordinary miracles [*dunamis* (power) – @@@ MIRACLES] by the hands of Paul, so that handkerchiefs or aprons were even carried from his body to the sick, and the diseases [*nosos* (sickness; disease)] left [*apallasso* (to set free)] them and the evil spirits went out [*ekporeuomai* (to depart) – @@@ DEMONISM].

## 2 TIMOTHY 4:20

Erastus remained in Corinth, but Trophimus I [Paul] left sick [*astheneo*] at Miletus [Paul could not heal him].



- (9) **False Miracles.** So-called modern-day miracles by “faith-healers.”
- (a) **Magic.** Magic or illusions are performed in such a way that the average person cannot explain them even though all such activities have natural explanations. Faith-healers of all categories seek to deceive by use of fakery or the “healing” of psychosomatic illnesses against a backdrop of extreme @@@ **EMOTION** and hysteria.
  - (b) **Demon Possession.** Any “genuine” case of healing is simply the work of demon removal by the forces of Satan, in that the initial cause of the illness residing in the unBeliever was due to the presence of a demon(s) – Matt. 24:24; Lk. 11:14; Deut. 13:1. See @@@ **DEMONISM**.

#### LUKE 11:14

And He [**Jesus Christ**] was casting out [*ekballo* (to drive out; to cast out)] a demon [*daimonion*] and it was mute [*kophos* (dumb; speechless)]; when the demon had gone out, the mute man spoke; and the crowds were amazed.

- (c) **Demons.** Demons can perform miracles and, in the Tribulation, will do so on many occasions to deceive humans for the advancement of Satan’s agenda. “*He performs great signs, so that he even makes fire come down out of heaven to the earth in the presence of men*” [Rev. 13:13-15]; Deut. 13:1; Acts 16:16-24 [the demon possessed girl].

#### DEUTERONOMY 13:1

If a prophet or a dreamer of dreams arises among you [**Hebrews**] and gives you a sign or a wonder [*mopheth* (miracle)], and the sign or the wonder comes true, concerning which he spoke to you, saying, “Let us go after other gods (whom you have not known) and let us serve them,” you shall not listen to the words of that prophet or that dreamer of dreams; for the LORD your God is testing you to find out if you love [*ahab* (human love for God)] the LORD your God with all your heart and with all your soul [*nephesh*].

- (10) **Miracles Today.** Since the completion of the @@@ **BIBLE**, God heals illnesses directly and it is entirely appropriate for the Believer to request such action from God by means of @@@ **PRAYER**.
-

## @@@ MONEY

- (1) **Definition.** Money is necessary for life and the operation of the economy – Gen. 23:9; Jer. 32:44. It is not “wrong” to make or acquire money.
- (2) **Capitalism.** God ordained capitalism as the best system for economic and social prosperity – “*wisdom is protection just as money is protection*” [Eccl. 7:12]. “*You shall not steal*” [Ex. 20:15] recognizes the private ownership of property. Further, it is a @@@ SIN to lust for another’s property or poersonalty – “*You shall not covet*” [Ex. 20:17].

### EXODUS 20:17

You shall not covet [*chamad (to desire)*] your neighbor’s [*rea (fellow-citizen)*] house; you shall not covet [*chamad*] your neighbor’s wife or his male servant or his female servant or his ox or his donkey or anything that belongs to your neighbor.

- (3) **Get a Job.** The @@@ BIBLE commands the Believer to work for a living under free enterprise and pay his taxes – “*render to Caesar the things that are Caesar’s*” [Lk. 7:25]; 1 Thess. 4:11; 2 Thess. 3:10-12; Prov. 13:11; 20:4; 21:25; Rom. 10:7. Capitalism may cause @@@ SUFFERING emanating from dishonesty by management or the employee, but socialism is *inherently evil*. Thus, capitalism is optimum when moral people operate therein. “*The sluggard does not plow after the autumn, so he begs during the harvest and has nothing*” [Prov. 20:4]. See @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS; Morality @@@ GOOD.

### 2 THESSALONIANS 3:10-12

For even when we were with you [*Paul and his traveling missionary team*], we used to give you this order: if anyone is not willing to work, then he is not to eat, either. For we hear that some among you [*Loser Believers*] are leading an undisciplined life, doing no work at all, but acting like busybodies [*periergazomai (to bustle about uselessly)*]. Now such persons we command and exhort in the LORD Jesus Christ to work in quiet fashion [*hesuchia (quietness; does not meddle with the affairs of others)*] – @@@ PRIVACY and eat their own bread [*an idiom for mind your own business and function within the parameters of the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS*].

## PROVERBS 21:25

The desire [*taavh* (longing of one's heart)] of the sluggard puts him to death [*muth* – physical @@@ DEATH], for his hands refuse to work [*awah*].

- (4) **Christian Giving.** @@@ GIVING of money is an expression of the Believer's @@@ GRACE function as a Royal Priest and is part of the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE – 2 Cor. 8 & 9; Matt. 8:2-4.
- (5) **Love of Money.** Money is not evil, but the “*love of money*” [1 Tim. 6:10] as a top priority in life is a dead end and a great evil which causes fantastic misery – Eccl. 5:10; 6:2; Heb. 13:5-6; Lk. 16:9-13; Deut. 16:19 [taking bribes]. “*He who loves money will not be satisfied with money, nor he who loves abundance with its income. This too is vanity*” [Eccl. 5:10].

## MATTHEW 6:24

“No one can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one and love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] the other, or he will be devoted to one and despise the other. You cannot serve God [making @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE first and living in the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE] and wealth [*mammonas* (riches, where it is personified and opposed to God)].”

## 1 TIMOTHY 6:10

For the love of money [*philarguria* (love of money; avarice) – @@@ MONEY] is a root [*rhiza* (that which springs from a root)] of all sorts of evil [*kakos*], and some by longing [*oregomai* (to stretch one's self out in order to touch something)] for it have wandered away [*apoplanao* (to cause to go astray)] from the faith [*pistis* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] and pierced [*peripeiro* (to pierce through)] themselves with many griefs [*odune* (a consuming grief or pain) – self-induced @@@ SUFFERING].

- (6) **Poor in Spirit.** Money cannot save the unBeliever from @@@ HELL. The term “*poor in spirit*” [Matt. 5:3] refers to the spiritually dead unBeliever who has a soul but *no human spirit*, not the financially impoverished. Jesus Christ paid the cost for the “*poor in spirit*” unBeliever on the @@@ CROSS. In turn, money cannot purchase growth for the Believer to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY. See Mk. 8:36-37; Prov. 11:4; Matt. 6:24; Lk. 12:15-21.

## PROVERBS 11:4

Riches do not profit in the day of wrath [Great White Throne Judgment for the unBeliever], but righteousness [God's imputed Righteousness [+R] to the Believer] delivers from death [the Believer from spiritual @@@ DEATH].

## MATTHEW 6:24

No one can serve two masters [*kurios*]; for either he will hate [*miseo*] the one and love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] the other, or he will be devoted to one and despise [*kataphroneo* (to think nothing of)] the other. You cannot serve [*douleuo* (to be a slave)] God and wealth [*mammonas*].

## MARK 8:36-37

For what does it profit a man to gain [*kerdaino* (to gain; to acquire)] the whole world [*kosmos*], and forfeit [*zemioo* (to suffer loss)] his soul [*psuche* – the unBeliever]? For what will a man give in exchange [*antallagma* (that which is given in place of another)] for his soul?

## LUKE 12:19-21

And I [unBeliever] will say to my soul [*psuche*], “Soul, you have many goods laid up for many years *to come*; take your ease, eat, drink *and* be merry.” But God said to him, “You fool [*aphron* (one without reason)]! This *very* night your soul is required [*apaiteo* (to demand back) – at physical @@@ DEATH the soul departs the body] of you; and *now* who will own what you have prepared?” So is the man who stores up treasure for himself, and is not rich [*plouteo*] toward God [*theos* – the only profitable wealth is possessing the [+R] of God for @@@ SALVATION and then learning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE to reach @@@ MATURITY and @@@ REWARDS].”

- (7) **Credit with God.** Money has no credit with God, only @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE has credit – Prov. 11:28; Ps. 119:72; Rom. 9:23; Col. 1:27; 2:2.

## PSALM 119:72

The law [*tora* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] of Your mouth is better [*tob*] to me than thousands of gold and silver *pieces*.

- (8) **Be Content.** The Believer should be content with what money and things he possesses at any given @@@ TIME in his life – Phil. 4:11; Heb. 13:5-6.

### PHILIPPIANS 4:11

Not that I [Paul] speak from want [*husteresis* (poverty)], for I have learned [*manthano* (to increase one's knowledge)] to be content [*autarkes* (content with one's lot; sufficient for one's self)] in whatever circumstances I am.

### HEBREWS 13:5-6

*Make sure that your [the Believer] character [tropos (a manner of life)] is free from the love of money [aphilarguros (not loving money; not avaricious)], being content [arkeo (to be satisfied)] with what you have; for He Himself has said, "I will never desert you, nor will I ever forsake you," so that we confidently [tharrheo (to be of good courage)] say, "The LORD is my helper, I will not be afraid [phobeo]. What will man do to me?"*

- (9) **Rewards of Money.** Part of the @@@ REWARDS for any given Believer can be great temporal wealth in this life – 2 Pet. 1:3; Prov. 10:22; Phil. 4:19; Gen. 14:22 – 15:1. In fact, God provides logistical @@@ GRACE support to all Believers [1 Pet. 5:5-6; Ps. 37:25] and can give wealth to mature Believers. However, for the **Loser** Believer the great irony is that wealth cannot be enjoyed without the accompanying *capacity*, which only comes through @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE. Wealth without capacity brings great misery, e.g., King Solomon – *"a man to whom God has given riches and wealth ... yet God has not empowered him to eat from them"* [Eccl. 6:2].

### PROVERBS 10:22

It is the blessing of the LORD that makes rich, and He adds no sorrow to it.

- (10) **Profiting on Bible Doctrine.** Neither the Gospel nor @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE are for "sale" – Rev. 22:17; Mic. 3:11; 1 Tim. 6:3-5. Daniel refused money for interpreting the "handwriting on the wall" [Dan. 5:5-17], but God rewarded him with money and position anyway [Dan. 5:29]. Abraham refused money from the King of Sodom [Gen. 14:23], but God rewarded him with vast wealth. Paul refused to make an issue out of money from Believers [2 Cor. 11:7-8] as it would distract from his teaching.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 11:7-8

Or did I [Paul] commit a sin [*hamartia*] in humbling myself so that you [Corinthian Believers] might be exalted [*hupsoo* (to raise up to the very summit of prosperity) – Paul taught @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE so the Believers could grow to @@@ MATURITY and receive @@@ REWARDS], because I preached the gospel [*euaggelion* – the good news of Bible Doctrine] of God to you without charge [*dorea*]? I robbed other churches [*ekklesia*] by taking wages *from them* to serve you [*even though* Corinth was a rich Church Paul received financial and logistical support from other congregations so as to not make an issue out of @@@ MONEY].

- (11) **Purchase the Gold of God.** Believers must prioritize “*storing up for themselves the treasure*” [1 Tim. 6:19] of Bible Doctrine, the “*power*” [Eph. 3:14-19] of God, which holds the fantastic wealth of all time/space and comes directly from God’s @@@ GRACE – Rev. 3:18; 22:17; Acts 3:6.

## REVELATION 22:17

The [Holy] Spirit and the bride say, “Come.” And let the one who hears say, “Come.” And let the one who is thirsty [*dipsao* (to be thirsty) – on positive [+P] volition] come; let the one who wishes [*thelo* (to will)] take the water [*hudor* – Gospel of @@@ SALVATION] of life without cost [*dorea* (a gift)].

## REVELATION 3:18

I [Jesus Christ] advise [*sumbouleuo* (to give counsel)] you [the Church at Laodicea] to buy from Me gold [*chrusion* (gold which lies embedded in the earth) – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE is gold in the earth] refined [*puroo* (to burn with fire)] by fire [*pur* – the job of the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER is to take the ore, refine it into gold coins, and give it to the congregation as their spiritual @@@ MONEY] so that you may become rich [*plouteo* (to be affluent in resources) – the Believer can now reach @@@ MATURITY], and white garments so that you may clothe yourself [with fantastic @@@ REWARDS], and *that* the shame of your nakedness will not be revealed [*phaneroo* (to make manifest or visible) – at the Judgment Seat of Christ the Believer will not be ashamed of his rewards]; and eye salve to anoint your eyes so that you may see [the Believer only sees God through Bible Doctrine].



## @@@ MOSAIC LAW & JEWISH HOLY DAYS

### – THE MOSAIC LAW –

- (1) **Definition.** The Mosaic Law was given to Israel only, as a Client Nation to God – Ex. 19:3; Lev. 26:46; Rom. 3:19; 9:4. *See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.*
- (2) **Gentiles.** The Mosaic Law was not given to the Gentiles in the Old Testament or in the New Testament – Deut. 4:8; Rom. 2:12-14.

### ROMANS 2:14

For when Gentiles [*ethnos*] who do not have the [*Mosaic*] Law do instinctively [*phusis* (the nature of things)] the things of the [*Mosaic*] Law, these, not having the [*Mosaic*] Law, are a law to themselves [*their conscience regarding @@@ SIN acts as the Mosaic Law convicting them of the need for a Savior by @@@ GRACE*].

- (3) **The Church.** The Church is not under the Mosaic Law – Acts 15:5, 11, 24; Rom. 6:14; Gal. 2:19. *See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE; @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE* – Rom. 8:1-4; 13:8; Gal. 5:18.

### ROMANS 8:1-4

Therefore [*ara* (so then)] there is now no condemnation [*katakrima* (a damnatory sentence)] for those who are in Christ Jesus [*all Believers are in @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST*]. For the law [*nomos* – legal standard] of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has set you free from the law [*nomos* – legal standard] of sin [*hamartia*] and of death [*thanatos* (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)]. For what the Law [*nomos* – @@@ MOSAIC LAW] could not do, weak [*astheneo* (to be without strength)] as it was through the flesh [*sarx*], God *did*: sending His own Son in the likeness [*homoioima* (resemblance)] of sinful flesh and *as an offering* for sin [*hamartia*], He condemned [*katakrino* (to give judgment against)] sin [*hamartia*] in the flesh, so that the requirement [*dikaioima* (the force of a right law)] of the Law [*nomos* – the Mosaic Law demands perfection] might be fulfilled [*pleroo*] in us, who do not walk [*peripateo* (lifestyle)] according to the flesh [*sarx* – the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE controlling the Believer] but according to the Spirit [*Fellowship with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT*].

(4) **Cannot Do.** What the Mosaic Law cannot do.

- (a) **Salvation.** Mosaic Law cannot provide for salvation – Rom. 3:20-22, 28; Gal. 2:16, 21; 3:10-13; 5:3; Acts 13:39; Phil. 3:9. The Law is like a plate glass window, if you break it at one point it all shatters – Js. 2:10. Further, mental attitude @@@ SIN equates to a violation of the Mosaic Law – “*everyone who looks at a woman with lust for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart*” [Matt. 5:28].

### GALATIANS 3:10

For as many as are of the works [*ergon*] of the Law [*nomos* – those attempting to be saved by keeping the @@@ MOSAIC LAW] are under a curse [*katara* (accursed) – only Jesus kept all the precepts of the Mosaic Law]; for it is written, “Cursed is everyone who does not abide by all things written in the book [*biblion*] of the Law, to perform [*poieo* (to do)] them.”

### ROMANS 3:20-22

Because by the works of the Law [@@@ MOSAIC LAW] no flesh [*sarx* – the unBeliever] will be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] in His [God] sight [God can only accept His Perfect Righteousness [+R]]; for through the Law comes the knowledge of sin. But now apart from the Law the righteousness of God has been manifested [*phaneroo*], being witnessed by the Law and the Prophets [they taught this @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], even the righteousness of God through [*dia* (by means of)] faith [*pistis*] in Jesus Christ for all those who believe [*pisteuo* – the Believer receives God’s Perfect [+R]]; for there is no distinction [*diastole* (difference) – Jews and Gentiles alike are saved by @@@ FAITH in the Christ].

### GALATIANS 2:16

Nevertheless knowing that a man is not justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – acceptable to God] by the works of the Law [@@@ MOSAIC LAW cannot provide God’s Righteousness [+R]] but through [*dia* (by means of)] faith [*pistis*] in Christ Jesus, even we have believed [*pisteuo*] in Christ Jesus, so that we may be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] by faith [*pistis* – saving faith provides the [+R] of God] in Christ and not by the works of the Law; since by the works of the Law no flesh [*sarx* – unBeliever] will be justified.

**JAMES 2:10**

For whoever keeps the whole [*holos* (completely)] law [*nomos* – @@@ **MOSAIC LAW**] and yet stumbles [*patio* (to fall)] in one *point*, he has become guilty [*enochos* (in a forensic sense)] of all [*pas*].

(b) **Eternal Life.** The Law cannot give eternal life – Gal. 3:21; Rom 7:10.

**GALATIANS 3:21**

Is the Law [*nomos* – the @@@ **MOSAIC LAW**] then contrary to the promises [*epaggelia* (a promised good)] of God [God promised a means of @@@ **SALVATION**]? May it never be! For if a law [*nomos*] had been given [by God] which was able to impart life [*zoopoieo* – eternal @@@ **LIFE with God**], then righteousness [*dikaiosis* – God's Righteousness [+R] is required for salvation] would indeed have been based on law.

(c) **Spirituality.** The Law cannot give spirituality – Gal. 3:2; Rom. 7:14.

**GALATIANS 3:2**

This is the only thing I [Paul] want to find out from you: did you receive [*lambano*] the Spirit [the Indwelling of the @@@ **HOLY SPIRIT**] by the works [*ergon*] of the Law [*nomos* – the @@@ **MOSAIC LAW**], or by hearing [*akoe* (the thing heard) – the Gospel of @@@ **SALVATION**] with faith [*pistis* – saving @@@ **FAITH** in Jesus Christ]?

(d) **Maturity.** Following the Mosaic Law in the Church Age cannot bring the Believer to spiritual @@@ **MATURITY** – Heb. 7:18-19.

**HEBREWS 7:18-19**

For, on the one hand, there is setting aside [*athetesis* (to put away; abolish)] of a former commandment [@@@ **MOSAIC LAW**] because of its weakness and uselessness [*anopheles*] (for the law made nothing perfect), and on the other hand there is a bringing in of a better hope [*elpis* – @@@ **GRACE**], through [*dia* (by means of)] which we draw near [*eggizo*] to God.

(e) **Old Sin Nature.** The Law cannot fight off the OSN – Rom. 8:2-8.

(5) **Can Do.** What the Mosaic Law can do.

- (a) **Point to Salvation.** The Law can point to the only solution for @@@ SALVATION. It proves to man that he is a sinner and needs a Savior to save him – Rom. 3:20; 1 Tim. 1:9-10; 2:5-6; Gal. 3:23-26.

### GALATIANS 3:23-26

But before faith [*pistis* – saving @@@ FAITH in Jesus Christ] came [Christ performed His work on the @@@ CROSS], we [Believers] were kept in custody [*phroureo* (under a military guard)] under the Law [@@@ MOSAIC LAW], being shut up to the [*object of*] faith which was later to be revealed. Therefore the Law has become our tutor [*paidagogos*] to lead us to Christ, so that we may be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – the Believer receives God's Righteousness [+R]] by faith [*pistis* – saving faith in Christ]. But now that faith [*pistis* – saving faith in Jesus Christ] has come, we are no longer under a tutor. For you [Believers] are all sons [*uihos*] of God [*theos*] through faith [*pistis* – the means of @@@ SALVATION] in Christ Jesus.

- (b) **Order in Society.** Mosaic Law can provide for order in civil society under the laws of the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.
- (6) **Jesus Kept the Law.** Only Jesus Christ kept the Mosaic Law perfectly – “*He who knew no sin*” [2 Cor. 5:21]. In fact, Jesus Christ is the end of the Mosaic Law regarding the imputation of God's Righteousness [+R] to the Believer – Matt. 5:17; Rom. 10:4. In turn, Jesus repeatedly pointed out the many man-made distortions of the Law by legalism and religious traditions – Matt. 23.

### MATTHEW 5:17

Do not think that I [Jesus] came to abolish [*kataluo* (to disunite)] the Law [@@@ MOSAIC LAW] or the Prophets; I did not come to abolish but to fulfill [*pleroo* (to fill up) – everything pointed to His person and work].

- (7) **Three Parts.** The Mosaic Law consists of three separate parts or Codices – CODEX I, II, and III.
- (a) **CODEX I – The Morality Code Given to Israel.** The many types of @@@ SIN it mentions are all related to the matter of human morality.

Codex I embraces @@@ PRIVACY, private ownership of property, sacredness of life, and morality. Again, while it can be outwardly kept to a certain degree by people, a primary purpose was to demonstrate that no human can keep the full requirements of Codex I – Ex. 20:1, 17; Rom. 7:1-25. See @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.

- (b) **CODEX II – @@@ SOTERIOLOGY and Christology Rituals.** Codex II contained the “spiritual” aspect of the Mosaic Law which demonstrated the person and work of the promised Savior/Messiah and pointed to the mechanics of how @@@ SALVATION is obtained – by @@@ GRACE in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD. See Ex. 25:10-22, describing the function of the Ark of the Covenant – Heb. 9:4.

1. **Tabernacle.** The original Tabernacle was a large tent [prior to Solomon’s Temple] with three compartmentalized parts: (1) the outer court represented the earth; (2) the Holy Place represented @@@ HEAVEN; and (3) the Holy of Holies represented the very presence of God. The Ark itself resided in the Holy of Holies. The location of the Tabernacle was in the middle of the Hebrew camp which signified that God and His @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE are the most important things in life.
2. **The Specs.** All of the design specifications for the Tabernacle were absolutely precise to indicate that God is Perfect and that the Believer must follow the perfect @@@ PLAN OF GOD and not his own ideas of @@@ RELIGION. The brass represented Divine @@@ JUDGMENT and the silver stood for @@@ SALVATION. The white linen cloth around the Tabernacle represented the Perfect Righteousness [+R] of God and the only entrance, which was a linen cloth door of blue, represented that there is only one way to salvation which is by Christ. The other colors after blue represented the work and person of Jesus Christ.

- (c) **CODEX III – An @@@ AUTHORITY System for Life, Liberty, and Prosperity in Society.** Codex III covered regulations on nutrition, sanitation, legal jurisprudence, government operation, capitalism, and included a military mobilization plan in the book of *Numbers*. It also set up a strict system of taxation based on across the board fixed percentages for everyone. See @@@ GIVING.

– SABBATH –

- (1) **Definition.** All Jewish Holy Days pointed to some aspect of @@@ GRACE and the person of Jesus Christ, the God of Israel. Along with all the Old Testament rituals these things were described as shadows – *skia* (an image that represents a reality) – of the true reality. See Col. 2:17; Heb. 8:5; 10:1.
- (2) **The Jewish Sabbath.** The Sabbath was designed to teach that no human can work for @@@ SALVATION – Gen. 2:2; Isa. 58:11-14; Ezk. 20:8-11; Lev. 23:3; Deut. 5:12-15. God rested on the 7th day after the restoration of life to the earth. Between Gen. 2:2 and Ex. 16:23 the Sabbath is not even mentioned.
- (3) **Sabbatical Sabbath.** This was a generation test for the @@@ FAITH/Rest of the people. In an agricultural society the land was to rest once every seven years so that the people relied on God – Ex. 23:10-11; Lev. 25:3-4; 26:33-36.
- (4) **Jubilee Sabbath.** Every 50th year – Lev. 25:8-55. This was a test from God to see if the nation would rely on God for their economic prosperity.
- (5) **Temporal Sabbath.** This refers to the @@@ FAITH/Rest technique in the Believer's day by day @@@ WALKING with God – Heb. 3:11; 4:1-3.

HEBREWS 4:1

Therefore, let us [Believers] fear if, while a promise [*epaggelia* (a promised good)] remains of entering His rest [*katapausis* (a resting place) – reaching spiritual @@@ MATURITY], any one of you may seem to have come short of it [*hustereo* (to be left behind in the race) – no @@@ REWARDS].

- (6) **Eternal Sabbath.** This refers to eternal life for the Believer – Deut. 33:27; Isa. 9:6; Jn. 20:31. See @@@ HEAVEN; @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY.

DEUTERONOMY 33:27

The eternal God is a dwelling place, and underneath are the everlasting arms; and He drove out the enemy from before you, and said, "Destroy!"

- (7) **Rejection.** The rejection of the Sabbath always symbolized apostasy and @@@ REVERSIONISM by the Jews – Ezk. 23:37-39; Neh. 13:15-21.



- (8) **Church Age.** The observance of the Sabbath is interrupted during the Church Age – Col. 2:16-17; Acts 20:7; 1 Cor. 16:2. In the Church Age all days are alike and there are no special days – Rom. 14:4-10.

## ROMANS 14:5

One person regards [*krino*] one day [*hemera*] above another, another regards every day *alike*. Each person must be fully convinced in his own mind [*nous*].

### – FEASTS –

- (1) **Definition.** All seven Feasts [Lev. 23:4-43] were joyous events of *chag* and were designed to teach various aspects of the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD**. For example, Ps. 118, taught the difference between the 1st Advent of Christ [Ps. 118:20-23] and the 2nd Advent [Ps. 118:24-26]. Messiah first came on a donkey to save mankind [Jn. 3:17], but returns on a war horse to judge and make war on the wicked. See Zech. 9:9; Mk. 11:1-9; Rev. 19:11; Lk. 12:49.
- (2) **1st Advent Feasts.**
- (a) (1) **Passover.** Celebrated circa April, spoke of the sacrificial work of Christ on the @@@ **CROSS** [Ex. 12; Lev. 23:5; 1 Cor. 5:7]. The traditional Passover sacrifices began in the early afternoon – the same time that Christ suffered spiritual @@@ **DEATH** on the @@@ **CROSS**. Followed by (2) **Unleavened Bread** which spoke of Messiah's Holiness [1 Pet. 1:19; 2 Cor. 5:21] and the Believer's temporal Fellowship with God [Lev. 23:6-7; Rom. 2:28-29; 9:6-8; 1 Cor. 5:6-7; 11:24; Gal. 5:9]. Both Feasts were celebrated in tandem for an eight-day observance [Ex. 23:15].
  - (b) (3) **First Fruits.** Celebrated on the second day after Unleavened Bread, it spoke of the resurrection of Christ [1 Cor. 15:20-28; Lev. 23:9-14].
  - (c) (4) **Pentecost.** Spoke of the start of the Church Age. Pentecost was celebrated 50 days after Passover [Lev. 23:15-21; Acts 2:1-47].
- (3) **The Gap.** After Pentecost there was a lengthy period of no Feasts [approximately from June to September]. This gap spoke of the period of time which would be the Church Age @@@ **MYSTERY** period.

(4) **2nd Advent Feasts.**

- (a) **(5) Feast of Trumpets.** Spoke of the 2nd Advent of the LORD Jesus Christ and the promised regathering of the Jews and restoration of Israel as a Client Nation to God [Num. 29:6-34; Isa. 5:26-30; 10:19-23; 11:11-16; 14:1-3; 60:4-6; Joel 2:16; Zech. 10:6-12; Ezk. 20:33-38; Lev. 23:23-25; Matt. 13:1-13]. September/October.

**ISAIAH 5:26**

He [**Jesus Christ at the 2nd Advent**] will also lift up a standard to the distant nation [**Jesus Christ will rule for 1,000 years at Jerusalem**], and will whistle for it [**all Believer Jews then alive**] from the ends of the earth; and behold, it will come [**the Believer Jews will go to Israel**] with speed swiftly.

- (b) **(6) Atonement.** Spoke of Christ's work for @@@ SALVATION and all the unconditional @@@ COVENANTS to Believers in Israel being fulfilled [Lev. 16:1-34; 23:26-32; Zech. 12:1 – 13:2]. **Yom Kippur** – in Temple times this was the only day out of the year that the High Priest entered the Holy of Holies with the blood sacrifice. October.
- (5) **Tabernacles.** **(7)** The Feast of Tabernacles [aka **Feast of Booths**] spoke of the Millennium reign of Jesus Christ [Lev. 23:33-43; Isa. 2:1-4; Zech. 14:9, 16; Jn. 7:37-39]. The Jews would set up tents outside their homes for ten days to celebrate this Feast. October.

**ZECHARIAH 14:9**

And the LORD will be king over all the earth; in that day [**the start of the Millennium**] the LORD will be *the only* one, and His name *the only* one.

- (6) **Hanukah.** A holiday to celebrate the Dedication of the Temple on 25 Dec. 164 B.C., when the Jews reclaimed Jerusalem from the Greeks – “***At that time the Feast of the Dedication took place in Jerusalem; it was winter, and Jesus was walking in the temple in the portico of Solomon***” [Jn. 10:22-23].
- (7) **The New Moon.** A special feast to celebrate the 1st day of the month. See Num. 10:10; 28:11-15; 2 Kng. 4:23; Col. 2:16; Ezk. 46:1.
-

## @@@ MYSTERY

- (1) **Definition.** An Attic Greek word used to indicate the “secrets” of a fraternal organization, *musterion* (mystery). This word is used in the New Testament to refer to certain categories of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE pertaining to the Church Age which were held back from Old Testament Believers – Eph. 3:1-6; Col. 1:25-27; Rom. 16:25-26. Thus, the word mystery always deals with some aspect of the Church Age – Eph. 1:9; 3:9-10. In fact, the Church Age is the central hub for all the other @@@ DISPENSATIONS and a major issue in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.

### EPHESIANS 3:3-5

That by revelation [*apokalupsis* (a disclosure of truth)] there was made known [*gnorizo* (to gain knowledge)] to me [Paul] the mystery [*musterion* – @@@ MYSTERY], as I wrote before in brief. By referring to this, when you read you can understand my insight into the mystery of Christ [Paul knew he was writing portions of the New Testament], which in other generations was not made known to the sons of men, as it has now been revealed [*apokalupto*] to His holy apostles and prophets in [by] the Spirit [all of the @@@ BIBLE is inspired by the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT].

### EPHESIANS 3:9-10

And to bring to light [*photizo* (to give light)] what is the administration [*oikonomia* (the office of a manager)] of the mystery [*musterion* – special @@@ MYSTERY information in the Church Age] which for ages [*aion* (an unbroken age)] has been hidden [*apokrupto* (to conceal)] in God who created all things; so that the manifold [*polupoikilos* (marked with a great variety of colors)] wisdom [*sophia* (broad and full of intelligence)] of God might now be made known through [*dia* (by means of)] the church [*ekklesia*] to the rulers [*arche* (the leaders) – senior demons] and the authorities [*exousia* (the power over mankind) – field grade demons] in the heavenly [*epouranios* (things that take place in heaven)] places.

- (2) **Church Age Only.** The mystery doctrines are set forth through God’s revelations in the New Testament only – 1 Tim. 3:9; Col. 2:2; 1 Cor. 4:1; Matt. 13:11. Note: With the completion of the @@@ BIBLE in A.D. 96, there are no more visions, dreams, etc. in the Church Age. See @@@ GIFTS.

- (3) **Intercalation.** There is much information provided in the Old Testament about the 1st Advent of Christ, the 2nd Advent of Christ, and other future events, but never the Church Age. This phenomenon of omission is termed “intercalation” [i] – where one would expect the Church Age to be mentioned in a particular passage but it is not. For example: Dan. 2:40 [i] 41; Dan. 7:23 [i] 24; Dan. 9:26 [i] 27; Hos. 3:4 [i] 5; Isa. 61:1 [i] 2 [see Lk. 4:17, where Christ quoted only the first part of Isa. 61:1]. Note: Per Dan. 9:24-27, the Age of Israel was brought to an absolute halt in A.D. 30, coterminous with the rejection of the Messiah by the Jews. The remaining “*week*” [7 years] of the Age of Israel [Daniel’s “*Seventy Weeks*” prophecy] will start again after the @@@ RAPTURE and conclude at the 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS concerning Daniel’s seventy weeks.
- (4) **The Church.** The mystery doctrines are taught in local churches.
- (a) **Classroom.** The word *ekklesia* (a gathering place) and *oikos* (family house) are used to describe the local “classroom” where @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE is taught; generally in the early Church period this was the home of a wealthy Believer, because there was more space – 1 Cor. 1:2; 11:18; 14:19; 28:35; Rom. 16:4-5; 1 Thess. 1:1; Rev. 2 & 3; Acts 7:38; 19:25, 30; 20:20; Phil. 1:1; 4:15; Matt. 18:17; Phm. 2; Col. 4:15.

## ACTS 20:20

How I [Paul] did not shrink [*hupostello* (to draw back; to be timid)] from declaring to you [Ephesus Church] anything that was profitable [*sumphero* (to help; to be profitable) – so positive [+P] volition Believers could reach @@@ MATURITY by means of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], and teaching [*didasko* (to be a teacher)] you publicly [*demosios* (in public places)] and from house [*oikos* – Churches met in the private homes of selected Believers] to house, solemnly testifying [*diamarturomai*] to both Jews and Gentiles of repentance [*metanoeo* (to change the mind) – reject @@@ RELIGION’s method for @@@ SALVATION] toward God and faith [*pistis* – @@@ FAITH in Christ] in our LORD Jesus Christ.

- (b) **Pentecost.** The start of the Church Age was predicted [Matt. 16:18; Jn. 15:26-27] and officially opened in A.D. 30 on the day of Pentecost with the dry @@@ BAPTISM of the Holy Spirit manifested in spectacular, yet short lived, events – Acts 1:5; 2:1-4; 11:15-16; 1 Cor. 12:12-13.

## ACTS 2:1-4

When the day of Pentecost had come, they [**the 11 disciples**] were all together in one place. And suddenly there came from heaven a noise like a violent rushing wind, and it filled the whole house where they were sitting. And there appeared to them tongues [*glossa* (the language or dialect of a particular people; the tongue)] as of fire [*pur* (burning flame)] distributing [*diamerizo*] themselves, and they rested on each one of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and began to speak with other tongues [*glossa*], as the [**Holy**] Spirit was giving them utterance [*apophtheggomai* (to speak out)].

## MATTHEW 16:18

I [**Jesus**] also say to you that you are Peter [*petros* (little rock chip)], and upon this rock [*petra* (gigantic rock)] – **Jesus Christ is the foundation @@@ CORNERSTONE of @@@ SALVATION, the Church, and all Believers in all @@@ DISPENSATIONS** I will build My church [*ekklesia*]; and the gates [*pule* (likened to a vast prison)] of Hades will not overpower [*katischuo* (to prevail)] it.

- (5) **Nine Mystery Doctrines.** There are nine specific mystery doctrines recorded in the New Testament – Eph. 6:19.

## EPHESIANS 6:19

And *pray* on my [**Paul**] behalf, that utterance may be given to me [**an @@@ OPEN DOOR opportunity**] in the opening [*anoixis*] of my mouth, to make known [*gnorizo* (to become known)] with boldness [*parrhesia* (freedom in speaking)] the mystery [*musterion* – @@@ **MYSTERY**] of the gospel [*euaggelion*].

- (a) **One: Old Testament Rituals End and Bible Completed.** The Gospel is fully manifested in the person of Jesus Christ, all Old Testament rituals cease [the only ritual for the Church Age is the “LORD’s Supper”], and the @@@ **BIBLE** is completed [A.D. 96, with the book of *Revelation*] and made available to all positive [**+P**] volition Believers. The @@@ **DIVINE DYNASPHERE** replaces the @@@ **MOSAIC LAW** so that the Believer represents himself before God as a Royal Priest – Rom. 8:1-4; 1 Jn. 1:9; 1 Pet. 2:5, 9; 18; Rev. 1:6; 5:10.

## 1 PETER 2:9

But you [**Believers in the Church Age**] are a chosen race, a royal [*basileios*] priesthood [*hierateuma*], a holy nation, a people for *God's* own possession, so that you may proclaim the excellencies of Him who has called you out of darkness [*skotos* – **the status of spiritual @@@ DEATH**] into His marvelous [*thaumastos* (wonderful)] light [*phos* – **@@@ UNION WITH CHRIST**].

- (b) **Two: Royal Family of God.** All Believers make up the Body of Christ [the Church] and there is no distinction between Jew and Gentile. This is due to all Church Age Believers being baptized by the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT and put in @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST – Eph. 1:13; 3:1-11; Acts 11:16; 1 Cor. 12:13; Col. 1:18. Thus, Believers are a @@@ NEW SPECIES and Royal Family in Christ per 1 Cor. 1:2, 30; 11:25; Rom. 8:1; 16:25-26; Rev. 1:20. They are also ambassadors for Christ – 2 Cor. 5:20; Eph. 6:10. See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.

## COLOSSIANS 1:18

He [**Jesus Christ**] is also head [*kephale*] of the body [*soma*], the church [*ekklesia*]; and He is the beginning, the firstborn [*protokokos*] from the dead [*nekros* – **Jesus Christ has the first @@@ RESURRECTION body**], so that He Himself will come to have first place in everything.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 11:25

In the same way *He* [**Jesus**] took the cup [*poterion* – @@@ CUP] also after supper, saying, “This cup is the new covenant [*diatheke* (a compact) – **the Church Age @@@ MYSTERY of @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST**] in My blood [*aima* – **the @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST**]; do this, as often as you drink *it*, in remembrance [*anamnesis* (recollection) – @@@ MEMORY] of Me.”

- (c) **Three: The Bride of Christ.** At the @@@ RAPTURE the body of Christ becomes the Bride of Christ [Eph. 5:27-32]. The Bride of Christ is then prepared for the 2nd Advent at the “*Judgment Seat of Christ*.” [2 Cor. 5:10] where all Church Age Believers are evaluated by Jesus Christ and @@@ REWARDS are given out to the mature Believers by the LORD Christ – 1 Cor. 3:11-15. See @@@ JUDGMENT.



## EPHESIANS 5:27

That He [Jesus Christ] might present Himself the church [ekklesia] in all her glory [doxa], having no spot [spilos (a moral blemish)] or wrinkle [rhutis] or any such thing; but that she [Church Age Believers after the Judgment Seat of Christ evaluation] would be holy [hagios] and blameless [amomos (without fault)].

- (d) **Four: The Rapture of the Church.** The @@@ RAPTURE – 1 Cor. 15:51-57; 1 Thess. 3:13; 4:13-18; 2 Thess. 2:3; Col. 2:14-15; Rev. 19:6-8 [cf. Zech. 13:2, where demons are removed at the 2nd Advent].

## 1 CORINTHIANS 15:51-54

Behold, I [Paul] tell you a mystery [musterion – @@@ MYSTERY]; we [all Church Age Believers] will not all sleep [koimao – the physical @@@ DEATH of the Believer is referred to as @@@ SLEEP], but we will all be changed [allasso (to exchange one thing for another)], in a moment [atomos (a moment of time)], in the twinkling [rhipe] of an eye, at the last trumpet [salpigx – this trumpet closes out the Church Age at the @@@ RAPTURE]; for the trumpet will sound, and the dead [nekros (physical death) – Church Age Believers who have physically died] will be raised [egeiro] imperishable [aphthartos (immortal) – they will get @@@ RESURRECTION bodies], and we [Believers that are then living at the time of the Rapture] will be changed [allasso – all living Believers will exchange their mortal bodies for resurrection bodies]. For this perishable [phthartos – the human body] must put on the imperishable [aphthartos – the immortal resurrection body], and this mortal [thnetos (liable to death)] must put on [enduo (to put on clothes)] immortality [athanasia (everlasting immortality)]. But when this perishable will have put on the imperishable, and this mortal will have put on immortality, then [at the Rapture] will come about the saying that is written, “Death [thanatos (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)] is swallowed up [katapino (to drink down)] in victory [nikos (to utterly vanquish)].”

- (e) **Five: The Indwelling of the LORD Jesus Christ.** The @@@ INDWELLING OF CHRIST occurs at the moment of @@@ SALVATION and is never lost regardless of the Believer’s level of spiritual growth – “Christ is in you” [Rom. 8:10]; Col. 1:25-27; Jn. 14:20; 17:22-23; Gal. 2:20; Rev. 3:20; 1 Jn. 2:24.

## COLOSSIANS 1:25-27

Of *this church* I [Paul] was made a minister [*diakonos* – a @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHER**] according to the stewardship [*oikonomia* (overseer)] from God bestowed on me for your [Believers] benefit, so that I might fully carry out the *preaching of* the word of God, *that is*, the mystery [*musterion*] which has been hidden [*apokrupto* (to conceal; to keep secret)] from the *past* ages [*aion* (an unbroken period of time)] and generations [other @@@ **DISPENSATIONS**], but has now been manifested [*phaneroo* (to make manifest or visible)] to His saints [*hagios* (set apart ones) – all Church Age Believers], to whom God willed [*thelo* (to have in mind; to intend)] to make known [*gnorizo*] what is the riches [*ploutos* (riches; wealth)] of the glory [*doxa*] of this mystery [*musterion* – the @@@ **MYSTERY doctrine of the Church Age**] among the Gentiles [*ethnos*], which is Christ in you [all Believers have the @@@ **INDWELLING OF CHRIST**], the hope [*elpis*] of glory [a guarantee of the Believer's @@@ **RESURRECTION** body and @@@ **ETERNAL SECURITY**].

- (f) **Six: Indwelling of the Holy Spirit.** The @@@ **HOLY SPIRIT** Indwells every Believer and “absolute” spirituality is achieved by the Filling of the Holy Spirit through @@@ **REBOUND**. “*Did you not know that you are a temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you?*” [1 Cor. 3:16]; 1 Tim. 3:16.

## 1 TIMOTHY 3:16

By common confession [*homologoumenos* (by consent of all; without controversy)], great is the mystery [*musterion*] of godliness [*eusebeia* – the @@@ **MYSTERY doctrines of the Church Age**]: He [Jesus Christ] who was revealed [*phaneroo* (to make manifest)] in the flesh, was vindicated [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] in [by] the [Holy] Spirit, seen by angels, proclaimed among the nations [*ethnos*], believed on [*pisteuo*] in the world [*kosmos* – some humans in every generation will accept the free gift of @@@ **SALVATION**], taken up [*analambano* – the @@@ **RESURRECTION** and acceptance of Jesus Christ by God the Father] in glory [*doxa*].

- (g) **Seven: Indwelling of God the Father.** God the Father also Indwells every Believer – “*One God and Father of all (Believers) who is over all and through all and in all*” [Eph. 4:6]; Matt. 10:20; Jn. 17:23.

- (h) **Eight: The Blindness of Israel.** There is a special scar tissue on the souls of most Jews during the entire Church Age – Lk. 21:24; Rom. 11:25. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS. The vast majority of Jews in the Church Age reject Jesus Christ and will not respond to the Gospel.

## ROMANS 11:25

For I [Paul] do not want you, brethren [Believers], to be uninformed [*agnoeo* (to be ignorant)] of this mystery [*musterion* – @@@ MYSTERY]—so that you will not be wise in your own estimation—that a partial [*meros* (a part)] hardening [*porosis* (the mind of one who has been blunted) – negative [-N] volition to the Gospel] has happened to Israel until the fullness [*pleroma*] of the Gentiles [*ethnos*] has come in [*eiserchomai* (to go out or come in) – this will end at the start of the Millennium].

- (i) **Nine: Increased Demon Activity.** The intensified phase of the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT in the Church Age is capped by the removal of the restraining ministry of God the Holy Spirit at the @@@ RAPTURE providing Satan the full opportunity to fulfill his illogical boast to create a perfect environment on the earth – 2 Thess. 2:6-7.

## 2 THESSALONIANS 2:6-7

And you [Believers] know [Paul's teachings on the subject] what restrains [*katecho* (to hold back)] him [Satan] now, so that in his time he will be revealed [*apokalupto* (to uncover; to lay bare) – during the Tribulation Satan will have vast additional powers]. For the mystery [*musterion* – @@@ MYSTERY] of lawlessness [*anomia* (the condition without law)] is already at work [*energeo* (to be operative) – Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD now]; only he [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] who now restrains [Satan rules the world but God the Holy Spirit controls @@@ HISTORY and keeps Satan within certain parameters] will do so until he [the Holy Spirit] is taken out of the way [at the @@@ RAPTURE].

- (6) **The Pastor/Teacher.** The @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER is responsible for teaching the full mystery doctrine in detail – 1 Cor. 4:1; Col. 4:2-3. Church Age Believers must be instructed on how they can be Winner invisible heroes using the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT – 1 Cor. 13:13.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 4:1

Let a man regard [*logizomai* (to take into account)] us [Paul and his traveling seminary team of @@@ PASTOR/TEACHERS] in this manner, as servants [*huperetes* (a man who works with his hands)] of Christ and stewards [*oikonomos* (the manager of a household; overseer)] of the mysteries [*musterion* – @@@ MYSTERY] of God.

## COLOSSIANS 4:2-3

Devote yourselves [Believers in Colossae] to prayer, keeping alert in it with *an attitude of* thanksgiving; praying at the same time for us [Paul and his traveling seminary team] as well, that God will open up to us a door for the word, so that we may speak forth the mystery [*musterion* – @@@ MYSTERY] of Christ, for which I have also been imprisoned; that I may make it clear in the way I ought to speak.

- (7) **Power Source.** The power source for the Believer in the Church Age is to have the complete “thinking of Christ” – “*the power of God*” [2 Tim. 1:8] – circulating in his @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT, which is far stronger than @@@ MIRACLES or anything that exists in time or space. Possessing the very “*mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16] underscores the fantastic impact on @@@ HISTORY which the Church Age Believer can have during the intensified stage of the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT. In the Old Testament there were very few visible heroes. In the Church Age every Believer has the opportunity to reach @@@ MATURITY as an invisible hero **Winner** who glorifies the @@@ PLAN OF GOD, receives @@@ REWARDS, and is entered as a subject matter expert witness exhibit in the Angelic Conflict.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 2:16

For who has known [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] the mind [*nous* (the mind, comprising alike the faculties of perceiving and understanding)] of the LORD [*kurios* (God) – the thinking of Jesus Christ is @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], that he [any given person] will instruct [*sumbibadzo* (to cause to coalesce)] Him [God]? But we [Paul and his traveling seminary] have [*echo* (to have and to hold)] the mind of Christ [these @@@ PASTOR/TEACHERs knew Bible Doctrine and were ready to teach it].

---

## @@@ NEW SPECIES

- (1) **Definition.** A species is a class of individuals having common attributes and designated by a common name. The New Testament uses the term to refer to a unique @@@ MYSTERY of the Church Age where at the moment of @@@ SALVATION all Believers are born again as a new spiritual species in the Royal Family of God.
- (2) **The Jewish Race.** Racial variations in humans came from Shem, Ham, and Japheth – Gen. 10:1. The Jewish race itself came from a totally hopeless situation where Abraham and Sarah who were both sexually dead [Sarah was always barren even before old age set in] and unable to procreate but nevertheless did produce a son, as God had promised them – Gen. 21:12; 26:3-4; Rom. 4:17-21. *See @@@ DEATH; @@@ MIRACLES.*
  - (a) **Jews.** The Jews were selected to represent God before the @@@ WORLD and to be the custodian for the developing @@@ BIBLE – Deut. 24:8. *See @@@ MOSAIC LAW; @@@ DISPENSATIONS.* The historical impact of the Jewish people in the Old Testament was visible for all peoples and nations to observe – Gen. 18:18; 22:18; 26:4.
  - (b) **Client Nation.** Throughout the Old Testament, the Jews as various Client Nations to God were generally on negative [-N] volition to God and His Word – 1 Cor. 10:5; Rom. 9:6-13; *Hosea*. *See @@@ PIVOT.*
- (3) **Christian New Species.** Christians in the Church Age are not called a new “race,” but labeled as an entirely “new species” [*ktisis*] because they are Royal Family of God and have access to the wonders of the @@@ MYSTERY. 2 Cor. 5:17, “*new creature*” and “*new things*” terminology reflect the new position firmly set out in the Believer’s @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:17

Therefore if anyone is in Christ, *he is* a new creature [*ktisis*]; the old [*archaios* (that which has been from the beginning) – the enslavement to the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE and spiritual @@@ DEATH] things passed away [*parerchomai* (to lose power over)]; behold, new things [*kainos* (a new unprecedented thing) – the @@@ FORTY THINGS given the Believer at @@@ SALVATION] have come.



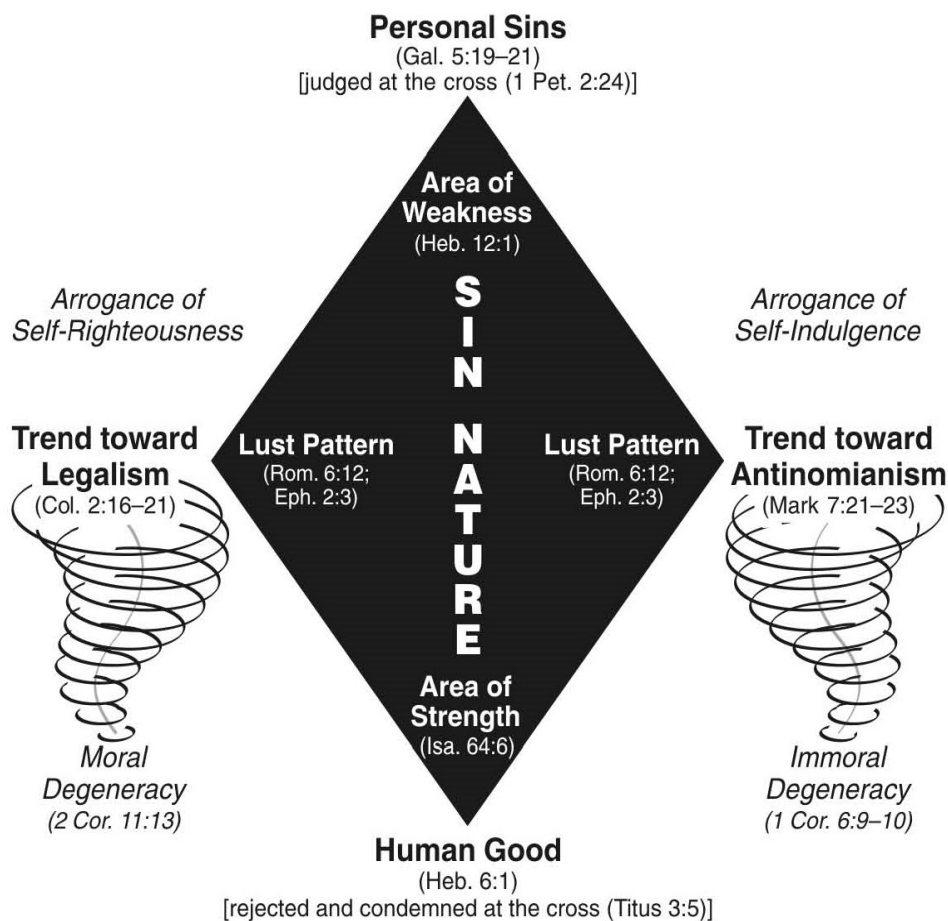
- 
- (a) **Greek Word.** Greek to describe the “*new things*” in 2 Cor. 5:17, is *kainos* (a new unprecedented thing). For the Christian, the “*new things*” include many of the @@@ FORTY THINGS that God does at salvation, not a change in morality or lifestyle – Gal. 3:3-5.
  - (b) **False Meaning.** Many religious legalists wrongfully associate the truth of the new species as a false expectation that the adherent will now magically be motivated to perform increased acts of human good.
  - (c) **True Meaning.** In reality, the “*old things*” have “*passed away*” [*parerchomai* (to lose power)] in 2 Cor. 5:17, should properly be translated: “*the old things have lost their power*” over the Believer. The “*old things*” are the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE and the Believer’s position of spiritual @@@ DEATH in Adam – 1 Cor. 15:22. The “*old things*” terminology does not mean that the Believer will automatically give up something immoral or sinful or that he is now free from committing personal @@@ SIN, nor does it mean that the Believer must now perform acts of human good deeds. In reality, it means that the Believer can now *choose* to live in the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE “*so we too might walk in newness of life*” [Rom. 6:4], whereas before, as an unBeliever, he was trapped in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS. Only the Believer’s human volition can give his Old Sin Nature the power to control him. Indeed, for the Believer, only the “bad smell” of the old position in fallen Adam remains.
- (4) **Bottom Line.** The real significance of the new species designation:
- (a) **Newness.** The Believer is taken from a hopeless situation of spiritual @@@ DEATH and elevated to the position Union with Christ and adult sonship, Royal Family of God – @@@ METAMORPHOSE.
  - (b) **Invisible.** The historical impact of the **Winner** Believer is mostly invisible. There are, of course, great “blessings by association” to family, friends, and country. See @@@ PIVOT; @@@ MYSTERY.
  - (c) **Prepared.** The **Winner** Believer is “locked and loaded” for combat in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT under the @@@ PLAN OF GOD – Eph. 2:10; 1 Cor. 3:14.
-



## @@@ OLD SIN NATURE

- (1) **Definition.** Located in the biological cell structure of every human, the invisible Old Sin Nature [OSN] is the Believer's primary source of temptation to commit @@@ SIN and to perform acts of human @@@ GOOD.

## CHARACTERISTICS OF THE SIN NATURE



- (2) **Source of Spiritual Death.** As the genetic home for the imputation of Adam's original sin by God at birth (an affinity attraction), the OSN is also the source of spiritual @@@ DEATH for all mankind – Rom. 5:12; 6:23; 7:15, 17-18; Eph. 2:1; 1 Cor. 15:21-22; 2 Cor. 5:14; Ps. 51:5. *See infra* (3).

## 1 CORINTHIANS 15:21-22

For since by a man [Adam] came death, [*thanatos* (physical death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – spiritual @@@ DEATH], by a man [Jesus] also came the resurrection of the dead [*nekros* (lifeless)]. For as in Adam all die, [*apothnesko* (eternal death)], so also in Christ all [Believers] will be made alive, [*zoopoieo*] – with a @@@ RESURRECTION body].

- (3) **The Double Curse. First:** The OSN is transferred to each member of the human race genetically because of the action of the first man Adam, who committed the first @@@ SIN [Eve sinned first, but was deceived]. This process is accomplished through human copulation – “*as in Adam all die*” [1 Cor. 15:21-22]; Ps. 51:5; Gen. 3:15; 5:3; 1 Tim. 2:13-14; Rom. 5:12, 17-19; Gen. 5:3. **Second:** At the same time that God imputes human life to the biological life at birth, making each human physically alive, God also imputes Adam's original sin to the genetically formed OSN, making all babies spiritually dead – enemies of God under his “*wrath*” [Jn. 3:36]. This function ensures @@@ SALVATION by @@@ GRACE alone. *See @@@ LIFE.*

## ROMANS 5:12

Therefore, just as through one man [Adam] sin [*hamartia* – the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] entered into the world [*kosmos* – Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD], and death [*thanatos* (physical death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – spiritual @@@ DEATH] through sin, and so death [*thanatos* – spiritual death] spread to all men, because all sinned [*hamartano* – all humans possess Adam's Old Sin Nature and also commit their own human personal @@@ SINS].

## GENESIS 5:3

When Adam had lived one hundred and thirty years, he became the father of a son in his own likeness [*demuth* – Adam passed down the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE to offspring], according to his image [*tselem*], and named him Seth.

## ROMANS 5:17

For if by the transgression [*paraptoma* (a lapse or deviation from truth; misdeed)] of the one [Adam's original @@@ SIN], death [*thanatos* (physical death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – spiritual @@@ DEATH] reigned [*basileuo* (to be king)] through the one, much more those [all Believers] who receive the abundance [*perisseia* (superabundantly)] of grace [*charis* – the @@@ GRACE of God] and of the gift [*dorea* (a gift without cost)] of righteousness [*dikaiosune* – God's Righteousness [+R] given to the Believer at @@@ SALVATION] will reign [*basileuo* (to be king)] in life through [*dia* (by means of)] the One, Jesus Christ.

- (4) **The Total Depravity of Man.** The OSN explains the total depravity of man *vis a vis* the Perfection of the @@@ TRINITY – Job 25:4-6; 42:6; Rom. 3:10; Jer. 17:9. The OSN ensures [-r] mankind's total helplessness to enter into a relationship with Perfect [+R] God by means of @@@ RELIGION.

## ROMANS 3:10

As it is written, “There is none righteous [*dikaios* – no human can acquire God's Righteousness [+R] apart from @@@ GRACE], not even one.”

- (5) **Genius of God.** In the @@@ PLAN OF GOD all humans born into the @@@ WORLD [except Jesus Christ] are now condemned at birth, making all eligible for God's free @@@ SALVATION by @@@ GRACE offer, apart from human works of righteousness [-r]. *See supra* (3).
- (6) **Jesus' Body.** In the @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION, Jesus of Nazareth was born without an OSN. God the Holy Spirit provided 23 uncontaminated pure male chromosomes to Mary's 23 pure chromosomes. Born perfect, Adam's original sin was not imputed to Him at birth – Matt. 1:18; Lk. 1:34-35, 37.

## LUKE 1:34-35

Mary said to the angel, “How can this be, since I am a virgin?” The angel answered and said to her [Mary], “The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow [*apiskiazo* (to envelop in a shadow – the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT provided 23 male chromosomes)] you; and for that reason the holy Child shall be called the Son of God.”

- (7) **Remains in the Believer.** The OSN is retained after @@@ SALVATION – 1 Jn. 1:8; 2:1; 1 Cor. 3:1-2. However, it stays with the dead mortal body of the Believer at his physical @@@ DEATH and is not in the @@@ RESURRECTION body – Phil. 3:20-21; 1 Cor. 15:53-57; 1 Jn. 3:1-3.

## 1 JOHN 1:8

If we [Believers] say that we have no sin [*hamartia* – the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE], we are deceiving ourselves and the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in matter under consideration) – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] is not in us.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 3:1-2

And I [Paul], brethren, could not speak to you as to spiritual men [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit) – Believers at some level of @@@ MATURITY], but as to men of flesh [*sarkinos* – under the influence of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE the negative [-N] volition Believer acts like the unBeliever], as to infants [*nepios* (an infant) – baby Believers] in Christ. I gave you milk [*gala*] to drink, not solid food [Paul could not give the Loser Believers advanced @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]; for you were not yet able to receive it. Indeed, even now you are not yet able.

- (8) **Synonyms.** The @@@ BIBLE uses various terms to describe aspects of the OSN: (1) *sarx* (flesh) refers to the location in the genetic makeup [Gal. 5:16; Eph. 2:3; Rom. 6:6; 7:14; 8:12]; (2) *melos* (members) refers to the location [Col. 3:5; Rom. 7:15]; (3) *palaaios anthropos* (old man) refers to the ancient origin from Adam [Rom. 6:6; Col. 3:9; Eph. 4:22; Gal. 2:20]; (4) *archaios* (old things) refers to the Adamic origin [2 Cor. 5:17]; (5) *sarkinos* (carnal) refers to the effect of the OSN when the Believer is out of Fellowship with God the Holy Spirit [Rom. 7:14; 8:6, 13; 1 Cor. 3:1-3]; (6) *hamartia* (sin) in the singular [Rom. 5:12; 7:14; 1 Cor. 15:56; 1 Jn. 1:8]; (7) *kardia* (heart) refers to the volitional decision to choose to live under the power of the OSN [Jer. 17:9; Matt. 12:34-35; 15:19; Mk. 7:21-23; Ezk. 36:26-27]; and (8) the first *aner* (husband), with Christ being the second husband [Rom. 7:2-4].

## MATTHEW 15:19

For out of the heart [*kardia* – @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] come evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, slanders.

## ROMANS 7:2-4

For the married woman is bound by law to her husband while he is living; but if her husband dies, she is released from the law concerning her husband [a second @@@ MARRIAGE is authorized if the spouse dies]. So then, if while her husband is living she is joined to another man, she shall be called an adulteress [*moichalis*]; but if her husband dies, she is free from the law, so that she is not an adulteress though she is joined to another man. Therefore, my brethren, you also were made to die [*thanatoo* (by physical death to be liberated from the bond of anything)] to the Law [the first husband was the curse of the Law and @@@ OLD SIN NATURE, both now dead for the Believer at the point of @@@ SALVATION] through the body of Christ, so that you might be joined to another [*heteros* – the second husband is now Jesus Christ], to Him who was raised from the dead, in order that we might bear fruit [*karpophoreo* – a Believer “married to Christ” is expected to be faithful to Him by reaching spiritual @@@ MATURITY and not sneak back to the former husband to be put under his evil influence] for God.

## JEREMIAH 17:9

The heart [*labe* – @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] is more deceitful than all else and is desperately sick [*anash* (desperately wicked)]; Who can understand it?

## (9) Essence of Old Sin Nature.

- (a) **Area of Human Weakness.** The area of weakness tempts the Believer to engage in personal @@@ SIN – Heb. 12:1. Sins come in three arenas: (1) Mental Attitude Sins – Prov. 6:16-19; Matt. 9:4; (2) Overt Sins, such as murder, stealing, etc. – Ex. 20:13-15; and (3) Sins of the Tongue – Prov. 6:16-19; 17:28; 21:23; Eph. 4:29; Ps. 34:13; Js. 1:26.
- (b) **Area of Human Strength.** The OSN produces dead works of human @@@ GOOD in [-r] righteousness – Heb. 6:1; Rom. 3:20; 8:8; Isa. 8:8; 64:6; Phil 3:9; Tit. 3:5; Eph. 2:8-9; Gal. 2:16; 2 Tim. 1:9.
- (c) **Lusts.** The OSN has a variety of lusts – Rom. 6:12; Eph. 2:3. The lusts include such things as approbation lust, power lust, terror lust, stimulation lust [sex, drugs, etc.], killer lust, money lust [Heb. 13:5; 1 Tim. 6:10], and cruelty lust.

- (d) **Two Primary Trends.** The general trends of the OSN flow towards two primary lust patterns: (1) lascivious antinomianism [*immoral degeneracy*]; and (2) ascetic legalism [*moral degeneracy*]. The lust patterns can change and shift over the lifetime and the Believer must understand his particular lust pattern which also varies from person to person – Heb. 12:1; 1 Pet. 1:14-16; 4:2.

## 1 PETER 4:2

So as to live the rest of the time in the flesh [*sarx*] no longer for the lusts [*epithumia* – @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] of men [in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], but for the will [*thelema*] of God [reach @@@ MATURITY].

## 1 PETER 1:14-16

As obedient children, do not be conformed to the former lusts *which were yours* in your ignorance [influence of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], but like the Holy One [Holy Spirit] who called [@@@ SALVATION] you, be holy yourselves [@@@ REBOUND brings “absolute” spirituality] also in all *your* behavior [“relative” spirituality of the Believer]; because it is written, “You shall be Holy [*hagios*] for I am Holy [*hagios* – @@@ TRINITY].”

## HEBREWS 12:1

Therefore, since we [Church Age Believers] have so great a cloud of witnesses [*martus* (a witness in a legal sense)] surrounding us [Believers who reached @@@ MATURITY in the Old Testament], let us also lay aside every encumbrance [*ogkos* (mass; weight; burden)] and the sin which so easily entangles [*euperistatos* (skillfully surrounding) – Believer must identify areas of lust in their @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] us, and let us run [*trecho* – @@@ RUNNING] with endurance [*hupomone* (steadfastness)] the race [*agon* (the place of contest) – @@@ TIME in the body] that is set before us.

1. **Self-Righteous Legalism Equates to Moral Degeneracy** – Gal. 5:9; Col. 2:16-21; 2 Cor. 11:13-14; Acts 15:1, 5, 24; Gen. 4:7.

## GALATIANS 5:9

A little leaven [*zume*] leavens the whole lump *of dough*.



2. **Immoral Lasciviousness Equates to Immoral Degeneracy** – 1 Cor. 6:9-10; Mk. 7:21-23; Gal. 5:19-21.

### MARK 7:21-23

For from within, out of the heart [*kardia* – @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] of men [*anthropos* (mankind)], proceed the evil thoughts, fornications, thefts, murders, adulteries, deeds of coveting *and* wickedness, *as well as* deceit, sensuality, envy, slander, pride *and* foolishness. All these evil things proceed from within and defile [*koinoo* (to make unclean)] the man.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 6:9-10

Or do you not know that the unrighteous [*adikos* (one who violates the mandates of justice) – the unBeliever] will not inherit [*kleronomeo* (to obtain a lot)] the kingdom of God [@@@ SALVATION]? Do not be deceived [*planao* (to be led astray) – about the unBeliever's claims]; neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate [*malakos* (a catamite)], nor homosexuals [*arsenokoites* (sodomite; homosexual)], nor thieves, nor *the* covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor swindlers, will inherit the kingdom of God [unBelievers and Believers both @@@ SIN per the list herein, but the unBeliever is inherently stuck in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS].

- (10) **Fight For Control.** At any given moment the Believer is either controlled by the OSN or by God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT – Gal. 5:16. This is the absolute aspect of “spirituality.” In Rom. 7:15-25 and Gal. 5:16-17, Paul describes the inner conflict for control of his life between his OSN and the Holy Spirit. See @@@ REBOUND; @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE.

### ROMANS 7:15-25

For what I [Paul] am doing, I do not understand – Paul wants to stay in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit and not commit personal @@@ SIN; for I am not practicing what I *would* like to *do*, but I am doing [*succumbing to temptation from the Old Sin Nature*] the very thing I hate. But if I do the very thing I do not want *to do*, I agree with the Law [@@@ MOSAIC LAW demonstrates the impact of sins], *confessing* that the Law is good. So now, no longer am I the one doing it, but sin which dwells in me [*the Old Sin Nature is in the body*]. For I know that nothing good dwells in me, that is, in my flesh

[*sarx* – location of the Old Sin Nature]; for the willing [*thelo* (to exercise free will)] is present in me, but the doing of the good *is* not. For the good that I want, I do not do, but I practice the very evil that I do not want. But if I am doing the very thing that I do not want, I am no longer the one doing it, but sin [Old Sin Nature] which dwells in me. I find then the principle that evil is present in me, the one who wants to do good [Divine Good]. For I joyfully concur with the law of God in the inner man [the conscience loaded with @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], but I see a different law in the members of my body, waging war [*antistrateuomai* (to war against as in a military expedition)] against the law of my mind and making me a prisoner of the law of sin which is in my members. Wretched man that I am! Who will set me free from the body of this death [the Believer in a state of Temporal @@@ DEATH when he commits sin]? Thanks be to God through Jesus Christ our LORD [God provides the @@@ GRACE solution for via @@@ REBOUND]! So then, on the one hand I myself with my mind am serving the law of God, but on the other, with my flesh the law of sin.

## GALATIANS 5:16

But I [Paul] say, walk [*peripateo* – the status of being Filled with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] by the Spirit, and you will not carry out the desire of the flesh [*sarx* – the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE]. For the flesh sets its desire against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; for these are in opposition [*antikeimai*] to one another, so that you may not do the things that you please.

- (11) **Volition Gatekeeper.** The OSN is the source of most temptations but the gatekeeper to the Believer's soul is his *volition* which chooses to @@@ SIN or not to sin – Rom. 8:6, 12-13; Gal. 5:16. At any given moment the Believer is either under the control of the OSN or the Holy Spirit. Prior to murdering his brother Abel, Cain is instructed by God to *mashal* (master; rule) his OSN, i.e., use his volition to thwart its evil influence – “*sin (the OSN) is crouching at the door; and its desire is for you, but you must master it*” [Gen. 4:7].

## 1 PETER 2:24

And He Himself [Jesus Christ] bore our sins in His body on the cross, so that we [all Believers] might die to [*apogenomenos* (to be removed from)] sin [*hamartia* – influence of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] and live to righteousness [*dikaiousune* – inside the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE].

- (12) **Solutions.** There are two ways that the Believer can neutralize the influence of the OSN on his @@@ LIFE.
- (a) **Rebound. First:** When the Believer sins, use @@@ REBOUND to immediately neutralize the OSN – 1 Cor. 11:31; 1 Jn. 1:9. In fact, the Believer in Fellowship with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT cannot @@@ SIN – “*No one who abides in Him sins*” [1 Jn. 3:5-6]; 1 Jn. 5:18; Rom. 8:1. The actual sin is always preceded by the negative [-N] volition that agrees to succumb to the temptation which then immediately puts the Believer out of Fellowship – 1 Cor. 10:13. Thus, the wise Believer will log maximum time inside the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE – “*For if you are living ... by the Spirit you are putting to death the things of the body*” [1 Cor. 15:22]. See Acts 26:18; Rom. 8:13; Gal. 5:16.
  - (b) **Reach Maturity. Second:** Accumulate maximum amounts of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT in order to reach @@@ MATURITY. The OSN can be better controlled by living the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE. “*Therefore consider the members of your earthly body as dead to immorality, impurity, passion, evil desire, and greed, which amounts to idolatry*” [Col. 3:5]. See Ps. 51:5-6; Heb. 12:4; Gal. 5:16-17; Rom. 8:13.
- (13) **In Society.** When the OSN expresses itself in crime the State must restrain it – Rom. 13:4. Otherwise, under @@@ PRIVACY it is no one’s business to look at another’s OSN – 1 Cor. 11:31. It is all too common among Christians to see instances where the legalist judges the antinomian and the antinomian then rejects the @@@ BIBLE – Rom. 14:10; Matt. 7:1. Both are wrong.
- (14) **Divine Good.** The OSN frustrates Divine @@@ GOOD – Rom. 7:15; 8:6.

## ROMANS 8:6

For the mind set on the flesh [*sarx* – desires of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] is death [*thanatos* – the state of Operational @@@ DEATH for the Loser Believer], but the mind set [*phronema* (what one has in the mind, the thoughts and purposes)] on the [Holy] Spirit [the Winner Believer staying in Fellowship by @@@ REBOUND] is life [*zoe*] and peace [*eirene* (prosperity) – reaching @@@ MATURITY and @@@ REWARDS].

## @@@ OPEN DOOR

- (1) **Definition.** The concept of the “open door” refers to an opportunity provided by God for Christian service to glorify God in @@@ TIME.
- (2) **Of Evangelism.** The open door of evangelism to communicate the Gospel of @@@ SALVATION by a Believer to the unBeliever in @@@ WITNESSING – Eph. 6:19; 2 Cor. 2:12; Acts 14:27.

## EPHESIANS 6:19

And *pray* on my [Paul] behalf, that utterance may be given to me [an @@@ OPEN DOOR opportunity] in the opening of my mouth, to make known [gnorizo (to become known)] with boldness [parrhesia (freedom in speaking)] the mystery [musterion – @@@ MYSTERY] of the gospel [euaggelion].

## 2 CORINTHIANS 2:12

Now when I [Paul] came to Troas for the gospel [euaggelion] of Christ and when a door [thura – an @@@ OPEN DOOR opportunity] was opened [anoigo] for me in the LORD.

## ACTS 14:27(B)

He [God] had opened [anoigo] a door [thura – an @@@ OPEN DOOR opportunity] of faith [pistis – positive +P volition] to the Gentiles [ethnos].

- (3) **Of Salvation and Maturity.** The open door of the Gospel and all the necessary provisions for growth to @@@ MATURITY. See Jn. 10:9.

## JOHN 10:9

I am [Jesus Christ] the door [thura]; if anyone enters [eiserchomai (to go in or come out)] through [dia (by means of)] Me [believes in Christ for @@@ SALVATION], he will be saved [sozo – enter into the Kingdom of God, @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY], and will go in and out [@@@ WALKING as the normal @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE] and find pasture [nome – intakes the food of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE into his @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT and grows to spiritual @@@ MATURITY].

- (4) **Of the Mystery.** The open door for communication of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE and the preaching of the full Church Age @@@ MYSTERY doctrine to Believers. Paul in Asia Minor – Col. 4:2-3.

### COLOSSIANS 4:2-3

Devote yourselves [**Believers in Colossae**] to prayer, keeping alert in it with *an attitude of thanksgiving*; praying at the same time for us [**Paul and his traveling seminary team**] as well, that God will open up to us a door for the word, so that we may speak forth the mystery [*musterion* – @@@ **MYSTERY**] of Christ, for which I have also been imprisoned; that I may make it clear in the way I ought to speak.

- (5) **Of Spiritual Recovery.** An open door for the spiritual recovery of Believers in @@@ REVERSIONISM to regain a Fellowship relationship with Jesus Christ. To the Church in Laodicea – Rev. 3:20.

### REVELATION 3:20

Behold [*idou*], I [**Jesus Christ**] stand [*histemi*] at the door [*thura* – to the Believer's volition in his @@@ **SOUL & SPIRIT**] and knock [*krouo* (to knock at a door) – the @@@ **SUFFERING** of warning Divine Discipline]; if [**Third Class Condition**] anyone hears [*akouo* (to consider what is or has been said)] My voice and opens the door [**positive [+P] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE**], I will come in to him [**the Believer**] and will dine [*deipneo* (to have supper) – Fellowship with Christ] with him, and he with Me.

- (6) **Of Rewards.** An open door of @@@ REWARDS (which glorify God) for those faithful Believers – Rev. 3:8.

### REVELATION 3:8

I [**Jesus Christ**] know your deeds [*ergon*]. Behold, I have put before you an open [*anoigo*] door [*thura* – an @@@ **OPEN DOOR** opportunity for great blessings and @@@ **REWARDS**] which no one can shut [*kleio*], because you have a little [*mikros* (small; little)] power [*dunamis* – the Believers were faithful to the Word], and have kept [*tereo* (to guard)] My word [**@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE was their top priority**], and have not denied My name.

- (7) **Of Service.** An open door for providing service in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD as a Christian regarding the use of his personal spiritual @@@ GIFTS. For example, Paul in Ephesus – 1 Cor. 16:9.
- (8) **Of the Rapture.** In Rev. 4:1, a description begins as to what happens after the @@@ RAPTURE while the seven-year Tribulation is occurring on earth. The Royal Family of the Church is in @@@ HEAVEN [Rev. 4-5] as the Tribulation occurs on the earth – Rev. 6-19.

#### REVELATION 4:1

After these things I [John] looked, and behold, a door [*thura* – an @@@ OPEN DOOR opportunity] standing open [*anoigo*] in heaven [*ouranos* – the @@@ RAPTURE], and the first voice which I had heard, like *the sound* of a trumpet speaking with me [John], said, “Come up here, and I will show you what must take place after these things.”

- (9) **Of the 2nd Advent.** The 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ – Rev. 19:11. At the end of the Tribulation a door opens in @@@ HEAVEN and the LORD Jesus Christ comes back with His @@@ ANGELS and all the Church Age Believers in their @@@ RESURRECTION bodies. The first thing the LORD does as He comes in @@@ JUDGMENT mode at the 2nd Advent is to make Holy @@@ WAR in Righteousness and Justice against unBelievers and demons – “*This One who is majestic in His apparel ... Why is your apparel red, and your garments like the one who treads in the wine press?*” [Isa. 63:1-3]; Rev. 1:13-18; Ps. 24:8.

#### REVELATION 19:11

And I [John] saw heaven [*ouranos*] opened [*anoigo*], and behold, a white horse, and He [Jesus Christ] who sat on it is called Faithful [*pistos*] and True [*ale* (what is true in any matter under consideration)], and in righteousness [*dikaiosune*] He judges [*krino*] and wages war [*polemeo* (to carry on war)].

#### PSALM 24:8

Who is the King of Glory? The LORD strong and mighty, the LORD mighty in battle.

---



## @@@ OPERATION Z

- (1) **Definition.** Operation Z [OP Z] is the @@@ GRACE mechanics whereby a Believer takes and stores @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE into his @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT. The mechanics of OP Z for the Church Age Believer includes:
- (a) **Filling of Holy Spirit.** The Believer must be Filled with the Holy Spirit via @@@ REBOUND. The Filling of the Holy Spirit is a unique @@@ MYSTERY addition in the Church Age only.
  - (b) **Hearing the Word.** The Believer must hear accurate @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE taught by a @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER – Job 6:30; 12:11; 34:3; Jer. 7:24. This is reception and requires positive [+P] volition decisions to expose self to teaching. However, the information heard is commonly denoted as “academic” *gnosis* (knowledge).
  - (c) **Believing the Word.** After hearing it, the Believer must then believe the @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – Jer. 15:16; Matt. 4:4; 1 Pet. 2:2; Heb. 4:2-3. Per Js. 1:22, there are “*hearers*” of the Word only, which is someone who hears the knowledge as academic *gnosis* but refuses to believe the information they hear. Such *gnosis* is not efficacious because the required building material to construct an @@@ EDIFICATION COMPLEX OF THE SOUL is called *epignosis* (full knowledge). Only if the Believer believes the academic *gnosis* does it become “useable” *gnosis* which the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT then makes into *epignosis*, the food required for growth to spiritual @@@ MATURITY, and transfers it into the *kardia* (heart) of the Believer – the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT. Note: Belief of Doctrine heard was always the case in other @@@ DISPENSATIONS – Jn. 15:5.

Pastor Communicates  
Doctrine to Believer  
in Fellowship

Usable *gnosis* in  
the *nous* (mind)



Human Spirit

*epignosis* in the  
*kardia* (heart)

- (2) **Human IQ vs Spiritual IQ.** Human IQ is based on genetics and is fixed at birth whereas the Believer's spiritual IQ is limited only by his negative [-N] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – 1 Cor. 2:14-16; 1 Jn. 2:27.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 2:14-16

But a natural [*psuchikos* (soulish) – the unBeliever has a soul but no human spirit] man [*anthropos* (mankind)] does not accept [*dechomai* (to take with the hand)] the things of the Spirit [*pneuma*] of God [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT is the author of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], for they are foolishness [*moria*] to him; and he cannot understand [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] them, because [*hoti* (on account of)] they are spiritually [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit) – understanding Bible Doctrine requires a human spirit] appraised [*anakrino* (to examine; to investigate; to evaluate)]. But he who is spiritual [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit) – the Believer has a human spirit and in this case is in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit] appraises all things, yet he himself is appraised by no one [the Law of Liberty in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE]. For who has known [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] the mind [*nous* (the mind, comprising alike the faculties of perceiving and understanding)] of the LORD [*kurios* – the thinking of Jesus Christ is Bible Doctrine], that he [any given person] will instruct [*sumbibadzo* (to cause to coalesce)] Him [God]? But we [Paul and his traveling seminary] have [*echo* (to have and to hold)] the mind of Christ [these @@@ PASTOR/TEACHERs knew Bible Doctrine and were ready to teach it].

- (3) **Goal of Operation Z.** The goal of OP Z is to reach @@@ MATURITY. Although the @@@ BIBLE is formed and kept by God's Directive Will [Ps. 138:2; 2 Tim. 3:16] there is no magical automatic download of the Word to the Believer. The often voiced @@@ PRAYER of having God "provide wisdom" or "a word of wisdom" is at best a prayer that He will expose that person to Bible Doctrine so that it can then be transferred to the Believer's *kardia* by the process of OP Z, which will eventually provide that wisdom.
- (4) **Positive Volition.** The Believer must use his positive [+P] volition to expose himself to accurate teaching with the ultimate goal of getting @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE as *epignosis* [also called *sunesis*] so that he can then build the @@@ EDIFICATION COMPLEX OF THE SOUL – God desires that all Believers should "come to the (full) knowledge (*epignosis*) of the truth" [1 Tim. 2:4]; Heb. 10:25; Rom. 14:19; 2 Pet. 1:5; 3:17-18.

## 2 PETER 3:17-18

You therefore, beloved [**Believers**], knowing this beforehand [*proginosko* – **Peter has taught this @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE to them**], be on your guard [*phulasso* (to guard or watch)] so that you are not carried away [*sunapago* (to lead away with or together)] by the error [*plane* (deception, error)] of unprincipled men [*athesmos* – **people in @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS who distract the Believer**] and fall from [*ekipto* (to drift off course)] your own steadfastness [*sterigmos* (firm condition) – **do not go into @@@ REVERSIONISM**], but grow [*auxano* (to cause to grow) – **the positive [+P] volition Believer must reach @@@ MATURITY**] in the grace [*charis* – **@@@ GRACE**] and knowledge [*gnosis* (the deeper more perfect and enlarged knowledge) – **understanding the full realm of Bible Doctrine**] of our LORD and Savior Jesus Christ. To Him *be* the glory [*doxa*], both now and to the day of eternity. Amen.

- (5) **Stage 1 in OP Z.** The Filling of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT via @@@ REBOUND and the Believer's exposure to a @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER – 2 Tim. 3:16-17; 1 Jn. 4:6. Note: Many Believers [in or out of the Filling of the Holy Spirit] are exposed to accurate teaching of the Word.

## 1 JOHN 4:6

We [**John and other @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER communicators**] are from God; he who knows [*ginosko* (to learn to know) – **the positive [+P] volition Believer desiring knowledge of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE**] God listens [*akouo* (to consider what is or has been said)] to us; he who is not from God does not listen to us [**the negative [-N] volition Believer in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS will not listen to the prepared @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER**]. By this we know [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] the spirit [*pneuma* (the disposition or influence which fills and governs the soul of anyone)] of truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration)] and the spirit [*pneuma* (the disposition or influence which fills and governs the soul of anyone)] of error [*plane* (one led astray from the right way)].

- (6) **Stage 2 in OP Z.** The Believer's human spirit is the first target of Bible Doctrine which goes there as “**academic**” *gnosis* (knowledge) – Job 32:8; 1 Cor. 2:10-16. See @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT. The unBeliever can also hear the words as **academic** *gnosis* in his soul but cannot consider them as truth.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 2:10-13

For to us [the Believer] God revealed *them* through the Spirit [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT]; for the Spirit searches [*ereunao* (to examine)] all things, even the depths of God. For who among men knows [*heneka* (on account of)] the *thoughts* of a man expect the [human] spirit [*pneuma*] of the man [the Believer] which is in him? Even so the *thoughts* of God no one knows [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] except the [Holy] Spirit of God. Now we have received [*lambano* (to claim; to take by the hand)], not the spirit [*pneuma* (the disposition or influence which fills and governs the soul of any one) – the general thinking of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS] of the world [*kosmos* – Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD], but the [Holy] Spirit [*pneuma*] who is from God, so that we may know [*heneka* (on account of)] the things freely given to us by God, which things we [Paul and his team] also speak [*laleo* – the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER communicating @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], not in words taught [*didaktos* (instructed by one)] by human wisdom [*sophia* – the viewpoint of human @@@ GOOD and @@@ RELIGION], but in those taught [*didaktos*] by the [Holy] Spirit, combining [*sugkrino* (to join together fitly)] spiritual [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit)] *thoughts* with spiritual [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit)] *words* [only a human spirit understands spiritual concepts].

- (7) **Stage 3 in OP Z.** The Believer believes the teaching and it becomes “usable” *gnosis* in the *nous* (mind) where it stands ready to be turned into *epignosis* – 1 Jn. 2:27; Jn. 14:26; 16:12-16; Rom. 8:6-17. Again, usable *gnosis* has no spiritual power, it is like food on the table or in the pantry. The Believer cannot metabolize it without advancing to Stage 4 in OP Z [see *infra* (8)] – 1 Cor. 13:2; 2 Tim. 2:23-26; 3:2-8; Js. 1:19-25. This function is apart from the unBeliever [or the Believer out of Fellowship] having human academic understanding – they might have **academic** *gnosis*, but it is not **usable** *gnosis*.

## JOHN 14:26

But the Helper [*parakletos*], the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My [Jesus Christ] name, He [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] will teach [*didasko*] you [the disciples] all things, and bring to your remembrance [*hupomimnesko* (to cause one to remember) – all the information taught to them was log jammed in their @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT] all that I said to you [Jesus Christ taught @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE on a consistent basis].

- (8) **Stage 4 in OP Z.** This stage involves the transformation of the **usable *gnosis*** into ***epignosis* [*sunesis*]** by God the Holy Spirit who immediately transfers it to the ***kardia*** of the Believer. This process occurs after the Believer accepts the **@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE** as truth [believes it] in Stage 3. In other words, this stage is performed by the Holy Spirit taking the usable ***gnosis*** and turning it into ***epignosis*** stored in the **@@@ SOUL & SPIRIT** – 2 Cor. 3:18. The new Bible Doctrine builds up the **@@@ EDIFICATION COMPLEX OF THE SOUL** so that the Believer can reach spiritual **@@@ MATURITY** and operate effectively in the **@@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE**.
- (a) **Grace Function.** The mechanics for the process of transforming usable ***gnosis*** into ***epignosis*** is a **@@@ GRACE** function. The operation of the non-meritorious system of metabolism of ***epignosis*** by simple belief or **@@@ FAITH** in a **@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE** is illustrated in the **@@@ BIBLE** with analogies to eating, breathing, hearing, drinking, and seeing – Ps. 119:11; Jer. 3:15; 15:16; Matt. 4:4; 1 Pet. 2:2; 5:2; 1 Tim. 2:4; 4:6. *See @@@ WATER.*
- (b) **No Emotion.** Along with any human good works, human **@@@ EMOTION** has absolutely nothing to do with the functioning of OP Z – “***be quick to hear, slow to speak and slow to anger***” [Js. 1:19-25]; Phil. 3:18-19; Rom. 16:17-18; 2 Cor. 6:11; Rev. 2:23; 2 Tim. 3:6-8.

## 2 TIMOTHY 3:6-8

For among them are those who enter into households [***oikia*** (a house – the early Christians met in houses to learn **@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE**)] and captivate weak [***apotrepo*** (to turn one’s self away from)] women [***gunaikarion*** (a little woman; used contemptuously – here it applies to both males and females on negative [-N] volition to Bible Doctrine)] weighed down with sins [***hamartia*** – under the influence of the **@@@ OLD SIN NATURE**], led on by various impulses [***epithumia*** (craving; desire for what is forbidden)], always learning [***manthano***] and never able to come to the knowledge [***epignosis*** (full knowledge)] of the truth [***aletheia*** (what is true in any matter under consideration) – Bible Doctrine]. Just as Jannes and Jambres [two Egyptian magicians who in the presence of Pharaoh imitated the miracles of Aaron in order to destroy his influence] opposed Moses, so these *men* also oppose the truth, men of depraved mind, rejected in regard to the faith [***pistis*** – the **@@@ FAITH** of Bible Doctrine].



JAMES 1:19-25

*This* you [Believers] know, my beloved brethren. But everyone must be quick to hear [*akouo* – learn @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], slow to speak [*laleo* – respect for the teaching of the Word] and slow to anger [*orge* (anger) – emotional reaction]; for the anger of man does not achieve the righteousness [*dikaiosune* – @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE] of God. Therefore, putting aside [*apotithemi* (remove; put aside) – the Believer must @@@ REBOUND first] all filthiness and *all* that remains of wickedness, in humility receive the word implanted [*emphutos* (implanted by others' instruction) – this is usable *gnosis*], which is able to save [*sozo* (to deliver)] your souls [*psuche* – deliver the Believer to @@@ MATURITY]. But prove yourselves doers [*poietes* (a doer, performer)] of the word [the Believer must get *epignosis* in the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT], and not merely hearers [*akroates* (a hearer) – these types hear, but reject the Bible Doctrine] who delude [*paralogizomai* (to cheat by false reasoning) – a Believer who cheats himself out of reaching maturity] themselves. For if anyone is a hearer of the word and not a doer, he is like a man who looks at his natural face in a mirror [*esoptron* – the mirror represents the Word of God and God's desire that Believers conform to the image of Christ in their thinking – Rom. 8:29; 2 Cor. 3:18; 4:4]; for *once* he has looked at himself and gone away, he has immediately [*eutheos* – Believers with only *gnosis* hate repetition and will leave mentally first and then leave the Bible class physically – 1 Jn. 2:19] forgotten [*epilanthanomai* (to longer care for; to neglect)] what kind of person he was. But [*de* (in contrast to)] one [Believer on positive [+P] volition] who looks intently [*parakupto* (to stoop down to look at closely) – academic concentration] at the perfect law, the law of liberty [*eleutheria* (freedom to act as desired)], and abides [*meno* (to remain)] by it, not having become a forgetful hearer [negative [-N] volition Believer with no interest in Bible Doctrine] but an effectual doer [*poietes* (performer) – the positive [+P] volition Believer that metabolizes Bible Doctrine via @@@ OPERATION Z], this man will be blessed [*makarios*] in what he does [@@@ REWARDS].

- (9) **Results.** The *epignosis* in the *kardia* of the Believer accomplishes the following:
  - (a) **Categorical Construction.** A new vocabulary of technical Biblical words – “*not in words taught by human wisdom*” [1 Cor. 2:13]; Jn. 6:63; Heb. 6:1-3.



- (b) **Rebound.** Energizes the conscience so that the Believer has a fuller understanding of known @@@ SIN(s) and can better employ the @@@ REBOUND technique – Rom. 9:1.
  - (c) **Catabolism** – *epignosis* breaks down the false thinking of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS as in Rom. 12:2 and 2 Tim. 2:21.
  - (d) **Anabolism** – *epignosis* builds up Divine thought – “*the mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16]; Rom. 15:20; 1 Cor. 3:11-13.
  - (e) **Builds the @@@ MEMORY Center** – Lam. 3:1; Jn. 14:26.
  - (f) **Creates an Instant Reaction Force [IRF]** – 1 Pet. 3:15. The IRF of @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES is always on “red alert” to respond to sudden unforeseen temptations from the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE or the attacks that come from @@@ DEMONISM.
  - (g) **Speak About Doctrine.** All *epignosis* leads to the ability to speak about the Word – 1 Pet. 3:15.
- (10) **Christian Way of Life.** The Believer is expected to think and apply @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – Prov. 23:7; 2 Cor. 10:5; Ps. 19:7. See the Eight R’s of the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 10:5

*We are [Paul and his teachers] destroying [kathaireo (to demolish)] speculations [logismos (a reasoning: such as is hostile to the Christian faith)] and every lofty thing [hupsoma (elevated thing)] raised up against the knowledge [gnosis (the deeper more perfect and enlarged knowledge of this religion)] of God, and we are taking every thought [nomea (mental perception)] captive [aichmalotizo (to lead away captive)] to the obedience [hupakoe (compliance)] of Christ.*

- (11) **Wisdom.** OP Z enables the Believer to acquire Divine wisdom. The Greek word *sophia* (wisdom) is the application of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE to reality in @@@ TIME. See Js. 1:5, 22.
-

## @@@ OVERVIEW

- (1) **Mandates First.** For the Believer, God’s mandates set out His @@@ AUTHORITY and include the command to “*come to the knowledge of the truth*” [1 Tim. 2:4] of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE. See Jn. 15:9-17.
- (2) **Virtue First.** Personal @@@ LOVE for God and *agape* impersonal @@@ LOVE for all mankind is based on the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE and the Believer’s consistent residence within it.
- (3) **Grace First.** @@@ GRACE is all that God is free to do for man based on the work of Jesus Christ on the @@@ CROSS – Eph. 2:8-9; Rom. 5:17.

CATEGORY	WORK	OBTAINMENT
Salvation	God	<b>All Mankind.</b> Via non-meritorious Positive [+P] volition – Rom. 4:5.
Logistical Support	God	<b>All Believers.</b> Non-meritorious, no volition required – Gen. 15:6.
Escrow Rewards On Deposit	God	<b>All Believers.</b> Non-meritorious, no volition required – Eph. 1:3.
Escrow Rewards Released In Time	God	<b>Winners only.</b> Mature Believers, positive [+P] volition required – Isa. 53:12.
Escrow Rewards Released In Eternity	God	<b>Winners only.</b> Mature Believers, positive [+P] volition required – Matt. 25:23.

## @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER

- (1) **Definition.** God's system for the positive [+P] volition Believer to learn @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE is based on the accurate teaching of the full content of the @@@ BIBLE by a prepared Pastor/Teacher.
- (2) **God Provides.** God provides a prepared Pastor/Teacher to teach the positive [+P] volition Believer [Jer. 3:15; 1 Tim. 2:4] and the positive [+P] volition Believer responds to the @@@ GRACE teaching of the Pastor/Teacher in order to grow to spiritual @@@ MATURITY – Jn. 10:27. See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.

### JOHN 10:27

My [Jesus] sheep [*probation* – the Believer on positive [+P] volition] hear [*akouo*] My voice, and I know [*ginosko*] them, and they follow [*akoloutheo* (to follow one who precedes) – the Winner Believer on positive [+P] volition will respond to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] Me.

- (3) **Sheep and Shepherd.** Very often in the @@@ BIBLE the individual Believer is called a “*sheep*” [Jn. 10:27] and the Pastor/Teacher, as his @@@ AUTHORITY when it comes to learning the Word, is called a “*shepherd*” [Jn. 21:16]. Jesus is the supreme Chief “*Shepherd*” [Jn. 10:1-19]; Isa. 53:6.
- (4) **Sheep.** (1) Sheep are helpless to find food and water [Rev. 7:17; Jn. 6:35]; (2) sheep have no defenses [Jer. 23:4; Num. 27:16-17; Mk. 6:34]; (3) sheep are stupid with no sense of direction [Isa. 53:6]; (4) sheep stink and can't clean themselves which speaks to @@@ SALVATION and @@@ REBOUND [Ezk. 36:25-27]; (5) sheep are easily frightened [Jn. 10:12]; (6) the wool of the sheep belongs to the Shepherd – Christian production is to glorify God and the “*Good Shepherd*” [Jn. 19:11] Jesus Christ; and (7) sheep respond only to their Shepherd – this refers to positive [+P] volition in the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT of the Winner Believer [Jn. 10:3-5, 27]. See Ps. 100:3.

### PSALM 100:3

Know that the LORD Himself is God; it is He who has made [*awah* (to fashion; to accomplish)] us, and not we ourselves; *we are* His people and the sheep [*tson*] of His pasture [*miriyth* (pasturage)].

J. L. Porter, *The Giant Cities of Bashan and Syria's Holy Places*, (1966):  
The shepherds led their flocks forth from the gates of the city. They were in full view, and we watched them and listened to them with no little interest. Thousands of sheep and goats were there, grouped in dense confused masses. The shepherds stood together until all came out. Then they separated, each shepherd taking a different path, and uttering as he advanced a shrill, peculiar call. The sheep heard them. At first the masses swayed and moved as if struck by some internal convulsion; then points struck out in the direction taken by the shepherds . . . until the confused masses were resolved into long, living, streams, following after their leaders.

- (5) **Labels for the Pastor/Teacher.** The spiritual gift is called *poimen* (shepherd) *kai* (and) *didaskalos* (teacher) – “Shepherd/Teacher” or “**Pastor and Teacher**” [Eph. 4:11-12; Acts 20:28]. Other labels are also employed in the @@@ BIBLE in order to stress his @@@ AUTHORITY and responsibilities.

## EPHESIANS 4:11

And He [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] gave some *as* apostles, and some *as* prophets, and some *as* evangelists [*euaggelistes*] and some *as* pastors and teachers [*poimen kai didaskalos* – the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER].

- (a) **Elder.** He is called “*elder*” – *presbuteros* (the old man) – 1 Tim. 5:17-19; Js. 1:5; 5:14; 3 Jn. 1; Tit. 1:5-9; 2 Jn. 1; 1 Pet. 5:1. This term does not refer to chronological age. Timothy was a young Pastor/Teacher when he started – “*let no one look down on your youthfulness*” [1 Tim. 4:12]. Thus, a 25-year-old Pastor/Teacher can be the “old man,” the term is used to stress his absolute @@@ AUTHORITY.
- (b) **Overseer.** He is called “*overseer*” – *episkopos* – Tit. 1:7; Phil. 1:1; 1 Tim. 3:1-9; Acts 20:28. This reflects his supreme power in policy making and the job of protecting the privacy of the congregation.
- (c) **Minister.** He is called “*minister*” – *diakonos* (servant) – Rom. 11:13; 1 Cor. 3:5; Eph. 3:7; Col. 1:7, 23; 1 Thess. 3:2; 1 Tim. 1:12. This title stresses his service role. He serves Bible Doctrine to the congregation and is the administrative head of a local church. Note: Phil. 1:1, speaks to a large Church and sets out assisting “administrative deacons.”

## 1 CORINTHIANS 3:5

What then is Apollos [a @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER]? And what is Paul [a Pastor/Teacher]? Servants [*diakonos*] through whom you believed [*pisteuo*], even as the LORD gave *opportunity* to each one. I planted [*gave the Gospel of @@@ SALVATION*], Apollos watered [*taught them @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE*], but God was causing the growth [*auxano* – so the positive [+P] volition Believer can reach @@@ MATURITY].

- (d) **All Three.** In Acts 20:17, 28, all three words are interchanged. In short, the sheep [congregation] don't tell the Pastor/Teacher what to do – Heb. 13:7, 17, 24; 2 Cor. 10:8; 13:10; Isa. 54:17; Rom. 9:21. The Pastor/Teacher must fulfill his duty of “*preaching and teaching*” [1 Tim. 5:17]. Preaching non-Biblical information to please people [Gal. 1:10] is wrong and will result in his Divine Discipline – see *infra* (8).
- (6) **Appointed by Holy Spirit.** The spiritual gift of Pastor/Teacher is not voted on or bestowed by people but is given at the point of @@@ SALVATION by God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT – “*and He (Holy Spirit) gave some ... as Pastors and Teachers*” [Eph. 4:11]; Tit. 1:5-6; Eph. 3:7; Acts 1; 1 Tim. 1:10-16; 1 Cor. 15:10. The Pastor/Teacher is delegated authority from God by this spiritual gift. As Paul noted, he does not earn or deserve it: “*For this I was appointed a preacher ... a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and truth*” [1 Tim. 2:7]; 2 Tim. 1:11.
- (a) **Males.** The gift of Pastor/Teacher is bestowed on a few male Believers whom are not to be despised or worshiped – 1 Cor. 14:34-38; 1 Tim. 3:1-7. While females can hold children “Sunday school” classes, this gift is not given to females – 1 Tim. 2:11-12; Eph. 2:12-13; Tit. 1:5-9.

## 1 TIMOTHY 2:11-12

A woman [*gune*] must quietly [*hesuchia*] receive instruction [*manthano* (to learn) – males and females must listen in class to the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER] with entire submissiveness [*hupotage* (obedience)]. But I do not allow a woman [*gune*] to teach [*didasko* (to be a teacher) – females do not have the gift of Pastor/Teacher] or exercise authority [*authenteo* (to govern; exercise dominion over one)] over a man [*aner*], but to remain [*eimi* (to be)] quiet [*hesuchia*].

## 1 TIMOTHY 3:1-7

It is a trustworthy statement: if any man aspires to the office of overseer [*episcopo* – the gift of @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER requires extensive study and preparation], it is a fine work he desires *to do*. An overseer, then, must be above reproach, the husband [*aner*] of one wife, temperate, prudent, respectable, hospitable, able to teach, not addicted to wine or pugnacious, but gentle, peaceable, free from the love of money. *He must be* one who manages his own household well, keeping his children under control with all dignity (but if a man does not know how to manage his own household, how will he take care of the church of God?), *and* not a new convert [*neophutos* (newly planted)], so that he will not become conceited and fall into the condemnation incurred [*krima* (the decision which one passes on the faults of others)] by the devil. And he must have a good reputation with those outside *the church*, so that he will not fall into reproach and the snare of the devil.

## TITUS 1:5-9

For this reason I [Paul] left you [Titus, a @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER trained by Paul] in Crete, that you would set in order what remains and appoint elders [*presbuteros* – men with the spiritual gift that know @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE to be Pastor/Teachers] in every city as I directed you, *namely*, if any man is above reproach [*anegkletos* (unaccused)], the husband [*aner*] of one wife [*gune*], having children [*teknon*] who believe [*pistos* (faithful; can be relied on)], not accused of dissipation [*asotia* (an abandoned, dissolute life)] or rebellion [*anupotaktos* (that cannot be subjected to control; unruly)]. For the overseer [*episkopos* – a Pastor/Teacher] must be above reproach [*anegkletos* (cannot be called into to account)] as God's steward [*oikonomos* (the manager of a household)], not self-willed [*authades* (self-pleasing)], not quick-tempered [*orgilos* (prone to anger)], not addicted to wine [*paraoinos*], not pugnacious [*plektes* (a quarrelsome person)], not fond of sordid gain [*aischrokerdes* (greedy for money)], but hospitable [*philoxeonos* (generous to guests)], loving what is good, sensible [*sophron* (of a sound mind)], just [*dikaio*], devout [*hosios* (free from wickedness)], self-controlled, holding fast [*antechomai*] the faithful [*pistos*] word which is in accordance with the teaching [*didache* (the act of teaching) – the Pastor/Teacher must be faithful to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], so that he will be able both to exhort [*parakaleo*] in sound doctrine [*didaskalia* (teaching)] and to refute [*elegcho*] those who contradict [*antilego*].



- (b) **Slave and Soldier.** The Pastor/Teacher is a “*slave*” [Col. 4:12] and a “*soldier*” [2 Tim. 2:1-4] to God. He must both identify that he has the spiritual gift and then prepare himself by extended periods of studying Bible Doctrine from a proper Pastor/Teacher before he begins his own ministry. The fact that he has the gift will become evident to him as he advances in studying Bible Doctrine. For example, after being saved [circa A.D. 33] Paul did not begin his missionary journeys until A.D. 45. He was in Arabia and other locations learning Bible Doctrine before he set out to establish churches and train other Pastor/Teachers. Finally, the “assignment” of a prepared Pastor/Teacher to a local Church is acknowledged and approved by a senior Pastor, usually the one who taught him – the symbolic “*laying on of hands*” [1 Tim. 4:14; 5:22]. “*The things which you have heard from me ... entrust these to faithful men who will be able to teach others also*” [2 Tim 2:2].

## 2 TIMOTHY 2:1-4

You therefore, my son [Paul to Timothy], be strong in the grace [*charis* – the @@@ PLAN OF GOD] that is in Christ Jesus. The things which you have heard from me [Paul trained him] in the presence of many witnesses, entrust these to faithful [*pistos*] men who will be able to teach others also [train other @@@ PASTOR/TEACHERs]. Suffer hardship with me [*sugkakopatheo* – Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing], as a good soldier [*stratiotes* (a common soldier) – the Pastor/Teacher must be faithful to the Word] of Christ Jesus. No soldier in active service entangles himself in the affairs of everyday life [anything that distracts from the mission], so that he may please the one who enlisted him as a soldier [the Commander in Chief, Jesus Christ].

- (c) **Wages.** A Pastor/Teacher is “*worthy of his wages*” [1 Tim. 5:18] – he is entitled to proper financial support from the congregation.
- (7) **Purpose of a Pastor/Teacher.** The sole purpose of the spiritual gift of Pastor/Teacher is to teach the full realm of systematic theology in fixed categories of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – especially the Church Age “*mystery*” doctrines [Eph. 3:3-10] – so that the positive [+P] volition Believer can grow to @@@ MATURITY and have “*the mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16]. See Heb. 6:1-3; 1 Thess. 5:12; 1 Pet. 5:1-3; Jer. 3:15; Col. 1:7; 1 Jn. 4:6; 1 Tim. 2:7; 2 Tim. 2:23-26; 2 Chron. 15:1-7. See @@@ MYSTERY.

## HEBREWS 6:1-3

Therefore leaving [*aphiemi* (to send forth)] the elementary [*arche* (beginning; origin)] teaching [*logos* (what is declared) – the basic categories of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] about [1] the Christ [*christos* (the anointed one) – the person and work of Jesus Christ in @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION], let us press on to maturity [*teleiotes* (the state of the more intelligent) – the positive [+P] volition Believer’s goal is to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY], not laying again [*palin*] a foundation [*themelios*] of [2] repentance [*metanoia* (a change of mind)] from dead [*nekros*] works [*ergon* – the change of mind about the false claim of @@@ SALVATION by human works of @@@ RELIGION] and [3] of faith [*pistis* – @@@ FAITH/Rest] toward God, [4] of instruction about washings and laying on of hands [@@@ REBOUND], and [5] the resurrection [*anastasis* – the @@@ RESURRECTION] of the dead [*nekros* (physical death)] and [6] eternal [*aionios* (without beginning and without end)] judgment [*krima* – the Great White Throne @@@ JUDGMENT for the unBeliever and fallen @@@ ANGELS]. And [*kai*] this we [the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER teaching and leading the way forward] will do [*poieo*], if God permits [*epitrepo* (to allow to happen)].

- (a) **Get the Gold.** The Pastor/Teacher refines the “gold” ore of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE through his studies and provides the newly minted “gold coins” to the congregation by which they become truly and “rich” [Rev. 3:18] in the fabulous “treasure” [2 Tim. 1:14] of God’s thinking and reach @@@ MATURITY. See Col. 1:25-26.

## REVELATION 3:18

I [Jesus Christ] advise you [the Church at Laodicea] to buy from Me gold [*chrusion* (gold which lies embedded in the earth) – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE is gold in the earth] refined [*puroo* (to burn with fire)] by fire [*pur* – the job of the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER is to take the ore, refine it into gold coins, and give it to the congregation as their spiritual money] so that you may become rich [*plouteo* (to be affluent in resources) – the Believer can reach @@@ MATURITY], and white garments so that you may clothe yourself [with fantastic @@@ REWARDS], and that the shame of your nakedness will not be revealed [at the Judgment Seat of Christ the Believer will not be ashamed of his level of rewards]; and eye salve to anoint your eyes so that you may see [the Believer only sees God through Bible Doctrine].

## COLOSSIANS 1:25-26

Of *this church* I [Paul] was made a minister [*dikonos* – @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHER**] according to the stewardship from God bestowed [*didomi* (to give)] on me for your benefit [so that positive [+P] volition Believers can reach spiritual @@@ **MATURITY**], so that I might fully carry out the *preaching of* the word of God, *that is*, the mystery [*musterion* – advanced @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**] which has been hidden [*apokrupto* (to keep secret)] from the *past* ages [*aion* (a period of time)] and generations [*genea* (an age occupied by each successive generation)], but has now been manifested [*phaneroo*] to His saints [*hagios* (set apart ones) – all the Believers in the Church Age].

- (b) **Joint.** The Pastor/Teacher is a “*joint*” [Eph. 4:15-16] in the body of Christ that supports various parts of the body of Christ. See Col. 2:19.

## EPHESIANS 4:15-16

But speaking the truth [*aletheuo* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**] in love [*agape* (to love dearly)], we are to grow up [*auxano* (to grow; to increase) – the positive [+P] volition Believer is to grow to @@@ **MATURITY**] in all *aspects* into Him who is the head, *even* Christ, from whom the whole body [*soma* – all Church Age Believers], being fitted and held together by what every joint [*haphe* – the @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHER** providing Bible Doctrine] supplies [*epichoregia*], according to the proper working of each individual part, causes the growth [*auxesis* (increase; growth)] of the body [*soma* – any positive [+P] volition Believer wishing to reach maturity] for the building up [*oikodome* – the @@@ **EDIFICATION COMPLEX OF THE SOUL**] of itself in love [*agape* (to love dearly)].

- (8) **Consistent Teaching.** The Pastor/Teacher has a responsibility to his congregation to be faithful in teaching @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** on a *consistent* basis. However, not all Believers in the congregation will respond to the truth at the same time or pace – Rev. 3:15-19; Heb. 6:1-3; 1 Thess. 5:12. Thus, he must deal wisely with his entire congregation – 2 Tim. 2:24-25.

- (a) **Focus.** The Pastor/Teacher is to restrict anything in life that detracts from his study and teaching of the @@@ **BIBLE** – 2 Tim. 2:14-22.

## 2 TIMOTHY 2:24-25

The LORD's bond-servant [*doulos* (slave) – the prepared @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHER**] must not be quarrelsome [*machomai* (engage in a war of words)], but be kind to all, able to teach [*didaktikos* (apt and skillful in teaching)], patient when wronged, with gentleness correcting those who are in opposition, if perhaps God may grant them [the Believers that are on negative [-N] volition] repentance [*metanoia* (a change of mind)] leading to the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – understanding the complete realm of @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**].

## 2 TIMOTHY 2:15-18

Be diligent [*spoudazo* (to hasten) – the positive [+P] volition Believer studies @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** as his number one priority] to present [*paristemi* (to present, to show)] yourself approved [*dokimos* (acceptable)] to God as a workman [*ergates* (a laborer)] who does not need to be ashamed [*anepaischuntos* (having no cause to be ashamed) – at the Judgment Seat of Christ only those Believers who reach some level of spiritual @@@ **MATURITY** will receive @@@ **REWARDS**], accurately handling [*orthotomeo* (to cut straight)] the word of truth [*aletheia* – the positive [+P] volition Believer applying Bible Doctrine to @@@ **PROBLEMS**]. But avoid [*periistemi* (to turn one's self about)] worldly [*bebelos* (profane)] and empty chatter [*kenophonia* (empty discussion)], for it will lead to further ungodliness, and their talk will spread like gangrene [*gaggraina*]. Among them are Hymenaeus and Philetus [false @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHERs**], men who have gone astray [*astocheo* (to miss the mark)] from the truth [*aletheia*] saying that the resurrection [*anastasis* (rising from the dead)] has already taken place [they taught that the @@@ **RAPTURE** had already occurred], and they upset [*anatrepo* (to overturn)] the faith [*pistis*] of some.

- (b) **Love.** A Pastor/Teacher shows his @@@ **LOVE** for the congregation by studying and teaching @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** to feed the sheep, not by service activities for members of the congregation [Sunday dinners, visiting, concerts, etc.]. His job is to teach spiritual information and not to engage in human viewpoints of @@@ **GOOD** – 1 Tim. 1:6-7; Col. 1:23-29; Eph. 3:2-13; 2 Tim. 2:24-25. In short, a Pastor/Teacher either accommodates or communicates. See *infra* (f).

## 1 TIMOTHY 1:6-7

For some men, straying from these things [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], have turned aside to fruitless discussion [*mataiologia* (empty talk)], wanting to be teachers of the Law [the Loser Believer who seeks to be a @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER], even though they do not understand [*noieo* (to perceive with the mind)] either what they are saying or the matters about which they make confident assertions [*diabebaioomai* (to assert confidently)].

- (c) **Public Teaching.** All teaching [*didasko*] by a Pastor/Teacher is to be in a public setting with at least two or more in the congregation and in a monologue format. This format protects the @@@ PRIVACY of the hearer as it is no one's business if the Believer listens and believes the words or not – Matt. 18:20; Acts 20:20; 1 Jn. 1:4; Heb. 13:7; Rom. 10:17. UnBelievers can sit in on Bible classes – Jn. 3:1-2; 4:7-8, 27.

## ACTS 20:20

How I [Paul] did not shrink [*hupostello* (to draw back; to be timid)] from declaring [*anaggello* (to announce; make known)] to you [Believers in Ephesus] anything that was profitable [*sumphero* (to help; to be profitable) – so that the positive [+P] volition Believer could reach @@@ MATURITY by means of learning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], and teaching [*didasko*] you publicly [*demosios* (publicly; in public places)] and from house [*oikos* (an inhabited house) – the early Church met in the private homes of selected Believers] to house, solemnly testifying [*diamarturomai* (to attest; to testify)] to both Jews and Gentiles of repentance [*metaneo* (to change the mind) – reject @@@ RELIGION's method for @@@ SALVATION] toward God and faith [*pistis* – @@@ FAITH in Christ] in our LORD Jesus Christ.

## MATTHEW 18:20

For where two or three have gathered together in My name, I [Jesus Christ] am there in their midst [*mesos* (in the middle)].

- (d) **Other Forms.** Some degree of non-face-to-face teaching is authorized as seen in the letters of Paul and John to non-resident Believers – Heb. 13:22; 2 Jn. 12. Today, a Believer can reach @@@ MATURITY by means of the electronic communications from a proper Pastor/Teacher.



## 2 JOHN 12

Though I [John] have many things to write to you, I do not want to *do so* with paper and ink; but I hope to come to you and speak face to face [stoma], so that your joy [chara (gladness)] may be made full [pleroo (to fill up)].

- (e) **Types of Sheep.** Since the congregation consists of different types of Believers some will advance to @@@ MATURITY and some will not. There are three types of sheep [Believers] that the Pastor/Teacher will face as seen in Jesus Christ's dialogue with Peter – Jn. 21:15-17.

## JOHN 21:15-17

So when they had finished breakfast, Jesus said to Simon Peter, “Simon, son of John, do you love [agapao – impersonal @@@ LOVE] Me more than these?” He said to Him, “Yes, LORD; You know that I love [phileo (personal love)] You.” He said to him, “Tend [bosko (feed and care for)] My lambs [arnion (young sheep) – (1) these are new Believers].” He said to him again a second time, “Simon, son of John, do you love [agapao – impersonal @@@ LOVE] Me?” He said to him, “Yes, LORD; You know that I love [phileo (personal love)] You.” He said to him, “Shepherd [poimaino (force feed)] My sheep [probaton (adult sheep) – (2) hardheaded Believers due to the use of poimaino, see 2 Cor. 10:8; 13:10].” He said to him the third time, “Simon, son of John, do you love [phileo (personal love) – this time Jesus uses personal love] Me?” Peter was grieved because He said to him the third time, “Do you love [phileo] Me?” And he said to Him, “LORD, You know all things; You know that I love [phileo (personal love)] You.” Jesus said to him, “Tend [bosko] My sheep [probaton – (3) positive [+P] volition adult Believers].”

- (f) **Admonish.** The Pastor/Teacher must “*exhort and reprove*” [Tit. 2:15] the congregation, warning by application. This means he gets personal in an impersonal manner – Col. 3:16; Tit. 1:9; 2 Tim. 2:23-26; 4:2-5.

## TITUS 2:15

These things speak [laleo – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] and exhort [parakeleo (entreaty)] and reprove [elegcho (to refute; correct)] with all authority [epitage (command authority)]. Let no one disregard you [Titus as a @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER].



## 2 TIMOTHY 4:2-5

Preach [*kerusso* (to teach with gravity)] the word [Paul to Timothy]; be ready in season *and* out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort, with great patience and instruction. For the time will come when they [the congregation] will not endure sound doctrine [*didaskalia* – accurate @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]; but *wanting* to have their ears tickled [*kneitho* (to itch)], they will accumulate for themselves teachers in accordance to their own desires [*eoithumia* (lust) – apostates want messages versed in human @@@ GOOD], and will turn away their ears from the truth and will turn aside to myths. But you, be sober in all things, endure hardship, do the work of an evangelist [*euaggelistes*], fulfill your ministry [do your job as a prepared @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER].

- (g) **Plugger.** Pastor/Teacher Epaphras, trained by Paul, is named as an example of a successful *plugger* who was not impressed with his achievements nor hindered by his failures – Col. 1:7; 4:12-13. Epaphras was motivated by love for the Word – 1 Pet. 5:2; Phm. 1:23. Timothy, also trained by Paul, was weak at first but reached spiritual @@@ MATURITY later. In each and every case, faithfulness [*pistos*] is the key ingredient for anyone that is to be used by God. God appointed Paul as the senior @@@ APOSTLE because he was “*faithful*” [1 Tim. 1:12-16] to the Word.
- (h) **Double – Double.** The Pastor/Teacher gets double Divine Blessing or Divine Discipline per his performance – “*double honor*” [1 Tim. 5:17]; Eph. 3:7; 1 Cor. 15:10; Heb. 6:10; 1 Pet. 5:1-4; Js. 3:1; 2 Cor. 2:17.

## JAMES 3:1

Let not many *of you* become teachers [*didaskalos* (a teacher) – a @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER], my brethren, knowing that as such we [James and others Pastor/Teachers] will incur a stricter [*megas*] judgment [*krima* – Divine Discipline in @@@ TIME for failing to fulfill their mandated mission].

## 2 CORINTHIANS 2:17

For we [Paul and @@@ PASTOR/TEACHERs] are not like many, peddling [*kapeleuo* (to do a thing for base gain)] the word of God, but as from sincerity, but as from God, we speak in Christ in the sight of God.

## 1 PETER 5:1-4

Therefore, I [**Peter**] exhort the elders [*presbuteros* (the old man) – all @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHERs**] among you, as *your* fellow elder and witness of the sufferings of Christ, and a partaker also of the glory [*doxa*] that is to be revealed [at the @@@ **RAPTURE**], shepherd [*poimaino* (tend to the flock)] the flock [*poimnion* (a flock of sheep)] of God among you, exercising oversight [*episkopeo*] not under compulsion [*anagastos* (by force or constraint)], but voluntarily [*hekousios* (willingly)], according to *the will of* God; and not for sordid gain, but with eagerness; nor yet as lording it over [*katakuriuo* (to bring under one's power)] those allotted to your charge [*kleros* (inscribed with their names)], but proving to be examples to the flock. And when the Chief Shepherd appears [*phaneroo* – **Jesus Christ in a @@@ RESURRECTION body at the Rapture**], you will receive the unfading [*amarantinos*] crown [*stephanos* (a wreath given as a prize)] of glory [*doxa* – special @@@ **REWARDS** given to the faithful Pastor/Teacher].

- (9) **The Congregation.** There are certain critical things that the Believer must consider when joining or participating as a member of a local Church.
  - (a) **Right One.** God will provide a “right” Pastor/Teacher for each positive [+P] volition Believer. In fact, God did this “*before the foundation of the world*” [Eph. 1:4; Rev. 13:8]. Since no given Pastor/Teacher is the right one for all Believers, each must determine for himself if the Pastor/Teacher is @@@ **GRACE** oriented and academically prepared to impart accurate @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**. If so, the Believer is to then follow the Pastor/Teacher’s “*example for those who believe*” [1 Tim. 4:12] – to be dedicated to Bible Doctrine. See Heb. 13:7.

## HEBREWS 13:7

Remember [*mnemoneuo* (to be mindful of)] those who led [*hegeomai* (to lead; to go before) – a @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHER**] you, who spoke the word of God to you; and considering [*anatheoreo* (to look at attentively)] the result of their conduct [*ekbasis*], imitate their faith [*pistis* – loyalty to Bible Doctrine].

- (b) **Submit.** Each member of the congregation must of their own free will submit to the @@@ **AUTHORITY** of the Pastor/Teacher so that they can grow in knowledge of Bible Doctrine – Heb. 13:17; 2 Pet. 3:18.

## HEBREWS 13:17

Obey [*peitho* (to be persuaded)] your leaders [*hegeomai* (to rule) – the @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHER**] and submit [*hupoeiko* (to resist no longer)] *to them*, for they keep watch [*agrupneo* (to keep awake)] over your souls [*psuche* – the spiritual growth of the positive [+P] volition Believer] as those who will give an account [about the members of the congregation]. Let them do this with joy [*chara* – the Believer with positive [+P] volition is a joy to teach] and not with grief [*stenazo* (to sigh; to groan) – the Believer with negative [-N] volition is not teachable], for this would be unprofitable [*alusiteles*] for you [loss of @@@ **REWARDS** to the Loser Believer on negative [-N] volition].

- (c) **No Talking.** There is to be no talking in @@@ **BIBLE** class and no gossip from the congregation – 1 Cor. 14:34; Heb. 13:7. This applies to male and female members of the congregation. Note: Accusations of misconduct are based on “*two or three witnesses*” [1 Tim. 5:19].

## 1 CORINTHIANS 14:34

The women [*gune*] are to keep silent [*sigao* (to keep silence)] in the churches [*ekklesia* – this applies to men as well]; for they are not permitted to speak [*laleo* (to use words in order to declare one’s mind)], but are to subject [*hupotasso*] themselves, just as the Law also says.

- (d) **Pray.** Appreciate and pray for your Pastor/Teacher – 1 Thess. 5:12; Heb. 13:18-19; 2 Thess. 3:1; Col. 4:2-3; 1 Cor. 16:9; Eph. 6:19.

## 1 THESSALONIANS 5:12

But we [**Paul and his team**] request of you, brethren, that you appreciate those who diligently labor [*kopiaio* (to grow weary) – the Pastor/Teacher is to study and teach] among you, and have charge over [*proistemi* (to preside over)] you in the LORD and give you instruction [*noutheteo* (admonish)].

## 2 THESSALONIANS 3:1

Finally, brethren [*adelphos* (brothers)], pray for us [**Paul and the other @@@ PASTOR/TEACHERs**] that the word of the LORD will spread rapidly [*trecho* (to run)] and be glorified [*doazo*], just as *it did* also with you.

- (10) **Size of the Church.** God provides the hearers. The size of the congregation is irrelevant and is never indicative of success or failure on the part of the Pastor/Teacher. In that time and place in @@@ HISTORY, God provides accurate truth for all Believers who are on positive [+P] volition. Negative [-N] volition will not respond regardless of Church size or makeup – 1 Jn. 4:6.
- (11) **Satan's Target.** A @@@ GRACE oriented Pastor/Teacher is a prime target for Satan to entrap in “*the snare of the devil*” [1 Tim. 3:6-7] in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT – Rev. 2:13; 2 Tim. 1:3. Those in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS hate him – Amos 5:10; Jn. 15:18-19 [Jesus' warning].

### AMOS 5:10

They hate [*wane*] him [those on negative [-N] volition hate the @@@ GRACE oriented @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER] who reproves [*yakach* (to correct)] in the gate [the place where @@@ BIBLE classes were held], and they abhor him who speaks with integrity [*tamiym* (virtue)].

### REVELATION 2:13

I [Jesus Christ] know where you [Pergamum Church] dwell, where Satan's throne [*thronos* – Satan established a major HQ there] is; and you hold fast My name, and did not deny My faith [*pistis* – the Believers stayed on positive [+P] volition] even in the days of Antipas, My witness [*martus*], My faithful [*pistos*] one [Antipas was the former @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER at Pergamum who was executed by the Romans], who was killed [*apokteino* (to inflict mortal death)] among you, where Satan dwells [*katoikeo* (to settle)].

- (12) **Judgment Seat of Christ.** The Pastor/Teacher will be present at the @@@ JUDGMENT Seat of Christ with his congregation – Col. 1:28; Heb. 13:17.

### COLOSSIANS 1:28

We [Paul and his team] proclaim Him [Christ], admonishing every man and teaching [*didasko* – the function of the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER] every man with all wisdom [*sophia* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], so that we may present [at the Judgment Seat of Christ] every man complete [*teleios* (that which is perfect)] – a Believer that stands for @@@ REWARDS in Christ.

## @@@ PIVOT

- (1) **Definition.** The term “Pivot” is a technical term which refers to the positive impact that an accumulation of mature **Winner** Believers living in a specific geographical location can have on that civil society. In such an instance there exists a Pivot that may or may not then constitute a full blown “Client Nation” under the LORD. For example, the British Empire of the 19th Century served as a Pivot Client Nation to God. Not only did England greatly prosper as a country, but it witnessed the export of thousands of missionaries who presented the Gospel to millions of unBeliever humans and also presented @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE across the globe. *See* Ps. 33:12.

### PSALM 33:12

Blessed is the nation whose God is the LORD, the people whom He has chosen [*bachar (to elect)*] for His own inheritance.

- (2) **Divine Discipline.** If the Pivot is too small, it can lead to the total destruction of the Client Nation. However, if the Pivot is large, the nation is blessed and preserved *see infra* (3).
  - (a) **Size.** God knows the size of the Pivot in any given generation – “*I will leave 7,000 in Israel, all the knees that have not bowed to Baal*” [1 Kng. 19:18]; Ezk. 22:30; 1 Kng. 19:14. *See* @@@ HEATHENISM.

### 1 KINGS 19:14

Then he [*Elijah in the Northern Kingdom of Israel*] said, “I have been very zealous for the LORD, the God of hosts; for the sons of Israel have forsaken Your covenant, torn down Your altars and killed Your prophets with the sword. And I alone am left [*Elijah is wrong in his assessment, per 1 Kng. 19:18, God reveals there were 7,000 Winner Believers in the @@@ PIVOT of the nation of Israel at that time*]; and they seek my life, to take it away.”

- (b) **Cycles of Discipline.** When the Pivot is diminished in size then the cycles of Divine Discipline will begin and can increase in severity – Deut. 28:15-68; Isa. 6:13; Matt. 5:13; Ezk. 14:12-23; Hos. 4:1-8. The book of *Leviticus* sets out 5 progressive stages or “cycles” of Divine Discipline that progressively increase in severity – Lev. 26:14-33.

## LEVITICUS 26:14-33

But if you [the Jews as a Client Nation to God] do not obey Me [God] and do not carry out all these commandments, if, instead, you reject My statutes, and if your soul abhors My ordinances [negative [-N] volition towards @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] so as not to carry out all My commandments, and so break My covenant, I, in turn, will do this to you: [1] I will appoint over you a sudden terror, consumption and fever that will waste away the eyes and cause the soul to pine away; also, you will sow your seed uselessly, for your enemies will eat it up. [2] I will set My face against you so that you will be struck down before your enemies; and those who hate you will rule over you, and you will flee when no one is pursuing you. [3] If also after these things you do not obey Me, then I will punish you seven times more for your sins. I will also break down your pride of power; I will also make your sky like iron and your earth like bronze. Your strength will be spent uselessly, for your land will not yield its produce and the trees of the land will not yield their fruit. [4] If then, you act with hostility against Me and are unwilling to obey Me, I will increase the plague on you seven times according to your sins. I will let loose among you the beasts of the field, which will bereave you of your children and destroy your cattle and reduce your number so that your roads lie deserted. And if by these things you are not turned to Me, but act with hostility against Me, then I will act with hostility against you; and I, even I, will strike you seven times for your sins. I will also bring upon you a sword which will execute vengeance for the covenant; and when you gather together into your cities, I will send pestilence among you, so that you shall be delivered into enemy hands. When I break your staff of bread, ten women will bake your bread in one oven, and they will bring back your bread in rationed amounts, so that you will eat and not be satisfied. [5] Yet if in spite of this you do not obey Me, but act with hostility against Me, then I will act with wrathful hostility against you, and I, even I, will punish you seven times for your sins. Further, you will eat the flesh of your sons and the flesh of your daughters you will eat. I then will destroy your high places, and cut down your incense altars, and heap your remains on the remains of your idols, for My soul shall abhor you. I will lay waste your cities as well and will make your sanctuaries desolate, and I will not smell your soothing aromas. I will make the land desolate so that your enemies who settle in it will be appalled over it. You, however, I will scatter among the nations and will draw out a sword after you, as your land becomes desolate and your cities become waste [the 5th and final cycle of Divine Discipline sees the Client Nation destroyed].



**MATTHEW 5:13**

You [**Believers**] are the salt of the earth [**all Believers have the potential to serve in the @@@ PIVOT by reaching spiritual @@@ MATURITY**]; but if the salt has become tasteless [**the negative [-N] volition Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM**], how can it be made salty *again*? It is no longer good for anything, except to be thrown out and trampled under foot by men [**the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH**].

- (3) **Divine Blessing.** A large Pivot provides Divine Blessing – Lev. 26:3-33; Isa. 6:13 [10 per cent of the Jews were positive to Isaiah’s message]; Deut. 28:1-14. The book of *Leviticus* sets out the Divine Blessing clause – Lev. 26:3-13.

**LEVITICUS 26:3-13**

If you walk in My statutes and keep My commandments so as to carry them out, then I shall give you rains in their season, so that the land will yield its produce and the trees of the field will bear their fruit. Indeed, your threshing will last for you until grape gathering, and grape gathering will last until sowing time. You will thus eat your food to the full and live securely in your land. I shall also grant peace in the land, so that you may lie down with no one making *you* tremble. I shall also eliminate harmful beasts from the land, and no sword will pass through your land. But you will chase your enemies and they will fall before you by the sword; five of you will chase a hundred, and a hundred of you will chase ten thousand, and your enemies will fall before you by the sword. So I will turn toward you and make you fruitful and multiply you, and I will confirm My covenant with you. You will eat the old supply and clear out the old because of the new. Moreover, I will make My dwelling among you, and My soul will not reject you. I will also walk among you and be your God, and you shall be My people. I am the LORD your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt so that *you* would not be their slaves, and I broke the bars of your yoke and made you walk erect.

**ISAIAH 6:13**

Yet there will be a tenth portion in it [**positive [+P] volition Believers in Judah**], and it will again be *subject* to burning [**prophecy of the 586 B.C. destruction of Jerusalem**], like a terebinth or an oak whose stump remains when it is felled. The holy seed [**positive [+P] volition Believer**] is its stump.

- (4) **Jewish Client Nations.** Only Jewish Client Nations existed in the Old Testament [and in the future Millennium] – Ps. 147:12-20; 148:14; Isa. 2:1-11; 60:1-22; 62:1-12. The Northern Kingdom was destroyed in 721 B.C. The Southern Kingdom was destroyed in 586 B.C., but returned as Judea after 70 years of Divine Discipline [Jer. 12:15-17; 25:11; 29:10] to dedicate the rebuilt 2nd Temple in 516 B.C. However, Judea was destroyed in A.D. 70 by Rome.

### JEREMIAH 12:15-17

And it will come about that after I [God] have uprooted them [the Southern Kingdom of Judah was completely destroyed by the Chaldeans in 586 B.C. and captives carried back to Babylon], I will again have compassion on them; and I will bring them back, each one to his inheritance and each one to his land [the Persian's destroyed the Chaldeans, capturing Babylon in 536 B.C. and subsequent Persian rulers allowed the Jews to return and rebuild the new nation of Judea so that the new Temple in Jerusalem was dedicated in 516 B.C.]. Then if they [the priests and the prophets] will really learn [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] the ways of My people, to swear by My name, "As the LORD lives," even as they taught My people to swear by Baal [one of the reasons the Client Nation of Judah was destroyed in 586 B.C. was that the priests and prophets taught false information and @@@ RELIGION], they will be built up in the midst of My people [Judea prospered for many years]. "But if they will not listen [*shama* – negative [-N] volition], then I will uproot that nation, uproot and destroy it [by the time Jesus was born apostate Judea was in the last cycle of Divine Discipline culminating with the Roman destruction of the nation and Temple in A.D. 70]," declares the LORD.

- (5) **Gentile Client Nations.** Only Gentile nations can be Client Nations to God in the Church Age – Lk. 21:24; Rom. 11:25; Eph. 1:10.

### LUKE 21:24

And they [the Jews] will fall by the edge of the sword, and will be led captive [*aichmalotizo* (to be led away a captive)] into all the nations [*ethnos* – the two Jewish wars with Rome scattered the Jews across the known world]; and Jerusalem will be trampled under foot [*pateo* (to crush with the feet)] by the Gentiles [*ethnos*] until the times [*kairos* (a fixed and definite measure of time)] of the Gentiles are fulfilled [*pleroo* (to make full) – until the start of the Millennium there will never be another Jewish Client Nation to God].

- (6) **Influence is Invisible.** The true influence in the prosperity of the national entity is in the spiritual realm. While the Believer's responsibility to the State to be a loyal and model citizen is defined under the laws of the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS, the Pivot alone might deliver the nation from ruin – Matt. 5:14-16; Mk. 9:50; Gen. 18:23-26; Ezk. 22:30. In fact, even the influence of a single Winner Believer might temporarily preserve a given area from destruction. *“I searched for a man among them who would build up the wall and stand in the gap before Me”* [Ezk. 22:30]; Eccl. 9:13-18. This blessing by association indicates that the mature Believer is a one man Pivot of blessing to his family, friends, community, and nation. Thus, the best manifestation of patriotism is for the Believer to reach @@@ MATURITY.

### ECCLESIASTES 9:13-18

Also this I [Solomon] came to see as wisdom under the sun, and it impressed me. There was a small city with few men [the military was small] in it and a great king came to it, surrounded it and constructed large siegeworks against it. But there was found in it a poor [@@@ MONEY] wise man [a mature Believer] and he delivered the city by his wisdom [chokmah – this Believer was at @@@ MATURITY, a one person @@@ PIVOT]. Yet no one remembered that poor man. So I said, “Wisdom is better than strength.” But the wisdom of the poor man is despised and his words are not heeded [the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS hate the truth]. The words of the wise heard in quietness are *better* than the shouting of a ruler among fools. Wisdom is better than weapons of war, but one sinner destroys much good.

### GENESIS 18: 23-26

Abraham came near and said, “Will You [God administering Divine Discipline] indeed sweep away the righteous [tsaddiyq – the Believers] with the wicked [rasha (the guilty) – the unBelievers]? Suppose there are fifty righteous within the city [Sodom]; will You indeed sweep *it* away and not spare the place for the sake of the fifty righteous who are in it? Far be it from You to do such a thing, to slay the righteous with the wicked, so that the righteous and the wicked are *treated* alike. Far be it from You! Shall not the Judge of all the earth deal justly [mishpat (the act of deciding a case)]?” So the LORD said, “If I find in Sodom fifty righteous within the city, then I will spare the whole place on their account [a certain number of Believers in the @@@ PIVOT].”

**EZEKIEL 22:30**

I [God] searched for a man [mature Believers] among them [Judah 586 B.C.] who would build up the wall and stand in the gap [God requires a fixed number of mature Believers to “stand in the gap” to sustain a @@@ PIVOT] before Me for the land, so that I would not destroy it; but I found no one.

**(7) The Four Generation Curse.**

- (a) **Why.** The concept of the Four Generation Curse is set out in Deut. 5:8-10; 24:16; Ex. 20:5; Prov. 30:11-17, and refers to the fact that God will allow negative [-N] volition to run in a Client Nation for up to four generations before He intervenes to cut it off so that @@@ HISTORY is kept within certain parameters – Ex. 34:6-7; Num. 14:1. A generation is 20-30 years in length.

**EXODUS 34:6-7**

Then the LORD passed by in front of him [Moses] and proclaimed, “The LORD, the LORD God, compassionate and gracious, slow to anger, and abounding in lovingkindness and truth; who keeps lovingkindness for thousands, who forgives iniquity, transgression and sin; yet He will by no means leave *the guilty* unpunished, visiting the iniquity of fathers on the children and on the grandchildren to the third and fourth generations [Four Generation Curse].”

- (b) **Individuals.** The Four Generation Curse is a collective fact, but each person is judged according to his own choices – Deut. 24:16; 30:19; Jer. 31:29-30; Gen. 2:16-17; Eccl. 7:20; Jos. 24:15; Ezk. 18:1-32.

**DEUTERONOMY 24:16**

Fathers shall not be put to death for *their* sons, nor shall sons be put to death for *their* fathers; everyone shall be put to death for his own sin [*chet*].

**JEREMIAH 31:29-30**

In those days they will not say again, “The fathers have eaten sour grapes, and the children’s teeth are set on edge.” But everyone will die for his own iniquity; each man who eats the sour grapes, his teeth will be set on edge.

- (c) **God's Sovereign Will.** God wants to change cursing into blessing – Deut. 6:6-12; 7:9; Ps. 100:5. Thus, the “curse” of the Four Generation Curse can be broken at any point by the responses of enough positive [+P] volition Believers to choose for @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.

### DEUTERONOMY 7:9

Know therefore that the LORD [*yehovah* – singular] your God [*elohiym* (God) – plural intensive, @@@ TRINITY], He is God, the faithful God, who keeps His covenant and his lovingkindness [*chesed* (mercy) – @@@ GRACE in action] to a thousandth generation with those who love Him and keep His commandments; but repays those who hate Him to their faces, to destroy them; He will not delay with him who hates Him, He will repay him to his face. Therefore, you shall keep the commandment and the statutes and the judgments which I am commanding you today, to do them.

### PSALM 100:5

For the LORD is good; His lovingkindness [*chesed* (mercy)] is everlasting and His faithfulness [*emunah*] to all generations [*dor*].

- (d) **Bible Doctrine Blesses.** Where @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE is taught and responded to, God's blessings are rightly proclaimed to increase “*a thousand-fold more*” [Deut. 1:11]. See Ezk. 18:30-32.

### DEUTERONOMY 1:11

May the LORD, the God of your fathers, increase you a thousand-fold more than you are and bless you, just as He has promised [*dabar* (to declare a promise)] you!

### EZEKIEL 18:30-32

Therefore I [God] will judge you, O house of Israel, each according to his conduct [the positive [+P] or negative [-N] volition decisions from the soul of each person],” declares the LORD God. “Repent [*shub* (to turn back) – change your mind from negative to positive] and turn away from all your transgressions, so that iniquity may not become a stumbling block to you.

---

## @@@ PLAN OF GOD &amp; DIVINE DECREES

## – THE PLAN OF GOD –

- (1) **Definition.** The Plan of God refers to the sum total of God’s Sovereign plan [roadmap] for the human race, to include three categories of fixed truths – Eph. 1:4-6; 1 Tim. 4:16; 2 Tim. 3:16-17; Jer. 15:16. *See infra* (3). With these dogmatic truths, God overcomes the things that are impossible by man! “*The things that are impossible with people are possible with God*” [Lk. 18:27].
  - (a) **Truth One: The Divine Institutions.** God’s Directive Will to provide @@@ FREEDOM to all via the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.
  - (b) **Truth Two: Salvation.** God’s Directive Will to provide @@@ SALVATION to all unBelievers via the Gospel – Ezk. 18:4; 33:11.
  - (c) **Truth Three: Maturity.** God’s Directive Will to provide spiritual growth to all Believers via learning and applying @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE [Ps. 139:16; Jer. 29:11] and receive @@@ REWARDS.
- (2) **Why Man Created.** God created mankind for two reasons.
  - (a) **Resolve the Angelic Conflict.** Create a life form that has free will, like @@@ ANGELS, in order to demonstrate His @@@ GRACE and fairly resolve Satan’s appeal in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.
  - (b) **Share God’s Happiness.** To bring “*many sons (Believers) to glory*” [Heb. 2:10], into an eternal relationship with God – “*whom I have created for My glory*” [Isa. 43:7]. In short, God wanted to share His @@@ HAPPINESS with Believers and made perfect provisions to do so “*before the foundation of the world*” [Eph. 1:3-6].

## HEBREWS 2:10

For it was fitting for Him [**God**], for whom are all things, and through whom are all things, in bringing many sons to glory [*doxa* – all Believers], to perfect [*teleioo* (to make perfect)] the author [*archegos* (the chief leader) – **Jesus Christ**] of their salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN] through sufferings [*pathema* – @@@ SUFFERING of Christ].



- (3) **Two Sovereign Directive Wills.** God always desires the highest and the best. Consistent with human positive [**+P**] volition, the Plan of God provides all that is necessary to accomplish His two primary Sovereign Directive Wills.
- (a) **First Sovereign Directive Will: Salvation For All Mankind.** God desires that all humans should be saved – “*that we believe in the name of His Son Jesus Christ*” [1 Jn. 3:23]; Jn. 1:7; 6:40; 2 Pet. 3:8-9; Gal. 1:4; Isa. 30:18; Rom. 6:23; Ezk. 18:23; Matt. 18:14.

### JOHN 6:40

For this is the will of My [**Jesus speaking**] Father [**God**], that everyone who beholds the Son [**considers the Gospel**] and believes in Him will have eternal life, and I Myself will raise him up on the last day.

### 2 PETER 3:8-9

But do not let this one *fact* escape your notice, beloved, that with the LORD one day is like a thousand years, and a thousand years like one day. The LORD is not slow about His promise, as some count slowness, but is patient toward you, not wishing for any to perish [*apollumi*] but for all [**unBelievers**] to come to repentance [*metanoia (to change the mind) – about Christ*].

### EZEKIEL 18:23

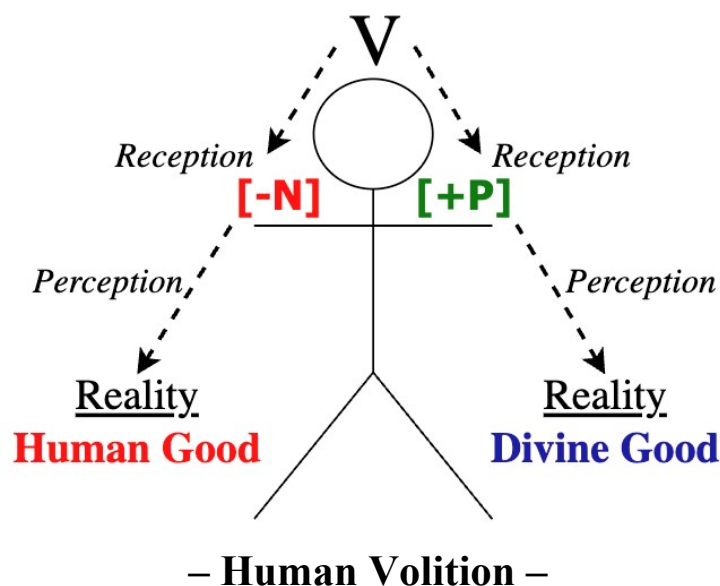
“Do I [**the Directive Will of God is that all people should receive @@@ SALVATION**] have any pleasure in the death of the wicked,” declares the LORD God, “rather than that he should turn from his ways and live?”

- (b) **Second Sovereign Directive Will: Maturity For All Believers.** God desires that all those that are saved should reach spiritual adulthood **Winner** status and @@@ **REWARDS** – 1 Tim. 2:3-4; 4:16; 1 Jn. 3:23.

### 1 TIMOTHY 2:3-4

This is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Savior [*soter*], who desires all men to be saved [*sozo (to deliver) – the unBeliever should be saved*] and to come to the knowledge [*epignosis (full knowledge)*] of the truth [*aletheia – God’s will for the Believer to reach @@@ MATURITY*].

- (4) **Functioning His Plan.** The Plan of God is static but He has chosen to do some things: (1) directly; (2) through agencies; or (3) through certain individuals. In turn, the Plan of God captures perfectly all the free choices of human volition – negative or positive – so that the operation of the Will of God functions in three cooperative manners [see Balaam, Num. 22-24]:
- (a) **Directive Will of God.** From God to Believers and unBelievers.
  - (b) **Permissive Will of God.** God permits human free will to operate for both unBelievers and Believers and allows the consequences of that volitional free will to play out in @@@ TIME.
  - (c) **Overruling Will of God.** Without violating individual human volition God steps into @@@ HISTORY from time to time to prohibit certain things from happening. See @@@ HOLY SPIRIT.
- (5) **Bending History.** Human positive [+P] volition is the most powerful force on earth in terms of the flow of @@@ HISTORY as God in eternity past “*bent*” human history around all positive [+P] volitional choices without violating the general workings of human free will. “*God thunders with His voice wondrously, doing great things which we cannot comprehend*” [Job 37:5]; Ps. 147:5; 1 Jn. 3:19-20; Rom. 8:28; 12:2. This bending occurs: (1) for the unBeliever on positive [+P] volition who signals a desire for the Gospel of @@@ SALVATION; and (2) for the Winner Believer on positive [+P] volition who signals a desire to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY.



- (6) **For the Believer.** The Plan of God for the Believer is divided into three phases.

**PHASE I – Salvation.** Phase I is the entrance point of the Believer into the Family of God. In eternity past God the Father developed the @@@ GRACE Plan to save mankind, God the Son executed the Plan by going to the @@@ CROSS, and God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT spreads the Plan to all those on positive [+P] volition. See Jn. 4:34; 5:17; 16:8-11; Acts 2:23; 1 Pet. 2:24. Rev. 20:10; Rom. 5:8, 12, 18; Heb. 10:7.

#### JOHN 4:34

Jesus said to them, “My food is to do the will of Him [God the Father] who sent Me and to accomplish [*teleioo* (to complete)] His work [*ergon* – in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD, Christ would go to the @@@ CROSS].”

#### ACTS 2:23

This *Man* [Jesus Christ], delivered over [*ekdotos* (given over to enemies)] by the predetermined [*horizo* (to mark out the boundaries)] plan [*boule* (to purpose)] and foreknowledge [*prognosis*] of God [the @@@ PLAN OF GOD], you [the religious Jewish leadership desired to murder Christ] nailed to a cross [*stauros*] by the hands of godless men [*anomos* (unlawful wicked) – unBeliever Romans] and put *Him* to death [*anaireo* (death by murder)].

#### 1 PETER 2:24

And He Himself [Jesus Christ] bore [*anaaphero* (to carry; to lift up one's self)] our sins [*hamartia*] in His body [*soma* – @@@ SIN bearing took place in the humanity of Jesus] on the cross [*xulon* (that which is made of wood) – Christ suffered spiritual @@@ DEATH while on the @@@ CROSS], so that we [all Believers] might die to [*apogenomenos* (to be removed from)] sin [*hamartia* – the influence of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE is broken] and live to righteousness [*dikaiosune* – the positive [+P] volition Believer living inside the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE]; for by His wounds [*molops* (wound that trickles with blood) – the substitutionary spiritual death of Jesus Christ which occurred while He was still alive on the cross] you were healed [*iaomai* (to cure; to bring about salvation) – @@@ SALVATION was provided].

**PHASE II – Time on Earth.** Phase II of the Plan of God covers the lifetime of the Believer on the earth in his mortal body. The mission of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT is to get @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE, “*the mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16], to every Believer on positive [+P] volition so that they can reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY Winner status, receive @@@ REWARDS, and be entered as a subject matter expert witness exhibit in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT – Neh. 9:30; Phil. 1:21; 1 Cor. 2:16.

## PHILIPPIANS 1:21

For to me [Paul], to live [*zao – in this physical body on earth*] is Christ and to die [*apothnesko (natural death of a man) – physical @@@ DEATH*] is gain [*kerdos (advantage) – the @@@ REWARDS Paul will receive along with his @@@ RESURRECTION body*].

**PHASE III – Eternity.** Phase III of the Plan of God covers the Believer in @@@ HEAVEN in a @@@ RESURRECTION body where he will live forever and ever. Phase III is executed by the Father – 1 Cor. 2:9; Ps. 23:5-6; 2 Tim. 4:18; 1 Thess. 4:17; 1 Pet. 1:4; Rev. 21:4, Jn. 14:1-3.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 2:9

But just as it is written, “Things which eye has not seen and ear has not heard, and *which* have not entered the heart of man, all that God has prepared [*hetoimazo (to make ready beforehand) – the fantastic @@@ REWARDS placed in an Escrow Account in eternity past are beyond human comprehension*] for those who love [*agapao (to love dearly) – only the positive [+P] volition Believer at spiritual @@@ MATURITY can @@@ LOVE God*] Him.”

## PSALM 23:5-6

You [God] prepare a table before me [King David] in the presence of my enemies; You have anointed my head with oil; my cup [*kos*] overflows [*with @@@ REWARDS in @@@ TIME and eternity*]. Surely goodness and lovingkindness [*chesed (mercy) – @@@ GRACE in action*] will follow [*radaph (to pursue; to run after)*] me all the days of my life, and I will dwell in the house [*bayith (home; house containing a family)*] of the LORD forever [*@@@ ETERNAL SECURITY in @@@ HEAVEN*].

– GOD’S DIVINE DECREES –

- (1) **Definition.** Designed and ordained in eternity past, God’s Divine Decrees refer to the unfolding of His total “Plan of God” for mankind where every person’s thoughts, motives, actions, and decisions were read by God but not altered. R. B. Thieme, Jr.: “[God’s] *Decrees are all comprehensive, interwoven, eternal, perfect, unchangeable, and certain; comprehending simultaneously all things that ever were or will be in their causes, conditions, successions, and relations.*” God is not gaining in knowledge [Deut. 33:27]. Therefore, because He is Perfect [Matt. 5:48] and Immutable [Mal. 3:6] His essence ensures that all things are “unchangeable and certain” [Num. 23:19].
- (2) **Omniscience of God.** The Plan of God starts at His Omniscience, since God knows all possibilities and never gains in knowledge [Heb. 13:8]. His Divine Decrees then allow for what is certain to come into existence while simultaneously factoring in Predestination and Election actions for all those positive [+P] volition humans who desire @@@ SALVATION and also those Believers who desire to press on to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY.
- (3) **Free Will.** Destroying human negative [-N] volition would also destroy human positive [+P] volition. Thus, God’s Divine Decrees do not forcefully direct human free will one way or the other. As human free will so chooses, so God decrees to exist – Acts 15:18; 17:26-27. Again, God knew in eternity past who would believe in Christ – “*who have been chosen by God*” [Col. 3:12]. “*He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world*” [Eph. 1:4]. “*You did not choose Me, but I chose you*” [Jn. 15:16]; Heb. 4:13; Matt. 6:8; Isa. 46:9-10; 2 Thess. 2:13; 1 Pet. 1:1-2; 1 Cor. 1:2; Ps. 139:1-4, 16; Ezk. 18:4.

### PSALM 139:16

Your eyes have seen my unformed substance [*golem (embryo; fetus)*]; and in Your book [*Divine Decrees in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD*] were all written the days that were ordained *for me*, when as yet there was not one of them [*God knew all about each human billions and billions of years ago*].

### HEBREWS 4:13

And there is no creature hidden from His [*God*] sight [*enopion*], but all things are open and laid bare to the eyes of Him with whom we have to do.

## EZEKIEL 18:4

Behold, all souls [*nephesh* (the human soul)] are Mine [God]; the soul of the father as well as the soul of the son is Mine. The soul who sins will die [*muth*].

- (4) **Causes and Permits.** It is necessary to distinguish between what God causes, e.g., the @@@ CROSS [Acts 2:23], and what God permits, e.g., @@@ SIN. Man has free will with its [+P] and [-N] choices which is a “shadow” image [*tselem*] of God’s Sovereignty [Gen. 5:1]. Thus, since humans are sovereign creatures who possess free will, the choice for negative [-N] volition as a real option of determination must exist. Accordingly, since God always knew in eternity past what *would* happen if humans were created, as well as what *could* happen, God Decreed that what *would happen* would come into reality, and what *could happen* would not come into reality. God Decreed for people:
- (a) **Freedom.** The agent [man] shall be a free agent. All acts shall be perfectly free and spontaneous on the part of the person.
  - (b) **Choices.** All antecedents shall be what they shall be.

## MARK 6:6

And He [Jesus from His humanity] wondered [*thaumazo* (to be astonished; to wonder) – what person would reject God’s free @@@ GRACE gift of @@@ SALVATION?] at their unbelief [*apistia* (unbelief) – these unBeliever Jews rejected the Gospel]. And He was going around the villages teaching [Jesus Christ taught the Gospel and @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE].

- (c) **Reality.** All present conditions of the act by each person shall be.
- (d) **Occur.** All acts shall be certainly future and come into existence.
- (e) **Divine Will Coexists** – Jn. 7:17; Mk. 6:6; Eph. 2:10; 2 Thess. 2:13.

## EPHESIANS 2:10

For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God prepared beforehand [*proetoimazo* (to prepare before) – God’s provisions to bless Believers with @@@ REWARDS] so that we would walk in them.



- (5) **Computer Analogy.** God's Divine Decrees refer to the Plan of God in design and action for the Believer – 1 Pet. 2:3. The computer analogy:
- (a) **ROM.** A ROM chip is programmed by the Sovereignty of God and is unchangeable data. This is proof that God desires the best for all Believers – Foreknowledge, Election, Predestination, and Escrow.
  - (b) **PROM.** A PROM chip is programmed by the Omniscience of God who knew every thought, motive, and action that each Believer would do. God only acknowledges what is certain and allows such to occur.

## 2 THESSALONIANS 2:13

But we [Paul and his traveling seminary team] should always give thanks to God for you, brethren beloved by the LORD, because God has chosen [aihreomai (to take for oneself)] you from the beginning [arche – God knew who would accept the offer of @@@ SALVATION] for salvation [soteria (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN] through sanctification by the [Holy] Spirit and faith [pistis – saving @@@ FAITH] in the truth.

- (6) **Three Major Elections.** Under His Perfect timing, God's Sovereign Will made three major elections that would take place in @@@ HISTORY – (1) the creation of Israel; (2) Jesus Christ; and (3) the Church.
- (a) **Israel.** As a Client Nation @@@ PIVOT – Rom. 9:1-10; 45:4; Ps. 117. To be the repository for the growing @@@ BIBLE, the line of the Messiah, and to perform evangelism to the @@@ WORLD.
  - (b) **Jesus Christ.** The Messiah Jesus Christ would come into the @@@ WORLD precisely “at the proper time” [1 Tim. 2:6]. “Behold, I have come” [Heb. 10:5-7]; Isa. 42:1; Acts 2:23; 1 Pet. 2:4, 6; Jn. 15:16.

## ACTS 2:23

This Man [Jesus of Nazareth], delivered over by the predetermined [horizo (to determine; appoint)] plan and foreknowledge [prognosis (prearrangement; foreknowledge)] of God, you [the religious Jewish leaders] nailed to a cross by the hands of godless [anomos (destitute of the Mosaic law) – the Romans] men and put Him to death [anaireo (to lift up from the ground; to slay a man)].

- (c) **The Church.** The @@@ MYSTERY of the Church Age – Eph. 1:4; 1 Thess. 1:4; 2 Thess. 2:13; 2 Tim. 1:9; 2:10; Tit. 1:1; 2 Pet. 1:2-4.
- (7) **Election and Predestination.** Since God's Directive Will is for every human to be saved and for every Believer to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY and receive his Escrow @@@ REWARDS [few Believers take advantage] God provided the following things under Predestination and Election.
- (a) **Salvation.** The Election in Jesus Christ that all humans on positive [+P] volition would be saved and then the action of Predestination in time for the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT to get them the Gospel – Jn. 1:9; 18:24; Rom. 8:28-30; 9:19-23; 10:13; Eph. 1:5, 11; 1 Tim. 2:3-4; 4:10; Heb. 2:9; 1 Jn. 2:2; 2 Pet. 3:9; Col. 1:23. Election is fulfilled at @@@ SALVATION but is a past, present, and future fact – Col. 3:12; Jn. 15:16; 2 Tim. 1:9; 1 Cor. 1:9; 2 Pet. 1:3; Rev. 13:8; 17:8.

## COLOSSIANS 3:12

So, as those [Believers] who have been chosen [*eklektos* (picked out)] of God, holy [*hagios* (set apart for blessing)] and beloved [*agapao* (to love dearly)], put on a heart of compassion [*oiktirmos* (mercy) – @@@ GRACE in action results in the fruits of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT], kindness [*chrestotes* (integrity)], humility [*tapeinophrosune* (having a humble opinion of one's self)], gentleness [*prautes* (mildness of disposition)] and patience [*makrothumia*].

- (b) **Maturity.** Equal Opportunity and Equal Privilege. God provides equal opportunity and equal privilege for all Believers to reach @@@ MATURITY – Matt. 6:23, 28-33; 7:7-8; Ps. 139:1-16; Gal. 3:28; 2 Cor. 6:11-12; Lam. 3:21-25; Prov. 8:17; Heb. 11:6; Job 5:19-21.

## MATTHEW 6:28-30

And why are you [Believer] worried about clothing? Observe how the lilies of the field grow; they do not toil nor do they spin, yet I say to you that not even Solomon in all his glory clothed himself like one of these. But if God so clothes the grass of the field, which is *alive* today and tomorrow is thrown into the furnace, *will He* not much more *clothe* you? You of little faith [*pistis* – Believer with no @@@ FAITH/Rest in God to provide support]!

## MATTHEW 7:7-8

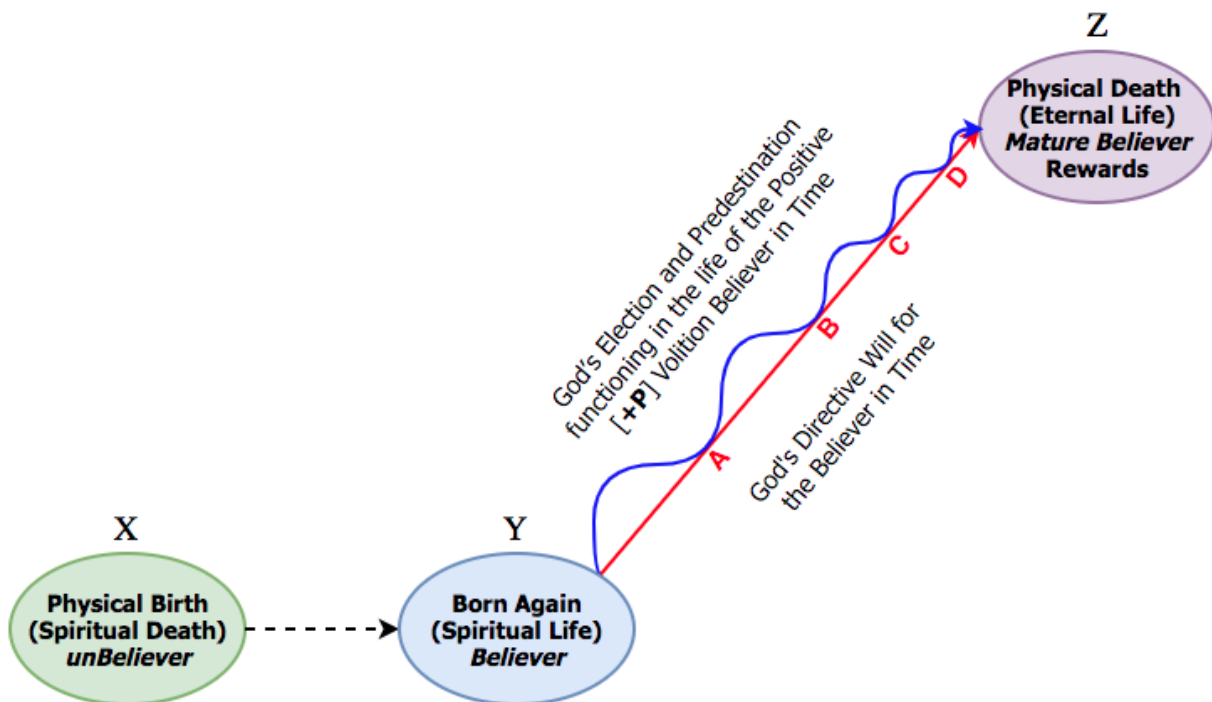
Ask, and it will be given to you; seek, and you will find; knock, and it will be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives, and he who seeks finds, and to him who knocks it will be opened [God in @@@ GRACE provides the opportunity for @@@ SALVATION to all humans and the opportunity to reach @@@ MATURITY to all Believers].

- (c) **Rejection.** The truth of God's Election and Predestination are rejected by those on negative [-N] volition who object to the idea that they are dependent on God – they want to think that they are unrelated to God. When people reject Election, Predestination, or the Providence of God they are also rejecting the very attributes of God [God created free will]. They blindly fail to understand that because God knows what they will do in the future does not mean that He makes them do those subsequent actions. See @@@ TRINITY; @@@ AUTHORITY.
- (8) **Lapsarianism.** Lapsarianism refers to the various theological viewpoints regarding the major components of the Divine Decrees.
  - (a) **Supralapsarianism or Calvinism** [false]: (1) Decree to create man; (2) Decree to permit the Fall; (3) Decree to elect some to be saved; (4) Decree to provide limited atonement for the elect only [the Believer but not the unBeliever]. Points (3) and (4) are false.
  - (b) **Armenianism** [false]: (1) Decree to create man; (2) Decree to permit the Fall; (3) Decree to provide unlimited atonement; and (4) Decree to provide salvation by human good works. Point (4) is false.
  - (c) **Infralapsarianism** [true]: (1) Decree to create mankind [man had to be created as a perfect volitional being and then permitted to use his free will which inevitably resulted in the Fall] – Jn. 15:19; Rom. 11:5-7; Eph. 1:4; (2) Decree to permit the Fall; (3) Decree to provide @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT; (4) Decree for Election and Predestination of Believers; and (5) Decree to save the elect [Believers] through @@@ FAITH in Christ.
  - (d) **Thieme Lapsarianism** [expanded Infralapsarianism] [true]. See *Thieme's Bible Doctrine Dictionary* (2022):

1. Decree to create mankind as a free agent in order to resolve the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT and to share God's @@@ HAPPINESS – “*to bring many sons into glory*” [Heb. 2:10].
  2. Decree “to permit man to fall through the function of his own self-determination, a fall that resulted in spiritual death and condemnation from God.”
  3. Decree “to provide the means of eternal salvation for the fallen – all mankind – through Christ. Unlimited Atonement.
  4. Decree “to leave the reprobate (those who reject Christ and remain in spiritual death) in their just condemnation.”
  5. Decree to provide Election and Predestination for Believers and deposit Escrow Account Blessings for all Believers [Eph. 1:3; 1 Pet. 1:3-4; Rom. 8:28-30] but to grant full @@@ REWARDS for those Believers who reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY.
  6. Decree to save the elect [Believers] by @@@ FAITH in Christ.
- (9) **For Mature Believers Only.** The oft cited promise in Rom. 8:28, “*that God causes all things to work together for good to those who love God*,” does not apply to the vast majority of Believers. The complete context for the proposition in Rom. 8:28, makes it abundantly clear that the verse refers only to the *mature* Believer. Only the mature Believer is capable of “loving God” which is the key element of the promise in the sentence. See Js. 2:5; Ps. 37:23.
- (a) **Loser Believer.** Although God provided equal opportunity for all Believers to take advantage of His @@@ GRACE to get them to maturity, the **Loser** Believer stays in the Cosmic Systems and reaps only Divine Discipline. All things do not work together for his “*good*.”
  - (b) **Winner Believer.** Only the positive [+P] volition **Winner** Believer who consistently stays in the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE and takes in Bible Doctrine will benefit from God's Predestination input to cause “*all things to work together for good*” [Rom. 8:28-30], i.e., God made provisions in eternity past to ensure that this Believer gets to spiritual maturity regardless of his adversities or failures along the way.

## ROMANS 8:28-30

And we [Paul and all mature Believers] know that God causes all things to work together for good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] to those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] God [only the positive [+P] volition Believer at @@@ MATURITY can @@@ LOVE God], to those who are called [*kletos* (called; invited to a banquet)] according to *His* purpose [*prosthesis* (a predetermined plan)]. For those whom He foreknew [*proginosko* (to have knowledge beforehand) – the humans that would believe in Christ], He also predestined [*proorizo* (to decide beforehand) – God made provisions in @@@ TIME to get the Winner Believer to maturity] to become conformed [*summorphos* (having the same form as another)] to the image of His Son, so that He would be the firstborn [@@@ RESURRECTION] among many brethren [*adelphos* (brothers)]; and these whom He predestined [*proorizo*], He also called [*kaleo* (to call aloud; to invite)]; and these whom He called, He also justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – by receiving God's Righteousness [+R]]; and these whom He justified, He also glorified [*doxazo* (to honor) – by the giving of @@@ REWARDS].



– Tracking The Positive [+P] Volition **Winner** Believer –

## @@@ POVERTY

- (1) **Definition.** The state of either financial or spiritual poverty, both of which exist in the human race. *See @@@ MONEY.*
- (2) **Gospel Trumps Poverty.** What those in a state of spiritual or financial poverty need most is the Gospel of @@@ SALVATION! In fact, all humans start out “**spiritually poor**” – born into Satan’s @@@ WORLD, without a human spirit, and without God’s Righteousness [+R]. @@@ FAITH in Christ makes them “*rich*” [Rev. 3:18]; 2 Cor. 8:9; Js. 2:5; Matt. 5:3. In many cases the impoverished often see clearly the need for @@@ SALVATION and respond to the Gospel with great relief and joy – Ps. 72:12-14; Matt. 11:5.

## MATTHEW 5:3

Blessed [*makarios* (happiness’s)] are the poor [*ptochos* (destitute of)] in spirit [*pneuma* – the unBeliever has no human spirit and is in a state of total spiritual @@@ POVERTY in terms of @@@ SALVATION], for theirs [because of spiritually dead mankind Jesus Christ died to provide @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT] is the kingdom of heaven.

## JAMES 2:5

Listen, my beloved brethren [*adelphos* (brother)]: did not God choose the poor [*ptochos* – the spiritually poor are the unBelievers in need of @@@ SALVATION] of this world *to be* rich [*plousios* (abounding rich) – the status of the Believer] in faith [*pistis* – by means of @@@ FAITH in Jesus Christ] and heirs of the kingdom [fantastic @@@ REWARDS] which He promised to those who love [*agapao* (to dearly love) – the Believer who reaches spiritual @@@ MATURITY] Him?

- (3) **Financial Poverty Exists.** Until the 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ and the Millennium there will always be financial poverty in the human race – Matt. 26:11; Jn. 12:8. *See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.*

## MATTHEW 26:11

For you always have the poor [*ptochos*] with you; but you do not always have Me [Christ].



- (4) **Abusing the Poor.** There is a special curse for those who take advantage of the poor – Prov. 21:13; 22:16, 22; 28:3. See Jn. 12:5-6 [Judas Iscariot pretended to care for the poor, but only sought to steal @@@ MONEY].

### PROVERBS 21:13

He who shuts his ear to the cry of the poor [*dal (helpless; poor)*] will also cry himself and not be answered [*Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING*].

- (5) **Helping the Poor.** God can raise the poor out of financial poverty – Ps. 113:7; 1 Sam. 2:8; Prov. 10:22. There is a special joy and rewards for those who help the impoverished – Ps. 41:1-2; Prov. 19:17; 22:9; 29:14; Matt. 6:2-4.

### PROVERBS 19:17

One who is gracious [*chanan (to direct favor to)*] to a poor man lends [*lavah*] to the LORD, and He will repay him for his good deed [*all humans receive measures of neutral @@@ HAPPINESS from fulfilling the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS and the Winner Believer is rewarded for charity*].

- (6) **No Welfare State.** The extensive Hebrew tax system took an additional 10% tax from the people's produce "*at the end of every third year*" [Deut. 14:28] in order to help the impoverished in the nation. It was not a yearly welfare program as the expectation was that humans should work for a living and not live off the State or others that do work for a living – Prov. 20:4.

### PROVERBS 20:4

The sluggard does not plow after the autumn, so he begs during the harvest and has nothing.

- (7) **Charity.** Charity is commanded for the Believer – Prov. 14:30-31; 19:17; 31:20; Matt. 6:2-4. Socialism is not commanded for the Believer – Gal. 2:10; 2 Thess. 3:10-12. Believers are to "get a job" and not sponge off others!
- (8) **Negative Volition.** In many cases poverty is a disease of negative [-N] volition to @@@ AUTHORITY and inevitably increases when the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS are ignored – Prov. 20:4; 30:15.
-

## @@@ PRAYER

- (1) **Definition.** Prayer is the privilege and responsibility of all Believer/Priests – Ps. 116:1-2; 1 Thess. 5:17; Matt. 6:5-9. When used properly it is a powerful weapon, but it is not one of the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES.
- (2) **Approach to Prayer.** Prayer is a tool for Believers only – Jn. 15:7; Matt. 21:22; Mk. 11:24. Approach to proper prayer requires the following.
  - (a) **Prayer is Addressed to God the Father** – “*Pray, then, in this way: ‘Our Father who is in heaven’*” [Matt. 6:9]; Eph. 1:17; 3:14; 1 Pet. 1:17. God the Father is the author of the @@@ PLAN OF GOD. Dead Believers cannot hear prayer or answer prayer – @@@ DEATH.

## EPHESIANS 3:14

For this reason I [**Paul**] bow my knees before the Father [*pater*].

- (b) **Prayer is Made in the Name of the Son** – Jn. 14:13-14; Eph. 5:20; Col. 3:17. The Believer is accepted because of the work of Jesus Christ on the @@@ CROSS – Eph. 2:13, 18; Rom. 5:2.

## EPHESIANS 5:20

Always giving thanks [*eucharisteo (to be grateful)*] for all things in the name [*onoma*] of our LORD Jesus Christ to God, even the Father [*pater*].

- (c) **Filled With the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT** – Eph. 6:18; Jude 20; Rom. 8:16, 26. Pray when in Fellowship. See @@@ REBOUND.

## EPHESIANS 6:18

With all prayer [*proseuche (prayer addressed to God)*] and petition [*deesis (need)*] pray at all times in [**Fellowship of**] the [**Holy**] Spirit, and with this in view, be on the alert with all perseverance [*proskarteresis*] and petition for all the saints [*hagios (set apart ones) – all Believers are saints*].

- (d) **Public Prayer is Short** – Matt. 6:6-7. **KISS** [keep it simple stupid]. On the other hand, private prayer can be as long as the Believer desires.

## MATTHEW 6:6-8

But you [**Believer**], when you pray [*proseuchomai*], go into your inner room, close your door and pray to your Father [*pater* – all @@@ **PRAYER** is addressed to God the Father] who is in secret, and your Father who sees *what is done* in secret will reward you. And when you are praying, do not use meaningless repetition [*battologeo* (to repeat the same things over and over)] as the Gentiles do [*ethnikos* – a key component of @@@ **RELIGION**], for they suppose that they will be heard for their many words. So do not pray like them; for your Father knows what you need before you ask Him.

(3) **Three Sources.** God the Father receives prayer from three sources.

(a) **Jesus' Intercession.** The LORD Jesus Christ makes intercession for Believers – Heb. 7:25. See @@@ **ANGELIC CONFLICT**.

## HEBREWS 7:25

Therefore He [**Jesus Christ**] is able also to save [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of @@@ **HEAVEN**] forever those who draw near [*proserchomai* (to come to)] to God through Him, since He always lives to make intercession [*entugchano* – by @@@ **PRAYER**] for them [**Believers**].

(b) **From Believers.** See Matt. 6:9; Ps. 116:1-2.

## MATTHEW 6:9

Pray [*proseuchomai*], then, in this way: Our Father [*pater* – all @@@ **PRAYER** is addressed to God the Father] who is in heaven [*ouranos*], hallowed [*hagiazo* (to separate from profane things)] be Your name [*onoma*].

## PSALM 116:1-2

I [**the Believer**] love [*ahab*] the LORD, because He hears my voice *and* my supplications [*tachanun* (earnest prayer)]. Because He has inclined His ear to me, therefore I shall call *upon Him* as long as I live.

(c) **Holy Spirit's Intercession.** God the @@@ **HOLY SPIRIT** makes intercession for Believers – Rom. 8:26-27.

## ROMANS 8:26-27

In the same way the [Holy] Spirit also helps our [the Believer] weakness [*astheneia* (want of strength)]; for we do not know [*heneka* (on account of)] how to pray [*proseuchomai*] as we should, but the [Holy] Spirit Himself intercedes [*huperentugchano*] for *us* with groanings too deep for words; and He who searches the hearts [*kardia*] knows what the mind of the [Holy] Spirit is, because He intercedes for the saints according to *the will of God*.

## (4) Categories of Prayer.

- (a) @@@ THANKSGIVING. This comes from the Believer's grace orientation to life and grows with @@@ MATURITY – 1 Thess. 5:18; Eph. 5:20; Rom. 8:28; Ps. 150:1-6. “*Rejoicing in hope, persevering in tribulation* (testing for Blessing), *devoted to prayer*” [Rom. 12:12].

## 1 THESSALONIANS 5:18

In everything give thanks [*eucharisteo* (to be grateful) – to include Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing]; for this is God's will [*thelema*] for you in Christ Jesus [reach @@@ MATURITY and receive @@@ REWARDS].

- (b) Intercession Prayer. “*The effective prayer of a righteous man can accomplish much*” [Js. 5:16-18]; Eph. 6:18; Rom. 10:1; Js. 5:16-18. For Peter in jail, “*prayer for him was being made*” [Acts 12:5].
- (c) Petition for Personal Needs. The longer the Believer's list of requests for self indicates lack of @@@ MATURITY. See Heb. 4:16.

## HEBREWS 4:16

Therefore let us [Believer] draw near with confidence [*parrhesia* (frankness)] to the throne of grace, so that we may receive mercy [*eleos* – @@@ GRACE in action] and find grace to help in time of need [@@@ SUFFERING].

## (5) Why Prayer Not Answered.

- (a) Unconfessed Sin. Believer must “*pray at all times in the Spirit*” [Eph. 6:18] via @@@ REBOUND; Prov. 6:18; Ps. 66:18-20; Job 35:12-13.

**JOB 35:12-13**

There they cry out, but He does not answer because of the pride of evil men. Surely God will not listen to an empty *cry*, nor will the Almighty regard it.

- (b) **Minimum Doctrine.** There is a lack of Bible Doctrine to orient the Believer to proper topics [Matt. 21:22; 1 Jn. 3:22; 5:13-15; Mk. 11:24; Jn. 15:16-17], e.g., the Believer should not pray for *wisdom* as an immediate result – God provides such via @@@ OPERATION Z.

**MATTHEW 21:22**

And all things you ask in prayer [*proseuche*], believing, you will receive.

- (c) **Prayer for Self-Gratification.** See Js. 4:2-3; Prov. 21:13.

**JAMES 4:3**

You [*the Believer*] ask [*aiteo*] and do not receive [*lambano*], because you ask with wrong motives [*kakos (miserably evil)*], so that you may spend *it* on your pleasures [*hedone (desires)*].

- (d) **Lack of Domestic Tranquility.** See 1 Pet. 3:7.

**1 PETER 3:7**

You husbands [*aner (gentlemen)*] in the same way, live with *your wives* in an understanding way, as with someone weaker, since she is a woman [*gunaikeios (belonging to a woman) – women are wired to be responders to their husbands*]; and show her honor [*time (utmost respect)*] as a fellow heir [*sugkleromomos*] of the grace [*charis*] of life, so that your prayers [*proseuche*] will not be hindered [*egkopto (impede)*].

- (e) **Otherwise Distracted in Prayer.** The Believer is to “*be anxious for nothing*” [Phil. 4:6]; Matt. 7:7-8; 18:19; Jer. 33:3; Isa. 65:24.
- (6) **Special Prayers.**
  - (a) **Sanctification of the Food.** See 1 Tim. 4:4-5.

## 1 TIMOTHY 4:4-5

For everything [*pas* – food to eat] created [*ktizo* (to form)] by God is good [*kalos* (useful; suitable)], and nothing is to be rejected [*apobletos* (thrown away; rejected)] if it [food to be eaten] is received [*lambano* (to take with the hand)] with gratitude [*eucharistia* – @@@ THANKSGIVING]; for it is sanctified [*hagiazō* (to be separated from profane things)] by means of the word of God and prayer [*enteuxis* (a petition) – @@@ PRAYER over food].

- (b) **For Mankind and People in @@@ AUTHORITY.** For example, to challenge leaders about the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS, the Gospel, and @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE. See 1 Tim. 2:1-2.

## 1 TIMOTHY 2:1-2

First of all, then, I [Paul] urge [*parakaleo* (by exhortation)] that entreaties [*deesis*] and prayers [*proseuche*], petitions [*enteuxis* (that for which an interview is held)] and thanksgivings, be made on behalf of all men [the Gospel presented], for kings and all who are in authority [*hyperochē*], so that we [the Believer] may lead a tranquil [*eremos*] and quiet life [living under the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS] in all godliness and dignity [*semnotes*].

- (c) **Widows Commanded to Pray.** See 1 Tim. 5:5.

## 1 TIMOTHY 5:5

Now she who is a widow [*chera*] indeed and who has been left alone, has fixed her hope [*elpizo* (hopefully to trust in)] on God and continues in entreaties [*deesis*] and prayers [*proseuche*] night and day.

- (d) **Pray for Pastor/Teacher.** For example, “*that God will open up to us a door for the word, so that we may speak forth the mystery of Christ*” [Col. 4:2-3]. See 1 Thess. 5:25; 2 Thess. 3:1; Heb. 13:18; 1 Cor. 16:9.

## 1 THESSALONIANS 5:25

Brethren, pray [*proseuchomai*] for us [Paul and his traveling seminary team].

- (e) **Pray for Your Enemies.** See Matt. 5:44.



**MATTHEW 5:44**

But I [Jesus] say to you [His disciples], love [*agapao* – impersonal @@@ LOVE] your enemies [*echthros* (a man that is hostile)] and pray for those who persecute [*dioko*] you.

- (f) **Pray for the Sick.** To “*restore the one who is sick*” [Js. 5:15].
- (g) **Pray for UnBelievers to Receive the Gospel.** See Rom. 10:1-4.

**ROMANS 10:1**

Brethren, my [Paul] heart’s [*kardia*] desire and my prayer [*deesis*] to God for them [the unBeliever] is for *their* salvation [*soteria* (deliverance) – @@@ SALVATION].

- (h) **Maturity.** Pray for Believers, including yourself, to reach spiritual adulthood – Phil. 1:9; Eph. 1:15-23; 3:14-21; Col. 1:9; Prov. 3:1-2.

**PHILIPPIANS 1:9**

And this I [Paul] pray, that your love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE] may abound still more and more in real knowledge [*epignosis* – the Believer reaching @@@ MATURITY] and all discernment [*aesthesis* (perception by the intellect) – to use the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES].

- (7) **Prayer and Free Will.** Prayer is not a system for controlling the lives of others and the Believer cannot pray to violate someone else’s free will. Still, the Believer can pray that God will provide for an @@@ OPEN DOOR for a variety of matters from Gospel hearing to exposure to true teaching.
- (8) **Pray Without Ceasing.** The command to pray “*without ceasing*” [1 Thess. 5:17]; Eph. 6:18, means to be “*devoted to prayer*” [Rom. 12:12] in a habitual fashion, which is tantamount to a command to @@@ REBOUND and stay in Fellowship in order to pray at any given moment in @@@ TIME.

**1 THESSALONIANS 5:17**

Pray [*proseuchomai*] without ceasing [*adialeiptos* (incessantly)].

(9) **Prayer – Petitions and Desires.** Some Biblical examples:

PETITION	DESIRE	
Answered	Not Ans.	1 Sam. 8:5-20 [for a King]; Ps. 106:13-16 [for food].
Not Ans.	Answered	Gen. 17:18 [Abraham's prayer for Ishmael to be his heir]; Gen. 18:23-33 [to save the city of Sodom]; 2 Cor. 12:8 [the thorn in Paul's flesh to be removed].
Answered	Answered	1 Kng. 18:36-37 [prayer for fire]; Jdg. 16:28 [Samson]; Lk. 23:42-43 [the thief on the cross for @@@ SALVATION]; Jn. 11:45 [Lazarus reanimated from the dead].
Not Ans.	Not Ans.	Lam. 3:44 [for God to remove the 5th Cycle of Discipline from Judah].

(10) **Prayer of Christ.** Jesus' prayer to not go to the @@@ CROSS, "*remove this cup from Me*" [Lk. 22:42], was the prayer that could not be answered. God the Father could not deliver Jesus per Ps. 22:1-2, because the Holiness [*qadosh* (sacred; holy) of God [Ps. 22:3] can only condemn @@@ SIN.

## PSALM 22:1-2

My God [**God the Father**], my God [**God the Father**], why have You forsaken [*azab* (to leave; to forsake)] me [**Jesus**]? Far from my deliverance are the words of my groaning. O my God, I cry by day [*yomam* (in the daytime)], but You do not answer; and by night [*layil* (protective shadow) – **Jesus Christ was covered in darkness during the last three hours on the @@@ CROSS**], but I have no rest [*dumiyah* (stillness) – **Jesus would bear all human @@@ SIN**].

- (11) **Prayer Always Answered.** Prayers offered according to the Will of God are always answered – 1 Jn. 5:14-15. Thus, @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing is for His glory and His timing is perfect. Jesus passed the tests in the “garden” of Gethsemane [Adam failed in Eden’s Garden] – Lk. 22:42; Jn. 12:27-28.

### LUKE 22:42

Saying, “Father, [*pater* – Jesus speaking from His humanity] if You are willing [*boulomai* (to will deliberately)], remove this cup [*poterion* – @@@ CUP containing the @@@ SIN of all mankind] from Me; yet not My will, but Yours be done [the @@@ PLAN OF GOD for @@@ SALVATION].”

### 1 JOHN 5:14-15

This is the confidence which we have before Him [*God*], that, if we ask anything according to His will [*thelema* – @@@ PLAN OF GOD], He hears [*akouo*] us. And if we know that He hears us *in* whatever we ask, we know that we have the requests [*aitema* (*petition*)] which we have asked from Him.

- (12) **Answered in Eternity.** God has already answered all prayer in eternity past. The **Winner** Believer does not know what the future will hold, but he knows who holds the future! Thus, the effectiveness of prayer is with the Believer who understands the @@@ PLAN OF GOD and offers proper prayers therein – Heb. 4:16; Jn. 15:7; 1 Jn. 3:22. *See* Isa. 65:24; Jer. 29:11-13.

### ISAIAH 65:24

It will also come to pass that before they [the positive [+P] volition Believer] call, I [*God*] will answer; and while they are still speaking, I will hear.

### JEREMIAH 29:11-13

“For I know the plans that I have for you [*Believers*],” declares the LORD, “plans for welfare [*God’s Directive Will is to advance the Believer to @@@ MATURITY*] and not for calamity to give you a future and a hope [*@@@ REWARDS*]. Then you will call upon Me and come and pray to Me, and I will listen to you. You will seek Me and find *Me* when you search for Me with all your heart [the positive [+P] volition Believer].”

---

## @@@ PRIVACY &amp; JUDGING

- (1) **Definition.** Because every Believer in the Church Age is a Royal Priest and represents himself before the LORD [1 Pet. 2:5, 9; *cf.* Col. 3:17] he is accountable to the LORD only [Rom. 2:1; 14:4] and entitled to his personal privacy per the Law of Liberty in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE. However, he must also respect the privacy of others – “*what is that to you?*” [Jn. 21:21-22] – so that he does not *sit in judgment* of them.

## ROMANS 14:4

Who are you [*a fellow Believer*] to judge [*krino* (to be of opinion; to decide mentally or judicially) – to “sit in judgment over”] the servant [*oiketes* (a domestic servant)] of another? To his own master [*God is the master*] he stands or falls; and he will stand [*histemi*], for the LORD is able to make him stand [*God does not need anyone’s help to handle the Believer*].

- (2) **Sitting in Judgment.** Violation of another’s privacy leads to the @@@ SIN of “sitting in judgment” – “*For who regards you as superior? What do you have that you did not receive (from God)?*” [1 Cor. 4:7]; Matt. 7:1-3; Rom. 14:10-11; 2 Cor. 5:10. Note: Making observations or assessments about things and people in life is normal and legitimate, *see supra* (9). However, sitting in judgment to condemn or bad mouth another person is not legitimate.

## ROMANS 14:10-11

But you [*a fellow Believer*], why do you judge [*krino*] your brother? Or you again, why do you regard your brother with contempt [*exoutheneo* (to despise)]? For we [*all Believers*] will all stand before the judgment seat of God [*theos*]. For it is written, “As I live, says the LORD [*kurios*], every knee shall bow to Me, and every tongue [*all Believers*] shall give praise to God.”

- (3) **Divine Institutions.** Privacy is an integral part of the proper operation of the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.
- (4) **Live and Let Live.** “Live and let live” is the mental attitude of the mature Believer; not a “*malicious gossip*” [2 Tim. 3:3]; 2 Thess. 3:11-13. *See @@@ MATURITY.* For example, even if you hear gossip which is true, it is none of your \_\_\_\_ business. Do not pass it on – 1 Tim. 5:13; 1 Pet. 4:5.

## 2 THESSALONIANS 3:11

For we [Paul and his traveling seminary team] hear that some among you [Believers] are leading an undisciplined [ataktos (disorderly; out of the ranks)] life, doing no work [ergazomai (to labor)] at all, but acting like busybodies [periergazomai (to bustle about uselessly)].

## 1 TIMOTHY 5:13

At the same time they [judgmental Believers] also learn [manthano (to learn by use and practice)] to be idle [argos (lazy; shunning the labor which one ought to perform)], as they go around from house [oikia – the first Churches were in private homes] to house; and not merely idle, but also gossips [phluaros] and busybodies [periergos (busy about other people's affairs)], talking about things not proper to mention.

- (5) **Personal Views.** The Believer should never impose [unless asked for advice] his personal standards or “good advice” on others per dress, eating, drinking, social relationships, family matters, medical treatments, raising children, etc. – Rom. 14:4-10. Even if the advice is excellent it is none of his business. Again, *live and let live* is the general attitude of the mature Believer who remembers that at some time in life he too did the same things [or worse] that he is now “shocked” about and so loudly condemns. Indeed, all humans have short memories and fall infinitely short of Perfect God. See Eccl. 7:20-22!

## ECCLESIASTES 7:20-22

Indeed, there is not a righteous [tsaddiyq (just; righteous) – human works of righteousness [-r]] man on earth who continually does [Divine] good [tob] and who never sins [chata]. Also, do not take seriously all words which are spoken [the Believer must have a relaxed mental attitude @@@ GRACE orientation to life], so that you will not hear your servant cursing [qalal (to be lightly esteemed; to make despicable)] you [the grace oriented Believer will disregard their loose talk]. For you also have realized [yada (to know)] that you likewise have many times cursed [qalal] others.

- (6) **Guaranteed Suffering.** A Believer who sits in judgment on another human is in for multiplied Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING from the LORD – Matt. 7:1-3; Prov. 6:11-19; 12:13. See @@@ REBOUND; @@@ SIN.

## MATTHEW 7:1-3

Do not judge [*krino*] so that you will not be judged [*krino* – God provides Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING for unconfessed @@@ SIN]. For in the way you judge, you will be judged; and by your standard of measure [*metreo* (to measure out)], it will be measured to you [*the Believer gets a double portion of Divine Discipline*]. Why do you look at the speck [*karphos* (a twig)] that is in your brother's eye, but do not notice the log [*dokos* (a beam of timber)] that is in your own eye?

- (7) **Manifestation of Lust.** Sitting in judgment to condemn manifests itself in gossip and bullying and those who do such things seek to satisfy a deep approbation lust to control others and to place emphasis on their own @@@ EMOTION or experience. Indeed, the person who sits in judgment is simply advertising the misery in their own soul – Prov. 14:21; Eccl. 7:20-22; Matt. 18:21-35. The legalist who claims his so-called opinions are “Biblical” and must be followed actually hates @@@ GRACE – Gal. 4:29; Col. 2:16; Rom. 14:2-4. In short, Believers must control their “*tongues*” [Js. 3:5-6].

## COLOSSIANS 2:16

Therefore no one is to act as your [*the Believer's*] judge [*krino* (to approve) – *the Law of Liberty*] in regard to food or drink or in respect to a festival or a new moon or a Sabbath day.

## JAMES 3:5-6

So also the tongue is a small part of the body, and yet it boasts [*megalaucheo* – this @@@ SIN comes from the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] of great things. See how great a forest is set aflame [*anapto* (to light up a fire)] by such a small fire [*the impact of sins of the tongue*]! And the tongue is a fire, the very world of iniquity; the tongue is set among our members [*the Old Sin Nature*] as that which defiles the entire body, and sets on fire the course [*trochos* (course)] of our life, and is set on fire by hell.

- (8) **Separate.** Believers are commanded to separate themselves from those who regularly sit in judgment of others because both unBelievers and Believers that reject the privacy of others are troublemakers. Indeed, such “friends” will invariably turn on you as well – 1 Cor. 5:11-13. See @@@ SEPARATION.



## 1 CORINTHIANS 5:11-13

But actually, I [Paul] wrote [grapho] to you not to associate [sunanamignumi (to keep company with)] with any so-called [onomazo (to name)] brother [adelphos – a Loser Believer] if he is an immoral person [ pornos (a man who prostitutes his body to another's lust for hire)], or covetous [pleonektes (one eager to have what belongs to another)], or an idolater [eidololatres (a worshipper of false gods)], or a reviler [loidoros (one who causes mischief)], or a drunkard [methusos (one intoxicated)], or a swindler [harpax (an extortioner; a robber)]—not even to eat with such a one. For what have I to do with judging [krino] outsiders? Do you not judge [krino] those who are within the church? But those who are outside [exo], God judges [krino]. Remove the wicked man from among yourselves [@@@ SEPARATION].

## (9) Exceptions to Judging.

- (a) **Protect the Congregation.** The @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER can act to protect the privacy of his congregation.
- (b) **The State.** Under @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS #4, the State can make various legal judgments to enforce criminal or civil law.
- (c) **Bible Doctrine.** Making judgments concerning dogmatic aspects of Scripture, under circumstances that impact the Believer directly.
- (d) **Parent to Child.** As long as the child resides in the home he is under the @@@ AUTHORITY of the parents – Eph. 6:1-4.
- (e) **Letters.** Making specific recommendations of support when asked.

(10) **Curing Violations.** The Believer who sits in judgment of another must:

- (a) @@@ REBOUND – 1 Jn. 1:9; 1 Cor. 11:13.
- (b) **Concentrate on the Word.** Endeavor to mind his own business in the future – 2 Pet. 3:18; Prov. 6:11-19. Recall that although he may be better than another human in terms of morality, all humans are worthless relative to Perfect God. Indeed, if any human got what he deserved he would be incinerated immediately – Lam. 3:20-23.

# LAMENTATIONS 3:20-23 (KJV)

My soul [*nephesh*] hath *them* still in remembrance [*zakar*], and is humbled within me [*the positive [+P] volition Believer*]. This I recall [*shub*] to mind [*@@@ MEMORY of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE*], therefore I have hope [*yachal* (confidence; trust)]. *It is of* the LORD's mercies [*chesed* (mercy)] that we are not consumed [*tamam* (to completely consume to come to an end) – without God's @@@ GRACE in action all humans would be immediately consumed for just cause], because His compassions [*racham*] fail not. *They are* new every morning: great *is* thy [*God's*] faithfulness [*emunah* (fidelity; steadfastness)].

- (c) **Avoid Chain Sinning.** Stop the pattern of “chain sinning” – adding @@@ SIN upon sin – which always revolves around increased levels of gossip and *uber* judging. See 1 Tim. 5:13; Heb. 12:15.

# HEBREWS 12:15

See to it that no one [*Believer*] comes short [*hustereo* (to be left behind in the race)] of the grace [*charis*] of God [*in @@@ REBOUND*]; that no root [*rhiza* (that which springs up)] of bitterness [*pikria* (bitter hatred)] springing up [*phuo* (to swell up) – from the Believer's @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] causes trouble [*enochleo* (to trouble; to disturb)], and by it many be defiled [*miaino* (to pollute) – others engage in @@@ SIN].

- (d) **Relax.** Realize that each Believer has enough to worry about in his own life and it really doesn't matter what others do/think – Rom. 4:14.
- (11) **Repayment.** When the Believer is the object of those who sit in judgment he should “*pray for those who mistreat you*” [Lk. 6:28] and give the matter to the LORD. Let the LORD repay the wrongs and “*never take your own revenge*” [Rom. 12:19]; 1 Pet. 5:7; Ps. 55:22; Deut. 32:35.

# PSALM 55:22

Cast your burden upon the LORD and He will sustain [*kul* (to make provision for)] you; He will never allow the righteous [*tsaddiyq* – the Believer] to be shaken [*mot* (to waver; to be cast out)].

## @@@ PROBLEMS

- (1) **Definition.** Problems arise from the difficulties of life and can emanate from a variety of sources to include self, others, and various environmental circumstances. Problems are also a source of testing for the Believer moving to @@@ MATURITY. Thus, God has provided the Believer with specific @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES. See @@@ SUFFERING.
- (2) **Self.**
  - (a) **The Greatest.** The Believer's worst problem in life is himself, in terms of controlling his negative [-N] volition. Suffering flows from violating the laws of the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS, @@@ SIN, living in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS, and refusing to respond to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE. The solution – Eph. 5:1.

### EPHESIANS 5:1

Therefore be imitators [*mietes* (a follower; imitator)] of God [*theos* – reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY], as beloved children.

- (b) **Arrogance.** The mental attitude sin of arrogance is the gateway to “self” problems. With an unrealistic self-image and preoccupation with self [Prov. 26:12], it has unrealistic expectations from others – Prov. 3:34; 11:2; 16:18; 29:2; Js. 3:14-16; 4:6; 1 Pet. 5:5-6; Rom. 12:3.
- (3) **Fear.** @@@ FEAR is a sin of @@@ EMOTION and equates to a lack of thinking under pressure. It includes worry and anxiety with the result that “*the more things you fear in life, the more things you will fear.*” Knowing and applying @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE overcomes fear – Prov. 23:17.
- (4) **Rejection.** There are many categories of “rejection” in life that flow in both directions, some for legitimate reasons and some not. However, God will never reject the Believer – Heb. 13:5; Matt. 28:20, having rejected Jesus on the @@@ CROSS so that humans on positive [+P] volition could be saved – Ps. 22:1; 27:9; 1 Pet. 2:7, 20-24; Isa. 53:3; Ps. 118:22; Matt. 21:23-27.
  - (a) **Rejection of the Living Word Jesus Christ.** The unBeliever's doom and the Believer's wasted life in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS.

- (b) **Rejection of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.** The **Loser** Believer who turns against the @@@ PLAN OF GOD for his life.
- (c) **People/Social Rejection.** Other humans reject the Believer.
- (d) **Gauge.** The Believer's reaction to rejection by people or society is a direct gauge of his spiritual growth towards @@@ MATURITY. The **Winner** Believer who faces rejection will apply Phil. 4:4 or Js. 1:2-4, and acknowledge God for the challenge/testing. He will not engage in self-pity, revenge, anger, hatred, worry, or go into the Cosmic Systems.

### JAMES 1:2-3

Consider it all joy [*chara* – @@@ HAPPINESS], my brethren, when you encounter various trials [*peirasmos* (testing) – undeserved Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing so the Believer can reach @@@ MATURITY], knowing that the testing [*dokimion* (to prove)] of your faith [*pistis* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] produces endurance [*hupomone* (constancy)].

### PHILIPPIANS 4:4

Rejoice [*chairo*] in the LORD always; again I will say, rejoice [realize that God has a detailed plan to get the individual Believer to @@@ MATURITY]!

- (5) **Death.** All Believers glorify God in their @@@ DEATH. In His Perfect @@@ GRACE God picks the @@@ TIME of death for each Believer.
- (6) **Timing.** For each Believer, God has a specific plan and purpose for their life as part of the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT to glorify the @@@ PLAN OF GOD. Thus, His timing is always absolutely perfect while the Believer's timing is not – Eccl. 3:1; 7:17; 1 Pet. 4:2; 5:6-7.

### 1 PETER 5:6-7

Therefore humble yourselves under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt [*hupsoo* (to promote to the very summit of opulence and prosperity)] you at the proper time [*kairos* (due measure of time) – @@@ FAITH/Rest to wait on the LORD], casting [*epirrhinto* (to throw upon)] all your anxiety [*merimna* (worries)] on Him, because He cares [*melo* (to care about)] for you.

- (a) **Bad Timing.** Living in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS.
- (b) **Luck.** There is no such thing as “luck” for the Believer. God promotes the Believer in His Perfect timing [Heb. 6:10; 1 Pet. 5:5-7]. The wise Believer keeps the big picture in mind and relies on God – Js. 4:13-14.

### JAMES 4:13-14

Come now [*age (come on now)*], you [*the Believer*] who say, “Today or tomorrow we will go to such and such a city, and spend a year there and engage in business and make a profit.” Yet you do not know [*epistamai*] what your life will be like tomorrow. You are *just* a vapor [*atmis*] that appears for a little while [*oligos (almost briefly)*] and then vanishes away [*aphanizo (to snatch out of sight)*] – given the shortness of @@@ LIFE the wise Believer must advance to spiritual @@@ MATURITY with alacrity].\*

\* However, this verse does not apply to the **Winner** Believer on positive [+P] volition – he has fantastic @@@ REWARDS and impact as part of the @@@ PIVOT in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.

- (c) **Buy Back.** The key to lining up with God’s timing is found in complying with the command to purchase the time back that God has given to you by learning Bible Doctrine – Isa. 28:10; Eph. 5:16; Heb. 5:12; 2 Tim. 3:7; Col. 4:5. See @@@ DIVINE GUIDANCE.
- (d) **Wait on the Lord.** The principal of God’s Perfect timing is found with Joseph in prison – Gen. 40:14, 23; 41:1. Joseph, wrongfully jailed, later seized on a human solution to get free instead of continuing with Faith/Rest to: “*Wait for the LORD; be strong and let your heart take courage; yes wait for the LORD*” [Ps. 27:13]. Thus, he had two extra years added to his term. The **Winner** Believer will “*saw the wood in front of him*” – do his duty – and wait on the LORD. See Jer. 17:5.

### JEREMIAH 17:5

Thus says the LORD, “Cursed is the man who trusts [*batach (to have confidence in)*] in mankind [*to solve his @@@ PROBLEMS*] and makes flesh [*human solutions washed in @@@ GOOD*] his strength, and whose heart turns away from the LORD [*negative [-N] volition to God*].”

- (7) **Wealth.** Wealth is necessary for life, but without capacity in the soul to enjoy it wealth can cause great misery. God provides money for all Believers – Ps. 37:25; Phil. 4:9; 2 Pet. 1:3; Prov. 10:22. See @@@ MONEY.

### PSALM 37:25

I [King David] have been young and now I am old, yet I have not seen the righteous [Believers] forsaken or his descendants begging bread [God provides logistical @@@ GRACE support].

- (8) **Fragmentation of Priorities.**

- (a) **Cosmic Systems.** To avoid fragmentation of the life in terms of proper priorities and goals the Believer must avoid @@@ REVERSIONISM and stay out of the traps of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS.
- (b) **Old Sin Nature.** The Believer must recognize the structure of his @@@ OLD SIN NATURE and understand legalism with its trend towards self-righteousness and/or antinomianism with its trend towards licentiousness, i.e. “partying.” In many instances, the legalist “sits in judgment” of the antinomian and the antinomian rejects @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in response when he sees any hypocrisy in the legalist – Js. 3:14-16. Both are illogical in their reasoning and are wrong. In either case, the issue is not what people may do or not do, but learning the truth of the Word of God.

### JAMES 3:14-16

But if you [Believer] have bitter jealousy [*zelos*] and selfish ambition in your heart, do not be arrogant [*katakauchaomai* (to boast against)] and so lie [*pseudomai* (to speak deliberate falsehoods)] against the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]. This wisdom [*sophia* – thinking in terms of human viewpoint] is not that which comes down from above, but is earthly [*epigeios* (existing upon the earth)], natural [*psuchikos* (soulish) – the Believer is thinking like an unBeliever in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], demonic [*daimoniodes*]. For where jealousy and selfish ambition exist, there is disorder [*akatastasia* (confusion; instability)] and every evil [*phaulos* (wicked)] thing.



## @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES

- (1) **Definition.** The provision by God to the Believer of a number of specific @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINES designed to overcome any of the various @@@ PROBLEMS and adversities that are encountered in life and to spur the positive [+P] volition Believer to spiritual @@@ MATURITY.
- (2) **Rebound.** @@@ REBOUND is an essential problem solving device as it puts the Believer in a Fellowship status with God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT in God's @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE and out of the control of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE in Satan's @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS.
- (3) **Filling of the Holy Spirit.** The Filling of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT serves as the key “power source” and enables the Believer to learn @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – “*the power of God*” [2 Tim. 1:8] – and produce Divine Good.
- (4) **Faith/Rest Technique.** The @@@ FAITH/Rest solution sees the Believer claim a promise of Scripture and then “*rest*” or relax, believing the promise as solid fact – 1 Pet. 5:7. For example, if he is wronged the Believer should “*pray for those who mistreat you*” [Lk. 6:28] and put the matter in the LORD's hands who promises to take care of it – Ps. 55:22; Deut. 32:35; Rom. 12:19. Wonderfully put, “*let it go, learn to grow*” is the moto of the mature Believer.

### 1 PETER 5:7

Casting [*epirrhipto (to throw upon)*] all your anxiety [*merimna (worries)*] on Him [God], because He cares [*melo (to care about)*] for you.

### DEUTERONOMY 32:35

Vengeance [*naqam (revenge)*] is Mine [God], and retribution, in due time their foot will slip; for the day of their calamity is near, and the impending things are hastening upon them.

- (a) **New Testament** – 1 Cor. 2:5; 10:13; 13:13; 2 Cor. 5:7; Rom. 8:28, 31-32. The effects of the @@@ FAITH/Rest technique are far greater for the Church Age Believer than for the Old Testament Believer due to the Filling of the Holy Spirit and availability of the @@@ MYSTERY doctrines provided only in the Church Age.

- (b) **Old Testament** – Ps. 37:4-5; 56:3; Prov. 3:5-6; 28:25; 29:25; Heb. 11:6; 13:5; Lk. 12:22-32; Jer. 17:5; Isa. 40:31. @@@ **FAITH/Rest** was the means to @@@ **MATURITY** for all Old Testament Believers.

## HEBREWS 11:6

And without faith [*pistis* – @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** with emphasis on @@@ **FAITH/Rest**] it is impossible [*adunatos* (unable to be done)] to please Him, for he who comes to God must believe [*pisteuo* (to place confidence in)] that He is and *that* He is a rewarder [*misthapodotes* (one who pays wages)] @@@ **REWARDS** to the mature Believer] of those who seek Him [the Believer on positive [+P] volition to God in his @@@ **SOUL & SPIRIT**].

## ISAIAH 40:31

Yet those who wait [*qavah* (to wait; to look for) – @@@ **FAITH/Rest**] for the LORD will gain new strength; they will mount up *with* wings like eagles, they will run and not get tired, they will walk and not become weary.

- (5) **Grace Orientation.** The relaxed mental attitude Believer, who maintains a “live and let live” attitude towards other people [Eccl. 7:20-22], forgives as Christ forgave [Matt. 18:21-35], and orients to life by @@@ **GRACE**.

## ECCLESIASTES 7:20-22

Indeed, there is not a righteous [*tsaddiyq* (just; righteous) – human works of righteousness [-r]] man on earth who *continually* does [Divine] good [*tob*] and who never sins [*chata*]. Also, do not take seriously all words which are spoken [the Believer must have a relaxed mental attitude @@@ **GRACE orientation to life**], so that you will not hear your servant cursing [*qalal* (to be lightly esteemed; to make despicable)] you [the grace oriented Believer will disregard their loose talk]. For you also have realized [*yada* (to know)] that you likewise have many times cursed [*qalal*] others.

- (6) **Hope.** Having absolute confidence in the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD**.
- (a) **Meaning of Hope.** The Greek word *elpis* means (absolute confidence), but is translated into the English as “*hope*.” The parallel Hebrew words are *butach* and *mibtach* – Ps. 71:5; Jer. 17:7; Lam. 3:21-24; Job 4:6.

**JEREMIAH 17:7**

Blessed [*barak*] is the man who trusts [*batach* (to trust in with confidence)] in the LORD and whose trust [*mibtach* (confidence; refuge)] is the LORD.

- (b) **Confidence in Thinking is Based on Information.** The Believer's knowledge of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE equates directly to progressive levels of stronger based Hope [absolute confidence] solutions and inner @@@ HAPPINESS – 1 Pet. 3:15; Heb. 11:1; Rom. 15:4, 13; 1 Thess. 4:13; 2 Cor. 19:15; 1 Cor. 13:13.

**1 PETER 3:15**

But sanctify Christ as LORD in your hearts [*kardia* – thinking in the Believer's @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT], always *being* ready [*hetoimos* (prepare ready)] to make a defense [*agologia* (verbal defense)] to everyone who asks [*aiteo*] you to give an account for the hope [*elpis* (confident expectation) – the particular @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE resident in the Believer's soul and spirit] that is in you, yet with gentleness [*prautes* (mildness of disposition) – use the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES] and reverence [*phobos* (respect)].

- (c) **Advance in Hope.** Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing [testing] advances the levels of Hope in the Believer – Rom. 5:2-5; 12:12.

**ROMANS 5:3-5**

And not only this, but we [Paul and his team] also exult in our tribulations [*thlipsis* (pressure) – Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing], knowing that tribulation [testing] brings about perseverance [*hupomone* (enduring patience)]; and perseverance, proven character [*dokime* (tried character)]; and proven character, hope [*elpis* (confidence) – reaching @@@ MATURITY and receiving @@@ REWARDS]; and hope [*elpis*] does not disappoint, because the love of God has been poured out within our hearts through [*dia* (by means of)] the Holy Spirit who was given to us.

- (d) **Three Stages of Hope.** There are three distinct and progressive stages of Hope. Each stage becomes energized and serves as a powerful problem solving device when the Believer accumulates the necessary amount of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE to activate and utilize them.

1. **Hope I – @@@ SALVATION.** The point in the level of spiritual growth where the Believer has absolute confidence that he has @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY – “*take hold of the hope set before us*” [Heb. 6:18]; “*in hope we have been saved*” [Rom. 8:24]; Tit. 1:2; 3:7; Heb. 7:19; 1 Jn. 5:13.

## TITUS 1:2

In the hope [*elpis (confidence)*] of eternal [*aionios (without ending)*] life [*zoe*], which God, who cannot lie [*pseudomai (to speak deliberate falsehoods)*], promised [*egagello*] long ages ago.

## 1 JOHN 5:13

These things I [*John*] have written to you who believe [*pisteuo – all Believers*] in the name of the Son of God, so that you may know [*heneka (on account of)* – **Hope I of the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES**] that you have eternal [*aionios (without ending)*] life [*zoe*].

2. **Hope II – @@@ MATURITY.** The point where the **Winner** Believer has absolute confidence that he has a significant role to play as a subject matter expert witness exhibit in the ongoing Angelic Conflict – “*My witness, My faithful one*” [Rev. 2:13]; “*so great a cloud of witnesses*” [Heb. 12:1]; Acts 1:8. See Eph. 1:18-19; 2 Cor. 10:15; Col. 1:5-6; Gal. 5:5; Tit. 2:13; Rom. 12:12; Matt. 6:33; Lam. 3:21-24; Acts 23:6; 24:15; 26:6. See *infra* (6) and @@@ REWARDS.

## EPHESIANS 1:18-19

I [*Paul*] pray that the eyes of your heart may be enlightened [*photizo (to give light)* – by learning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], so that you will know what is the hope [*elpis (confident expectation)* – **Hope II**] of His calling, what are the riches of the glory of His inheritance [*kleronomia (property received by inheritance)* – @@@ REWARDS] in the saints, and what is the surpassing greatness of His power toward us who believe [*understanding the full @@@ PLAN OF GOD*]. These are in accordance with the working of the strength of His might [*ischus (ability)* – reaching @@@ MATURITY as a subject matter expert witness exhibit in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT].

3. **Hope III – @@@ REWARDS.** The point where the **Winner** Believer has confidence that eternal Escrow Account Blessings and rewards will be bestowed upon him at the Judgment Seat of Christ to include a @@@ **RESURRECTION** body – “*the hope of glory*” [Col. 1:27]; Tit. 2:13; Heb. 6:18-19; 1 Pet. 1:3-4, 13, 21; Acts 23:6; Rom. 5:4; Phil. 1:20-21.

### 1 PETER 1:13

Therefore, prepare [*anazonnumi* (to grid up)] your [**the Believer**] minds [*dianoia* (the mind as a faculty of understanding)] for action, keep sober *in spirit*, fix your hope [*elpizo* (confident expectation) – **Hope III of the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES**] completely on the grace [*charis* – the @@@ **GRACE** provision of a @@@ **RESURRECTION** body and @@@ **REWARDS**] to be brought to you at the revelation [*apokalupsis* – the @@@ **RAPTURE** followed by the Judgment Seat of Christ] of Jesus Christ.

### PHILIPPIANS 1:20

According to my [**Paul**] earnest expectation and hope [*elpis* (confidence) – **Hope III of the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES**], that I will not be put to shame [*aischunomai* (to dishonor)] in anything, but *that* with all boldness [*parrhesia* (freedom of speaking)], Christ will even now, as always, be exalted [*megaluno* (to make great)] in my body [*soma*], whether by life or by death [*thanatos* (death of the body) – **Paul will receive his @@@ REWARDS**].

- (7) **Personal Sense of Destiny.** The Believer must know a maximum amount of @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** to understand that he is in fact a key participant in the @@@ **ANGELIC CONFLICT**. This *weltanschauung* dominates his life. See Rom. 9:23; Eph. 1:18; 3:8; 3:16; 6:10-17; Col. 2:2; Phil. 4:19.

### ROMANS 9:23

And *He did so* to make known the riches [*ploutos*] of His [**God**] glory [*doxa*] upon vessels [*skeuos*] of mercy [*eleos* – @@@ **GRACE** in action to the **Believer**], which He prepared beforehand [*proetoimazo*] for glory [*doxa* – God is glorified when the Believer reaches spiritual @@@ **MATURITY** in the @@@ **ANGELIC CONFLICT** and receives his @@@ **REWARDS**].

- (8) **Personal Love for God.** Absolute personal *philos* @@@ LOVE for God insulates the **Winner** Believer from arrogance. It concentrates on the character and essence of the Giver [God] and is a direct result of reaching @@@ MATURITY. “*We love, because He first loved us*” [1 Jn. 4:16-21]. “*Blessed is the man who trusts in the LORD*” [Jer. 17:6-8]; Isa. 12:2.

## ISAIAH 12:2

Behold, God is my salvation [*yeshuah* (to deliver) – delivering the Believer into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN], I will trust [*batach*] and not be afraid [*pachad*]; for the LORD God is my strength and song, and He has become my salvation [*yeshuah* (to deliver) – delivering the Believer from @@@ PROBLEMS].

- (9) **Impersonal Love For All.** The technical use of *agape* impersonal @@@ LOVE is the most powerful problem solving device for interacting in the Devil’s @@@ WORLD. The Believer treats others on the basis of @@@ GRACE, never on what they deserve – 1 Cor. 13:13; 1 Jn. 4:20; 1 Pet. 4:8.

I [the subject] love [transitive verb, *agapao*] you [the object].

– Impersonal Love –

## 1 CORINTHIANS 13:13

But now faith [*pistis* – @@@ FAITH/Rest], hope [*elpis* (confident expectation)], love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE], abide [*meno* (remain)] these three [@@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES]; but the greatest of these is love [*agape* – impersonal love is the greatest of the three].

## 1 PETER 4:8

Above all, keep fervent [*ektenes* (intent)] in your love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE] for one another, because love [*agape* – impersonal love is the most powerful tool] covers [*kalupto*] a multitude of sins.



## 1 JOHN 4:20

If someone [a Believer] says, “I love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] God,” and hates [*miseo* (to detest; pursue with hatred)] his brother [*adelphos* – this Believer fails to use *agape* impersonal @@@ LOVE towards his fellow Believer], he is a liar [*pseustes*]; for the one who does not love [*agapao* – maintains an *agape* impersonal love] his brother whom he has seen, cannot love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] God whom he has not seen [only the mature Believer can perform both categories of love – personal and impersonal].

- (10) **Happiness of God.** Sharing the actual @@@ HAPPINESS of God as a mental attitude is activated for the Winner Believer at @@@ MATURITY.
- (11) **Occupation with Christ.** A constant mindset on Jesus Christ – “*fixing our eyes on Jesus, the author and perfecter of faith*” [Heb. 12:2].
  - (a) **Thinking.** This is a command and a motivator allowing the Believer to observe life with all its problems from the Divine viewpoint – Heb. 12:2-3; 1 Pet. 3:15; 2 Cor. 5:14-17. The Believer is expected to think the very thoughts of God and at @@@ MATURITY will do so.
  - (b) **Christ Centered.** Learning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE = Occupation with Christ. The Believer cannot @@@ LOVE Jesus Christ without knowing the full realm of Bible Doctrine which reveals Him – Rom. 8:6; Col. 3:16; Jn. 17:3; 1 Pet. 1:7-8; Phil 2:1-2, 5; 1 Cor. 2:16.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 2:16

For who has known [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] the mind [*nous* (the mind, comprising alike the faculties of perceiving and understanding)] of the LORD [*kurios* (God) – the thinking of Jesus Christ is @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], that he [any given person] will instruct [*sumbibadzo* (to cause to coalesce)] Him [God]? But we [Paul and his traveling seminary] have [*echo* (to have and to hold)] the mind of Christ [these @@@ PASTOR/TEACHERs knew Bible Doctrine and were ready to teach it].

- (c) **Teaching Tool.** R. B. Thieme, Jr., “development stages” teaching tool sets out the Believer’s increasing “occupation with Christ” in his thinking at progressive levels of his growth to @@@ MATURITY.

1. **Spiritual Self Esteem** [SSE] at Gal. 4:19 results in 2 Cor. 5:14. The “*love of Christ*” motivating and encouraging the Believer to continue forward in his @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.
2. **Spiritual Autonomy** [SA] at Eph. 3:17 results in 1 Pet. 3:15. The Believer can now “*sanctify Christ as LORD*” in his heart.
3. **Spiritual Maturity** [SM] at Phil. 1:20 results in Phil. 1:21. For the mature Believer, “*to live is Christ and to die is gain.*”
4. **Super Spiritual Maturity** [SSM] at 2 Tim. 4:7-8.

## 2 TIMOTHY 4:7-8

I [Paul] have fought [*agonizomai* (to enter a contest in the games)] the good [*kalos* (beautiful to look at)] fight [*agon* (the place of contest) – in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT], I have finished the course [*dromos* (the course of life) – Paul had reached the high ground of spiritual @@@ MATURITY], I have kept [*tereo* (to attend to carefully)] the faith [*pistis* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]; in the future there is laid up for me the crown [*stephanos* (a wreath of garland given as a prize to victors in public games)] of righteousness [*dikaiosisune*], which the LORD, the righteous Judge, will award [*apodidomi* (to deliver)] to me on that day [Paul’s @@@ REWARDS at the Judgment Seat of Christ]; and not only to me, but also to all who have loved [*agapao* (to love dearly)] His appearing [all Believers who reach spiritual maturity].

- (d) **Laser Beam.** At undeserved Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing the **Winner** Believer will equate living with dying [Phil. 1:21]. Because his number one priority of Bible Doctrine demands his maximum concentration [Matt. 6:33; Ps. 119:105, 127-128; 2 Tim. 2:1], he will organize his life around that priority [Ps. 119:15-16] which results in his consistent occupation with Jesus Christ [Ps. 119:33-40].

## PHILIPPIANS 1:21

For to me [Paul], to live [*zao* – in this physical body on earth] is Christ and to die [*apothnesko* (natural death of a man) – physical @@@ DEATH] is gain [*kerdos* (advantage) – the @@@ REWARDS Paul will receive along with his @@@ RESURRECTION body].

- (12) **Humanity of Christ.** Jesus used the problem solving devices during His incarnation. The Scripture lists three used by Christ on the @@@ CROSS.
- (a) @@@ FAITH/Rest – “*He uttered no threats, but kept entrusting Himself to Him who judges righteously*” [1 Pet. 2:23].
  - (b) Filling of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT – “*through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without blemish to God*” [Heb. 9:12-16].
  - (c) Sharing the @@@ HAPPINESS of God – “*who for the joy set before Him endured the cross*” [Heb. 12:2].
- (13) **A Study in Failure.** The failure of the followers of Jesus to use problem solving devices during a storm on the Sea of Galilee – Matt. 8:18-27.
- (a) After Jesus Christ had performed many @@@ MIRACLES the “disciples” [more than just the 12] were greatly impressed with His miracles, but not with His @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE teaching.
  - (b) Some disciples got in the boat on the Sea of Galilee to follow Him, others did not.
  - (c) When the “testing” of the raging storm came on the Sea of Galilee, there was no leader in the boat to remind them of the pertinent problem solving devices and no relaxed mental attitude in the group. Instead of enjoying the fantastic spectacle of nature all eyes were fixed on the problem of drowning and not the solution – Jesus of Nazareth is God! Tragically, no one on the boat could think under the pressure because of @@@ FEAR and all flunked the opportunity to apply problem solving devices and grow towards spiritual @@@ MATURITY.
  - (d) Jesus literally shouted at them in Matt. 8:26, because they had failed to apply any of the problem solving devices.

### MATTHEW 8:26

Why are you afraid, you men [*anthropos* – Jesus does not call them His disciples for they were acting like unBelievers] of little faith [*pistis* – no @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE and/or no @@@ FAITH/Rest]?

- (14) **Testing.** When testing by means of @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing comes to the positive [+P] volition Believer, he must apply the problem solving devices to pass the tests and advance forward in his spiritual life – “*knowing that the testing of your faith produces endurance*” [Js. 1:2-3]; 1 Cor. 10:13.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 10:13

No temptation has overtaken you [Believer] but such as is common to man; and God is faithful, who will not allow you to be tempted [peirazo (tested; a trial)] beyond what you are able, but with the temptation [peirasmós (a putting to proof by trial)] will provide the way of escape also [@@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES], so that you will be able to endure it [hupophero (to bear patiently) – pass the test and receive @@@ REWARDS].

$$\begin{array}{c}
 \left( \begin{array}{cc} \text{R} & + & \text{R} \\ \text{Regeneration} & & [+R] \end{array} \right) \\
 \left( \begin{array}{cc} \text{R} & + & \text{R} \\ \text{Rebound} & & \text{Reception} \end{array} \right) \\
 \left( \begin{array}{cc} \text{R} & + & \text{R} \\ \text{Repetition} & & \text{Retention} \end{array} \right) \\
 \text{Test} \swarrow \\
 1 \text{ Cor. } 10:13 \\
 + \left( \begin{array}{cc} \text{R} & + & \text{R} \\ \text{Recall} & & \text{Respond} \end{array} \right) \\
 \hline
 \text{Rewards}
 \end{array}$$

– The Eight R’s of the Christian Way of Life –

## @@@ RAPTURE & SECOND ADVENT

### – THE RAPTURE –

- (1) **Definition.** The “Rapture” is a technical theological designation to describe the future removal by God the Father of all Church Age Believers then living on the earth and the immediate joining of them with the deceased Church Age Believers [starting from Pentecost until that given time] to all receive @@@ **RESURRECTION** bodies and meet the LORD Jesus Christ in the upper “atmosphere” as part of Operation @@@ **FOOTSTOOL** – 1 Thess. 4:13-18. This event precedes the immediate start of the seven-year Tribulation. The term *raptum* is a Latin word and means to (seize; snatch; to be carried away). The exact Greek equivalent to *raptum* is *harpazo* (to snatch out or away) as used in 1 Thess. 4:17. Biblical scholars chose to name the doctrine of the Rapture after the Latin *raptum* instead of its Greek designation *harpazo*.

### 1 THESSALONIANS 4:13-17

But we [Paul and his traveling seminary team] do not want you [Believers] to be uninformed [*agnoeo* (to be ignorant)], brethren, about those who are asleep [*koimao* – Church Age Believers that have died], so that you will not grieve [*lupeo*] as do the rest who have no hope [*elpis* (confident expectation) – unBelievers]. For if we believe that Jesus died [*apothnesko* (to be subject to eternal misery in hell)] and rose [*anistemi* (to rise up) – @@@ **RESURRECTION**] again, even so God will bring with Him those who have fallen asleep in Jesus [the dead Church Age Believers in their resurrection bodies]. For this we say to you by the word of the LORD, that we who are alive and remain [living Church Age Believers] until the coming [*parousia* (arrival; advent)] of the LORD [at the @@@ **RAPTURE**], will not precede those who have fallen asleep. For the LORD [Christ] Himself will descend [*katabaino* (to go down)] from heaven with a shout [*keleuma* (an order)], with the voice of the archangel [*archaggelos* (a chief angel)] and with the trumpet of God, and the dead [*nekros* (physical death)] in Christ will rise [*anistemi* – in a resurrection body] first. Then we who are alive [*zao*] and remain will be caught up [*harpazo* (to snatch out or away) – in resurrection bodies] together with them [dead Church Age Believers] in the clouds [*nephele* (a cloud)] to meet [*apantesis*] The LORD [Jesus Christ] in the air [*aer* (the atmospheric region) – place of the Rapture], and so we shall always [*pantote* (at all times; forever)] be with the LORD [@@@ **HEAVEN**].

- (2) **Body of Christ.** The entire Body of Christ which consists of all Church Age Believers is being formed now during the Church Age – Eph. 1:22-23; 2:16; 4:4-5; 5:23; Col. 1:18, 24; 2:19. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.

### EPHESIANS 1:22-23

And He [God the Father] put all things in subjection [*hupotasso* – @@@ AUTHORITY] under His [Jesus Christ] feet, and gave Him as head [*kephale*] over all things to the church [*ekklesia*], which is His body [*soma*], the fullness [*pleroma*] of Him who fills all in all.

- (3) **Body to Bride.** When the Body of Christ is completely filled as to the predetermined number in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD, it becomes the Bride of Christ at the Rapture – Phil. 3:20-21; 1 Cor. 3:20-21; 15:51-57; 1 Jn. 3:1-2; 1 Thess. 4:13-18; Col. 3:3-4. The LORD Jesus Christ promises that each of the living and dead Believers in the Church Age will meet Him in the air in a @@@ RESURRECTION body – Jn. 14:1-3; Acts 1:11.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 15:51-54

Behold, I [Paul] tell you a mystery [*mysterion* – @@@ MYSTERY]; we [all Church Age Believers] will not all sleep [*koimao* – the physical @@@ DEATH of the Believer is referred to as @@@ SLEEP], but we will all be changed [*allasso* (to exchange one thing for another)], in a moment [*atomos* (a moment of time)], in the twinkling [*rhipe*] of an eye, at the last trumpet [*salpigx* – this trumpet closes out the Church Age at the @@@ RAPTURE]; for the trumpet will sound, and the dead [*nekros* (physical death) – Church Age Believers who have physically died] will be raised [*egeiro*] imperishable [*aphthartos* (immortal) – they will get @@@ RESURRECTION bodies], and we [Believers that are then living at the time of the Rapture] will be changed [*allasso* – all living Believers will exchange their mortal bodies for resurrection bodies]. For this perishable [*phthartos* – the human body] must put on the imperishable [*aphthartos* – the immortal resurrection body], and this mortal [*thnetos* (liable to death)] must put on [*enduo* (to put on clothes)] immortality [*athanasia* (everlasting immortality)]. But when this perishable will have put on the imperishable, and this mortal will have put on immortality, then [at the Rapture] will come about the saying that is written, “Death [*thanatos* (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)] is swallowed up [*katapino* (to drink down)] in victory [*nikos* (to utterly vanquish)].”



**JOHN 14:1-3**

Do not let your heart be troubled; believe in God, believe also in Me [**Jesus Christ**]. In My Father's house [*oikia* (an inhabited dwelling)] are many dwelling places; if it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare [*hetoimazo* (to make ready)] a place for you. If [**First Class Condition – and I do**] I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you to Myself [at the **@@@ RAPTURE**], that where I am, *there* you may be also [**@@@ ETERNAL SECURITY** in **@@@ HEAVEN**].

**PHILIPPIANS 3:20-21**

For our [**the Believer**] citizenship [*politeuma* (the commonwealth of citizens)] is in heaven, from which also we eagerly wait [the **@@@ RAPTURE**] for a Savior [*soter* (deliverer)], the LORD Jesus Christ; who will transform [*metaschematizo* (to change the figure of)] the body of our humble state [*tapeinosis* (low estate) – mortal human body] into conformity [*summorphos* (having the same form as another)] with the body of His glory [*doxa* – **Church Age Believers will get a @@@ RESURRECTION body like Christ's**], by the exertion [*energeia* (working efficiency)] of the power [*dunamai* (to have inherent power)] that He has even to subject all things to Himself.

- (4) **Eminency of the Rapture.** Given that there is no Biblical prophecy that must be fulfilled prior to the Rapture, it is “eminent” which means that the Rapture can occur at any time in the Church Age. For instance, both Paul and Peter expected that it could occur in their day. In fact, all “end times” signs and prophecies in the **@@@ BIBLE** are restricted to the 2nd Advent of the LORD Jesus Christ and all those signs occur in the seven-year Tribulation – Matt. 24-25; Phil. 2:9-11; 3:11; 1 Tim. 6:14-15; 2 Tim. 2:17-18.

**2 TIMOTHY 2:17-18**

And their [**false teachers**] talk will spread like gangrene [*gaggraina*]. Among them are Hymenaeus and Philetus, *men* who have gone astray from the truth [*aletheia* – the two false teachers were in **@@@ REVERSIONISM** and the **@@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS**] saying that the resurrection [*anastasis* (rising from the dead) – falsely claimed that the **@@@ RAPTURE** had already happened] has already taken place, and they upset [*anatrepo* (to overturn)] the faith [*pistis* – the body of correct **@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE**] of some.

## 1 TIMOTHY 6:14-15

That you keep the commandment without stain or reproach until the appearing of our LORD Jesus Christ, which He [**God**] will bring about [*deiknuo* (to show, expose to the eyes)] at the proper time [*kairos* (a fixed and definite time) – the @@@ RAPTURE].

- (5) **Provides Stability.** Knowing the doctrine of the Rapture gives stability in thinking and an added confidence of comfort at the physical @@@ DEATH of other loved ones that are Believers – 1 Thess. 4:13-15, 18; 1 Cor. 15:58. Hope III is another technical designation of the Rapture – 1 Pet. 1:3, 13; Tit. 2:13; 1 Jn. 3:3. See @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES.

## 1 PETER 1:13

Therefore, prepare [*anazonnumi* (to grid up)] your [the Believer] minds [*dianoia* (the mind as a faculty of understanding)] for action, keep sober *in spirit*, fix your hope [*elpizo* (confident expectation) – Hope III of the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES] completely on the grace [*charis* – the @@@ GRACE provision of a @@@ RESURRECTION body and @@@ REWARDS] to be brought to you at the revelation [*apokalupsis* – the @@@ RAPTURE followed by the Judgment Seat of Christ] of Jesus Christ.

- (6) **Resurrection of Christ.** Confidence in the Rapture is based on the @@@ RESURRECTION of Jesus Christ – 1 Thess. 4:14, 18; 1 Cor. 15:20-23.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 15:20-22

But now Christ has been raised [*egeiro* (to cause to rise)] from the dead [*nekros* (physical death) – in a @@@ RESURRECTION body], the first fruits [*aparche*] of those who are asleep [*koimao* – all Church Age Believers who have already died will also get a resurrection body]. For since by a man [Adam] came death [*thanatos* (death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – spiritual @@@ DEATH], by a man [Jesus of Nazareth the Christ] also came resurrection [*anastasis* (rising up)] of the dead [*nekros*]. For as in Adam all die [*apothnesko* (of eternal death; to be subject to eternal misery in hell) – spiritual death], so also in Christ all [the opportunity for @@@ SALVATION per @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT is open to all humans] will be made alive [*zoopoieo* (to produce alive)].

- (7) **Interim Period.** After the Rapture the Bride of Christ is “prepared” in @@@ HEAVEN for the forthcoming 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ and the subsequent “marriage.” Thus, to purify the bride for the “wedding” all Church Age Believers are evaluated at the Judgment Seat of Christ and all their human good is destroyed so that they are a spotless Bride – Rev. 6-18; 19:7-8; 22:12.

### REVELATION 19:7-8

Let us rejoice and be glad and give the glory to Him [God], for [*hoti (because)*] the marriage of the Lamb [*arnion – Jesus Christ*] has come and His bride [Church Age Believers] has made herself ready [*hetoimazo (to make the necessary preparations)*] – at the Judgment Seat of Christ]. It was given to her to clothe herself in fine linen, bright and clean; for the fine linen is the righteous acts of the saints [*hagios – all Believers have some “white” @@@ REWARDS as they have the Righteousness [+R] of God, see Matt. 17:2*].

### REVELATION 22:12

Behold, I [Jesus Christ] am coming quickly [@@@ RAPTURE], and My reward [*misthos (dues paid for work)*] – Jesus Christ will bestow @@@ REWARDS at the Judgment Seat of Christ] is with Me [Jesus Christ is the Escrow Account Officer], to render [*apodidomi (to deliver)*] to every man [the Believer] according [*kata (according to a norm or standard)*] to what he has done [from the moment of @@@ SALVATION to the physical @@@ DEATH of the Believer].

- (8) **Coronation of the Groom.** Coronation of the Groom, the LORD Jesus Christ, occurs in @@@ HEAVEN prior to the 2nd Advent – Phil. 2:9-11; Rev. 19:6.

### PHILIPPIANS 2:9-11

For this reason also, God highly exalted Him [Jesus Christ], and bestowed on Him the name [*onoma (a rank)*] which is above every name, so that at the name of Jesus every knee will bow, of those who are in heaven [*epouranios – Church Age Believers who physically died and went to @@@ HEAVEN*] and on earth [*epigeios – the Believers taken off the earth at the @@@ RAPTURE*] and under the earth [*katachthonios (those that exist in the world below)*] – Old Testament Believers who were once in Paradise], and that every tongue will confess that Jesus Christ is LORD, to the glory of God the Father.

## REVELATION 19:6

Then I [John] heard *something* like the voice of a great multitude [Church Age Believers] and like the sound of many waters [Old Testament and Tribulation Believers are the Groom's friends see Jn. 3:29] and like the sound of mighty peals of thunder [living Tribulation Believers, the Bride's friends], saying, "Hallelujah! For the LORD our God, the Almighty, reigns.

### – THE SECOND ADVENT –

- (1) **Definition.** The entire Bride of Christ returns with the LORD Jesus Christ to the earth at the 2nd Advent – 1 Thess. 3:13; 2 Thess. 2:1-2; Col. 3:4. Unlike the Rapture, which occurred seven years prior in the atmosphere, His foot now touches the same spot Jesus left at His ascension – the Mount of Olives. *“Men of Galilee, why do you stand looking into the sky? This Jesus, who has been taken up from you into heaven, will come in just the same way as you have watched Him go into heaven”* [Acts 1:11]; Zech. 14:3-4.

## ZECHARIAH 14:3-4

Then the LORD [the LORD Jesus Christ at the 2nd Advent] will go forth and fight against those nations, as when He fights on a day of battle. In that day His feet will stand on the Mount of Olives, which is in front of Jerusalem on the east; and the Mount of Olives will be split in its middle from east to west by a very large valley, so that half of the mountain will move toward the north and the other half toward the south.

## 1 THESSALONIANS 3:13

So that He [@@@ HOLY SPIRIT] may establish your hearts without blame in holiness [@@@ MATURITY] before our God and Father at the coming of our LORD Jesus with all His saints [Believers in @@@ RESURRECTION bodies accompanying the LORD Jesus Christ at His 2nd Advent to the earth].

- (2) **Earth Cleansed at 2nd Advent.** At the 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ the Devil and all his demons are disarmed, marched out, and cast into @@@ HELL's abyss for 1,000 years – Col. 2:15; Rev. 19:20-21; 20:1-3; Zech. 13:2; 1 Thess. 3:13. All unBelievers are also taken off the earth [Matt. 24:36-41] and sent to Hell [and later to the *“Lake of Fire”* in the @@@ BAPTISM of Fire].

- (3) **Wedding Supper of the Lamb.** Following the expulsion of demons and unBelievers from the earth the Millennium rule of Jesus Christ is kicked off with a glorious wedding supper [Rev. 19:7-9; Matt. 25:1-13] for the Groom, Jesus Christ, and His Bride. The Wedding Supper is made up of the following.
- (a) The Groom's "friends" are the Old Testament and dead Tribulation Believers – Jn. 3:29. They got their @@@ **RESURRECTION** bodies, evaluation, and @@@ **REWARDS** just prior to the 2nd Advent.
  - (b) The Bride's "friends" are the living Tribulational Believers that go into the Millennium at the time of the 2nd Advent – Matt. 25:1-13.
  - (c) The Bride herself consists of all Church Age Believers starting at Pentecost in Acts 2, and going all the way to the Rapture – 1 Thess. 4:17; 1 Cor. 15:51-52; Rev. 21:2; 2 Cor. 11:2.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 11:2

For I [Paul] am jealous for you [Believer] with a godly jealousy; for I betrothed [*harmozo (to give in marriage)*] you to one husband [Christ], so that to Christ I might present you as a pure [*hagnos (chaste)*] virgin [*parthenos – a Church Age Believer who reaches @@@ MATURITY*].

*Rapture	2nd Advent
1. A Private Affair – Acts 1:11.	1. A Public Affair – Rev. 1:7.
2. In the Air – 1 Thess. 4:17.	2. On the Earth – Zech. 14:4.
3. Church Goes to Heaven – Jn. 14:3.	3. Christ Returns to Earth – 1 Thess. 3:13.
4. Removal of Holy Spirit – 2 Thess. 2:6.	4. Removal of Satan Off Earth – Rev. 20:1-2.

– Rapture vs. 2nd Advent –

\* (1) Jesus Christ picks up the Bride, all Church Age Believers in @@@ RESURRECTION bodies, at the Rapture in the atmosphere of the earth and takes her to @@@ HEAVEN. (2) Once in Heaven, the Bride is prepared for the Wedding Supper by the complete cleansing of human good works and the bestowing [for some] of eternal @@@ REWARDS. (3) Jesus Christ then returns with the Bride to the earth at the 2nd Advent to cleanse the earth of all unBelievers and demons for the subsequent Wedding Supper. Gentiles are separated out per Matt. 25:31-46 and Jews are separated out per Ezk. 20:32-38. See Rev. 19:6-9; Matt. 13:24-30 [wheat represents Believers going into the Millennium]; 47-50; 25:1-13. (4) Then begins the Millennium rule of Christ for 1,000 years. (5) Only mortal Believers enter the Millennium and only decorated Winner Believers will participate in ruling the mortal humans on the earth for the 1,000 years under the LORD Jesus Christ.

## REVELATION 19:6-9

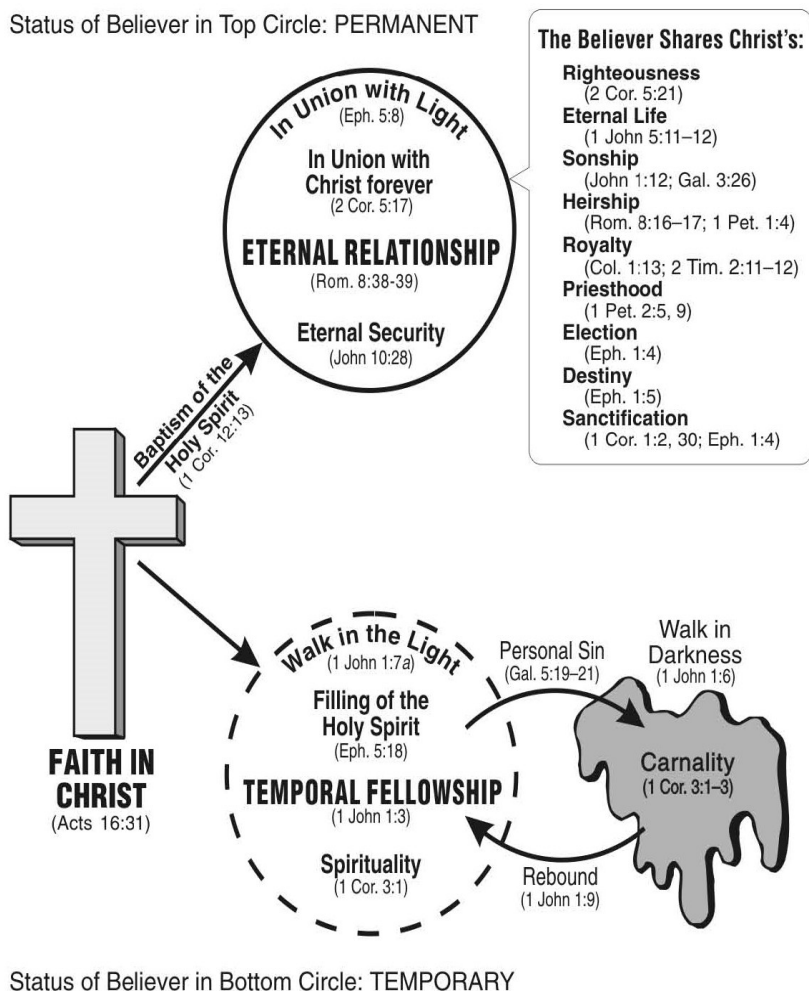
Then I [John] heard *something* like the voice of a great multitude [*ochlos* (a multitude of people) – Church Age Believers] and like the sound of many waters [Old Testament and Tribulation Believers, the Groom’s friends see Jn. 3:29] and like the sound of mighty peals of thunder [living Tribulation Believers, the Bride’s friends], saying, “Hallelujah! For the LORD our God, the Almighty [*pantokrator* (he who holds sway over all things)], reigns [*basileuo* (to be king and to exercise kingly power)]. Let us rejoice [*agalliao* (to be super happy)] and be glad [*chairo*] and give the glory [*doxa*] to Him, for [*hoti* (because)] the marriage [*hogamas*] of the Lamb [*arnion* – Jesus Christ] has come [*erchomai*] and His bride has made [*hetoimazo* (to make the necessary preparations) – at the Judgment Seat of Christ] herself ready.” It was given to her to clothe [*periballo* (fully dressed)] herself in fine linen [*bussinos* (fine white linen) – this is the best cloth available and refers to the @@@ RESURRECTION body], bright [*lampros* (bright)] and clean [*kathuros* (unsoiled) – no human @@@ GOOD is ever allowed]; for the fine linen is the righteous [*dikaion* (justification)] acts of the saints [all Believers have some “white” @@@ REWARDS as they have the Righteousness [+R] of God, see Matt. 17:2]. Then he [the angel] said to me, “Write, ‘Blessed [*makarios* (happiness)] are those who are invited [*kaleo* (to invite)] to the marriage supper of the Lamb [the friends of the Groom and Bride].” And he said to me, “These are the true words of God.”



## @@@ REBOUND

- (1) **Definition.** The term “Rebound” is a technical theological term coined by R. B. Thieme, Jr., to describe the @@@ GRACE mechanism which enables the Church Age Believer to be placed in a state of Temporal Fellowship [*absolute spirituality*] with God the Holy Spirit in time. Better known as being “*Filled with the (Holy) Spirit*” [Eph. 5:18], it is part of the @@@ MYSTERY.

### TOP AND BOTTOM CIRCLES



- (2) **Ongoing Christian Sin.** Every Christian is a sinner with an @@@ OLD SIN NATURE and commits personal @@@ SIN throughout his life, before and after @@@ SALVATION – 1 Jn. 1:7-10; 2:1; 1 Cor. 3:1-3; Jer. 7:20; Eccl. 7:20; Rom. 3:23; Ps. 39:5; 119:29. As a practical matter the Believer will sin often. Furthermore, when he commits a sin the Believer is automatically sucked into carnality and Satan’s @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS where he remains until he employs the Rebound technique to exit.

## ECCLESIASTES 7:20

Indeed, there is not a righteous [*tsaddiyq* (just; righteous) – human works of righteousness [-r]] man on earth who continually does [Divine] good [*tob*] and who never sins [*chata*].

## ROMANS 3:23

For all [mankind] have sinned [*hamartano* – personal @@@ SIN and the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] and fall short [*hustereo* (to be left behind in the race) – human works of righteousness [-r]] of the glory [*doxa* – the absolutely pure Divine essence of the @@@ TRINITY to include His Perfect Righteousness [+R]] of God.

## 1 JOHN 1:8

If we [Church Age Believers] say that we have no sin [*hamartia* – the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE], we are deceiving [*planao* (to cause to go astray)] ourselves and the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in matter under consideration) – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] is not in us.

## 1 JOHN 1:10

If we [Church Age Believers] say that we have not sinned [*hamartano* – Believers still commit personal @@@ SINS] we make Him a liar [*pseustes*] and His word [*logos* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] is not in us.

- (3) **Against God Only.** Other people may be involved in the @@@ SIN that a Believer commits, but all sin is against Holy God – “*behold, you have sinned against the LORD, and be sure your sin will find you out*” [Num. 32:23]. “*Your word I have treasured in my heart, that I may not sin against You*” [Ps. 119:1]; 2 Sam. 12:13; Acts 5:4; Ps. 51:4.

## 2 SAMUEL 12:13

Then David said to Nathan [the Prophet], “I have sinned [*chata*] against the LORD.” And Nathan said to David, “The LORD also has taken away [*abar (to pass over)*] your sin; you shall not die [*muth – @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH*].”

## ACTS 5:4

While it remained *unsold*, did it not remain your own? And after it was sold, was it not under your control? Why is it that you [Ananias lied] have conceived this deed in your heart? You have not lied to men but to God.

## PSALM 51:4

Against You [God], You only, I [David] have sinned [*chata*] and done what is evil [*ra*] in Your sight, so that You are justified [*tsadaq (to be righteous)*] when You speak and blameless when You judge [*shaphat*].

- (4) **Mechanics of Rebound.** Rebound is the solution to the Believer’s @@@ SIN. When any Believer commits a sin – known or unknown – he is placed out of Fellowship with the Holy Spirit [the bottom circle]. If the Believer confesses, *homologeo (to declare oneself guilty; to name or cite as in a court case)*, to God the Father a *known* sin then God immediately puts him back into Fellowship and the Filling of the Holy Spirit – “*filled with the Spirit*” [Eph. 5:18; 1 Jn. 1:9; 1 Cor. 11:31; Heb. 12:1, 12; Eph. 5:14; Prov. 1:23; 28:13; Ps. 51:3-4. The same mechanics for the Old Testament for fellowship, although there was no Filling of the Spirit: “*I acknowledged my sin to You, and my iniquity I did not hide; I said, “I will confess my transgressions to the Lord”; and You forgave the guilt of my sin. Selah*” [Ps. 32:5]. See (14).

## 1 JOHN 1:9

If [Third Class Condition – maybe the Believer will or maybe he won’t] we [Believers] confess [*homologeo (to declare oneself guilty; to name or cite as in a court case)*] our sins [*hamartia – the known @@@ SIN*], He [God the Father] is faithful [*pistos – God does the same thing every time*] and righteous [*dikaiois – on the basis of the Believer having the Righteousness [+R] of God*] to forgive [*aphiemi*] us our [known] sins and to cleanse [*katharizo*] us from all unrighteousness [*adikia – unknown sin as well as decontamination from human @@@ GOOD*].

- (5) **Confess the Sin.** The Greek word for confess [1 Jn. 1:9] is *homologeō* (to declare oneself guilty; to name or cite as in a court case). It does not mean to feel sorry. In addition, the Believer does not ask God to *forgive* the sin as Christ has already died on the @@@ CROSS for that sin. Confess means to dispassionately cite the sin directly to God, as every Believer is a Royal Priest and represents himself to God – 1 Pet. 2:5. The issue for the *carnal* Believer [Temporal @@@ DEATH] is getting back into Fellowship with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT. Since the Believer already has the Righteousness [+R] of God, there is no compromise to God's [+R] to put him back into a Fellowship relationship with the Holy Spirit – 2 Cor. 5:21. Thus, God not only cleans the slate for known sin(s), but also for unknown sin(s) and then decontaminates the Believer of the human @@@ GOOD from time in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS. Again, there is no human merit or effort in recovering from sin by using the Rebound technique – it is entirely a @@@ GRACE function.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:21

He [God the Father] made [*poieō*] Him [Jesus Christ] who knew [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] no sin [*hamartia* – Jesus never committed a @@@ SIN and had no @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] to be sin [*hamartia* – He took the judgment for all sin while on the @@@ CROSS] on our behalf [*huper* (as a substitute for)], so that we might become the righteousness [*dikaioō* – God's Perfect Righteousness [+R] is imputed to the Believer making him acceptable for @@@ SALVATION] of God in Him.

- (6) **Fellowship is Absolute.** At any given time, a Church Age Believer is either “*carnal*” *sarkikos* (carnal) [1 Cor. 3:1-3] and in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS or “*spiritual*” *pneumatikos* [Js. 1:13-15; 3:11-12; Rev. 3:16] and Filled with the Holy Spirit. This status is an *absolute* status – it is either one or the other and not to be confused with the *relative* side of spirituality.

## JAMES 3:11-12

Does a fountain [*pege* (well; spring)] send out from the same opening *both* fresh [*glukus* (sweet)] and bitter [*pikros*] water? Can a fig tree, my brethren, produce olives, or a vine produce figs? Nor *can* salt water produce fresh.

- (a) **Absolute Spirituality.** The “spiritual Believer” is one in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit residing inside the Divine Dynasphere starting at Gate 1. He can be at any stage of his *relative* spiritual growth.

- (b) **Temporal Death.** The carnal *sarkikos* Believer is one out of Fellowship with God the Holy Spirit and thus resides in the evil of the Cosmic Systems. This carnal Believer is in Temporal @@@ DEATH and remains in that status until Rebound. If left unchecked the carnal Believer can move from Temporal Death into Operational Death. Note: The Greek word *prasso* (to operate under) often refers to the unBeliever as in Gal. 5:21, while *oieon* (to do; to produce) refers to the carnal Believer out of Fellowship, see 1 Cor. 3:1-3. See also 1 Jn. 3:4-10.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 3:3

For you [Believers in Corinth] are still fleshly [*sarkikos* (carnal) – the negative [-N] volition carnal Believer under the control of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE]. For since there is jealousy [*zelos*] and strife [*eris* (wrangling; contention)] among you, are you not fleshly [*sarkikos* (carnal) – following the Old Sin Nature], and are you not walking [*peripateo* – @@@ WALKING as a lifestyle] like mere men [*anthropos* (mankind) – imitating the unBeliever]?

- (c) **Relative Spirituality.** The *relative* side of “Christian spiritually” always refers to the level of maturity of the Believer in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE. Again, distinguish this from the *absolute* side of spirituality when he is Filled with the Holy Spirit.
- (7) **Restores to Fellowship.** The Believer is restored to a Fellowship relationship with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT upon Rebound. See parable of the “Prodigal Son” – Lk. 15:11-32 [Old Testament]: He was entitled to the (1) “*best robe*” – full experiential Righteousness [+R]; (2) entitled to the signet “*ring*” – complete access to God’s unlimited Divine Assets; (3) entitled to “*sandals*” – for conducting Christian service [Eph. 6:15]; (4) entitled to the “*fatted calf*” – learning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE; and (5) called a “*son*” by his father – permanent status of @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY. Note: In @@@ EMOTION the prodigal son did not claim the truth of eternal security!
- (8) **No Confession of Human Good.** The Believer is never commanded to confess his deeds of human @@@ GOOD or his particular lust pattern in his @@@ OLD SIN NATURE – Heb. 6:1. In fact, all the human good dead works which are accumulated when out of Fellowship with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT are all destroyed by fire at the Judgment Seat of Christ [the Old Sin Nature is left behind with the human body at the physical @@@ DEATH of the Believer] – 1 Cor. 3:12-15. See @@@ JUDGMENT.



## (9) Overview/Summary of First Eight Points.

- (a) **@@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT.** Jesus Christ on the **@@@ CROSS** died for all **@@@ SIN** that every human has ever done or will ever do – past, present, and future. This is the *minus factor* which deletes the barrier of sin. But **@@@ SALVATION** requires the *plus factor* of receiving God’s own Righteousness [**+R**] which occurs only at belief in the Gospel – Gen. 15:6; Heb. 5:9. Rebound simply deals with the reality that while all human personal sin – past, present, and future – has been judged in Jesus Christ already, the Believer will still commit those sins in his lifetime. So, while the Believer is never in danger of losing his salvation, when the Believer commits a known or unknown sin he is out of Fellowship with the **@@@ HOLY SPIRIT**.
- (b) **@@@ ETERNAL SECURITY.** Believers are eternally saved. Thus, Rebound has nothing to do with **@@@ SALVATION**. Again, it is entirely a **@@@ GRACE** mechanism to make the Believer *pneumatikos* “spiritual,” i.e., Filled with the **@@@ HOLY SPIRIT**.
- (10) **Command to Rebound.** By Rebound the Believer fulfills the Church Age command by God to be in the state of *absolute* spirituality by means of the Filling of the Holy Spirit – “*be filled with the (Holy) Spirit*” [Eph. 5:15-18] in order to “*worship in spirit and truth*” [Jn. 4:24]. See Col. 3:16; Gal. 5:16.

## JOHN 4:23-24

But an hour is coming [**Church Age**], and now is, when the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit [*pneuma – filled with the Holy Spirit*] and truth [**Bible Doctrine**]; for such people the Father seeks to be His worshipers. God is spirit and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth

## EPHESIANS 5:15-18

Therefore be careful how you walk, not as unwise men but as wise [**@@@ REBOUND**], making the most of your time, because the days are evil [*poneros – the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT*]. So then do not be foolish [*aphron (without reason)*], but understand what the will of the LORD is [**reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY**]. And do not get drunk with wine, for that is dissipation [*asotia (a dissolute life)*], but be filled [*pleroo (to make full)*] with the Spirit [**stay in Fellowship with God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT**].



- (11) **No License to Sin.** “*Are we to continue in sin so that grace may increase?*” [Rom. 6:1]. The answer is no! Rebound is not a license to @@@ SIN but a license to serve God and is an integral part of the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE – Jn. 4:24; Rom. 8:6-8. Those who abuse Rebound will not advance in the *relative* side of their spiritual life towards @@@ MATURITY. Furthermore, *infra* (19), Rebound does not impart @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE. For example, King Saul used Rebound often over his many attempts to kill David, but never followed up with a firm dedication to the Word to grow spiritually – 1 Sam. 19-31.

#### JOHN 4:24

God is spirit [*pneuma*], and those who worship [*proskuneo* (to kiss the hand)] Him must [*dei* (it is necessary)] worship in spirit [the Filling of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] and truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE].

#### ROMANS 8:6-8

For the mind set on the flesh [*sarx* – the desires of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] is death [*thanatos* – the state of Operational @@@ DEATH for the negative [-N] Believer who rejects @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], but the mind set on the [Holy] Spirit [the positive [+P] Believer staying in Fellowship by @@@ REBOUND] is life [*zoe*] and peace [*eirene* (prosperity) – reaching @@@ MATURITY and receiving @@@ REWARDS], because the mind set on the flesh is hostile toward God; for it does not subject itself to the law of God [the negative [-N] Believer has minimal interest in Bible Doctrine], for it is not even able *to do so* [no use of Rebound], and those who are in the flesh [*sarx* – Temporal and Operational Death] cannot please [*aresko* (to strive to please)] God.

- (12) **Price Tag of Sin.** Every sin the Believer commits has an allotted amount of Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING tied to it, a Divine “price tag” – “*punishment is for him who forsakes the way*” [Prov. 15:10]. Therefore, the Believer must constantly evaluate himself and use Rebound quickly in order to avoid the associated Divine Discipline Suffering – “*if we judged ourselves rightly we would not be judged*” [1 Cor. 11:31-32]. In this way the “price tag” of punishment is avoided. King David understood that when he refused to Rebound he was under Divine Discipline: “*Why are you in despair, O my soul? And why have you become disturbed within me?*” [Ps. 42:11]. See (15).

## 1 CORINTHIANS 11:31-32

But if [Third Class Condition of supposition] we [Believers] judged [*diakrino* (make a distinction; judge)] ourselves rightly [the Believer evaluating his own personal known @@@ SINS and naming them to God], we would not be judged [*krino* – avoid Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING by quickly using @@@ REBOUND]. But when we are judged [*krino*], we are disciplined [*paideuo* (of a father punishing his son)] by the LORD so that we will not be condemned [*katakrino* (to judge worthy of punishment; to give judgment against)] along with the world [*kosmos* – God uses Divine Discipline Suffering not to punish but to correct and motivate the Believer].

- (13) **Sinless Believer.** The Believer in Fellowship [see the bottom circle on the Rebound graph, *supra*] with God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT cannot @@@ SIN. At this point, where he is Filled by the Holy Spirit, the Believer is absolutely “perfect.” Although a subsequent *temptation* to sin cannot alter this status of being “sinless” [at that particular moment], the decision to commit a new sin can and does – 1 Jn. 3:6-9.

## 1 JOHN 3:6-9

No one who abides [*meno* (to remain)] in Him [the Believer in Fellowship] the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT sins [*hamartano*]; no one who [consistently] sins [*hamartano* – the Believer who refuses to employ @@@ REBOUND to get back into Fellowship with the Holy Spirit] has seen Him [via @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] or knows [*ginosko* (to learn to know) – the Loser Believer has no understanding of Bible Doctrine] Him. Little children [Believers], make sure no one deceives [*planao* (to cause to stray)] you; the one who practices [*poieo* (to be the author of a thing)] righteousness [*dikaiosune* – Rebound and learning Bible Doctrine] is righteous [*dikaios*], just as He is righteous; the one who practices [*poieo* (to be the author of a thing)] sin [*hamartia*] is of the devil [*diabolos* (slanderer) – Satan]; for the devil has sinned from the beginning. The Son of God appeared for this purpose, to destroy [*luo* (to lose any person or thing tied or fastened)] the works [*ergon*] of the devil [spiritual @@@ DEATH and the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS]. No one who is born [*gennao*] of God practices [*poieo* (to be the author of a thing) – the Loser Believer] sin, because His seed [the Indwelling of the Holy Spirit] abides [*meno* (remains)] in him; and he cannot sin [when Filled with the Holy Spirit the Believer can be tempted but cannot @@@ SIN], because he is born [*gennao*] of God.

**TIME 1** – The temptation to the Believer, Filled with the Holy Spirit, to commit a new personal sin. It is not a sin to be tempted.

**TIME 2** – The Believer will either use his volition to: (1) give in to the temptation; or (2) resist the temptation.

**TIME 3** – If the Believer gives in to [chooses] the temptation in his mind by means of his own negative [-N] volition he is automatically placed out of Fellowship with the Holy Spirit and he will then commit the personal sin. See 1 Jn. 3:6-9; Acts 5:4.

### – Timeline on Rebound –

- (a) **Bottom Line Up Front.** Per the chart above, the Believer absolutely cannot @@@ SIN when in Fellowship and Filled with God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT [TIME 1]. However, when tempted to sin *and* the Believer succumbs to the temptation in his mind to commit the sin [TIME 2], he is at that very moment placed out of Fellowship with God the Holy Spirit. The actual sin that he succumbed to in his soul will quickly follow [TIME 3] – e.g., a sin of the tongue, a mental attitude sin, or an overt sin. See Js. 1:13-15.

### JAMES 1:13-15

Let no one [Believer] say when he is tempted [peirazo], “I am being tempted by God”; for God cannot be tempted by evil [kakos], and He Himself does not tempt anyone [the @@@ TRINITY cannot tempt anyone to commit @@@ SIN]. But each one is tempted when he is carried away [exelko (to draw out)] and enticed [delazo (to bait and catch)] by his own lust [epithumia (to long for that which is forbidden) – from the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE]. Then when lust has conceived [sullambano – the Believer uses his own negative [-N] volition to give in to the temptation to commit the sin], it gives birth [tikto (to bring forth)] to sin [hamartia – the personal sin is then committed]; and when sin is accomplished [apoteleo], it brings forth [apokueo] death [thanatos – Temporal @@@ DEATH for the Believer].

- (b) **Unknown Sin.** Unknown @@@ SIN also causes immediate loss of Fellowship with the Holy Spirit as well, but a known sin will soon follow for the Believer who is out of Fellowship with the Holy Spirit.
- (14) **Old Testament.** Rebound was operational in the Old Testament as well, but with important differences. While all individual Believers are required to use Rebound confession of sin to God, in the Old Testament period the Believer was not Indwelt or Filled with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT. Thus, when he confessed his known sin he was restored to a Fellowship relationship with God that was based on the exercise of @@@ FAITH/Rest to God's promises. Furthermore, those Old Testament Believers that fell under the provisions of the @@@ MOSAIC LAW were also required to perform certain Levitical Rebound offerings [see Lev. 4 & 5]. The Mosaic Law had various Rebound rituals for both known and unknown sin. For example, in Lev. 4:4-12, a bullock was offered for Rebound. The rituals were primarily a teaching tool for the truth of Rebound as the Old Testament Believer under the Mosaic Law would have proclaimed his sin already before he performed the ritual – Ps. 32:5; Dan. 9:4-5. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.

## PSALM 32:5

I [David] acknowledged [yada (to recognize; to admit)] my sin [chattah – personal @@@ SIN] to You [God], and my iniquity [avon (depravity)] I did not hide [kasha (to conceal)]; I said, “I will confess [yadah (to confess sin)] my transgressions [pasha] to the LORD”; and You forgave [nawa (to take away)] the guilt [avon (the consequence of punishment)] of my sin [chattah]. Selah [a technical musical pause].

- (15) **Divine Discipline.** God wants the Believer to Rebound and will use Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING to encourage him to do so. Thus, the Believer is commanded to evaluate self and keep short accounts by use of the Rebound technique in order to avoid Divine Discipline Suffering and the “price tag” effect [see supra (12)] – Ps. 7:12-16. In short, the Believer either regulates himself by Rebound, or God will regulate him by increased levels of Divine Discipline Suffering. See Isa. 44:22; 2 Cor. 13:5; Js. 4:8; Rev. 3:15-29. Example: David – 2 Sam. 11; 12:23; Ps. 32:3-5; 38:18; 51:1-4. Tragically, the Divine Discipline Suffering can in some cases culminate in the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH – Heb. 12:6; 1 Cor. 11:30-31; Rev. 3:15-20; Js. 5:9. This occurs when the Believer is out of Fellowship with the Holy Spirit for prolonged periods of time and enters into @@@ REVERSIONISM.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 11:30-31

For this reason [*dia* (on account of)] many among you [Believers] are [1] weak [*asthenes* (weak; infirm; feeble) – physical weakness is the warning stage of Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING] and [2] sick [*arrhostos* (without strength; sick) – physical illness under added Divine Discipline Suffering is the intensive stage], and [3] a number sleep [*koimao* (to die; to sleep) – the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH where the Believer dies; @@@ SLEEP]. But if we judged [*diakrino* (to try) – via @@@ REBOUND] ourselves rightly, we would not be judged [*krino* – by God's Divine Discipline Suffering].

## HEBREWS 12:6

For those whom the LORD loves [*agapao* (to love dearly) – all Believers fall under this @@@ LOVE because they possess His Righteousness [+R]] He disciplines [*paideuo* (of a father punishing a son) – Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING], and He scourges [*mastigoo* (to flog with a whip)] every son whom He receives [*paradechomai* (to acknowledge as one's own)].

## PSALM 32:3-4

When I [David] kept silent [*charash* – no @@@ REBOUND] about my sin, my body wasted away through my groaning [*sheagah* (roaring of a lion)] all day long [Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING]. For day and night Your [God's] hand was heavy upon me; my vitality [*leshad* (juicy bit)] was drained away as with the fever heat of summer. Selah.

## PSALM 7:12-16

If a man does not repent [*shub* (to turn back) – the negative [-N] volition Believer refuses to @@@ REBOUND], He [God] will sharpen His sword; He has bent His bow and made it ready [administration of Divine Discipline]. He has also prepared for Himself deadly weapons; He makes His arrows fiery shafts. Behold, he [Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM] travails [*chabal* (to give a pledge)] with wickedness [*aven*], and he conceives mischief and brings forth falsehood [of human @@@ GOOD]. He has dug a pit and hollowed it out, and has fallen into the hole which he made [@@@ SIN UNTO DEATH]. His mischief will return upon his own head, and his violence will descend upon his own pate [*godgod* (crown of the head)].



- (16) **Chain Sinning.** The Church Age Believer must avoid *chain sinning* at all costs – lighting one sin on top of another sin, as in clusters. Those that consistently get entrapped in chain sinning can neutralize it by consistent Rebound. Other particular traps to avoid for the Believer employing Rebound include: (1) bitterness or hatred which motivates revenge; (2) guilt over past sin is a sin, [remorse is not a sin] – Phil. 3:13; Heb. 8:12; 10:17; (3) public confession to others of sin is wrong and causes gossip and resentment; (4) self-pity; (5) blaming others for sin and @@@ PROBLEMS; (6) worry; and (7) discussing one's sin with others to get them on their side or to justify their actions – Heb. 12:15; Prov. 28:13.

### PROVERBS 28:13

He who conceals [*kasah* (to cover; conceal)] his transgressions [*pesha* (guilt of transgression)] will not prosper, but he who confesses [*yada*] and forsakes [*azab* (to depart) – stops chain sinning] them will find compassion.

### HEBREWS 12:15

See to it that no one [Believer] comes short [*hustereo* (to be left behind in the race)] of the grace of God [in @@@ REBOUND]; that no root [*rhiza* (that which springs up)] of bitterness [*pikria* (bitter hatred)] springing up [*phuo* (to swell up) – from the Believer's @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] causes trouble, and by it many be defiled [*miaino* (to pollute) – others engage in @@@ SIN].

### (17) Four Critical Points in Rebound.

- (a) **CONFESS** the Known Sin – 1 Jn. 1:9; Ps. 32:5; Dan. 9:20.
- (b) **FORGET** the Known Sin – Phil. 3:13-15.

### PHILIPPIANS 3:13

Brethren, I [Paul] do not regard [*logizomai* (to calculate)] myself as having laid hold of [*katalambano*] it yet; [the highest level of @@@ MATURITY]; but one thing *I do*: forgetting [*epilanthanomai* (forgetting; no longer caring for; given over to oblivion)] what *lies* behind [Paul's past failures were dealt with by @@@ REBOUND] and reaching forward to [*epekteinomai* (to stretch out to or towards)] what *lies* ahead [*emprosthen* (in the sight of) – @@@ REWARDS and a @@@ RESURRECTION body].

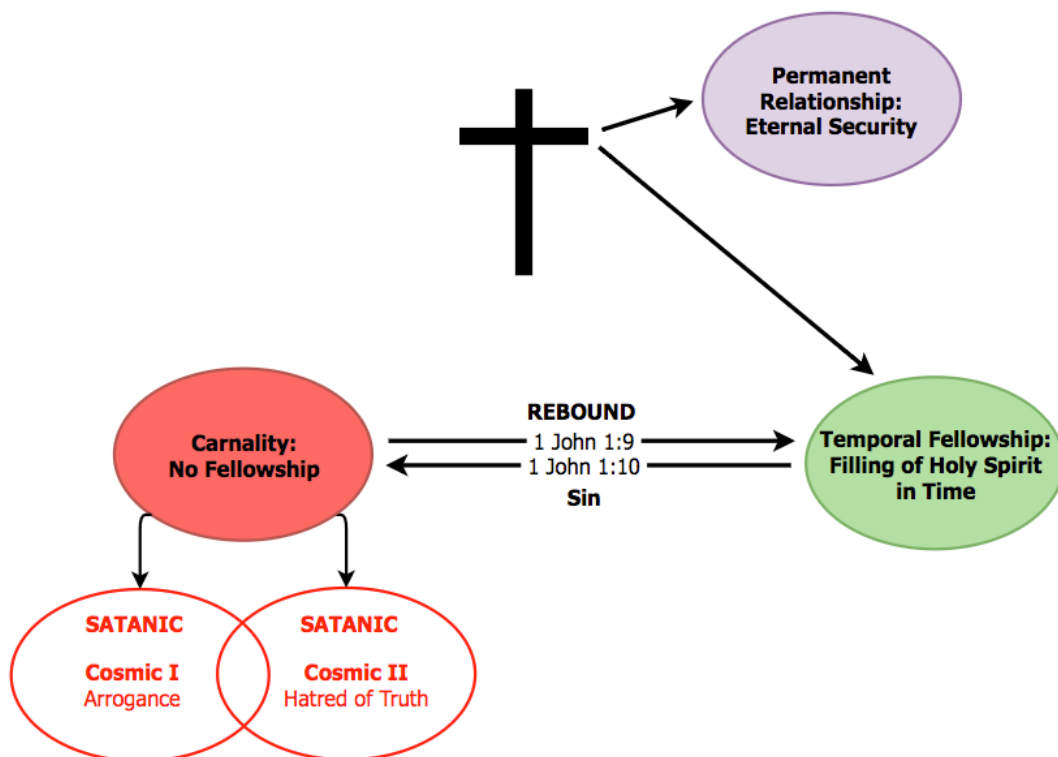


- (c) **ISOLATE** the Known Sin – Heb. 12:15. The Believer must understand his @@@ **OLD SIN NATURE**'s lust pattern and avoid temptations.
- (d) **MOVE ON** – Phil. 3:13. The only goal for the Believer is to reach @@@ **MATURITY**. God forgets the sin and the Believer must also forget his past sins and failures and keep moving forward to maturity.
- (18) **Biblical Synonyms for Rebound.** Includes: (1) “*confess . . . sin*” [1 Jn. 1:9; Ps. 32:5; 38:18; Prov. 28:13; Dan. 9:20]; (2) “*be subject to the Father*” [Heb. 12:9]; (3) “*be filled with the Spirit*” [Eph. 5:18]; (4) “*judged ourselves rightly*” [1 Cor. 11:31]; (5) “*repent*” [Job 42:6; Rev. 2:5; 16, 22; 3:15-19; 2 Cor. 12:21; 2 Tim. 2:24-25]; (6) “*present yourselves*” [Rom. 6:13; 12:1]; (7) “*acknowledged my sin*” [Ps. 32:5]; (8) “*arise from the dead*” [Eph. 5:14]; (9) “*lay aside every encumbrance*” [Heb. 12:1]; (10) “*do not grieve the Holy Spirit*” [Eph. 4:30]; (11) “*strengthen the hands that are weak*” [Heb. 12:12]; (12) “*make straight paths*” [Matt. 3:3; Heb. 12:13]; (13) “*lay aside the old self*” [Eph. 4:22-23]; (14) “*turned ... face*” [Isa. 38:2]; (15) “*acknowledge iniquity*” [Jer. 3:13; Ps. 32:5]; (16) “*putting aside all filthiness*” [Js. 1:21]; (17) “*walk by the Spirit*” [Gal. 5:16]; (18) “*walk in the Light*” [1 Jn. 1:7]; (19) “*do not quench the Spirit*” [1 Thess. 5:19]; (20) “*rises again*” [Prov. 24:16]; (21) “*blot out*” [Ps. 51:1-4]; (22) “*cleanse your hands*” [Js. 4:8]; (23) “*wash ... feet*” [Jn. 13:10]; (24) “*looked again*” [Eccl. 4:7]; and (25) “*I have sinned*” [2 Sam. 12:13; Ps. 51:4].
- (19) **Spiritual Growth.** Rebound only restores the Believer to Fellowship with the @@@ **HOLY SPIRIT** and handles the @@@ **SIN** issue in time. It does not provide @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** to the @@@ **SOUL & SPIRIT** of the individual Believer. In addition, although Rebound also decontaminates the Believer from human @@@ **GOOD** the **Winner** Believer only overcomes the @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS** by the accumulation of maximum Bible Doctrine – Num. 14:36-45. See @@@ **REWARDS**.
- (20) **Eyes on Christ.** The **Winner** Believer uses Rebound as a key element of the @@@ **PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES** and keeps his eyes off self and on Jesus Christ via @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** – Eph. 1:18; Heb. 12:2.
- (21) **Helping Believers.** Helping other Believers to use the Rebound technique requires extreme @@@ **GRACE** orientation to life and @@@ **MATURITY** – Gal. 6:1; Col. 3:13; Matt. 18:23-25; Js. 5:19-20. Per @@@ **PRIVACY** concerns, this role is not for baby Believers. See @@@ **GIFTS**.

## GALATIANS 6:1

Brethren [*adelphos*], even if anyone is caught [*prolambano* (to take before)] in any trespass [*paraptoma* (a sin)], you who are spiritual [*pneumatikos* – the Believer who has reached @@@ MATURITY], restore [*katartizo* (to fit out)] such a one in a spirit [*pneuma* (the disposition or influence which fills and governs the soul of anyone)] of gentleness [*prautes* (mildness of disposition)]; *each one* looking to yourself, so that you too will not be tempted [*peirazo* – don't violate @@@ PRIVACY].

- (22) **Fellowship with God.** Rebound allows for the **Winner** Believer to function in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE. His periods of @@@ WALKING without sin with God the Father and Jesus Christ are increased in tandem with his growth to @@@ MATURITY. *See Rev. 3:19-20.*
- (23) **Believer in Carnality.** The Believer in carnality lives in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS and can only return to the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE by the use of Rebound – 1 Cor. 3:3. The **Loser** Believer cannot lose his @@@ SALVATION. *See @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY.*



## @@@ RELIGION

- (1) **Definition.** Religion, or more precisely, *works-Religion* is: Man by man's own efforts seeking to gain the approbation of God. It is expressed in two false legalistic concepts, one for the unBeliever and one for the Believer.
  - (a) **For the UnBeliever.** Religion falsely promises @@@ SALVATION by means of human good works. This is a rejection of God's Perfect character as well as His @@@ GRACE-centric @@@ PLAN OF GOD to save mankind. See Tit. 3:5; 2 Tim. 1:9; Eph. 2:8-9; Rom. 11:6.

### ROMANS 11:6

But if [First Class Condition, and it is] it [@@@ SALVATION] is by grace [charis – @@@ GRACE], it is no longer on the basis of [human] works [ergon – the lie of @@@ RELIGION is that human @@@ GOOD works [-r] will provide salvation], otherwise grace is no longer grace.

- (b) **For the Believer.** Religion falsely promises spirituality and/or spiritual growth by means of “do good, feel good” activities. This is a rejection of both @@@ REBOUND, which is the only @@@ GRACE solution for dealing with @@@ SIN in time, and a rejection of embracing and living the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE – Matt. 20:1-16.
- (2) **Devil's Ace Card.** Religion lies and is the Devil's strongest tool in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS. It is absolutely antithetical to @@@ GRACE – 1 Cor. 15:56; Jn. 8:44-45; 1 Jn. 5:10; Gal. 5:7-12. “*Her prophets have smeared whitewash for them, seeing false visions and divining lies*” [Ezk. 22:28].

### JOHN 8:44-45

You [Jesus to the unBeliever religious leaders] are of *your* father [pater] the devil [diabolos (slanderer) – Satan is their father], and you want to do the desires [epithumia (to crave)] of your father. He was a murderer [anthropoktonos] from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth [aletheia – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own nature, for he is a liar [pseustes] and the father of lies [of human @@@ GOOD; @@@ RELIGION]. But because I speak the truth [Bible Doctrine], you do not believe Me.

## 1 JOHN 5:10

The one who believes [*pisteuo*] in the Son of God has the testimony in himself; the one who does not believe God has made Him a liar [*the unBeliever falsely says that @@@ SALVATION is not by @@@ GRACE but by @@@ RELIGION and human @@@ GOOD*], because he has not believed [*pisteuo*] in the testimony that God has given concerning His Son.

- (3) **Human Works.** Religion rejects God's @@@ GRACE and is a key lie in the multifaceted evil of human @@@ GOOD: "*If we are right with each other, then we are right or acceptable to God*" – Gen. 4:3-7; Isa. 64:6. The religious person wants God to accept his personal good works of human righteousness [-r], termed **self-righteousness**. In turn, religious people superimpose their own subjective ideas about what *they feel* God's characteristics should be instead of seeking knowledge about the real and Perfect God as revealed in the @@@ BIBLE – "*there is a way which seems right to a man, but its end is the way of death*" [Prov. 14:12]. It is never what "you" think, it is always what God thinks. See @@@ TRINITY.
- (4) **Paul and Religion.** Because he was the most self-righteous person of his day as an unBeliever, Paul said he was the "*chief of sinners*" [1 Tim. 1:15].
- (5) **Religion Restrained.** Unless restrained by the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT the followers of religion will murder vast numbers of their fellow humans – Jn. 8:44; 2 Thess. 2:6-7. Thus, religion must be separated from the State per the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS – Matt. 22:21.
- (6) **Heavy Burden.** Religion always places a heavy burden of *never ending* human works and rituals on its adherents with false promises to gain the approbation of God and others. Biblical Christianity gives the Believer "*rest*" from all the man-made nonsense. "*Come to Me, all who are weary and heavy-laden, and I will give you rest*" [Matt. 11:28]; Phil. 5:9; Matt. 23:13.
- (7) **How to Spot Religion.** Only a Believer with @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE can detect the nefarious and entangling webs of religion. It is pure evil.
  - (a) **Phony Front.** Religion has a phony front to impress the gullible "*by their smooth and flattering speech they deceive the hearts of the unsuspecting*" [Rom. 16:18]; Matt. 7:15.

**MATTHEW 7:15**

Beware of the false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly are ravenous wolves. You will know them by their fruits [*karpos*]. Grapes are not gathered from thorn *bushes* nor figs from thistles, are they?

- (b) **Appeals to Arrogance.** Religion appeals to all forms of human arrogance and emotion – 2 Cor. 10:12; 1 Tim. 1:6-7; Rom. 16:17-18.

**1 TIMOTHY 1:6-7**

For some men [*Believers*], straying from these things [*@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE*], have turned aside to fruitless discussion, wanting to be teachers of the Law, even though they do not understand either what they are saying or the matters about which they make confident assertions.

**ROMANS 16:17-18**

Now I [*Paul*] urge you, brethren, keep your eye on those who cause dissensions and hindrances contrary to the teaching which you learned [*@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE*], and turn away from them [*Believers in @@@ REVERSIONISM*]. For such men are slaves, not of our LORD Christ but of their own appetites [*@@@ OLD SIN NATURE*]; and by their smooth and flattering speech they deceive the hearts of the unsuspecting [*akakos*].

- (c) **Gimmicks.** Religion uses props, outward beauty, and PR gimmicks to impress the foolish – 2 Tim. 3:5-7; Gal. 4:17-18; Matt. 23:27-28.

**MATTHEW 23:27-28**

Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you are like whitewashed tombs which on the outside appear beautiful, but inside they are full of dead men's bones and all uncleanness. So you, too, outwardly appear righteous to men but inwardly you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness.

**2 TIMOTHY 3:5**

Holding to a form of godliness [*@@@ RELIGION*], although they have denied its power [*rejection of Bible Doctrine*]; avoid such men as these.

- (d) **Traditions.** Religion emphasizes legalistic man-made traditions – “*teaching as (Bible) doctrines the precepts of men*” [Matt. 15:9]; Col. 3:8; 2 Tim. 4:2-4; Mk. 7:1-9; Col. 2:8; Jn. 12:5-6.

### MARK 7:1-9

The Pharisees and some of the scribes gathered around Him when they [Jesus] had come from Jerusalem, and had seen that some of His disciples were eating their bread with impure hands, that is, unwashed. (For the Pharisees and all the Jews do not eat unless they carefully wash their hands, *thus* observing the traditions [paradosis (a tradition by instruction)] of the elders [the Sanhedrin]; and *when they come* from the market place, they do not eat unless they cleanse themselves; and there are many other things which they have received in order to observe, such as the washing of cups and pitchers and copper pots.) The Pharisees and scribes asked Him, “Why do Your disciples not walk according to the traditions of the elders, but eat their bread with impure hands?” And He said to them, “Rightly did Isaiah prophesy of you hypocrites, as it is written: ‘This people honors Me with their lips, but their heart is far away from Me. But in vain do they worship Me, teaching as doctrines the precepts of men.’ Neglecting the commandment of God, you hold to the tradition of men.” He was also saying to them, “You are experts at setting aside the commandment of God in order to keep your tradition.”

### COLOSSIANS 2:8

See to it that no one takes you captive through philosophy and empty deception, according to the tradition of men, according to the elementary principles of the world [kosmos], rather than according to Christ.

- (e) **Rituals.** Religion has false rituals inspired by demons. “*What profit is the idol when its maker has carved it?*” [Hab. 2:18]; 1 Cor. 10:19-21.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 10:20-21

No, but I [Paul] say that the things which the Gentiles [unBelievers] sacrifice, they sacrifice to demons and not to God; and I do not want you [Believers] to become sharers in demons. You cannot drink the cup of the LORD [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] and the cup of demons [@@@ RELIGION]; you cannot partake of the table of the LORD and the table of demons.



- (f) **Experts.** Religion has false teachers passing themselves off as *experts* and “*teachers of*” God’s word “*even though they do not understand either what they are saying or the matters about which they make confident assertions*” [1 Tim. 1:7]; 2 Cor. 11:13-15; Isa. 9:15-16; 2 Pet. 2:1; Jer. 14:14; 23:25-27; Jude 4.

#### JUDE 4

For certain persons have crept in unnoticed, those who were long beforehand marked out for this condemnation, ungodly persons who turn the grace of our God into licentiousness and deny our only Master and LORD, Jesus Christ [these false teachers even reject @@@ SALVATION by @@@ GRACE].

#### 2 CORINTHIANS 11:13-15

For such men are false apostles, deceitful workers, disguising themselves as apostles of Christ. No wonder, for even Satan disguises himself as an angel of light. Therefore it is not surprising if his servants also disguise themselves as servants of righteousness, whose end will be according to their deeds.

#### 2 PETER 2:1

But false prophets also arose among the people, just as there will also be false teachers among you, who will secretly introduce destructive heresies, even denying [*arneomai*] the Master who bought them [they still have @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY], bringing swift destruction upon themselves [they will suffer the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH].

- (g) **False Righteousness.** Religion has a false righteousness based in large part on the celebration of human good deeds of [-r] righteousness to improve themselves and/or the lot of humanity or the environment therein – Matt. 5:20; 19:16-18; Rom. 10:3; Gal. 3:2-3.

#### MATTHEW 5:20

For I [Jesus] say to you that unless your righteousness [*dikaiousune* – human works of good deeds equal [-r] righteousness] surpasses [*perisseuo* (to exceed a fixed number of measure)] that of the scribes and Pharisees [God rejects the even the most extreme adherents], you will not enter the kingdom of heaven.

## ROMANS 10:3

For not knowing about God's righteousness and seeking to establish their own [@@@ SALVATION by human righteousness], they did not subject themselves to the righteousness of God [the Plan of God for salvation].

- (h) **Lust Stokers.** Religion always panders to human approbation lust from the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE. As such, religion is: (1) overt [Matt. 6:1]; (2) hypocritical [Matt. 6:16]; and (3) legalistic [Phil. 3:9].

## MATTHEW 6:16

Whenever you [Believer] fast, do not put on a gloomy face as the hypocrites [hupokrites – @@@ RELIGION] do, for they neglect their appearance so that they will be noticed by men when they are fasting. Truly I [Jesus] say to you, they have their reward [misthos – man's meaningless approbation] in full.

## 2 TIMOTHY 4:2-4

Preach [kerusso (to teach with gravity)] the word [Paul's instruction to Timothy]; be ready in season and out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort, with great patience and instruction. For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine [didaskalia]; but wanting to have their ears tickled [knetho (to itch)], they will accumulate for themselves teachers in accordance to their own desires [eoithumia (lust) – messages versed in human @@@ GOOD], and will turn away their ears from the truth [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] and will turn aside to myths [muthos (a fable)].

- (i) **Show Me the Money.** Religion always takes advantage of people to get their @@@ MONEY – “*who suppose that godliness is a means of (financial) gain*” [1 Tim. 6:5]; 2 Cor. 12:14-18. Pastor/Teachers do their job for the LORD, “*not for sordid gain*” [1 Pet. 5:2].

## 2 CORINTHIANS 12:1-14

Here for this third time I [Paul] am ready to come to you, and I will not be a burden to you; for I do not seek what is yours [Paul never pressed for @@@ MONEY], but you; for children are not responsible to save up [thesaurizo (to accumulate riches)] for their parents, but parents for their children.

- (j) **Filthy Rags.** Religion's false gospel of human righteousness [-r] is a lie. In truth, "*all our righteous deeds are like a filthy garment*" [Isa. 64:6] relative to God's Perfect Righteousness [+R]. See 2 Cor. 11:3-4; Gal. 1:6-9; 2 Tim. 2:8; Matt. 23:13; Jn. 10:8-9.

### MATTHEW 23:13

Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites [*hupokrites*], because you shut off the kingdom of heaven [*the religious leaders do not teach the Gospel of @@@ SALVATION*] from people; for you do not enter in yourselves [*they reject the Gospel and remain as religious unBelievers*], nor do you allow those who are entering to go in.

### JOHN 10:8-9

All who came before Me [*Jesus*] are thieves and robbers [*lies of @@@ RELIGION*], but the sheep [*those on positive [+P] volition*] did not hear them. I am the door [*@@@ SALVATION*]; if anyone enters through [*dia (by means of)*] Me, he will be saved, and go in and out and find pasture [*Believers that feed off the @@@ BIBLE to reach @@@ MATURITY*].

### GALATIANS 1:6-9

I [*Paul*] am amazed that you [*the Believers in Galatia that Paul taught*] are so quickly deserting Him [*the ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT*] who called you by the grace of Christ, for a different gospel; which is *really* not another; only there are some who are disturbing you and want to distort [*metastrepho (to turn around; distort) – false teachers of @@@ RELIGION*] the gospel of Christ [*@@@ SALVATION by @@@ GRACE*]. But even if we [*Paul and his traveling seminary team*], or an angel from heaven, should preach to you a gospel contrary to what we have preached to you, he is to be accursed [*anathema (a person or thing doomed to destruction) – with the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH if he is a Believer and with @@@ HELL if he is an unBeliever*]! As we have said before, so I say again now, if any man is preaching to you a gospel contrary to what you received, he is to be accursed!

- (k) **False Signs.** Religion has false "*signs*" and "*powers*" [2 Thess. 2:8-10] which will accelerate in the Tribulation. See Rev. 13:13; 2 Tim. 3:5. See @@@ MIRACLES.

## REVELATION 13:13

He [**Jewish False Prophet in the Tribulation**] performs great signs, so that he even makes fire come down out of heaven to the earth in the presence of men. And he deceives those who dwell on the earth because of the signs which it was given him to perform in the presence of the beast [**Revived Roman Dictator**], telling those who dwell on the earth to make an image of the beast who had the wound of the Sword and has come to life.

- (1) **Religion Hates the Truth.** Because the Perfect Light of @@@ GRACE in the person of Jesus Christ exposes the self-centeredness, inadequacy, and pure evil of human @@@ GOOD [-r] works for @@@ SALVATION, religious people hate God and His Divine work – “*because of this the world hates you*” [Jn. 15:19]. See Jn. 3:19-20.

## JOHN 3:19-20

This is the judgment, that the Light [*phos* – **Jesus Christ the God/man**] has come into the world, and men [**unBelievers**] loved the darkness [*skotos* (of night darkness)] rather than the Light, for their deeds were evil [*poneros* (of a bad nature) – the unBeliever with his own righteousness [-r] is attracted only to the evil of human @@@ GOOD]. For everyone who does evil hates [*miseo* (to detest)] the Light [**the unBeliever hates @@@ GRACE**], and does not come to the Light for fear that his deeds will be exposed [*elegcho* – the human works of the unBeliever are not acceptable to God].

- (8) **Not a Religion.** Christianity is not a religion. It is a *relationship* with God appropriated by faith in Jesus Christ. For the unBeliever there is no relationship whatsoever – “*if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Him*” [Rom. 8:9]. See Gal. 3:26. Again, no founder of any of the world’s religions claimed to be a Savior, all were human sinners who simply advocated human @@@ GOOD in one form or the other.

## GALATIANS 3:26

For you [**Believers**] are all sons [*uihos*] of God [*theos*] through faith [*pistis* – the means of @@@ SALVATION is by @@@ FAITH] in Christ Jesus.

## @@@ REPENT

- (1) **Definition.** In the @@@ BIBLE the word *repent* is most often used as a transitive verb, *nacham* (change the mind) in the Hebrew and *metanoeo* (change the mind) in the Greek. Both words have absolutely nothing to do with @@@ EMOTION. For example, a person may put on a blue shirt and then instead, *metanoeo* (change the mind), put on a red shirt – no emotion.
- (2) **Regret.** The Greek word *metamellomai* (change the mind with emotional regret) is correctly translated into the English as “remorse.” For instance, Judas Iscariot did regret his betrayal of Jesus with *metamellomai*, see Matt. 21:29; 27:3; Heb. 7:21. Although Judas was so sincere about his @@@ SIN that he returned the @@@ MONEY and later killed himself, Judas never believed in the LORD Jesus Christ and is in @@@ HELL – Jn. 13:27.

### MATTHEW 27:3

Then when Judas, who had betrayed [*paradidomi* (to give into the hands of another)] Him [Jesus], saw that He had been condemned [*katakrino* (to give judgment against)], he felt remorse [*metamellomai* (change the mind with emotional regret)] and returned the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders.

- (3) **Repent in Salvation.** Repent in the context of eternal @@@ SALVATION in the Bible is always *metanoeo* (change the mind) – the unBeliever exhaling @@@ FAITH is the subject and the object is Jesus Christ. See Lk. 15:10; Mk. 1:4, 14-15; Lk. 13:3, 5; 15:7, 10; 16:30-31; John [everywhere]; Acts 17:30; 20:21; 26:20; Heb. 12:17; 2 Pet. 3:9. As the herald of the Messiah, John the Baptist preached “*repent*” [Mk. 1:15], i.e., “change your mind” about how to be saved. The unBeliever must change his mind about human dead works of religion and accept God’s @@@ GRACE solution for salvation.

### MARK 1:14-15

Now after John [John the Baptist] had been taken into custody, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of God, and saying, “The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand; repent [*metanoeo* (change the mind)] and believe [*pisteuo*] in the gospel [*euaggelion* (good news) – @@@ SALVATION by @@@ FAITH in Christ].”

## HEBREWS 12:17

For you know that even afterwards, when he [Esau] desired to inherit the blessing, he was rejected, for he found no place for repentance [*metanoia* (a change of mind)], though he sought for it with tears [@@@ EMOTION is meaningless for @@@ SALVATION and Esau remained an unBeliever].

- (4) **Repent in Rebound.** Repent is also seen in the Bible when used in the context of warning the Believer to @@@ REBOUND so that he can get out of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS and regain the Filling of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT to then continue on towards spiritual @@@ MATURITY. See Heb. 6:1; Rev. 2:5; 16, 22; 3:15-19; 2 Cor. 12:21; 2 Tim. 2:24-25.

## REVELATION 3:15-19

I [Jesus Christ] know your [Believers in Laodicea] deeds, that you are neither cold [*psuchros* – an unBeliever] nor hot [*zestos* (boiling hot) – a Believer on positive [+P] volition to the Word]; I wish that you were cold [the unBeliever can be given the Gospel] or hot [a positive Believer can be given @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]. So because you are lukewarm [*chliaros* (tepid condition) – a Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM], and neither hot nor cold, I will spit [*emeo*, (vomit)] you out of My mouth [Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING]. Because you say, “I am rich, and have become wealthy, and have need of nothing,” and you do not know that you are wretched and miserable and poor and blind [*tuphlos* (mentally blind)] and naked, I advise you to buy from Me gold [*chrusion* (gold which lies embedded in the earth) – Bible Doctrine is gold in the earth] refined [*purao* (to burn with fire)] by fire [*pur* – the job of the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER is to take the ore, refine it into gold coins, and give it to the congregation as their spiritual @@@ MONEY] so that you may become rich [*plouteo* (to be affluent in resources) – the Believer can now reach @@@ MATURITY], and white garments so that you may clothe yourself [@@@ REWARDS], and *that* the shame of your nakedness will not be revealed [at the Judgment Seat of Christ]; and eye salve to anoint your eyes so that you may see [the Believer sees God through the @@@ BIBLE]. Those whom I love [*phileo* (personal love) – all Believers], I reprove [*elegcho* (to correct)] and discipline [*paideuo* (to train children) – Divine Discipline]; therefore be zealous [*zeloo* (to be heated or to boil) – be on positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine] and repent [*metanoeo* (change the mind) – @@@ REBOUND and advance to spiritual maturity].



## REVELATION 2:5

Therefore remember from where you have fallen [*pipto* (to descend from a higher place to a lower place) – these Believers are now on negative [-N] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], and repent [*metanoeo* (change the mind) – @@@ REBOUND] and do the deeds you did at first [positive [+P] volition and faithful to the Word]; or else I [God] am coming to you and will remove [*kineo* – Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING] your lampstand out of its place [Church in Ephesus]—unless you repent [*metanoeo*].

## 2 TIMOTHY 2:25

With gentleness [the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER] correcting those who are in opposition [*antidiatithemai*], if perhaps God may grant [*didomi* (to give)] them [the Believers that are on negative [-N] volition to learning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE and in opposition to the Pastor/Teacher] repentance [*metanoia* (a change of mind)] leading to the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of the truth [*aletheia* – the complete realm of Bible Doctrine].

- (5) **Anthropomorphism.** God is absolute Righteousness [+R] and Immutability so He cannot @@@ SIN, have regret, or repent. See @@@ TRINITY. However, sometimes “repent” is used as an anthropomorphism [ascribing to God a human characteristic to explain to mankind His policy or action] with God as the subject. See Gen. 6:6; Ex. 32:14; Jdg. 2:18; 1 Sam. 15:35; Jer. 15:6; Amos 7:3, 6; Heb. 7:21. The classic anthropomorphism, “God hates” “God loves,” is found in the case of twins Jacob and Esau – Mal. 1:1-3; Rom. 9:13. Even though Jacob was far inferior to his brother Esau in terms of human decency, Jacob was a Believer and Esau was not. Thus, God expresses His Divine attitude in language of accommodation as loving only Jacob, because Jacob had God’s Perfect Righteousness [+R] – Gen. 15:6. Esau only had his own [-r] human righteousness to offer, which is unacceptable to God.

## ROMANS 9:13

Just as it is written, “Jacob I loved [*agapao* (to love dearly) – Jacob was a Believer in the family of God who possessed God’s [+R] Righteousness], but Esau I hated [*miseo* (to hate; detest) – Esau refused @@@ SALVATION and only had his own human [-r] to show; he was not in the family of God].”

## @@@ RESURRECTION

- (1) **Definition.** The term “resurrection” refers to the time when the Believer acquires a new, indestructible, supernatural body that will be the ultimate and eternal home for his @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT in @@@ HEAVEN. This body will be exactly in the pattern of the resurrection body of the LORD Jesus Christ. The Believer’s old physical body disintegrates into the elements.
- (2) **General Resurrection Passages.** Scriptures that describe resurrection in general include: Dan. 12:13; Ps. 16:10; Rev. 20:6, 13; Jn. 5:28-29; 11:25-27; Rom. 8:11; Heb. 6:1-3, 13; Phil. 3:20-21; 1 Cor. 15:20-26.

## JOHN 5:25-28

Truly, truly, I [Jesus] say to you, an hour is coming and now is [idiom for the reality of resurrection], when the dead [nekros] will hear the voice of the Son of God, and those who hear will live. For just as the Father has life in Himself, even so He gave to the Son [humanity of Christ] also to have life in Himself [Jesus Christ will receive a resurrection body]; and He [God the Father] gave to Him [Jesus Christ] authority [exousia (power of choice)] to execute judgment [krisis], because He is the Son of Man [Jesus Christ is the Son of Man per Dan. 7:13-14]. Do not marvel at this; for an hour is coming, in which all who are in the tombs [mnemeion – all dead humans] will hear His voice, and will come forth; those who did the good deeds [agathos – the Divine Good of belief in Christ for @@@ SALVATION] to a resurrection [anastasis] of life [zoe] – the Believer in @@@ HEAVEN, those who committed [prasso (to practice)] the evil deeds [phaulos (worthless) – unBelievers that rejected the Gospel] to a resurrection of judgment [krisis – all unBelievers to the Great White Throne @@@ JUDGMENT and then to the Lake of Fire].

## DANIEL 12:13

But as for you [Daniel], go your way to the end; then you will enter into rest [nuach (to repose) – Daniel will experience physical @@@ DEATH] and rise again [amad (to stand; to present oneself) – in the future Daniel will rise from the dead and stand in a @@@ RESURRECTION body] for your allotted portion [goral (recompense) – Daniel’s @@@ REWARDS] at the end of the age [the Jewish Age, which consists of the missing seven years of Daniel’s “70th week” prophecy, ends at the 2nd Advent of Christ].

## HEBREWS 6:1-3

Therefore leaving [*aphiemi* (to send forth)] the elementary [*arche* (beginning; origin)] teaching [*logos* (what is declared) – the basic categories of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] about [1] the Christ [*christos* (the anointed one) – the person and work of Jesus Christ in @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION], let us press on to maturity [*teleiotes* (the state of the more intelligent) – the positive [+P] volition Believer's goal is to reach @@@ MATURITY], not laying again [*palin*] a foundation [*themelios*] of [2] repentance [*metanoia* (a change of mind)] from dead [*nekros*] works [*ergon* – the change of mind about the false claim of @@@ SALVATION by human works of @@@ RELIGION] and [3] of faith [*pistis* – @@@ FAITH/Rest] toward God, [4] of instruction about washings and laying on of hands [@@@ REBOUND], and [5] the resurrection [*anastasis* – @@@ RESURRECTION] of the dead [*nekros* (physical death)] and [6] eternal [*aionios* (without beginning and without end)] judgment [*krima* – Great White Throne @@@ JUDGMENT for the unBeliever and fallen @@@ ANGELS]. And this we will do, if God permits.

## ROMANS 8:11

But if the Spirit [@@@ HOLY SPIRIT] of Him who raised [*egeiro* (to cause to rise)] Jesus from the dead [*nekros* (physical death)] dwells [*oikeyo*] in you [the Believer], He [Holy Spirit] who raised Christ Jesus from the dead will also give life [*zoopoieo* (to produce alive)] to your mortal [*thnetos* (liable to death)] bodies [*soma* – the Believer will get a @@@ RESURRECTION body] through His Spirit [the Holy Spirit is the member of the @@@ TRINITY that performs the task] who dwells in [*oikeyo* (to dwell in)] you.

## JOHN 11:25-27

Jesus said to her [Martha], “I am the resurrection [*anastasis* (to raise up from the dead in a new body) – @@@ RESURRECTION] and the life [*zoe*]; he who believes [*pisteuo*] in Me will live [*zao* – eternal life with God in @@@ HEAVEN] even if he dies [*apothnesko* – physical @@@ DEATH], and everyone who lives and believes in Me will never die [*apothnesko* (to be subject to the eternal misery of hell) – the Believer is delivered out of spiritual death and @@@ HELL]. Do you believe this?” She said to Him, “Yes, LORD [*kurios* (God)]; I have believed [*pisteuo*] that You are the Christ [*Christos*], the Son of God, even He who comes into the world [*kosmos*].”

## PHILIPPIANS 3:20-21

For our citizenship is in heaven, from which also we eagerly wait for a Savior [*soter* (deliverer)], the LORD Jesus Christ; who will transform [*metaschematizo* (to change the figure of)] the body of our humble state [*the mortal human body of the Believer*] into conformity [*summorphos* (having the same form as another)] with the body of His glory [*doxa* – a @@@ **RESURRECTION** body like Christ's], by the exertion of the power [*dunamai*] that He has even to subject [*hupotasso*] all things to Himself.

## PHILIPPIANS 3:11

In order that I may attain to the resurrection [*exanastasis* (rising from the dead) – Paul anticipated a @@@ **RESURRECTION** body] from the dead.

- (3) **Resurrection Order.** Believers in the various @@@ **DISPENSATIONS** will be resurrected in their own order at separate phases, called *tagma* (order), starting with Church Age Believers at the Rapture – 1 Cor. 15:20-26.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 15:20-26

But now Christ has been raised from the dead, the first fruits of those who are asleep [*koimao* – all Believers who have died will get a resurrection body like Jesus Christ's]. For since by a man [*Adam*] came death [*thanatos* (death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – spiritual @@@ **DEATH**], by a man [*Jesus Christ*] also came resurrection [*anastasis* (rising up)] of the dead [*nekros*]. For as in Adam all die [*apothnesko* (of eternal death; to be subject to eternal misery in hell) – spiritual death], so also in Christ all [*the opportunity for salvation per @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT*] will be made alive. But each in his own order [*tagma* (organized as in a body of soldiers)]: Christ the first fruits, after that those who are Christ's at His coming [*parousia* (arrival; advent) – @@@ **RAPTURE**], then comes the end [*telos*], when He hands over the kingdom to the God and Father, when He has abolished [*katargeo* (to deprive of force)] all rule [*arche* – demon officers] and all authority [*exousia* – demon senior officers] and power [*the @@@ **WORLD** at the 2nd Advent*]. For He [*Jesus Christ*] must reign [*basileuo* (to be and exercise kingly authority)] until He has put all His enemies under His feet [*Operation @@@ **FOOTSTOOL***]. The last enemy that will be abolished [*katargeo* (to deprive of force)] is death [*thanatos*].

- (a) **A Company – Jesus Christ.** To date, only the LORD Jesus Christ has a resurrection body and He is currently seated at the right hand of God the Father in @@@ HEAVEN per Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL – “*the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead*” [1 Pet. 1:3]. See 1 Cor. 15:3-8, 20, 23; Rom. 1:14; 1 Thess. 1:10; 2 Tim. 2:8; Mk. 16:9-14; Lk. 24:1-48; Acts 2:30-34; Jn. 21 & 22; Matt. 28.

### ACTS 2:30-32

And so, because he [David] was a prophet and knew that God had sworn to him with an oath to seat *one* of his descendants on his throne, he looked ahead and spoke of the resurrection [*anastasis* – @@@ RESURRECTION] of the Christ, that He was neither abandoned [*egkataleipo* (to desert)] to Hades, nor did His flesh [*sarx*] suffer decay [*diaphthora* (decay of the body after death)]. This Jesus God raised up again, to which we are all witnesses [*matrus* (witness in a legal sense)].

### 1 CORINTHIANS 15:3-8

For I [Paul] delivered [*paradidomi* (to deliver into the hands something to keep)] to you [the Believers in Corinth] as of first importance what I also received, that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures, and that He was buried, and that He was raised on the third day according to the Scriptures, and that He appeared [*horao* (to see with the eyes)] to Cephas [Aramaic for Peter], then to the twelve [the technical use of the term for the disciples minus Judas]. After that He appeared to more than five hundred brethren at one time, most of whom remain until now, but some have fallen asleep [*kaimao* – the term @@@ SLEEP describes the physical @@@ DEATH of a Believer]; then He appeared to James, then to all the apostles; and last of all, as to one untimely born, He appeared to me also.

- (b) **B Company – The Church.** All Church Age Believers, living and deceased, will get a resurrection body at the time of the @@@ RAPTURE of the Church. See 1 Thess. 4:13-18; 1 Cor. 15:51-55, 57; Phil. 3:13, 20-21; 1 Jn. 3:1-2; Jn. 14:1-3. All Church Age Believers are no longer classified as Jews or Gentiles but members of the Body of Christ – 1 Cor. 10:32; Rom. 6:5. Believers anticipate it – Gal. 5:5. Paul noted in his day that the Rapture could occur at any time – Phil. 3:10-11; 2 Cor. 5:2-3. Peter also expected it to occur – 2 Pet. 3:14-15.



## 1 THESSALONIANS 4:13-17

But we [Paul and his traveling seminary team] do not want you [Believers] to be uninformed [*agnoeo* (to be ignorant)], brethren, about those who are asleep [*koimao* – deceased Church Age Believers; @@@ SLEEP], so that you will not grieve as do the rest who have no hope [*elpis* (confident expectation) – unBelievers]. For if we believe that Jesus died [*apothnesko*] and rose [*anistemi* (to rise up) – in His @@@ RESURRECTION body] again, even so God will bring with Him those who have fallen asleep in Jesus [the dead Church Age Believers in their resurrection bodies]. For this we say to you by the word of the LORD, that we who are alive and remain [living Church Age Believers] until the coming [*parousia* (arrival; advent)] of the LORD [at the @@@ RAPTURE], will not precede those who have fallen asleep. For the LORD Himself will descend [*katabaino* (to go down)] from heaven with a shout [*keleuma* (an order)], with the voice of *the* archangel [*archaggelos* (a chief angel)] and with the trumpet of God, and the dead [*nekros* (physical death)] in Christ will rise [*anistemi* – in a resurrection body] first. Then we who are alive [*zao*] and remain will be caught up [*harpaxo* (to snatch out or away) – in resurrection bodies] together with them in the clouds [*nephele* (a cloud)] to meet [*apantesis* (to meet one)] the LORD [Jesus Christ] in the air [*aer* (the atmospheric region) – the place of the Rapture], and so we shall always [*pantote* (at all times; forever)] be with the LORD [@@@ HEAVEN].

## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:2-3

For indeed in this *house* [the mortal bodies] we [Believers in the Church Age] groan [*stenazo* (to sigh)], longing [*epipotheo* (to long for; desire)] to be clothed [*ependuomai* (to put on over)] with our dwelling from heaven, inasmuch as we, having put it on [the @@@ RESURRECTION body], will not be found [*heurisko* (to come upon)] naked [*gumnos* (unclad)].

## PHILIPPIANS 3:13

Brethren, I [Paul] do not regard [*logizomai* (to calculate)] myself as having laid hold of *it* yet; [the highest level of @@@ MATURITY]; but one thing *I* do: forgetting [*epilanthanomai* (forgetting; given over to oblivion)] what *lies* behind [Paul's used @@@ REBOUND] and reaching forward to [*epekteinomai* (to stretch out to or towards)] what *lies* ahead [*emprosthen* (in the sight of) – @@@ REWARDS and a @@@ RESURRECTION body].



## ROMANS 6:5

For if we have become united [*sumphutos* (born together with)] with *Him* [@@@ UNION WITH CHRIST] in the likeness of His [Jesus Christ] death [*thanatos*], certainly we shall also be *in the likeness* of His resurrection [*anastasis* – the Believer receives a @@@ RESURRECTION body].

- (c) **C Company – Old Testament Believers + Tribulation Believers.**  
 These Believers will get a resurrection body just prior to the 2nd Advent of LORD Jesus Christ along with their own turn at the Judgment Seat of Christ for evaluation and @@@ REWARDS. See Dan. 12:2, 13; Isa. 26:19-20; 65:1-3; Matt. 24:31; Rev. 19:11-16; 20:4; Job 19:25-26.

## REVELATION 19:11-16

And I [John] saw heaven [*ouranos*] opened, and behold, a white [*leukos* (brilliant from whiteness)] horse [*hippos*], and He [Jesus Christ at the 2nd Advent in His @@@ RESURRECTION body] who sat on it is called Faithful [*pistos*] and True [*alethinos* (that which has not only the name and resemblance, but the real nature corresponding to the name)], and in righteousness [*dikaioisune* (the doctrine concerning the way in which man may attain a state of approval by Perfect God) – what the Righteousness [+R] of God demands, the Justice of God will execute] He judges [*krino*] and wages war [*polemeo*]. His eyes are a flame of fire, and on His head are many diadems [*diadema* (the kingly ornament for the head)]; and He has a name written on Him which no one knows except Himself. He is clothed with a robe [*himation* (the upper garment)] dipped [*bapto* (to immerse)] in blood [*aima*], and His name is called The Word of God [the @@@ BIBLE is the mind of Christ]. And the armies [*strateuma*] which are in heaven, clothed in fine linen, white and clean, were following Him on white horses [these are Believers in resurrection bodies and countless numbers of @@@ ANGELS]. From His mouth comes a sharp sword [*rhomphaia* (a large sword)], so that with it He may strike down the nations [*ethnos* – all those humans that are then attacking the Jews in Jerusalem at the end of the Tribulation under Satan's direction and extending out to all unBelievers], and He will rule them with a rod of iron [His @@@ AUTHORITY in the Millennium]; and He treads the wine press of the fierce wrath of God, the Almighty. And on His robe and on His thigh He has a name written, "King of Kings, and LORD of LORDS."

## DANIEL 12:2

Many [*rab* (abounding in numbers)] of those who sleep [*yashen*] in the dust of the ground [*adamah* – physical @@@ DEATH] will awake [*matsa* – Believers are said to be in a state of @@@ SLEEP waiting for their @@@ RESURRECTION bodies], these to everlasting [*olam* (without end)] life [*chay* – the Believer receives a resurrection body and lives with God forever], but the others to disgrace and everlasting contempt [*deraon* (abhorrence) – the unBeliever in the Lake of Fire].

## JOB 19:25-26

As for me [Job], I know [*yada* (to learn to know)] that my Redeemer [*gaal* – the Savior who would come and pay the price for @@@ SALVATION] lives, and at the last [*acharyon* (later; subsequent time)] He will take His stand [*qumo* (to arise)] on the earth [*aphar* (dry earth) – the First Advent of Jesus Christ]. Even after my skin is destroyed [physical @@@ DEATH], yet from my flesh [*bawar* (of the body) – Job will have a @@@ RESURRECTION body] I shall see [*chazah* (to behold)] God [Jesus Christ at the 2nd Advent].

## ISAIAH 63:1-3

Who is this who comes from Edom [Christ in a @@@ RESURRECTION body at the 2nd Advent], with garments of glowing colors from Bozrah, this One who is majestic in His apparel, marching in the greatness of His strength [Christ accompanied by Believers in resurrection bodies]? “It is I [Christ] who speak in righteousness, mighty to save [*yasha* (to deliver)].” Why is Your apparel red, and Your garments like the one who treads in the wine press? I [Jesus Christ] have trodden the wine trough alone, and from the peoples there was no man with Me [only Christ died on the @@@ CROSS]. I also trod them [unBelievers at the 2nd Advent] in My anger and trampled them in My wrath; and their lifeblood [*netsach* (blood; gore)] is sprinkled on My garments, and I stained all My raiment [*malbush* (clothing)].

1. **Acts 2:29** – Peter states in A.D. 30, that David, an Old Testament Believer, is not yet resurrected. “*I may confidently say to you regarding the patriarch David that he both died and was buried, and his tomb is with us today*” [Acts 2:29]. Note: When Rome razed Jerusalem in A.D. 70, the tombs are now unidentifiable.

2. **Moses and Elijah.** The two Old Testament prophets in Rev. 11:3-13, could not die physically in the Tribulation if they had resurrection bodies. They will be *reanimated* in mortal human bodies for this special “end times” mission of mass evangelism.
3. **Dead Believers.** In Matt. 27:51-52, some recently deceased Believers were brought back from the dead in A.D. 30. They were simply reanimated and subsequently died again thereafter.
4. **Seven Years Left.** Per @@@ DISPENSATIONS, the set time allotted for Israel is not quite over yet – Dan. 9:26-27. God owes 7 years to the Jews, which will occur in the Tribulation. Each day of Daniel’s 70th week prophecy represents a year – Num. 14:34. The Messiah was “*cut off*” and died physically in circa A.D. 30, which made the eschatological clock stop with 7 years remaining. At this point the Church Age began. The clock restarts at the @@@ RAPTURE with the removal of the Church and terminates at the 2nd Advent of Christ, 7 years later.
5. **Old Testament Covenants.** The eternal @@@ COVENANTS to Israel demand a resurrection body for Believers.
6. **PCS.** The permanent change of station [PCS] transfer in A.D. 30, led by Jesus Christ, of all Old Testament saints out from Paradise in @@@ HELL to the Third @@@ HEAVEN involved their @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT only – 2 Cor. 5:1-3; Eph. 4:8-10; Lk. 16:19-31; 23:43. Again, no dead Believer as of yet has been given a resurrection body. *See supra* (3).

## EPHESIANS 4:8-10

Therefore it says, “When He [Jesus Christ in His @@@ RESURRECTION body] ascended on high [*hupsos* (of a place, heaven)], He led captive a host of captives [the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT of the Old Testament Believers in Paradise], and He gave gifts to men.” (Now this *expression*, “He ascended,” what does it mean except that He also had descended into the lower parts of the earth [*ge* – into Paradise]? He who descended is Himself also He who ascended far above all the heavens [*ouranos* – Third @@@ HEAVEN], so that He might fill [Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL] all things).

## LUKE 23:43

And He [Jesus] said to him, “Truly I say to you [the thief being executed next to Jesus as He hung on the @@@ CROSS], today [semeron (this very day)] you shall be with Me in Paradise [paradeisos – Paradise or Abraham’s Bosom is a separate compartment in @@@ HELL which was the temporary abode of the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT of Believers in the Old Testament].”

- (d) **D Company – Millennial Believers.** All those Believers who die during, or who are alive at the conclusion of, the Millennium will get their resurrection body and any Judgment Seat of Christ @@@ REWARDS at the end of the Millennium. Then, human @@@ HISTORY closes at that time and there are no more mortal humans.
- (4) **The Second Death.** The so-called “second” [Rev. 20:14-15] @@@ DEATH is restricted to all unBelievers. It refers to the spiritual death of the unBeliever at his final @@@ JUDGMENT and separation to the “Lake of Fire.” Christ died twice on the @@@ CROSS so that Believers now need only die once [physical], Isa. 53:9. This second death event occurs at the end of the Millennium. See Matt. 25:41; Jn. 5:29; Dan. 12:2; 2 Pet. 3:9.

## REVELATION 20:14-15

Then death [thanatos (death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – spiritual @@@ DEATH] and Hades were thrown [ballo] into the lake [limne (a lake)] of fire [pur (burning)]. This is the second [deuteros] death [thanatos], the lake of fire [eternal separation from God]. And if anyone’s name was not found written in the book [biblos] of life [zoe – the unBeliever has been blotted out of the Book of Life], he was thrown into the lake of fire.

- (5) **Resurrection Confirms Justification.** The physical resurrection of the LORD Jesus Christ indicates the completeness of justification in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD. In other words, His supernatural resurrection from the dead is an unbreakable guarantee of the Believer’s own ultimate sanctification in the future – 1 Cor. 15; Gal. 5:5; Jn. 13:31-32. Again, the Davidic @@@ COVENANTS demand that Jesus’ human soul in @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION remains alive forever in an indestructible body – 2 Sam. 7:8-16; Ps. 89:20-37; Ezk. 37:24; Jer. 33:14-26. This was fulfilled in the LORD Jesus Christ and will extend to all Believers in all @@@ DISPENSATIONS.

**EZEKIEL 37:24**

My servant David [**King David has been dead for over 500**] will be king over them [**at the 2nd Advent the LORD Jesus Christ, the direct descendant of King David, will rule over the Jews forever**], and they will all have one shepherd; and they will walk in My ordinances and keep My statutes and observe them.

- (6) **Description of Resurrection Body.** The @@@ BIBLE provides some limited descriptions of the resurrection body of Jesus Christ.
- (a) **Jesus' Scars.** The unique scars in Jesus' resurrection body are retained as an eternal memorial to His work on the @@@ CROSS and @@@ GRACE – Ps. 22:16; Zech. 12:10; Jn. 20:19-29. All other resurrection bodies will have no scars, deformities, or blemishes of any sort.

**ZECHARIAH 12:10**

I [**God**] will pour out on the house of David and on the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the Spirit of grace and of supplication, so that they will look on Me [**Jesus Christ**] whom they have pierced [*daqar*]; and they will mourn for Him, as one mourns for an only son, and they will weep bitterly over Him like the bitter weeping over a firstborn.

**JOHN 20:24-25**

But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came. So the other disciples were saying to him, “We have seen the LORD!” But he said to them, “Unless I see in His hands the imprint of the nails, and put my finger into the place of the nails, and put my hand into His side, I will not believe [**that Jesus Christ had risen from the dead**].”

- (b) **Jesus' Resurrection Body.** (1) Jesus was recognized by those that knew Him [Jn. 20:20]; (2) Jesus could eat and drink but didn't have to [Lk. 24:42-43]; (3) Jesus had physical substance [Matt. 28:9; Lk. 24:39; Jn. 20:17]; (4) Jesus could breathe but it was not necessary [Jn. 20:22]; (5) Jesus had a special type of indestructible “*flesh and bones*” [Lk. 24:39-40; Jn. 2:19]; (6) Jesus could go through solid objects [Lk. 24:36; Jn. 20:19]; (7) Jesus could appear and disappear [Lk. 24:15, 31]; and (8) Jesus could move in any direction [Matt. 28:10; Acts 1:9-10].

- (7) **Raising Jesus Up.** After Jesus' Perfect human soul remained in Paradise for three days and nights, God the Father and God the Holy Spirit, the other two members of the @@@ TRINITY, had a part in the resurrection of Jesus from the dead. God the Father put Jesus' human spirit which was in @@@ HEAVEN into the resurrection body [Acts 2:24; Eph. 1:20; 1 Thess. 1:10; Rom. 6:4; Col. 2:12; 1 Pet. 1:21] and the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT put Jesus' human soul into the resurrection body [Rom. 1:4; 8:11; 1 Pet. 3:18]. There was no trace of the mortal body in the tomb, only neatly folded grave clothes.
- (8) **Belief in Resurrection.** Believers that do not believe in the doctrine of the resurrection or in the resurrection body, such as many in the Corinthian Church of Paul's day, only demonstrate their stupidity in rejecting this key @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – 1 Cor. 15:12-19; 2 Tim. 2:17-18.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 15:12-19.

Now if Christ is preached [*kerusso (to proclaim)*], that He has been raised [*egeiro*] from the dead [*nekros (physical death)*], how do some among you say that there is no resurrection [*anastasis*] of the dead? But if there is no resurrection of the dead, not even Christ has been raised; and if Christ has not been raised, then our preaching is vain [*kenos (empty)*], your faith also is vain. Moreover we are even found *to be* false witnesses of God, because we testified against God that He raised Christ, whom He did not raise, if in fact the dead are not raised. For if the dead are not raised, not even Christ has been raised; and if Christ has not been raised, your faith is worthless; you are still in your sins. Then those also who have fallen asleep [**dead Believers; @@@ SLEEP**] in Christ have perished. If we have hoped in Christ in this life only, we are of all men most to be pitied.

### 2 TIMOTHY 2:17-18

And their [**false teachers**] talk will spread like gangrene [*gaggraina*]. Among them are Hymenaeus and Philetus, *men* who have gone astray from the truth [*aletheia* – the two false teachers were in @@@ REVERSIONISM and the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS] saying that the resurrection [*anastasis (rising from the dead)* – falsely claimed that the @@@ RAPTURE had already happened] has already taken place, and they upset [*anatrepo (to overturn)*] the faith [*pistis* – the body of correct @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] of some.



## @@@ REVERSIONISM

- (1) **Definition.** The term “reversionism” is used to describe a Believer who has reverted from his former practice of learning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE and advancing in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE and is instead now living and operating in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS of Satan. The reversionist is no longer @@@ WALKING properly in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD and being “*transformed by the renewing of his mind*” [Rom. 12:2] to reflect Jesus Christ, but is in Operational @@@ DEATH – Matt. 5:13.
  - (a) **COSMIC I** – Satan’s policy before man’s creation. The focus is always on self. Any Believer operating in this system is said to “*grieve the Holy Spirit*” [Eph. 4:30].
  - (b) **COSMIC II** – Satan’s additional policy is focused on opposing Bible Doctrine where the Believer becomes “*conformed to this world*” [Rom. 12:2] and is said to “*quench the (Holy) Spirit*” [1 Thess. 5:19].

### ROMANS 12:2

And [Believer] do not be conformed [*suschematizo* (to conform one’s self to another’s pattern)] to this world [*aion* (period of time) – Satan’s @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], but be transformed [*metamorphoo* – the Believer is expected to reject the Cosmic Systems and transform himself to the status of spiritual @@@ MATURITY] by the renewing [*anakainosis* (a renewal; complete change for the better to another form)] of your mind [*nous* – transformation of the positive [+P] volition Believer’s thinking requires maximum @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT], so that you may prove [*dokimazo* (to test; to prove)] what the will [*thelema*] of God is [the Believer is commanded to reach maturity], that which is good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] and acceptable [*euairestos* (well pleasing)] and perfect [*teleios* (to make complete)].

- (2) **Life in the Cosmic Systems. Loser** Believers in the status of reversionism are living in Satan’s @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS and although they cannot lose their @@@ SALVATION and will be in @@@ HEAVEN, they are designated by many derogatory labels.
  - (a) “*Enemies of the Cross*” – Phil. 3:18-19.

## PHILIPPIANS 3:18-19

For many walk [*peripateo* (a lifestyle) – the @@@ WALKING of the Loser negative [-N] volition Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM], of whom I [Paul] often told you, and now tell you even weeping, *that they are* enemies [*echthros* (hated; odious; opposing God in the mind)] of the cross [*stauros* – @@@ CROSS] of Christ, whose end is destruction [*apoleia* – they will die the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH], whose god is *their* appetite [*koilia* – their @@@ EMOTION is key to them], and *whose* glory [*doxa* – the Loser Believer glories in human @@@ GOOD] is in their shame [*aiscuhne* (sense of shame)], who set their minds [*phroneo* (to feel; to think)] on earthly things [they are firmly in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS].

(b) “*Enemy of God*” – Js. 4:4; Rom. 8:7.

## JAMES 4:4

You adulteresses [*moichalis* – negative [-N] volition Believers in @@@ REVERSIONISM], do you not know [*heneka* (on account of)] that friendship [*philia*] with the world [*kosmos* – Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD and has set up his @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS] is hostility [*echthra*] toward God? Therefore whoever wishes to be a friend of the world makes himself an enemy [*echthros* (opposing God in the mind)] of God.

(c) “*Hates Me* (Jesus Christ); *Hates My Father*” – Jn. 15:23.

## JOHN 15:23

He who hates [*miseo*] Me [Jesus Christ] hates My Father also.

(d) “*Double Minded*” – Js. 4:8.

## JAMES 4:8

Draw near to God and He will draw near to you. Cleanse your hands, you sinners [@@@ REBOUND]; and purify [*hagnizo*] your hearts, you double-minded [*dipsuchos* – the Believer in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS].

(e) “*Fleshly*” – *sarkikos* (carnal). See 1 Cor. 3:3.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 3:3

For you [Believers in Corinth] are still fleshly [*sarkikos* (carnal) – the negative [-N] volition carnal Believer under the control of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE]. For since there is jealousy [*zelos*] and strife [*eris* (wrangling; contention)] among you, are you not fleshly [*sarkikos* (carnal) – following the Old Sin Nature], and are you not walking [*peripateo* – @@@ WALKING as a lifestyle] like mere men [imitating the unBeliever]?

(f) “*Infants*” – 1 Cor. 3:1-2.

(g) “*Severed From Christ*” and “*Fallen From Grace*” – Gal. 5:4.

## GALATIANS 5:4

You [Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM] have been severed [*katargeo* (to render idle; unemployed) – Operational @@@ DEATH] from Christ, you who are seeking to be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] by law [*nomos* – these Believers rejected the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE and followed the @@@ MOSAIC LAW]; you have fallen [*ekipto* (to fall out)] from grace [*charis* – these Believers are still saved under @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY but @@@ GRACE cannot operate with @@@ RELIGION].

(h) “*Anti-Christ*” – 1 Jn. 2:18, 22; 4:3; 2 Jn. 7. This is apart from the person called the “*beast*” [Rev. 13:1-10] in the Tribulation, who is also called *the* Anti-Christ. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.

(3) **Other Synonyms.** Various synonyms for the status of being in reversionism include: (1) “*driven and tossed*” [Js. 1:6]; (2) “*uncircumcised of heart*” [Jer. 9:25-26]; (3) “*falling from grace*” [Heb. 12:15]; (4) “*tortured soul*” [2 Pet. 2:7-8]; (5) “*unstable soul*” [2 Pet. 2:14]; (6) “*fallen*” [Rev. 2:5]; (7) “*left your first love*” [Rev. 2:4]; (8) “*lukewarm*” [Rev. 3:15-16]; (9) “*shipwrecked*” [1 Tim. 1:19] and (10) “*denying the Master who bought them*” [2 Pet. 2:1].

(4) **Collapse of the Pivot.** Reversionistic Believers residing in a Client Nation contribute to the collapse of the @@@ PIVOT due to their negative [-N] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – Jer. 9:24; 29:19; Hos. 4:1-8; 1 Pet. 2:9. Only positive [+P] volition Winner Believers who reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY can deliver a nation from adversity – Eccl. 9:13-15.

## JEREMIAH 29:19

“Because they [Client Nation of Judah] have not listened to My words,” declares the LORD, “which I sent to them again and again by My servants the prophets; but you did not listen [negative [-N] volition],” declares the LORD.

- (5) **Operational Death.** The positive [+P] volition Believer out of Fellowship with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT will soon @@@ REBOUND from his status of Temporal @@@ DEATH, whereas the negative [-N] volition Believer in reversionism is in Operational Death and will most likely not Rebound. Jesus: *“No one, after putting hands to the plow (advancing to maturity) and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God”* [Lk. 9:62]. Illustrations of this include:

- (a) **Demas.** In circa A.D. 61, Demas is recognized by Paul as a Believer on his team that is on positive [+P] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – Col. 4:14. However, in circa A.D. 67, Paul indicates that Demas is now in reversionism – 2 Tim. 4:10. Then, at some point later, John writes that Demas had since recovered from reversionism and grown to spiritual @@@ MATURITY – 3 Jn. 12.

## COLOSSIANS 4:14

Luke, the beloved physician [*iatros (a physician)* – Luke is a mature Believer and close companion of Paul], sends you his greetings, and also Demas [Demas is a mature Believer].

## 2 TIMOTHY 4:10

For Demas, having loved [*agapao (to love dearly)*] this present world – Demas is in @@@ REVERSIONISM and in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], has deserted [*egkataleipo (to leave in straits)*] me [Paul] and gone to Thessalonica; Crescens has gone to Galatia, Titus to Dalmatia.

## 3 JOHN 12

Demetrius [Demas] has received a good testimony [*martureo (to be a witness)*] from everyone, and from the truth itself; and we [the Apostle John and his traveling seminary in Ephesus] add our testimony [Demas recovered from @@@ REVERSIONISM], and you know that our testimony is true.

- (b) **Paul.** When Paul went to Jerusalem in A.D. 58, and performed acts of legalism in the Jewish Temple he went into full blown reversionism – Acts 21. This was beyond normal sin as when Paul acted in legalism in Acts 15:37-39, regarding [John] Mark on the second missionary journey. Note: In A.D. 62, Paul welcomed John Mark – Col. 4:10.
- (c) **David.** “Operation Bathsheba” covered in 2 Sam. 11 & 12, was King David’s longest period out of Fellowship – almost a year. David was in reversionism and under severe Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING during this terrible period. See Ps. 32; 38; 51.
- (d) **Solomon.** A positive Believer initially, Solomon turned away from @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE after he became King of Israel and in Eccl. 1–12, he described his Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING. In short, calling everything “*vanity*,” Solomon lost the capacity to enjoy his many temporal blessings to include @@@ MARRIAGE which is the subject of *Song of Solomon*. Only in his old age did Solomon consistently @@@ REBOUND and take in Bible Doctrine on a regular basis so that he reached @@@ MATURITY.

## ECCLESIASTES 1–12

1:13-14

Academic knowledge. Vanity is scar tissue on the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT.

2:1-17

Comedy, booze, construction projects, human good works [:16]. Solomon still hated life [:17]. The reversionist cannot enjoy his prosperity.

2:21-26

“*For there is a man whose labor is wisdom* (this particular man studied @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE and was a mature Believer) . . . *this one* (Solomon) *is* (by contrast) *vanity* (the LORD permitted Solomon to encounter a mature Believer who put Solomon to shame).”

4:1-7

“*So I returned*” – Solomon uses @@@ REBOUND. But at verse :2, it is clear that Solomon still has heavy scar tissue on the soul as he even stupidly praises the dead; but at verse :7, he uses Rebound again.

5:15

Solomon still reflects scar tissue on the soul. Even though all his material “things” do not please him, he wants to take them with him!

12:1-6

Solomon fears aging – hands tremble, legs weak, “*grinding ones* (teeth),” “*sound of the bird* (insomnia),” “*almond tree* (white hair),” “*silver cord*” (spine), “*golden bowl* (head).”

12:7-10

The human spirit with @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE goes back to God. In his old age Solomon used @@@ REBOUND consistently, studied Scripture, and reached @@@ MATURITY at the end of his life.

- (6) **Negative Volition.** The reversionist **Loser** Believer is always in a negative [-N] volitional attitude towards @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in his: “*heart*” [Jn. 12:40]; “*neck*” [Neh. 9:16-17]; and “*face*” [Prov. 21:29-31]. Building up like plaque, the reversionist forms large areas of “scar tissue” on his soul contributing greatly to an inability to escape the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS – Eph. 4:17-18; Rom. 11:7-11; Deut. 9:4; Isa. 6:9-10.

- (7) **Stages of Reversionism.** The stages of reversionism.

- (a) **Reaction and Distraction Phase** [Rom. 12:2-3]. This includes wrong priorities in life: (1) rejection of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE; (2) rejection of proper @@@ AUTHORITY to include the parent, the employer, the husband, and the State; (3) personality conflicts with others predominate the life; (4) a lack of objectivity when reprimanded; (5) emotional reaction to unjust treatment; (6) subjective arrogance; and (7) a total preoccupation with self.

- (b) **Frantic Search for Happiness.** Forgetting or rejecting the truth that only Bible Doctrine brings @@@ HAPPINESS, reversionists vainly seek happiness in the details of life [Heb. 13:5; Phil. 4:11; Ps. 144:15] to include: (1) gossip and maligning others [Col. 2:16-18; Heb. 5:11 – 6:16]; (2) sexual impropriety, drugs/alcohol [Isa. 28:1, 7-9]; and (3) a lust for @@@ MONEY – “*for the love of money is a root of all sorts of evil, and some by longing for it have wandered away from the faith and pierced themselves with many griefs*” [1 Tim. 6:10].



- (c) **Operation Boomerang.** Reversionistic Believers make bad decisions that end in disaster and self-induced misery. *See* Ps. 32:1-5 [David].
- (d) **Blackout of the Soul.** This is the final stage of reversionism and can lead to the @@@@ SIN UNTO DEATH. *See infra* (11).
- (8) **Wallowing in the Mire.** The reversionist Believer will accept as valuable the ideas of the Cosmic Systems that he once had wisely rejected as worthless. This includes rejecting the truths of the @@@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS and now working to oppose all @@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – 2 Pet. 2:20-22.

## 2 PETER 2:20-22

For if, after they [a Believer] have escaped [*apopheugo* (to escape; flee from)] the defilements [*miasma* (moral foulness)] of the world [*kosmos* – the Believer rejects the evil of the @@@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS] by the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge) – the Believer is learning @@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] of the LORD and Savior Jesus Christ [the @@@@ BIBLE is “*the mind of Christ*”], they are again entangled [*empleko* (to weave)] in them and are overcome [the Believer is now on negative [-N] volition and in @@@@ REVERSIONISM which puts him back into the Cosmic Systems], the last state has become worse for them than the first [the negative [-N] volition Believer is now under Divine Discipline @@@@ SUFFERING instead of Divine Suffering for Blessing]. For it would be better for them not to have known [*epiginosko*] the way [*hodos* (a traveled way)] of righteousness [*dikaiosis* – @@@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE], than having known [*epiginosko*] it, to turn away [*hupostrepho* (to turn back)] from the holy commandment handed on to them [God wants spiritual @@@@ MATURITY not the @@@@ SIN UNTO DEATH]. It has happened to them according to the true proverb, “A dog returns to its own vomit [*exerama* – the vomit is the Cosmic Systems that the positive [+P] volition Believer initially rejected but now as a negative [-N] volition Believer in reversionism he laps it up],” and “A sow, after washing, *returns* to wallowing in the mire.”

- (9) **Recovery.** When altered by Divine Discipline @@@@ SUFFERING the reversionist Believer may elect to return to @@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE, as with King David and King Solomon. Such recovery requires the consistent use of @@@@ REBOUND and then a maximum amount of time strictly devoted to learning [relearning] Bible Doctrine – 1 Pet. 1:7; Rev. 3:15-19.

## REVELATION 3:15-19

I [Jesus Christ] know your [Believers in Laodicea] deeds, that you are neither cold [*psuchros* – an unBeliever] nor hot [*zestos* (boiling hot) – a Believer on positive [+P] volition to the Word]; I wish that you were cold [the unBeliever can be given the Gospel] or hot [a positive [+P] volition Believer can be given @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]. So because you are lukewarm [*chliaros* (tepid condition) – a negative [-N] volition Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM], and neither hot nor cold, I will spit [*emeo*, (vomit)] you out of My mouth [Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING leading to the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH]. Because you say, “I am rich, and have become wealthy, and have need of nothing,” and you do not know that you are wretched and miserable [*eleeinos* (to be pitied)] and poor [*ptochos* (reduced to beggary)] and blind [*tuphlos* (mentally blind)] and naked, I advise [*sumbouleuo* (to give counsel)] you to buy from Me gold [*chrusion* (gold which lies embedded in the earth) – Bible Doctrine is gold in the earth] refined [*puroo* (to burn with fire)] by fire [*pur* – the job of the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER is to take the ore, refine it into gold coins, and give it to the congregation as their spiritual @@@ MONEY] so that you may become rich [*plouteo* (to be affluent in resources) – the Believer can now reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY], and white garments so that you may clothe yourself [@@@ REWARDS], and *that* the shame of your nakedness will not be revealed [at the Judgment Seat of Christ]; and eye salve to anoint your eyes so that you may see [the Believer sees God through the @@@ BIBLE]. Those whom I love [*phileo* (personal love) – all Believers], I reprove [*elegcho* (to correct)] and discipline [*paideuo* (to train children) – Divine Discipline]; therefore be zealous [*zeloo* (to be heated or to boil) – be on positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine] and repent [*metanoeo* (change the mind) – @@@ REBOUND and advance to spiritual maturity].

- (10) **Special Curse.** There is a special “curse,” *anathema maranatha* (cursed until Christ comes), to the Believer in reversionism – 1 Cor. 16:22; Gal. 1:6-9.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 16:22

If anyone does not love [*phileo* (personal love)] the LORD [*kurios* – the Loser Believer cannot @@@ LOVE what he does not know], he is to be accursed [*anathemah* (a person or thing doomed to destruction)] Maranatha [(our LORD will come) – the curse on the Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM is in effect until the @@@ RAPTURE].

## GALATIANS 1:8-9

But even if we [**Paul and his team**], or an angel [*aggelos*] from heaven, should preach [*euaggelizo*] to you a gospel [*euaggelion* (good news)] contrary to what we have preached to you [**@@@ SALVATION by @@@ GRACE**], he [**false teachers of @@@ RELIGION**] is to be accursed [*anathema* (a person or thing doomed to destruction) – with the **@@@ SIN UNTO DEATH** if he is a Believer and with **@@@ HELL** if he is an unBeliever]! As we have said before, so I say again now, if any man is preaching to you a gospel contrary to what you received, he is to be accursed [*anathema*]!

- (11) **Sin Unto Death.** Unchecked, reversionism inevitably leads the **Loser** Believer to the ultimate Divine Discipline **@@@ SUFFERING** of the **@@@ SIN UNTO DEATH** – Ps. 7:12-16; 2 Pet. 2:1. However, all Believers have **@@@ ETERNAL SECURITY** regardless of loss of **@@@ REWARDS**.

## PSALM 7:12-16

If a man does not repent [*shub* (to turn back) – the negative [-N] volition Believer refuses to **@@@ REBOUND**], He [God] will sharpen His sword; He has bent His bow and made it ready [**administration of Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING**]. He has also prepared for Himself deadly weapons; He makes His arrows fiery shafts. Behold, he [Believer in **@@@ REVERSIONISM**] travails [*chabal* (to give a pledge)] with wickedness [*aven*], and he conceives mischief and brings forth falsehood [**of human @@@ GOOD**]. He has dug a pit and hollowed it out, and has fallen into the hole which he made [**@@@ SIN UNTO DEATH**]. His mischief will return upon his own head, and his violence will descend upon his own pate [*qodqod* (crown of the head)].

## 2 PETER 2:1

But false prophets also arose among the people, just as there will also be false teachers [*pseudodidaskalos* – **@@@ PASTOR/TEACHER**] among you, who will secretly introduce destructive heresies [**@@@ RELIGION**], even denying [*arneomai*] the Master who bought them [**this evil teacher who denies the efficacious work of Christ still has @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY**], bringing swift destruction upon themselves [**@@@ SIN UNTO DEATH**].

## @@@ REVOLUTION

- (1) **Definition.** The act of revolution concerns those who seek to overthrow and then take control of a government or nation. Revolution is totally against the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS and reflects a gross lack of knowledge of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE. See Jer. 5:23; Num. 16; Rom. 13:1-7; 1 Pet. 2:13-14; Isa. 1:3-5; 31:6; 59:13.

### 1 PETER 2:13-14

Submit [*hupotasso*] yourselves [*Believers*] for the LORD's sake to every human institution [*the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS*], whether to a king [*basileus* (leader of the people)] as the one in authority [*huperecho* (to be superior in rank)], or to governors [*hegemon* (a leader of any kind)] as sent by him [*the one in @@@ AUTHORITY*] for the punishment [*ekdikesis* (criminal justice)] of evildoers [*kakopoios* – to include capital punishment] and the praise of those who do right.

- (2) **Destroys Freedom.** Revolution reflects approbation and power lust implemented by mental attitude @@@ SIN. Revolution destroys the @@@ FREEDOM, rights, privacy, and property of individuals. It always involves the use of mobs [Isa. 1:3-5; 59:13; Jer. 5:23]. @@@ JEALOUSY is the primary motivator for those who instigate revolution [Isa. 11:13; cf. 1 Kng. 12:9, 27; 2 Cor. 10:10-12, 19; Matt. 27:18]. See Human @@@ GOOD.

### ISAIAH 59:13

Transgressing and denying [*kachash* (to deny falsely)] the LORD, and turning away from our God, speaking oppression and revolt, conceiving *in* and uttering from the heart [*leb* – mental attitude] lying [*sheqer* (to lie)] words.

- (3) **Anti-God.** Revolution is a Satanic device employed in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT – Isa. 31:6. Satan will lead the final Gog and Magog Revolt at the end of the Millennium – Isa. 11:1-16; Rev. 20:8.
- (4) **Secession.** Under the valid construction of the “consent of the governed” geographic @@@ SEPARATION from a corrupt national entity and fighting for freedom in order to form a new national entity is not revolution.

## @@@ REWARDS

- (1) **Definition.** All Believers have the potential for temporal rewards in this life and for eternal rewards in the eternal state. Eternal rewards are given at the “*Judgment Seat of Christ*” [2 Cor. 5:10]. See Rev. 3:11; 22:12; 1 Cor. 2:9; 3:11-15; 9:24-25; Rom. 14:10-14; Jn. 12:26; 2 Tim. 2:12; 4:8; 1 Pet. 1:7-8; 5:4; Js. 1:12; 1 Thess. 2:19. Accordingly, the eternal state in @@@ HEAVEN is a place of vast inequality for Believers.

### REVELATION 22:12

Behold, I [Jesus Christ] am coming quickly [@@@ RAPTURE], and My reward [*misthos* (dues paid for work) – Jesus Christ will bestow @@@ REWARDS at the Judgement Seat of Christ] is with Me [Jesus Christ is the Escrow Account Officer], to render [*apodidomi* (to deliver)] to every man [the Believer] according [*kata*] to what he has done [from the moment of @@@ SALVATION to the physical @@@ DEATH of the Believer].

- (2) **Eternal Rewards.** The Believer’s *evaluation* for eternal rewards at the Judgment Seat of Christ deals with two separate categories – Divine Good [rewardable] or human good [not rewardable] – 2 Cor. 5:10. All in the context of becoming a subject matter expert witness in the Angelic Conflict.

### 2 CORINTHIANS 5:10

For we must all appear [Believer in his @@@ RESURRECTION body] before the judgment seat [*bema* – this evaluation occurs immediately after the @@@ RAPTURE] of Christ, so that each one may be recompensed for his deeds in the body [*soma* – the Believer’s time while he was on the earth], according to what he has done, whether good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good produced in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE] or bad [*phaulos* (worthless) – human @@@ GOOD produced].

- (a) **First Category – Divine Good** [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value)] produced by the Believer has great eternal rewards – Matt. 6:19-21.
- (b) **Second Category – Human Good** [*phaulos* (worthless)] produced by the Believer is completely rejected by God and destroyed by “*fire*” [1 Cor. 3:13] at the Judgment Seat of Christ. See Rom. 14:10-11.



## ROMANS 14:10-11

But you [a fellow Believer], why do you judge [*krino*] your brother [*adelphos*]? Or you again, why do you regard your brother with contempt [*exoutheneo* (to despise)]? For we [all Believers] will all stand before the judgment seat [*bema* (a raised place of the official seat of a judge)] of God [*theos*]. For it is written, “As I live, says the LORD [*kurios*], every knee shall bow to Me, and every tongue [all Believers] shall give praise to God.”

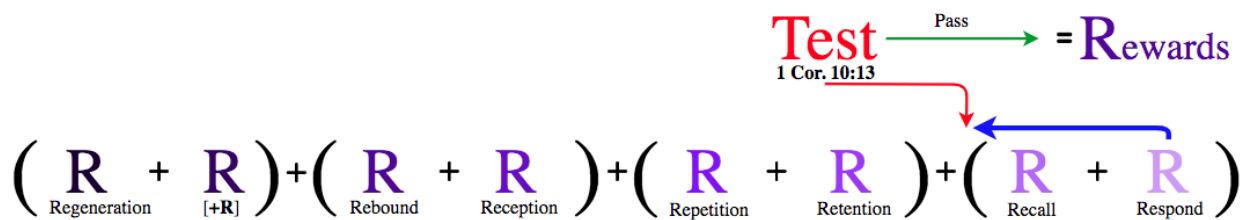
- (3) **Two Types of Divine Good.** Since God can only recognize and reward His own Perfection, there are two types of Divine Good that the Believer can “*abide*” [Jn. 15:1-11] in and produce: (1) the amount of time the Believer spent in Fellowship with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT; and (2) learning and applying @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE to reach @@@ MATURITY. Successfully executing these two arenas of Divine @@@ GOOD determines the quantity and quality of rewards for the Believer – 1 Jn. 1:9; 2:28; Jn. 6:1.
- (4) **No Human Good in Heaven.** No human good will be allowed into @@@ HEAVEN. All the Believer’s human good [Loser Believers produce large amounts of it when out of Fellowship with God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] will be completely burned up at the Judgment Seat of Christ – 1 Cor. 3:11-15. In addition, with the creation of the new universe all other “works” related to the old universe will be obliterated – 2 Pet. 3:10. See Human @@@ GOOD.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 3:12-13

Now if any man [Winner Believer] builds on the foundation [Jesus Christ as the Savior] with gold, silver, precious stones [Divine Good produced during the Believer’s life], [or] wood, hay, straw [human @@@ GOOD produced by the Believer], each man’s work will become evident [*phaneros* (apparent; manifest)]; for the day will show it [the Judgment Seat of Christ] because it is to be revealed with fire, and the fire itself will test [*dokimazo* (to test; to examine) – combustible items destroyed] the quality of each man’s work.

- (5) **Faithfulness is Key.** The key to all rewards is the Believer’s faithfulness [*pistos*] to Bible Doctrine – “*My witness, My faithful one*” [Rev. 2:13]; Acts 1:8 – so that the Believer can say: “*my mind instructs me in the night*” [Ps. 16:7]; Matt. 25:21-23; 1 Tim. 1:12; Eph. 1:1, 11-18; 2:7-8; 3:16; Col. 2:3-4; Heb. 10:35-36; 11:6; Rom. 5:2-5; 11:33-36; Jos. 1:8-9; 2 Pet. 3:17-18.





### – The Eight R's of the Christian Way of Life –

#### JOSHUA 1:8-9

This book of the law [the @@@ BIBLE as it then existed in writing] shall not depart from your mouth, but you shall meditate on it day and night [study @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE constantly], so that you may be careful [shamar (to keep watch)] to do according to all that is written in it; for then you will make your way prosperous [tsalach – @@@ REWARDS as a result of reaching @@@ MATURITY], and then you will have success. Have I not commanded you? Be strong and courageous! Do not tremble or be dismayed [@@@ FEAR], for the LORD your God is with you wherever you go.

#### HEBREWS 11:6

And without faith [pistis – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE with emphasis on @@@ FAITH/Rest] it is impossible [adunatos (unable to be done)] to please Him, for he who comes to God must believe [pisteuo (to place confidence in)] that He is and that He is a rewarder [misthapodotes (one who pays wages)] @@@ REWARDS to the Believer who reaches spiritual @@@ MATURITY of those who seek Him [the Believer on positive [+P] volition to God in his @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT].

#### 1 TIMOTHY 1:12

I [Paul] thank Christ Jesus our LORD, who has strengthened [endunamoo (to receive strength)] me, because He considered [hegeomai (to deem; to consider)] me faithful [pistos (faithful; consistent) – faithful to the @@@ PLAN OF GOD], putting me into service [diakonia (those who proclaim and promote information about God) – as the chief of the @@@ APOSTLES, @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER, and writer of parts of the @@@ BIBLE].

- (6) **Rewards in Escrow.** God desires the highest and best for all Believers. As proof of His @@@ GRACE provisions, in eternity past God the Father deposited specific tailored rewards for each individual Believer [for his life on earth and then in eternity] in a Divine Escrow Account set up in Heaven – Eph. 1:3-6; 3:20; 1 Cor. 2:9; Prov. 8:17-23; Ps. 84:1; Heb. 10:35-36; 1 Pet. 1:4, 8-9; Col. 1:5; 2 Cor. 4:4-11; Rom. 8:28-30; Gen. 15:1. Additionally, God provides equal opportunity for each Believer to fully receive his rewards once the Believer successfully fulfills the set conditions of release from the Escrow Account – he advances to @@@ MATURITY with the goal of becoming a subject matter expert witness exhibit in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT. Tragically, most Believers fail to do so and their fantastic rewards remain on deposit for all eternity as a memorial to the grace of God.

## EPHESIANS 1:3-6

Blessed *be* the God and Father of our LORD Jesus Christ, who has blessed [*eulogeo* (a concrete blessing, a benefit)] us [Believers] with every spiritual blessing [*eulogeo* – @@@ REWARDS] in the heavenly *places* [*epouranios* (existing in heaven)] in Christ [tailored rewards for every Believer were placed on deposit in @@@ HEAVEN with Christ as the Escrow Officer], just as He chose [*eklegomai* (to pick out)] us in Him [in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD He knew who would believe in Christ] before the foundation [*katabole* (foundation; conceive)] of the world, that we would be holy [*hagios* (separated ones for Godly service) – God desires all Believers to reach @@@ MATURITY and receive their Escrow Account rewards] and blameless [*amomos* (unblameable)] before Him. In love [*agape* (to love dearly) – all Believers are under the maximum @@@ LOVE of God because they possess His Righteousness [+R]] He predestined [*proorizo* (a predetermined plan)] us [God made provisions to get the positive [+P] volition Believer to maturity] to adoption [*uihothesia* (adult adoption)] as sons through Jesus Christ to Himself [@@@ UNION WITH CHRIST], according to the kind intention of His will, to the praise of the glory [*doxa*] of His grace, which He freely bestowed [*charitoo* (to honor with blessings)] on us in the Beloved.

## GENESIS 15:1

After these things the word of the LORD came to Abram in a vision, saying, “Do not fear, Abram, I am a shield to you; Your reward [Abraham’s @@@ REWARDS in time and eternity] shall be very great.”

## 1 CORINTHIANS 2:9

But just as it is written, “Things which eye has not seen and ear has not heard, and *which* have not entered the heart [*kardia*] of man, all that God has prepared [*hetoimazo* (to make ready beforehand) – the fantastic @@@ REWARDS placed in an Escrow Account in eternity past are beyond human comprehension] for those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly) – only the positive [+P] volition Believer at spiritual @@@ MATURITY can @@@ LOVE God] Him.”

- (7) **Three Parties in Escrow Account.** There are three distinct parties involved in the Escrow Account Blessings placed in @@@ HEAVEN “*before the foundation of the world*” [Eph. 1:3-6].
- (a) **GRANTOR:** God the Father placed the fantastic tailored rewards for both time and eternity in an individual Escrow Account with each Believer’s name on it. These rewards are “**on deposit**.” See Jn. 12:26.
  - (b) **GRANTEE:** The Believer can receive the rewards placed on deposit from the Escrow Account – both in his life on the earth and in eternity.
  - (c) **ESCROW OFFICER:** Jesus Christ is the Escrow Officer assigned to release the rewards from the Escrow Account to the Believer in this life and also for the eternal state at the Judgment Seat of Christ. Jesus Christ releases the rewards on deposit to all positive [+P] volition Believers who fulfill the conditions of the Escrow Account by learning “*the mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16]. In Isa. 53:12, Jesus Christ shares the spoils of these rewards with **Winner** Believers only – Matt. 20:22-23.

## MATTHEW 20:22-23

But Jesus answered, “You [**James and John**] do not know what you are asking. Are you able [*dunamai* (to have the power)] to drink the cup [*poterion* (drinking vessel)] that I am about to drink [the @@@ CUP containing the @@@ SIN of all humanity]?” They said to Him, “We are able.” He said to them, “My cup [*poterion* – the cup of @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST] you shall drink [*pino*]; but to sit on My right and on My left [the places of highest honor in @@@ REWARDS], this is not Mine to give, but it is for those for whom it has been prepared by My Father [God delegates this to Christ].”

- (8) **Rewards in Time.** There are two types of temporal rewards held on deposit in God’s Escrow Account: (1) the temporal rewards of **spiritual** blessings [which provide the actual *capacity* to enjoy the physical blessings]; and (2) the temporal rewards of **physical** blessings such as wealth, job success, wonderful spouse, true friends, health, etc. However, labeled as the “*fruit of the (Holy) Spirit*” [Gal. 5:22-23], the spiritual rewards in @@@ TIME are by far the greater in value and are produced only through the intake and application of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE. See Phil. 4:11; Jn. 15:4-5, 8.
- (9) **Logistical Support Rewards.** Since all Believers possess the Righteousness [+R] of God given to them at @@@ SALVATION [Job 21:7-15], logistical @@@ GRACE support rewards are also given to **Loser** Believers who never learn @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE. However, the carnal Believer has limited capacity to enjoy any of the temporal physical blessings he receives [Eccl. 5:19; 6:2] because of a lack of temporal spiritual blessings. See *supra* (8).
- (10) **Confidence of Rewards.** The **Winner** Believer fulfills the command of God to “*grow in the grace and knowledge of our LORD and Savior Jesus Christ*” [2 Pet. 3:18] and reaches @@@ MATURITY. He has confidence that at the Judgment Seat of Christ he will receive some level of rewards – “*the prize*” [Phil. 3:13-14]; 1 Jn. 2:28; 3:21; 4:17; Rom. 5:5; Matt. 5:11-12; 19:29; 25:23; 2 Tim. 2:15; Phil. 1:20. Indeed, having already experienced fantastic spiritual and temporal rewards he believes God’s word that Christ gives eternal rewards to those who are faithful to the Word – Tit. 1:1-2; Prov. 10:16; 11:18; 1 Tim. 4:8. In fact, the **Winner** Believer will hear this pronouncement at the Judgment Seat of Christ: “*Well done, good and faithful slave*” [Matt. 25:23].

## MATTHEW 25:23

His master [Jesus Christ at the Judgment Seat of Christ] said to him [the **Winner Believer**], “Well done, good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good is produced by the positive [+P] volition Believer] and faithful [*pistos* (faithful; consistent) – faithful to the @@@ PLAN OF GOD] slave. You were faithful with a few things [staying inside the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE], I will put you in charge [*kathistemi* (to set one over a thing)] of many things [*polus* (many, much, large) – fantastic eternal @@@ REWARDS in @@@ HEAVEN for the Believer who reaches @@@ MATURITY]; enter into the joy of your master [God is glorified by the Believer advancing to maturity in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT].”

**1 JOHN 4:17**

By this [reaching @@@ MATURITY], love [*agape* (to love dearly)] is perfected [*teleioo* (to make complete)] with us, so that we may have confidence in the day of judgment [*krisis* – at the Judgment Seat of Christ]; because as He is, so also are we in this world.

**1 TIMOTHY 4:8**

For bodily discipline is only of little profit, but godliness [*eusebeia* – attaining @@@ MATURITY] is profitable for all things, since it holds promise [*epaggelia* – potential @@@ REWARDS] for the present life [temporal blessings to the Believer] and also for the life to come [the eternal blessings].

**HEBREWS 10:35-36**

Therefore, do not throw away [*apoballo* (to cast away as worthless)] your confidence [the treasure of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], which has a great reward [reaching @@@ MATURITY equals @@@ REWARDS]. For you have need of endurance [Divine @@@ SUFFERING for blessing], so that when you have done the will of God, you may receive what was promised [*egaggelia* (a promised good or blessing) – at the Judgment Seat of Christ].

**PHILIPPIANS 1:20**

According to my [Paul] earnest expectation [*apokaradokia* (anxious and persistent expectation)] and hope [*elpis* (confidence)], that I will not be put to shame [*aischunomai* (to dishonor)] in anything, but *that* with all boldness, Christ will even now, as always, be exalted [*megaluno* (to make great)] in my body [*soma*], whether by life or by death [*thanatos* (death of the body) – at the Judgment Seat of Christ Paul will receive his eternal @@@ REWARDS].

**MATTHEW 5:11-12**

Blessed are you [Winner Believer] when *people* insult you and persecute you, and falsely say all kinds of evil against you because of Me [Jesus]. Rejoice and be glad, for your reward [*misthos* (dues paid for work)] in heaven [*ouranos* – at the Judgment Seat of Christ] is great; for in the same way they persecuted the prophets who were before you.



- (11) **Ashamed Loser.** **Loser** Believers are those that never followed the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE and did not advance to @@@ MATURITY. These **Loser** Believers will temporarily be “*ashamed*” [2 Tim. 2:15] at the Judgment Seat of Christ when they have to give an account for what they did with the time on earth that God gave them – Phil. 1:20; 3:18-19; Rev. 3:18. They will realize that they wasted their lives and were under the Aramaic curse *anathema maranatha* (devoted to destruction until Christ returns) [some will have died the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH] – 1 Cor. 16:22; Heb. 10:35-36, 39. Nevertheless, the shame for the **Loser** Believer is short lived and will not extend into eternity where all will rejoice in @@@ GRACE – Rev. 21:4. In contrast, the **Winner** Believer will “*have confidence and not shrink away from Him in shame at His coming*” [1 Jn. 2:28].

## 2 TIMOTHY 2:15

Be diligent [study @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] to present yourself approved [*dokimos* (acceptable)] to God as a workman [*ergates* (a laborer)] who does not need to be ashamed [*anepaischuntos* – the Loser Believer at the @@@ JUDGMENT Seat of Christ will be ashamed], accurately handling [*orthotomeo* (to cut straight)] the word of truth [*aletheia* – the positive [+P] volition Believer reaching @@@ MATURITY and applying Bible Doctrine to all the @@@ PROBLEMS in life].

## HEBREWS 10:39

But we [positive [+P] volition Believers] are not of those who shrink back to destruction [@@@ REVERSIONISM and @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH], but of those who have faith [*pistos* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] to the preserving [*peripoiesis* (possession, one’s own property) – obtaining the @@@ REWARDS set in the Escrow Account] of the soul [*psuche*].

- (12) **Parables on Rewards.** Like a flat very pyramid, @@@ HEAVEN is a place of vast inequality – some Believers with many rewards and others none. The parable of the “Pounds” [Lk. 19:12-27] and the parable of the “Sower and Soils” [Mk. 4:1-25] exhibit the variations between **Winner** and **Loser** as well as between levels of **Winners**. In short, all Believers had equal opportunity to become subject matter expert witness exhibits – a *diamarturomai* (to testify) [2 Tim. 2:14] - in the Angelic Conflict and receive Rewards. All are held responsible for their neglect of the fabulous opportunity to glorify God.



## MARK 4:20

And those are the ones on whom seed [**the Gospel**] was sown on the good soil [**the positive [+P] volition Believer**]; and they hear [*akouo* (to perceive)] the word [*logos* – **@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE**] and accept [*paradechomai* (to receive)] it [**which results in reaching @@@ MATURITY**] and bear fruit [*karpophoreo* – **many @@@ REWARDS**], thirty, sixty, and a hundredfold.

## LUKE 19:26

I [**Jesus Christ**] tell you that to everyone who has [**@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE** in their **@@@ SOUL & SPIRIT**], more shall be given [**in @@@ REWARDS**], but from the one who does not have [**the negative [-N] volition Believer**], even what he does have [**temporal logistical @@@ GRACE**] shall be taken away [**via the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH**].

- (13) **Eternal Rewards.** The **@@@ BIBLE** uses the analogy of “crowns” as language of accommodation to describe various types of eternal Escrow Account rewards given out by the LORD Jesus Christ to **Winner** Believers. The crown terminology rests in the fact that in the Greek and Roman era there were degrees of achievement reflected in particular types of crowns awarded to winner athletes in the public games or to brave soldiers on the battlefield. See 2 Tim. 4:8; 1 Cor. 9:24-27. The Greek word *stephanos* (a wreath awarded as a prize at the games) is usually translated as “**crown**” in the English.

- (a) **Crown of Righteousness** – 2 Tim. 4:6-8. Awarded to the **Winner** Believer for reaching **@@@ MATURITY** [he must stay focused per Rev. 3:11-12]. Again, no Believer can *love* what he does not know.

## 2 TIMOTHY 4:8

In the future [*loipoi*] there is laid up [*apokeimai* (to be laid away)] for me [**the Roman's would execute Paul soon**] the crown [*stephanos* (a wreath of garland which was given as a prize to victors in public games)] of righteousness [*dikaiosune*], which the LORD, the righteous Judge, will award [*apodidomi* (to deliver)] to me on that day [*hemera* – **Paul's @@@ REWARDS at the Judgment Seat of Christ**]; and not only to me, but also to all who have loved [*agapao* (to love dearly)] His appearing [*epiphaneia* – **all Believers who reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY**].

- (b) **Crown of Life** – Js. 1:12; Rev. 2:10; 3:11. Awarded to the **Winner** Believer for passing Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing evidence testing and being entered as a subject matter expert witness exhibit in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.

## JAMES 1:12

Blessed [*makarios* (happiness) – @@@ HAPPINESS] is the man [the positive [+P] volition Believer] who perseveres [*hupomeno* (to remain)] under trial [*peirasmos* – Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing]; for once he has been approved [*dokimos* (acceptable; pleasing) – God approves the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches spiritual @@@ MATURITY], he will receive [*lambano* (to take with the hand)] the crown [*stephanos* (a wreath given as a prize)] of life [*zoe* – eternal @@@ REWARDS] which the LORD has promised [*epaggello* (to announce that one is about to do or furnish something)] to those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] Him [the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches maturity loves the LORD].

- (c) **Crown of Glory** – Phil. 4:1; 1 Pet. 5:1-4; 1 Thess. 2:19-20. Awarded to the **Winner** Believer @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER for the faithful teaching of accurate @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.

## 1 PETER 5:1-4

Therefore, I [Peter] exhort the elders [*presbuteros* (the old man) – all those that are @@@ PASTOR/TEACHERs] among you, as your fellow elder and witness of the sufferings of Christ, and a partaker also of the glory [*doxa*] that is to be revealed [at the @@@ RAPTURE], shepherd [*poimaino* (tend to the flock)] the flock [*poimnion* (a flock of sheep)] of God among you, exercising oversight [*episkopeo* (to inspect; look after)] not under compulsion [*anagastos* (by force or constraint)], but voluntarily [*hekousios* (willingly)], according to the will of God; and not for sordid gain, but with eagerness [*prothumos* (with alacrity)]; nor yet as lording it over [*katakuriuo* (to bring under one's power)] those allotted to your charge [*kleros* (inscribed with their names)], but proving to be examples to the flock. And when the Chief Shepherd appears [*phaneroo* (to make manifest or visible) – Jesus Christ in a @@@ RESURRECTION body at the Rapture], you will receive the unfading [*amarantinos*] crown [*stephanos* (a wreath given as a prize)] of glory [*doxa* – special @@@ REWARDS given to the faithful Pastor/Teacher].

- (14) **Old Testament Rewards.** In the Old Testament the analogy for eternal rewards was often set out in terms of “cities” not “crowns” – Heb. 11:9-10, 13, 16, 23; 13:14; Rev. 21:2, 10-11; Acts 7:20. The **Winner** Old Testament Believer was also designated as a “*friend of God*” [Js. 2:23].

### HEBREWS 11:9-10

By faith [*pistis* – @@@ FAITH/Rest] he [Abraham] lived as an alien in the land of promise [*epaggelia*], as in a foreign *land*, dwelling in tents with Isaac and Jacob, fellow heirs of the same promise; for he was looking for the city [Abraham’s eternal @@@ REWARDS] which has foundations, whose architect and builder is God.

### JAMES 2:23

And the Scripture was fulfilled [*pleroo* (to fill up)] which says, “And Abraham believed [*pisteuo*] God, and it was reckoned [*logizomai* (to pass over to one’s account; to credit)] to him as righteousness [*dikaiosisune* – Abram received God’s Righteousness [+R]],” and he was called the friend of God [*philostheou* (lover of God) – when Abraham reached @@@ MATURITY late in life].

- (15) **Other Eternal Rewards.** Other expressions of eternal rewards include:

- (a) **Ruler.** The **Winner** Believer in his resurrection body will be a ruler in the Millennium – 2 Tim. 2:12; 1 Cor. 4:8; Rev. 3:21; Rom. 5:17.

### 2 TIMOTHY 2:12

If we endure [*hupomeno* (to remain) – the positive [+P] Church Age Believer that grows to spiritual @@@ MATURITY], we will also reign [*sumbasileuo* (to reign together)] with Him [with Jesus Christ in the Millennium]; if we deny [*arneomai* (to deny someone)] Him [the Believer who rejects @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], He also will deny us [@@@ REWARDS].

- (b) **The Order of the Morning Star.** This is a sub-award of the **DECORATION OF THE MORNING STAR** given by God the Father to Jesus Christ [Rev. 22:16; Num. 24:17; Matt. 2:2; 2 Pet. 1:19] and now to the **Winner** Believer. The Believer’s Order of the Morning Star is awarded by Jesus Christ Himself. *See* Rev. 2:26-28; 22:16.

## REVELATION 2:26-28

He who overcomes [*nikao* (to carry off the victory) – the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches @@@ MATURITY in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT], and he who keeps My [Jesus Christ] deeds [*ergon* – the production of Divine Good] until the end, to him I will give authority [*exousia* (power of choice)] over the nations [*ethnos*]; and he shall rule [*poimaino* (to tend a flock)] them with a rod of iron, as the vessels of the potter are broken to pieces, as I also have received *authority* from My Father; and I will give him the morning [*proinos* (pertaining to the morning)] star [*aster* (a star)].

- (c) **Pillars.** The **Winner** Believer has his name inscribed on eternal pillars in Heaven for his impact on @@@ HISTORY – Rev. 3:12; Gal. 2:9.

## REVELATION 3:12

He who overcomes [*nikao* (to carry off the victory) – by reaching @@@ MATURITY in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT], I [Jesus Christ] will make him a pillar in the temple of My God, and he will not go out from it anymore; and I will write on him the name of My God, and the name of the city of My God, the new Jerusalem, which comes down out of heaven [*ouranos*] from My God, and My new name.

- (d) **Knighthood.** As an invisible hero in @@@ TIME, the **Winner** Believer will be given a Knighthood and a special title with a formal presentation at the Court of @@@ HEAVEN – Rev. 3:5.
- (e) **Coat of Arms.** Given to the **Winner** Believer – Rev. 3:12.
- (f) **Uniform of Glory.** The **Winner** Believer will be given a spectacular Uniform of Glory that fits over his resurrection body – Rev. 3:4-5.

## REVELATION 3:5

He who overcomes [*nikao* (to carry off the victory) – by reaching @@@ spiritual MATURITY in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT] will thus be clothed in white garments; and I [Jesus Christ] will not erase his name from the book of life, and I will confess [*homologeō* (to declare; to site)] his name before My Father and before His angels [*aggelos*].

- (g) **Honor Role.** The **Winner** Believer will be enrolled – Rev. 3:12.
- (h) **Access to Gazebo.** The **Winner** Believer will be allowed into a special area “gazebo” called the “*Paradise of God*” in @@@ HEAVEN and allowed to eat from the “*Tree of Life*” [Rev. 2:7].

## REVELATION 2:7

He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] says to the churches. To him who overcomes [*nikao* (to carry off the victory) – the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches @@@ MATURITY in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT], I will grant [*didomi* (to give)] to eat of the tree of life which is in the Paradise of God.

- (i) **New Name.** The **Winner** Believer will be given a special “*new name*” and obtain special advanced @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE knowledge – the “*hidden manna*” described in Rev. 2:17. See @@@ MANNA

## REVELATION 2:17

He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] says to the churches. To him who overcomes [*nikao* (to carry off the victory) – this is the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches spiritual @@@ MATURITY], to him I [Jesus Christ] will give *some* of the hidden [*krupto* (to conceal)] manna [@@@ MANNA of special access @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], and I will give him a white stone, and a new name written on the stone which no one knows but he who receives it.

- (16) **Rewards Glorify God.** God is glorified by giving the Believer his Escrow Account Blessing rewards. Tragically, most Christians place great emphasis on their own works to “glorify” God, but the positive [+P] volition Believer puts the emphasis on learning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE as ordered – Jer. 9:24; 1 Cor. 1:31; 2 Cor. 10:5; Prov. 23:7; Phil. 2:5, 16; Isa. 55:7-9; Ps. 16:11.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 10:5

We [positive [+P] volition Believers] are destroying speculations and every lofty thing raised up against the knowledge of God, and we are taking every thought captive to the obedience [*hupakoe* (submission)] of Christ.

## PHILIPPIANS 2:16

Holding fast the word of life, so that in the day of Christ [@@@ RAPTURE] I [Paul] will have reason to glory [*doxa* – @@@ REWARDS glorify God] because I did not run in vain [*kenos* (devoid of truth)] nor toil in vain.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 4:16-17

Therefore we do not lose heart, but though our outer man [*mortality*] is decaying, yet our inner man [*spiritual growth to maturity*] is being renewed day by day. For momentary light [*elafros* (light in weight)] affliction [*thilpsis* – Divine Suffering for Blessing] is producing for us an eternal weight [*baros* (heaviness)] of glory [Rewards] far beyond all comparison.

- (17) **Pastor/Teacher Present.** The @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER will be present at the Judgment Seat of Christ to view the awarding of decorations for members of his congregation – Heb. 13:17; Col. 1:28.

## COLOSSIANS 1:28

We [Paul and his team] proclaim Him [Jesus Christ], admonishing every man [the Believer] and teaching [*didasko* (to hold discourse with others in order to instruct them) – job of the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER] every man with all wisdom [*sophia* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], so that we may present [*paristemi* (to place beside or near) – at the Judgment Seat of Christ] every man complete [*teleios* (that which is perfect) – a Believer that has reached @@@ MATURITY and stands for his @@@ REWARDS] in Christ.

## HEBREWS 13:17

Obey your leaders [*hegeomai* (to rule) – the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER] and submit to them, for they keep watch [*agrupneo* (to keep awake)] over your souls [*psuche* – the spiritual growth of the Believer] as those who will give an account [about the members of the congregation]. Let them do this with joy [*chara* – the Believer with positive [+P] volition is a joy to teach] and not with grief [*stenazo* (to sigh; to groan) – the Believer with negative [-N] volition is not teachable], for this would be unprofitable [*alusiteles*] for you [loss of @@@ REWARDS to the Believer on negative [-N] volition].

---



## @@@ RUNNING

- (1) **Definition.** While @@@ WALKING is said to be the normal lifestyle for Christians in the day-to-day activities of the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE, “running” is a special call to rapid action for the Believer to use his remaining @@@ TIME on earth to quickly reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY. The related concept is found in Heb. 12:1.

### HEBREWS 12:1

Therefore, since we [Believers in the Church Age] have so great a cloud of witnesses [*martus* (a witness in a legal sense)] surrounding us [the many Believers who reached @@@ MATURITY in the Old Testament], let us also lay aside [*apotithemi*] every encumbrance [*ogkos* (mass; weight; burden)] and the sin [*hamartia*] which so easily entangles [*euperistatos* (skillfully surrounding)] – the Believer must identify their own areas of lust in their @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] us, and let us run [*trecho* – @@@ RUNNING fast to get maturity] with endurance [*hupomone* (steadfastness)] the race [*agon* (the place of contest)] – the Believer’s @@@ TIME in the body] that is set before [*prokeimai*] us [in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT].

- (2) **Running to Rewards.** The Winner Believer on positive [+P] volition running to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY is directly related to @@@ REWARDS – 1 Cor. 9:24-27.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 9:24

Do you [the Believer] not know [*heneka* (on account of)] that those who run [*trecho*] in a race [*stadion* (a race course)] – the Believer in @@@ TIME has a mission to reach @@@ MATURITY before he dies] all run, but *only* one receives [*lambano* (to take)] the prize [*brabeion* (the award to the victor of the games)]? Run in such a way [execute the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE properly] that you may win [*katalambano* (to lay hold of)] – win the @@@ REWARDS given at the Judgment Seat of Christ to the Winner Believer].

- (3) **Stop Running.** The Believer who stops running, due to negative [-N] volition towards @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE, to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY is related to a loss of @@@ REWARDS – Gal. 5:7-8.

## GALATIANS 5:7

You [**Believers in Galatia**] were running [*trecho* (of those who run in a race course) – @@@ **RUNNING**] well [they were on positive [+P] volition to learn @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** and advance in the @@@ **CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE**]; who hindered [*egkopto* (to impede one's course by cutting off his way)] you from obeying [*peitho* (to persuade)] the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – by implication these Believers hindered themselves by negative [-N] volition, getting into the @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS**, and listening to false teachers of @@@ **RELIGION**]? This persuasion [*peismone* (treacherous or deceptive persuasion)] *did not come* from Him who calls [*kaleo*] you.

- (4) **Running From Reversionism.** Running is required for the Believer back on positive [+P] volition and recovering from @@@ **REVERSIONISM**. Such a Believer must first @@@ **REBOUND** and then go on a crash course in running to learn or relearn @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** – Phil. 2:16; 3:12-14. This was the case for Paul, King Solomon, and King David. King Saul used @@@ **REBOUND** occasionally but never “ran” towards Bible Doctrine.

## PHILIPPIANS 2:16

Holding fast the word of life [@@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**], so that in the day of Christ [@@@ **RAPTURE**] I [Paul] will have reason to glory because I did not run [*trecho*] in vain nor toil [*kopiao*] in vain.

- (5) **Related to Teaching.** Running is related to teaching accurate and correct @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** – Gal. 2:1-2; Heb. 10:25. The Jerusalem leaders in the early Church Age had very little @@@ **GRACE** orientation to life.

## GALATIANS 2:1-2

Then after an interval of fourteen years I [Paul] went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas, taking Titus along also. It was because of a revelation [*apokalupsis* (a disclosure of truth)] that I went up; and I submitted to them the gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but *I did so* in private to those who were of reputation [James, Peter, and John], for fear that I might be running [*trecho*], or had run, in vain [*kenos* (empty handed)].

## @@@ SABBATH

- (1) **Definition.** The Sabbath designation of a particular day of the week under the @@@ MOSAIC LAW was designed by God to teach the principle of @@@ GRACE – the fact that God does all the work to provide for the Believer’s @@@ SALVATION and life [Gen. 2:2-3]. Sabbath is derived from the Hebrew word *shabbath* (to rest) and was first set out as the seventh day following the six days of the restoration of life on the earth. God “*rested*” because there was nothing else He needed to do for mankind – Gen. 1:31.

### GENESIS 2:3

Then God blessed the seventh day and sanctified [*qadash* (to set apart)] it, because in it He rested [*shabbath*] from all His work which God had created [*bara* (to build)] and made [*awah* (to fashion; to accomplish)].

- (2) **Mosaic Law Sabbath.** Instituted as the fourth commandment [Ex. 20:8-11; Lev. 23:3] in the @@@ MOSAIC LAW it was given as a memorial and reminder of God’s @@@ GRACE – Isa. 58:11-14. The Jews were to do no work on the seventh day. *See infra* (5) for the correct no “*work*” application.

### EXODUS 20:8-10

Remember the sabbath [*shabbath*] day, to keep it holy [*qadash* (to set apart)]. Six days you shall labor and do all your work, but the seventh day is a sabbath of the LORD your God; *in it* you shall not do any work [*melakah* (occupation; business) – regular working job], you or your son or your daughter, your male or your female servant or your cattle or your sojourner who stays with you.

- (3) **Sabbatical Year.** The Sabbatical year was commanded for every 7th year and was a generational test of @@@ FAITH/Rest. Only the mature Believer would not work the farm and rely on God – Ex. 23:10-11; Lev. 25:3-4; 26:33-36. Most Jews rejected this Sabbatical year. *See @@@ REVERSIONISM.*
- (4) **Sabbatical Year of Jubilee.** This was once every 50th year and required the returning of realty to the original owner – Lev. 25:8-10. Never followed.
- (5) **Profaning the Sabbath.** The Jews profaned the Sabbath, often with idolatry and apostasy – Ezk. 23:37-39; Num. 15:32-35. *See @@@ RELIGION.*

## NUMBERS 15:32-35

Now while the sons of Israel were in the wilderness, they found a man gathering wood [gathering wood for sale was his regular job to make a living and not necessary for him to stay alive] on the sabbath day. Those who found him gathering wood brought him to Moses and Aaron and to all the congregation [*edah* (gathering; assembly)]; and they put him in custody because it had not been declared what should be done to him. Then the LORD said to Moses, “The man shall surely be put to death [*muth*]; all the congregation shall stone him with stones outside the camp.”

- (6) **Man-Made Traditions.** The Jews perverted the Sabbath into a function of @@@ RELIGION by adding numerous man-made restrictions on behavior which were not found in the @@@ BIBLE – Mk. 2:23-28; Jn. 5:16-17.

## JOHN 5:16-17

For this reason the Jews were persecuting Jesus, because He was doing these things [healing the sick] on the Sabbath. But He answered them, “My Father is working until now [the @@@ PLAN OF GOD], and I Myself am working [*ergazomai* – Jesus Christ holds the universe together every second].”

## MARK 2:23-24, 27-28

And it happened that He [Jesus] was passing through the grainfields on the Sabbath, and His disciples began to make their way along while picking the heads of grain. The Pharisees were saying to Him, “Look, why are they doing what is not lawful on the Sabbath” .... Jesus said to them, “The Sabbath was made for man [it was designed to teach @@@ GRACE], and not man for the Sabbath [the man-made mandates and taboos of @@@ RELIGION]. So the Son of Man [Jesus Christ] is LORD [*kurios* (God)] even of the Sabbath.”

- (7) **Church Age.** The Church Age no longer observes the Jewish Sabbath or any other “special day” – Gal. 4:10; Col. 2:16-17; Rom. 14:5. However, because the Church Age began on a Sunday, the day of Pentecost, and Jesus Christ rose from the dead on a Sunday, many choose to observe Sunday as a day of worship – 1 Cor. 16:2; Jn. 20:1-2. In the early Church period Believers would often meet on Sunday in various homes for a weekly @@@ BIBLE class, which lasted many hours per session – Acts 20:7-9.

## COLOSSIANS 2:16

Therefore no one is to act as your [the Believer's] judge [*krino* (to approve) – the Law of Liberty allows @@@ PRIVACY] in regard to food or drink or in respect to a festival or a new moon or a Sabbath day.

## ACTS 20:7-9

On the first day of the week, when we [Paul and his team in Troy] were gathered together to break bread, Paul *began* talking to them [a large Bible class], intending to leave the next day, and he prolonged his message [*logos*] until midnight. There were many lamps in the upper room where we were gathered together. And there was a young man named Eutychus sitting in the window sill, sinking into a deep sleep; and as Paul kept on talking, he was overcome by sleep and fell down from the third floor and was picked up dead.

- (8) **Faith/Rest.** Using the @@@ FAITH/Rest technique as one of the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES is akin to a *temporal Sabbath*. Believers are expected to rely on the promises of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE and then let God handle the @@@ PROBLEMS in life. Tragically, many Believers refuse to rest in the LORD and fail to benefit from His Providence – Heb. 3:11.

## HEBREWS 3:11

As I [God] swore in My wrath, “They shall not enter My rest [*katapausis* (a resting place)].”

- (9) **The Eternal Sabbath.** The eternal Sabbath or “*rest*” [Matt. 11:28] spoken about by Jesus Christ is a recognition of the positive consequences of @@@ GRACE – Jn. 20:31; Heb. 3:18-19; 4:1-11.

## MATTHEW 11:28

Come [*deute* (come here)] to Me [Jesus Christ], all who are weary [*kopiao* (exhausted)] and heavy-laden [*phortizo* (to load one down with a burden) – @@@ RELIGION produces heavy requirements of legalism], and I will give you rest [*anapauo* (to give rest; to refresh) – @@@ SALVATION by @@@ GRACE].

---

## @@@ SALT

- (1) **Definition.** The word for salt in the Greek is *halas* – NaCl [sodium chloride]. Salt is used in the @@@ BIBLE to represent many concepts.
- (2) **Seasoner/Preserver.** Salt is employed as an analogy to describe the **Winner** Believer that reaches spiritual @@@ MATURITY in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT – Job 6:6-7; Col. 4:6; Js. 3:10-12; Matt. 5:13; Mk. 9:50.

## MARK 9:50

Salt [*halas*] is good; but if the salt becomes unsalty, with what will you make it salty *again*? Have salt [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] in yourselves [*the Believer*], and be at peace [*eireneuo (harmony)*] with one another.

## COLOSSIANS 4:6

Let your [*the Believer*] speech always be with grace [*charis*], *as though* seasoned [*artuo (to prepare)*] with salt [*halas* – *the Believer uses the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES*], so that you will know how you should respond [*apokrimomai (to give an answer to a question)*] to each person.

- (3) **Food Offering.** Salt was used in the food offerings of the Old Testament to represent eternal life – Lev. 2:13; Ezra 6:9; Ezk. 43:24.

## LEVITICUS 2:13

Every grain offering of yours, moreover, you shall season with salt [*melach*], so that the salt of the covenant [*beriyth*] of your God shall not be lacking from your grain offering; with all your offerings you shall offer salt.

- (4) **In Judgment.** Salt is used in three categories of judgment.

(a) **Personal Judgment** – For individual Believers, e.g., Gen. 19:26.

## GENESIS 19:26

But his [*Lot's*] wife, from behind him, looked *back* [*God instructed them not to look back at Sodom's destruction*], and she became a pillar of salt [*melach*].



- (b) **Collective Judgment** – Deut. 29:23; Jdg. 9:45. See @@@ WAR.

### DEUTERONOMY 29:23

All its land is brimstone and salt, a burning waste, unsown and unproductive, and no grass grows in it, like the overthrow of Sodom and Gomorrah, Damahh and Zeboiim, which the LORD overthrew in His anger and in His wrath.

- (c) **Eternal Judgment** – Mk. 9:47-49. The unBeliever in the “*Lake of Fire*” [Rev. 20:10]. See @@@ JUDGMENT; @@@ HELL.

### MARK 9:48-49

Where their [the unBeliever] worm [in the Lake of Fire] does not die, and the fire [*pur*] is not quenched. For everyone will be salted [*halizo*] with fire.

- (5) **Blessing.** Salt is used to represent the Believer as a blessing to the country, family, and community – Matt. 5:13; Mk. 9:50; Eccl. 9:14-18.

### MATTHEW 5:13

You [Believers] are the salt of the earth [the potential to serve in the @@@ PIVOT by reaching spiritual @@@ MATURITY]; but if the salt has become tasteless [the negative [-N] volition Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM], how can it be made salty *again*? It is no longer good for anything, except to be thrown out and trampled under foot by men [@@@ SIN UNTO DEATH].

- (6) **Bad Salt.** Salt that is not “salty” describes the **Loser** Believer who rejects @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – Lk. 14:34-35; Mk. 9:50.

### LUKE 14:34-35

Therefore, salt [*halas*] is good; but if even salt has become tasteless [*moraine*], with what will it be seasoned? It is useless either for the soil or for the manure pile; it is thrown out [*ballo*]. He who has ears to hear, let him hear.

- (7) **Salt for Contracts.** In the ancient world both parties to an agreement, contract, or promise, would eat salt as a binding guarantee – Num. 18:19.
-

## @@@ SALVATION

- (1) **Definition.** Salvation refers to the @@@ GRACE mechanics set out in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD to redeem all those humans who want an eternal relationship with their Creator. Humans instinctively know that they @@@ SIN. On the other hand, the supernatural power of grace is not instinctive and must be delineated – Gal. 3:22; Rom. 1:18-19; Heb. 10:10.

## HEBREWS 10:10

By this will [the @@@ PLAN OF GOD] we [Believers] have been sanctified [saved and put into @@ UNION WITH CHRIST] through the offering of the body [soma] of Jesus Christ once for all [ephapax (once for all) – under @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT Christ provided the opportunity for @@@ SALVATION to all humans].

- (2) **Enemy of God.** All men are born into Satan's @@@ WORLD and under the curse of @@@ SIN. Without God's Perfect Righteousness [+R], the unBeliever's own righteousness [-r] makes him the "*enemy*" [Eccl. 7:20; Rom. 5:10; Col. 1:21; Eph. 2:11-15] of God at birth and a "*bastard*" [Heb. 12:8]. The unBeliever remains under the "*wrath of God*" [Jn. 3:36; Rom. 1:18; 2:5; 5:8-10; 9:1, 22; 1 Thess. 5:9; Eph. 2:3; 5:6; Rev. 6:16-17; 19:15]. All unBelievers are "*accursed ones*" destined for "*the eternal fire ... prepared for the devil and his angels*" [Matt. 25:41]. See @@@ HELL.

## ROMANS 5:10

For if while we [the Believer prior to @@@ SALVATION] were enemies [echthros] we were reconciled [katallasso] to God through [dia (by means of)] the death [thanatos] of His Son [Jesus Christ was judged on the @@@ CROSS for @@@ SIN], much more, having been reconciled [the Believer receives God's Righteousness [+R]], we shall be saved [sozo (to deliver) – deliver to the status of @@@ MATURITY] by His life.

## EPHESIANS 2:3

Among them we too all formerly lived in the lusts of our flesh, indulging the desires of the flesh and of the mind, and were by nature children of wrath [orge], even as the rest [the Believer prior to @@@ SALVATION].

- (3) **God's Righteousness.** A Perfect and Holy God as revealed in the @@@ TRINITY cannot allow imperfect man with his imperfect righteousness [-r] to have relationship with Him. Man's righteousness is always [-r], while God's Righteousness is always [+R]. @@@ RELIGION denies the Holiness of God and propagates the lie that God accepts man through systems of human good – Matt. 5:20, 48; Isa. 43:3; Ps. 39:5; Rom. 3:23; Jer. 30:21.

### PSALM 39:5

Behold, You [God] have made my days [*yom* (lifetime)] as handbreadths [*ephach* (the width of the hand; a unit of measurement)], and my lifetime [*cheled* (duration of life)] as nothing in Your sight; surely every man at his best [human righteousness [-r]] is a mere breath [*hebel* (vapor; breath; vanity)]. Selah.

### JEREMIAH 30:21

Their [the Jewish people] leader [*addiyr* (great one; majestic one)] shall be one of them [the Messiah would be a Jew], and their ruler [*mashal* (to exercise dominion) – the Messiah will rule over the Jews forever] shall come forth from their midst; and I [God the Father in the @@@ TRINITY] will bring him near and he shall approach [*nagash* (to cause to approach)] Me [since the fall of Adam, only the Perfect human Jesus Christ in His @@@ RESURRECTION body can approach Perfect God]; for who would dare to risk his life [Perfect God can only condemn imperfect mankind] to approach Me [except for the Messiah all humans are born with an @@@ OLD SIN NATURE and possess [-r]]?" declares the LORD.

### ROMANS 3:23

For all [mankind] have sinned [*hamartano* – personal @@@ SIN and the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] and fall short [*hustereo* (to be left behind in the race) – human works of righteousness [-r]] of the glory [*doxa* – the absolutely pure and unalterable Divine essence of the @@@ TRINITY to include His Perfect Righteousness [+R]] of God.

### ISAIAH 43:3

For I am the LORD your God, The Holy One of Israel, your Savior [*yasha*].

**MATTHEW 5:48**

Therefore you [all humans] are to be perfect [*teleios* – by receiving His Perfect Righteousness [+R]], as your heavenly Father is perfect [*teleios*].

**MATTHEW 5:20**

For I [Jesus Christ] say to you that unless your righteousness [*dikaiosune* – human [-r] righteousness] surpasses [*perisseuo* (to exceed a fixed number of measure)] that of the scribes [lawyers] and Pharisees [God rejects even the most extreme adherents to human works of @@@ RELIGION], you will not enter the kingdom of heaven [no @@@ SALVATION].

UnBeliever's [-r] + God's [+R] = [No]

– Unacceptable to God –

- (4) **Grace Finds the Way.** The @@@ PLAN OF GOD found a way to provide imperfect [-r] man with God's own Perfect Righteousness [+R] so that Perfect God can allow a human being to have an eternal relationship with Him without compromising His Perfect Holiness – Gen. 15:6; 2 Cor. 5:21; Rom. 8:10; Phil. 3:7-9; Isa. 43:3; 1 Tim. 1:15. Thus, at the second of faith alone in Christ alone, God imputes His [+R] to that “*born again*” Believer and the dilemma is answered. This is His @@@ GRACE gift from Jesus Christ to the Believer. The impossible “cosmic math problem” of how Perfect [+R] God can accept imperfect [-r] mankind is now solved – “*things that are impossible with people are possible with God*” [Lk. 18:27].

Believer's [+R] + God's [+R] = [YES]

– Acceptable to God –

## 1 TIMOTHY 1:15

It is a trustworthy statement, deserving full acceptance, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners [all humans], among whom I [Paul was the most religious and self-righteous [-r] person of his day] am foremost of all.

## JOHN 14:6

Jesus said to him, “I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no one comes [erchomai (to come from one place to another) – @@@ SALVATION is only by belief in Jesus Christ] to the Father but through me.”

## ROMANS 8:10

If Christ is in you [Believer], though the body is dead [nekros] because of sin [hamartia – spiritual @@@ DEATH and the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE infect the body], yet the [human] spirit [pneuma] is alive [zoe] because of righteousness [dikaiosune – the Believer has the Righteousness [+R] of God].

## PHILIPPIANS 3:7-9

But whatever things were gain [kerdos (advantages in life)] to me [Paul], those things I have counted as loss for the sake of Christ. More than that, I count all things to be loss in view of the surpassing value of knowing [via @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] Christ Jesus my LORD, for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and count them but rubbish [skubalon (the excrement of animals and humans) – all human good deeds and celebrityship are worthless] so that I may gain Christ [the mind of Christ], and may be found in Him, not having a righteousness [dikaiosune] of my own derived from the Law [nomos – @@@ RELIGION], but that which is through faith [pistis – saving @@@ FAITH gives God’s Righteousness [+R]] in Christ, the righteousness which comes from God on the basis of faith.

- (5) **Barriers and Six Imputations.** Under @@@ SOTERIOLOGY there are numerous barriers between Righteous [+R] God and imperfect man that have to be removed. In the following chart, a “real imputation” designation means that there is an affinity [attraction] between the imputation and the target object. In contrast, a “judicial imputation” means that there is no affinity target to attract and the matter must be forced upon the object.

PROBLEM	SOLUTION
(1) <b>Spiritual Death</b> from Adam's Original Sin. <b>Real Imputation</b> to the <b>Old Sin Nature</b> at Birth.	(1) <b>Christ's Substitutionary Spiritual Death. Judicial Imputation</b> to Jesus Christ. All Humans.
(2) <b>Personal Sins</b> in Time.	(2) <b>Unlimited Atonement. Judicial Imputation</b> to Jesus Christ. All Humans.
(3) <b>Curse of Mosaic Law.</b>	(3) <b>Judicial Imputation</b> to <b>Jesus Christ.</b> All Humans.
(4) <b>Human Physical Life.</b>	(4) <b>Regeneration. Real Imputation</b> of a Human Spirit to Believers Only.
(5) <b>Human [-r]</b> – Isa. 64:6.	(5) <b>God's [+R] + 38 Things. Real Imputation</b> to Believers Only.
(6) <b>No Rewards.</b>	(6) <b>Real Imputation</b> of <b>Rewards</b> to <b>Winner</b> Believers Only.

– Six Divine Imputations –

- (6) **Love of God.** The *agape* impersonal @@@ LOVE of God motivated Him to develop the @@@ PLAN OF GOD to save mankind. It is critical to understand that this *love* from God is His *impersonal love*, not His *personal love*. Again, *agape impersonal love* places all the integrity in the subject – **Perfect God** – not the object – **sinful mankind**. In short, there is absolutely nothing about sinful mankind that attracts God's Perfect personal love. Only when a person believes in Jesus Christ and receives the @@@ FORTY THINGS at salvation does God have a personal love for the object [Believer], because the Believer now possesses these things [Jn. 3:16]. *See supra* (2).



**JOHN 3:16**

For God so loved [*agapao* – impersonal @@@ LOVE] the world [*kosmos* – the @@@ WORLD of all mankind], that He gave His only begotten [*monogenes* (single of its kind; uniquely born)] Son [Jesus Christ], that whoever believes [*pisteuo* – @@@ FAITH in Christ for @@@ SALVATION] in Him shall not perish [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely; to utterly destroy) – @@@ JUDGMENT and separation from God], but have eternal [*aionios* (without beginning and end)] life [*zoe*].

- (7) **Lamb of God.** Jesus Christ was prophetically spoken of as “*the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world*” [Jn. 1:29; 35]. This was His purpose for coming into the @@@ WORLD under the @@@ PLAN OF GOD. He would be “sacrificed” for the @@@ SIN of all mankind – past, present, and future. See Isa. 53:7; Acts 8:32-33; Jn. 1:29-30; Rev. 5:6; 6:16; 7:14, 17; 14:1; 17:14; 19:7; Heb. 9:11-14. All animal sacrifices in the Old Testament pointed to the person and work of Jesus Christ on the @@@ CROSS with emphasis on either salvation [unBeliever] or @@@ REBOUND [Believer] – Lev. 1:1-11; 17:11. Jesus Christ is also called the Shepherd – Heb. 13:20; Isa. 40:11; Jn. 10:11, 14; 1 Pet. 2:5; 5:2-4; Ps. 23:1-6; 80:1; Ezk. 34:23; Jer. 31:10.

**JOHN 1:29**

The next day he [John the Baptist who was then baptizing Believers in the Jordan River] saw Jesus coming to him and said, “Behold, the Lamb of God who takes away [*airo* (to move from its place)] the sin [*hamartia* – spiritual @@@ DEATH and @@@ SIN] of the world [*kosmos* – Christ provided @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT for all humans to give everyone equal opportunity for @@@ SALVATION]!”

**HEBREWS 13:20**

Now the God of peace [*eirene* (reconciliation) – @@@ SOTERIOLOGY], who brought up [*anago* (to lead up to a higher place)] from the dead [*nekro* – the @@@ RESURRECTION of Jesus Christ] the great [*megas*] Shepherd [*poimen*] of the sheep [*probation* – all Believers] through [*dia* (by means of)] the blood [*aima* – @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST provided @@@ SALVATION] of the eternal [*aionios* (without beginning or end)] covenant [*diatheke* (a compact)], even Jesus our LORD [*kurios*].

- (8) **Two Acts of Volition.** There are two acts of non-meritorious volition in salvation: (1) the individual must give the Gospel a **hearing**; and (2) the individual must then **believe** the Gospel by @@@ FAITH. See 2 Tim. 2:8; 1 Thess. 4:14; Acts 16:31; Heb. 4:2-3; Eph. 1:13; 4:3; Rom. 10:17.

## HEBREWS 4:2

For indeed we [Believers] have had good news preached [*euaggelizo* – the Gospel of @@@ SALVATION] to us, just as they [unBelievers] also; but the word [*logos* – the Gospel] they heard [*akoe*] did not profit [*opheleo* (to be advantageous; to benefit)] them, because it was not united [*sugkerannumi* (to mix together)] by faith [*pistis* – the unBeliever hearer of the Gospel did not believe it via @@@ FAITH] in those who heard.

## EPHESIANS 1:13

In Him [Jesus Christ], you [the Believer] also, after listening [*akouo* (to consider what is or has been said)] to the message of truth, the gospel [*euaggelion* (good news)] of your salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven]—having also believed [*pisteuo* – @@@ SALVATION by @@@ FAITH in Christ], you were sealed [*sphragizo* (to set a seal upon)] in Him with the Holy Spirit of promise [*epaggelia* (a promised good) – the ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT in salvation].

## ROMANS 10:17

So faith [*pistis* – @@@ FAITH in Jesus Christ] comes from hearing [*akoe* (the sense of hearing) – the Gospel], and hearing by the word [*rhema* (that which is or has been uttered by the living voice)] of Christ.

- (9) **Salvation Mechanics.** Salvation is through non-meritorious @@@ FAITH alone in Jesus Christ alone – Rom. 4:5. Man can never earn or deserve salvation by his merit or good works – 2 Tim. 1:9. Therefore, faith as a means of perception is not something that one does but is the channel whereby one appropriates what God has already done under @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT – Gen. 15:6; Matt. 21:22; Jn. 1:12-13; 1 Pet. 1:5; Heb. 4:3; 10:39; Rom. 3:20-28; Gal. 3:8. The “*peace*” [*ierene*] in Eph. 1:2; 6:15 and Rom. 10:15, stands for reconciliation between Perfect God and sinful man [now made Perfect through salvation] not the absence of @@@ WAR.

## 2 TIMOTHY 1:9

Who has saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN)] us [the Believer] and called [*kaelo*] us with a holy calling [the ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT in @@@ SALVATION], not according [*kata* (according to a norm or standard)] to our works [*ergon* – human acts of righteousness [-r]], but according to His own purpose [*prosthesis* (the setting forth of a thing)] and grace [*charis*] which was granted [*didomi*] us in Christ Jesus from all eternity [*aionios* (without beginning and end) – God knew who would respond to @@@ GRACE].

- (10) **Required Level of Faith.** Salvation @@@ FAITH consists of a simple exhale of **belief** by the unBeliever in the Gospel message. Only a *speck* of faith in Jesus Christ, any amount more than no faith at all [in today's analogy the size of an electron orbiting an atom], is required for salvation, such things as: (1) the size of a “*mustard seed*” [Matt. 17:20; Lk. 13:19]; (2) a spot of “*leaven*” [Lk. 13:21]; (3) “*receive*” [Jn. 1:12]; (4) “*eat*,” “*drink*” [Isa. 45:22; 55:1; 1 Cor. 11:26]; (5) “*come*” [Matt. 11:28]; (6) “*laying a stone*” [Isa. 28:16]; and (7) “*call upon*” [Rom. 10:4, 12-13; Acts 2:21; 4:11-12; 1 Cor. 1:2; Jn. 3:16, 36; 9:38; 20:31; Gal. 2:16; Tit. 3:5; Jon. 3:5; 1 Jn. 3:23; 5:10].

## LUKE 13:19

It [the amount of @@@ FAITH needed for @@@ SALVATION] is like a mustard seed [extremely tiny seed], which a man took and threw into his own garden [each is responsible for his own volition]; and it grew and became a tree [results of salvation], and the birds of the air nested in its branches.

## JONAH 3:5

Then the people of Nineveh [Nineveh was the capital city of Assyria] believed [*aman*] in God [Jesus Christ as revealed to these Gentiles for @@@ SALVATION]; and they called a fast and put on sackcloth from the greatest to the least of them.

## JOHN 9:38

And he [the formerly blind man] said, “LORD, I believe [*pisteuo*].” And he worshiped [*proskuneo* (to kiss the hand in token of reverence)] Him [Jesus].

## JOHN 20:31

But these have been written [John's gospel] so that you may believe [*pisteuo*] that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing [@@@ FAITH in Christ] you may have life in His name [*onoma* – @@@ SALVATION].

## ROMANS 10:13

For “Whoever [*pas* (everyone)] will call [exercise positive [+P] volition] on the name [*epikaleomai* (to put a name upon)] of the LORD [*kurios*] will be saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN].”

## ISAIAH 45:22

Turn to [*panah* (to turn toward) – exercise positive [+P] volition] Me and be saved [*yasha* (to be liberated)], all the ends of the earth [@@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT to be saved]; for I am God, and there is no other.

## ISAIAH 28:16

Therefore thus says the LORD God, “Behold, I am laying in Zion [Jerusalem] a stone [Jesus Christ], a tested stone [Christ would pass every temptation], a costly cornerstone [*pinnah* – the cost to Christ at @@@ SIN bearing] for the foundation, firmly placed. He who believes [*aman* – by @@@ FAITH in Christ] in it will not be disturbed [he has @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY].”

- (11) **Holy Spirit's Grace Work.** The @@@ HOLY SPIRIT takes the amount of @@@ FAITH exhaled by the unBeliever and makes it efficacious for salvation – Eph. 1:13; 2:8-9; Acts 18:27. This total @@@ GRACE process excludes any human input. For example, if a person had 100% positive [+P] volition faith output upon hearing the Gospel *he would still not be saved* without the ministry of the Holy Spirit who takes that faith output [some amount more than zero] and makes it efficacious for salvation – Tit. 3:5.

## ACTS 18:27

And when he [Paul] wanted to go across to Achaia, the brethren encouraged him and wrote to the disciples to welcome him; and when he had arrived, he greatly helped those who had believed [*pisteuo*] through grace [*charis*].

## EPHESIANS 2:8-9

For by grace [*charis* – @@@ GRACE is the total @@@ PLAN OF GOD] you have been saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN and guaranteed @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY] through faith [*pistis* – the mechanics of @@@ SALVATION is by @@@ FAITH]; and that [the speck of human faith exhaled plus the entire package of what God does in grace] not of yourselves, *it is* the gift [*doron* (a gift)] of God; not as a result of [human] works [*ergon*], so that no one may boast [*kauchaomai* (to boast on account of a thing) – because the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT takes the individual’s faith output and makes it efficacious for salvation no one can boast about their so-called amount of faith exhaled upon hearing the Gospel].

## TITUS 3:5

He [God] saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN] us [Believers], not on the basis of [our] deeds [*chrestotes* (moral goodness) – human @@@ GOOD] which we have done in righteousness [*diakaiosune* – human righteousness [-r]], but according [*kata* (according to a norm or standard)] to His mercy [*eleos* – @@@ GRACE in action], by the washing [*loutron* (a bath)] of regeneration [*paliggenesia* (a new birth)] and renewing [*anakainosis* (a complete change for the better)] by the Holy Spirit [the ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT in @@@ SALVATION].

- (12) **Work and Credit to God.** The @@@ TRINITY does *all* the work for the salvation of the Believer and therefore gets *all* the credit. All human work is excluded to include the “faith output” issue [*supra* (10), (11)]. God the Father made the @@@ PLAN OF GOD to save and bless the Believer, God the Son executed the plan by taking on the @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION and going to the @@@ CROSS, and God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT spreads the plan to all who exhibit positive [+P] volition in their soul towards their Creator. While the spotlight focus is on Jesus Christ dying for man’s @@@ SIN per 1 Pet. 2:24, @@@ FAITH in Jesus Christ is the means that the unBeliever employs to take advantage of the work of Christ and receive eternal salvation – Isa. 28:16. This non-meritorious faith system of perception by the hearer operates in tandem with @@@ REPENT *metanoeo* (to change the mind), which simply means that the unBeliever “changes his mind” about the false claim of human @@@ GOOD works and @@@ RELIGION as a vehicle for salvation and accepts God’s fantastic @@@ GRACE opportunity.



- (13) **Always the Same.** The means of salvation is the same in any of the @@@ DISPENSATIONS – nonmeritorious faith in the work of the Messiah. “*I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no one comes to the Father but through Me*” [Jn. 14:6]; Gen. 15:6; Isa. 44:22; 45:15, 21; 55:1; 1 Pet. 1:10-12; Gal. 3:8; Rom. 3:24-25 [mercy seat]; 4:1-3, 11; 9:30-33. Old Testament Believers looked forward to the Messiah’s work on the @@@ CROSS, New Testament Believers look back. “*And there is salvation in no other name under heaven that has been given among men by which we must be saved*” [Acts 4:12].

### GENESIS 15:6

Then he [Abram] believed [aman – @@@ FAITH] in the LORD [yehovah (the self-existing one) – Jesus Christ]; and He [God] reckoned [chashab (to credit; to impute)] it to him as righteousness [tsedaqah (righteousness as vindicated) – Abraham received God’s Righteousness [+R] and was saved].

### ROMANS 4:1-3

What then shall we say that Abraham, our forefather according to the flesh, has found? For if Abraham was justified [dikaioo (to render righteous) – in the eyes of the @@@ TRINITY] by works [ergon – human good deeds], he has something to boast about, but not before God. For what does the Scripture say? “Abraham believed [pisteuo] God, and it was credited [logizomai (to reckon; to credit)] to him as righteousness [dikaiosisune – God’s Righteousness [+R] is imputed and Abraham is accepted into @@@ HEAVEN].”

- (14) **Unlimited Atonement.** Under @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT all humans are savable. Christ bore the sins of every member of the human race.
- (15) **Heathenism.** Under @@@ HEATHENISM all humans have an equal opportunity to be saved. But each must take advantage of the offer by a positive [+P] choice – Jn. 3:36; Acts 4:11-12; 1 Tim. 4:10; Jn. 3:23; 5:10.

### JOHN 3:36

He who believes [pisteuo] in the Son [Jesus Christ] has eternal life; but he who does not obey [apeitheo (to refuse or withhold belief; not to allow one’s self to be persuaded)] the Son will not see life [zoe], but the wrath [orge] of God abides [meno (to remain)] on him [eternal separation in @@@ HELL].



## ACTS 4:11-12

He [**Jesus Christ**] is the stone [*lithos* (a building stone)] which was rejected by you [**Jewish religious leaders**], the builders, *but* which became the chief [*kephale* (the head)] corner stone [*gonia* (an external angle)]. And there is salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – @@@ **SALVATION**] in no one else; for there is no other name [*onoma* – **Jesus Christ**] under heaven that has been given [*didomi*] among men [*anthropos* (mankind)] by which we must be saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven].

## 1 JOHN 5:10

The one who believes [*pisteuo*] in the Son of God has the testimony [*marturia* (what one testifies before a judge)] in himself; the one who does not believe God has made Him a liar [**unBelievers falsely say that @@@ SALVATION is not by @@@ GRACE but by @@@ RELIGION**], because he has not believed in the testimony that God has given concerning His Son.

## 1 JOHN 3:23

This is His [**God the Father**] commandment [*entole* (an order)], that we believe [*pisteuo*] in the name of His Son Jesus Christ, and love [*agape* – **impersonal @@@ LOVE**] one another [*allelon* (one another of the same kind) – **other Believers under the Law of Love**], just as He [**Jesus**] commanded us.

- (16) **Rejecting Grace.** Most humans across @@@ **HISTORY** reject the free gift of @@@ **SALVATION** by @@@ **GRACE**. “*For many are called, but few chosen*” [Matt. 22:14]. Jesus said that the “*gate*” of rejection of salvation is wide and the “*way is broad that leads to destruction* (@@@ **HELL**), and *there are many who enter through it*” [Matt. 7:13]. Apart from the fact of their own negative [-N] volition to their Creator, the following also applies:

- (a) **Pride of Personal Works** – Matt. 19:16-26. Mankind hates @@@ **GRACE** because grace totally excludes all human good works, merit, sincerity, emotion, and morality. See Jn. 3:19-21 [**unBelievers have a personal love for the “darkness” of their own good works**]. The false pattern of approbation of God by human good deeds was set by Cain in Gen. 4:1-9. God rejected Cain’s human works [produce] and accepted Abel’s animal offering which anticipated the future work of the Christ.

## JOHN 3:19-21

This is the judgment [*krisis* (at a trial)], that the Light [*phos* – Jesus Christ the God/man in @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION] has come [*erchomai*] into the world [*kosmos* – Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD], and men [*anthropos* (mankind) – unBelievers] loved [*agapao* (to be well pleased with; to love dearly)] the darkness [*skotos* (of night darkness)] rather than the Light [*phos* – Jesus Christ], for their deeds [*ergon*] were evil [*poneros* (of a bad nature) – the unBeliever with his own righteousness [-r] is in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS and is attracted only to human @@@ GOOD]. For everyone who does [*prasso* (to practice)] evil [*phaulos* (worthlessness; wickedness)] hates [*miseo* (to detest)] the Light [the unBeliever loves @@@ RELIGION and hates @@@ GRACE], and does not come to the Light for fear that his deeds will be exposed [*elegcho* (to refute, generally with shame) – the human works of the unBeliever are not acceptable to God]. But he [the Believer saved by @@@ FAITH and possessing the Righteousness [+R] of God] who practices [*poieo* (to produce)] the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – the Believer on positive [+P] volition to learning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] comes to the Light, so that his deeds [*ergon* – Divine Good production] may be manifested [*phaneroo* (to make visible)] as having been wrought [*ergazomai* (to work out)] in God.

## MATTHEW 7:21-23

“Not everyone who says to Me [Jesus Christ], ‘LORD, LORD,’ will enter the kingdom of heaven [@@@ SALVATION], but he who does the will [*thelema* – you must believe in Jesus Christ] of My Father who is in heaven will enter. Many will say to Me on that day [unBeliever at the Great White Throne Judgment], ‘LORD, LORD, did we not prophesy in Your name, and in Your name cast out demons, and in Your name perform many miracles [Judas the unBeliever did such]? And then I will declare to them, “I never knew you [he is not a Believer]; DEPART FROM ME, YOU WHO PRACTICE LAWLESSNESS [*anomia* (contempt and violation of law) – rejected God’s @@@ GRACE].”

- (b) **Negative Volition.** Negative [-N] volition will not respond to @@@ GRACE regardless of any condition in @@@ HEAVEN or on earth – 2 Cor. 4:3-6; Jn. 5:39-40. See @@@ HEATHENISM.
- (c) **Hate God.** An irrational hatred of the living God – Prov. 8:36; Ps. 14:1.

- (17) **False Claim – Salvation by Works.** The antithesis of @@@ GRACE, many false “Christian teachers” hinder and even blot out the truth of the Gospel by false dogma which embraces @@@ RELIGION and human @@@ GOOD works – *ergon* [Eph. 2:9; Gal. 5:7-9]. False gospels include:
- (a) **Self-Esteem Gospel.** Salvation is achieved by performing morality works and becoming “your best self” – changing the behavior pattern of the adherent to live a better life under a philosophy of self-sufficiency and so-called “positive thinking.”
  - (b) **Corporate Works Gospel.** The adherent must join a Church and/or engage in a variety of Church works and functions to include “tithing” @@@ MONEY.
  - (c) **Lordship Gospel.** Also known as “invite Christ into the heart.” Proponents insist that the Believer must “submit” to Jesus as LORD or Master of the life prior to, or as a part of, the process of Gospel hearing. The concern of these legalists is that a person may profess @@@ FAITH in Christ but then live an immoral life. Of course, there is no set gauge in the Lordship Gospel crowd on how much a person must “submit” in order to be saved (or to be “spiritual”). Insisting that the adherent must do things to make Jesus LORD as a requirement of salvation is utter nonsense – Heb. 12:17; Jer. 17:9. In fact, since all Believers are in @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST Jesus Christ *is* their LORD whether the Believer ever realizes it or not.
  - (d) **Ritual Works Gospel.** Requiring the adherent to perform rituals in conjunction with the Gospel presentation, such as water @@@ BAPTISM or @@@ CIRCUMCISION. This is the subject of *Galatians*. Disgusted with this legalistic nonsense, the Apostle Paul told the already saved Galatians in sarcasm to not just get circumcised to be “saved,” but to imitate their former heathen priests and cut off their entire testicles to “really” get saved – Gal. 5:12!
  - (e) **Social Justice Gospel.** The emphasis for salvation is on changing the @@@ WORLD into a better place by eradicating injustice, ending poverty, promoting “equality,” stopping “racism,” ending @@@ WAR, *saving* the planet, etc. Some adherents also claim that such activities will hasten the 2nd Advent of Christ and the Millennium rule.

- (f) **Religious Works Gospel.** The adherent is saved by keeping the @@@ MOSAIC LAW, being moral, engaging in asceticism, or following man-made taboos. “*But in vain do they worship Me, teaching as doctrines the precepts of men*” [Matt. 15:9]; Rom. 3:20, 28; Gal. 2:16.
- (g) **Psychological Works Gospel.** The adherent must come forward in a public affirmation feeling sorry for @@@ SIN and making public confession of sin. None of these things are required for salvation.
- (18) **What Think Ye of Christ?** The only issue in salvation is set out in Matt. 22:42; 26:66 – “*What do you think about the Christ?*” Are Jesus’ claims to be the promised Messiah who would die for the @@@ SIN of the @@@ WORLD true or not true [Rom. 10:17; Acts 16:31]? To view Jesus as a “good” person that should be emulated is not a logical option. He is either the Son of God and Savior as claimed or a great deceiver. The unBeliever Jews rejected Him: “*For a good work we do not stone You, but for blasphemy; and because You, being a man, make Yourself out to be God*” [Jn. 10:33].

## MATTHEW 22:42

“What do you think [*dokeo (to be of opinion)*] about the Christ, whose son is He?” They [*Pharisees*] said to Him [*Jesus Christ*], “*The son of David.*”

## ACTS 16:31

They [*Paul and Silas*] said, “Believe [*pisteuo*] in the LORD Jesus, and you will be saved [*sozo (delivered) – into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN*], you and your household [*they all should do the same*].”

- (19) **Romans 10:6-13.** Understanding Paul’s salvation dissertation in *Romans*.

## ROMANS 10:9-10

That if you confess [*homologeō*] with your mouth [*stoma – the verbal utterance of thoughts*] Jesus as LORD, and believe in your heart that God raised Him from the dead, you will be saved [*sozo – delivered into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN*]; for with the heart a person believes, resulting in righteousness [*dikaioσune – God’s Righteousness [+R] is imputed to the Believer*], and with the mouth he confesses, resulting in salvation.\*

\* The Apostle Paul is speaking about the Jews' salvation picking up from his earlier dissertation in Rom. 9:30. Rom. 10:6, quotes Deut. 30:12. Then, Rom. 10:7, quotes Amos 9:2 [Paul didn't continue with Deut. 30:13 because only in Moses' day was the overseas unreachable]. Rom. 10:8, quotes Deut. 30:14. Rom. 10:9, refers to Jews who rely on Deut. 6:4; 30:10, for salvation by performing ritual without reality. Rom. 10:10-13, shows metaphors of positive [+P] volition from the unBeliever and the subsequent ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT. Bottom line: Confession of belief is to God, not to people. At best it is a result! The "*confess with your mouth*" is a metaphor for belief via the positive [+P] volition in the soul towards the Gospel. Note: The mute are also saved! See Rom. 3:27-30.

- (20) **Gospel is Free.** The Gospel is free and not for sale – 2 Cor. 11:7-8; Mic. 3:11; Prov. 23:23; Eph. 1:13; Col. 1:5; Js. 1:18. See @@@ MONEY.
- (21) **Eternal Security.** A Believer cannot get unsaved under any circumstances, regardless of his lifestyle. There is only a potential for loss of his @@@ REWARDS. See @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY.
- (22) **Eternal Separation.** Rejection of Christ's work is the basis for God's @@@ JUDGMENT on the unBeliever – Jn. 3:18; Gal. 1:8. Rejection of the Gospel, "*of sin because they do not believe in Me*" [Jn. 16:9], is the only unpardonable sin, which constitutes blasphemy against the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT's ministry of making the Gospel efficacious for salvation – Matt. 12:31-32.

### MATTHEW 12:31-32

Therefore I [Jesus Christ] say to you, any sin and blasphemy [*blasphemia* (impious and reproachful speech injurious to divine majesty)] shall be forgiven people [unBelievers], but blasphemy against the [Holy] Spirit shall not be forgiven. Whoever speaks a word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him; but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him [the unpardonable @@@ SIN is rejection of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT's ministry of @@@ SALVATION], either in this age or in the age to come.

- (23) **Forty Things at Salvation.** God does at least @@@ FORTY THINGS for the Believer at the second of salvation.



## @@@ SEPARATION

- (1) **Definition.** Although born again Believers are “citizens” [Phil. 3:20] of @@@ HEAVEN, they live in the @@@ WORLD and must interact with unBelievers in day-to-day social and work-related contacts to include @@@ WITNESSING to them – 1 Cor. 5:9-10. Therefore, the Biblical concept of separation primarily refers to a “mental separation” from the viewpoint of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS. In some extreme circumstances, however, separation may require the Believer to engage in actual physical departure from certain fellow humans, to include “**Loser**” Believers – Matt. 10:34-39.

## MATTHEW 10:34-35

Do not think that I [**Jesus Christ**] came to bring peace [*eirene* (exemption from the rage and havoc of war; peace between individuals)] on the earth; I did not come to bring peace, but a sword [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE is dogmatic about @@@ SALVATION and God’s truth and therefore a great divider of people]. For I came to set a man against his father, and a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 5:9-10

I [**Paul**] wrote [*grapho*] you [**Believer**] in my letter not to associate [*sunanamignumi* (to keep company with) – keep friendships] with immoral people [ *pornos* (a man who prostitutes his body to another’s lust for hire)]; I did not at all mean with the immoral people [ *pornos*] of this world [*kosmos* – the @@@ WORLD is filled with unBelievers], or with the covetous [*pleonektes* (one eager to have what belongs to another)] and swindlers [*harpax* (an extortioner; a robber)], or with idolaters [*eidololatres* (a worshipper of false gods)], for then you would have to go out of the world.

- (2) **Carnal Believer.** The positive [+P] volition Believer must separate from close relationships with the perpetual carnal negative [-N] volition **Loser** Believer engaged in lascivious activity – 1 Cor. 5:11-13], e.g., those who overtly practice adultery, homosexuality, fornication, drunkenness, gossip, incest, etc. This also may include members of the “fast” party crowd who constantly seek stimulation in the details of life – 1 Pet. 4:4; Prov. 1:10-19; 20:19; Jer. 15:17. See @@@ REVERSIONISM. Ideally, the Believer should keep close company with positive [+P] volition Believers – Ps. 119:63!



## 1 CORINTHIANS 5:11-13

But actually, I [Paul] wrote [*grapho*] to you not to associate [*sunanamignumi* (to keep company with)] with any so-called [*onomazo* (to name)] brother [*adelphos* – a Loser Believer] if he is an immoral person [ *pornos* (a man who prostitutes his body to another's lust for hire)], or covetous [*pleonektes* (one eager to have what belongs to another)], or an idolater [*eidololatres* (a worshipper of false gods)], or a reviler [*loidoros* (one who causes mischief)], or a drunkard [*methusos* (one intoxicated)], or a swindler [*harpax* (an extortioner; a robber)]—not even to eat with such a one. For what have I to do with judging [*krino*] outsiders? Do you not judge [*krino*] those who are within *the church*? But those who are outside [*exo*], God judges [*krino*]. Remove the wicked man [Loser Believer] from among yourselves [@@@ SEPARATION].

## PROVERBS 20:19

He who goes about as a slanderer reveals secrets, therefore do not associate with a gossip.

- (3) **Loser Believer.** Positive [+P] volition Believers must separate from those Believers who are marked by their consistent rejection of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – 2 Thess. 3:6, 14-15; Prov. 13:20; Heb. 13:13.

## 2 THESSALONIANS 3:6

Now we [Paul and his traveling seminary] command [*praggello* (to send a command message)] you, brethren [*adelphos* – the Believer], in the name [*anoma*] of our LORD Jesus Christ, that you keep away from every brother [*adelphos* – the Loser Believer on negative [-N] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] who leads [*peripateo* (a lifestyle)] an unruly [*ataktos* (out of ranks; disorderly)] life and not according to the tradition [*paradosis* (what is delivered) – the Bible Doctrine] which you received [*paralambano* (to accept or acknowledge)] from us.

- (4) **Bible Doctrine is Compromised.** Believers must separate from close social contact with unBelievers or other negative [-N] volition Loser Believers when @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE is compromised – 2 Cor. 6:14. See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 6:14

Do not be bound together [*heterozugeo* (to be unequally yoked)] with unbelievers [*apistos*]; for what partnership [*metoche* (a sharing)] have righteousness [*dikaiosune* – the Believer possesses God’s Righteousness [+R]] and lawlessness [*anomia* (wickedness; contempt and violation of the law) – the unbeliever rejects God’s @@@ GRACE and does not possess His [+R]], or what fellowship [*koinonia* (association)] has light [*phos* – the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE] with darkness [*skotos* – the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS is where the unbeliever resides]?

- (5) **Apostate Religious Organizations.** Believers are commanded to physically separate from apostate religious organizations and the legalists who populate them – 2 Cor. 6:17; Jn. 10:40-42; Matt. 24:1-2; 2 Tim. 3:5. The infection of @@@ RELIGION in a church hampers the Believer’s growth to @@@ MATURITY. The positive [+P] volition Believer should quickly and quietly leave the apostate “church” without judging anyone. See @@@ PRIVACY.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 6:17

“Therefore, come out from their midst and be separate [*aphorizo* (to mark off from others by boundaries) – @@@ SEPARATION from the evil of @@@ RELIGION],” says the LORD. “And do not touch what is unclean; and I will welcome [*eisdechomai* (to receive kindly)] you.”

## MATTHEW 24:1-2

Jesus came out from the temple and was going away when His disciples came up to point out the temple buildings to Him [they were impressed with the grandeur of @@@ RELIGION]. And He said to them, “Do you not see all these things? Truly I say to you, not one stone here will be left upon another, which will not be torn down [Rome destroyed the Temple in A.D. 70].”

## 2 TIMOTHY 3:5

Holding to a form of godliness [*eusebeia* (respect towards God) – practicing @@@ RELIGION], although they have denied its power [*dunamis* (inherent power) – rejection of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]; avoid [*apotrepo* (to turn one’s self away from) – @@@ SEPARATION] such men as these.

- (6) **Human Good.** Believers must consistently guard and separate themselves from the onslaught of human viewpoint washed in human @@@ GOOD in all its many manifestations – Rom. 12:1-2; 16:17-18.

### ROMANS 16:17

Now I [Paul] urge you, brethren, keep your eye on [*skopeo* (to mark; direct one's attention to)] those who cause dissensions [*dichostasia* (division)] and hindrances [*skandalon* (any instrument placed in the way and causing one to stumble)] contrary [*para*] to the teaching [*didache* (that which is taught)] which you learned [*manthano* (to learn) – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], and turn away [*ekklino* (to turn aside)] from them [@@@ SEPARATION].

- (7) **Church and State.** There must be a separation of the functions of the local church and the State – Mk. 12:17. See @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.

### MARK 12:17

And Jesus said to them [Pharisees and Herodians], “Render [*apodidomi* (to discharge what is due)] to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's.” And they were amazed at Him.

- (8) **Do Not Flaunt.** The primary command for Believers to @@@ LOVE other members of the human race is fulfilled by the use of *agape impersonal love*. This means that the positive [+P] volition Believer must maintain a relaxed mental attitude at all times. In addition, when a Believer physically separates, he must do so without fanfare and not practice his [self] “*righteousness*” [Matt. 6:1] before men as ego and @@@ RELIGION always advocate.

### MATTHEW 6:1

Beware [*prosecho* (to bring a ship to land; to turn the mind to)] of practicing [*poieo* (to make)] your [the Believer] righteousness [*dikaioisune* – legitimate actions] before men to be noticed [*theaomai* (of important persons that are looked on with admiration)] by them [the motivation is not to please God but to promote self-righteousness [-r]]; otherwise you have no reward [*misthos* (dues paid for work) – human righteousness [-r] has no @@@ REWARDS from God] with your Father who is in heaven [*ouranos*].

---

## @@@ SIN

- (1) **Definition.** Sin constitutes any thinking or action by volitional creatures [human and angelic] that transgresses the Perfect Holiness of God. See @@@ TRINITY – Rom. 3:23.

## ROMANS 3:23

For all [mankind] have sinned [*hamartano* – personal @@@ SIN and the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] and fall short [*hustereo* (to be left behind in the race) – human works of righteousness [-r]] of the glory [*doxa* – the absolutely pure Divine essence of the @@@ TRINITY to include His Perfect Righteousness [+R]] of God.

- (2) **All Humans Sin.** All have sinned and all will continue to sin – Eccl. 7:20-21; Rom. 3:10, 23; 1 Jn. 1:7-10; 2:1; 1 Cor. 3:1-3; Jer. 7:20; Ps. 119:29. This applies to Believers and unBelievers. The only exception was Jesus Christ in @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION during the incarnation. Thus, since every Christian is a sinner with an @@@ OLD SIN NATURE, which constantly tempts the Believer to commit personal sin, it is utterly impossible not to sin. As a practical matter, the Believer will sin often. See @@@ REBOUND.

## ECCLESIASTES 7:20

Indeed, there is not a righteous [*tsaddiyq* (just; righteous) – human works of righteousness [-r]] man on earth who continually does [Divine] good [*tob*] and who never sins [*chata*].

## 1 JOHN 1:8

If we [Believers] say that we have no sin [*hamartia* – the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE], we are deceiving [*planao* (to cause to go astray)] ourselves and the truth [*aletheia* (what is true under matter in consideration)] is not in us.

## 1 JOHN 1:10

If we [Church Age Believers] say that we have not sinned [*hamartano* – Believers still commit personal @@@ SINS] we make Him a liar [*pseustes*] and His word [*logos* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] is not in us.

(3) **Three Expressions of Sin.** Sin comes in three categories.

(a) **Overt Sins.** See 1 Cor. 6:9-10.

**1 CORINTHIANS 6:9-10**

Or do you not know that the unrighteous [*adikos* (one who violates the mandates of justice) – the unBeliever] will not inherit [*kleronomeo* (to obtain a lot)] the kingdom of God [@@@ SALVATION]? Do not be deceived [*planao* (to be led astray) – about the unBeliever]; neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate [*malakos* (a catamite)], nor homosexuals [*arsenokoites* (sodomite; homosexual)], nor thieves, nor the covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor swindlers, will inherit the kingdom of God [the unBeliever and Believer both @@@ SIN per the above list, but the unBeliever sinner is doomed, stuck in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS].

(b) **Mental Attitude Sins** [MAS].

(c) **Sins of the Tongue** [SOTT].

(4) **Against God.** Other people may well be involved in the sin that a Believer commits [overt sins in particular], but all sin is against the Perfect Holiness of God – “*if you will not do so, behold, you have sinned against the LORD, and be sure your sin will find you out*” [Num. 32:23]; Ps. 51:4; 119:11; 2 Sam. 12:13; Acts 5:4 [Ananias lied to other Believers about a land sale]. Note and analogy: All violations of a State’s criminal code are against the State.

**ACTS 5:4**

While it remained *unsold*, did it not remain your own? And after it was sold, was it not under your control? Why is it that you have conceived this deed in your heart [Ananias falsely claimed he had given the entire profit from a land sale to the Jerusalem Church]? You have not lied to men but to God.

**2 SAMUEL 12:13**

Then David said to Nathan [the Prophet], “I have sinned [*chata*] against the LORD.” And Nathan said to David, The LORD also has taken away [*abar* (to pass over)] your sin; you shall not die [*muth* – @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH].

## PSALM 51:4

Against You [God], You only, I [David] have sinned [*chata*] and done what is evil [*ra*] in Your sight, so that You are justified [*tsadaq* (to be righteous)] when You speak and blameless [*zakah* (to be pure)] when You judge [*shaphat*].

- (5) **Temptations to Sin.** Most temptations to commit personal sin originate from the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE – Js. 4:1. It is the human volition, however, that is the gatekeeper of the soul and hence the responsible source of all sin. Known or unknown, the Believer wanted to do, and agreed to do, the sin before he actually committed the sin – 1 Jn. 1:7-9; cf. 5:18; Mk. 7:21-23.

## MARK 7:21-23

For from within, out of the heart [*kardia* – the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] of men [*anthropos* (mankind)], proceed [*ekporeuomai* (to go forth)] the evil [*kakos*] thoughts, fornications, thefts, murders, adulteries, deeds of coveting and wickedness, as well as deceit, sensuality, envy, slander, pride and foolishness. All these evil things proceed from within [*esothēn*] and defile [*koinoo* (to make unclean)] the man.

- (6) **Three Categories of Sin.** The Greek word *hamartia* is translated “sin” in the @@@ BIBLE. The word is used to stand for three different concepts.
- (a) **First – Adam’s Original Sin.** This is now passed down genetically via copulation to all subsequent humans – Rom. 5:12, 17; Jn. 1:29.

## ROMANS 5:12

Therefore, just as through one man [Adam] sin [*hamartia* – the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] entered [*eiserchomai* (to come in or go out)] into the world [*kosmos* – Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD], and death [*thanatos* (physical death with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – spiritual @@@ DEATH] through sin [*hamartia*], and so death [*thanatos* (death with implied idea of future misery in hell) – spiritual death] spread [*dierchomai* (to travel the road which leads through a place; to pass to)] to all men [*anthropos* (mankind)], because all sinned [*hamartano* – Adam’s Old Sin Nature and human personal @@@ SIN].



- (b) **Second – The Old Sin Nature.** From birth, it resides in the cell structure of the physical body of all humans – Rom. 5:21; 1 Jn. 1:8.
- (c) **Three – Human Personal Sin.** Rom. 5:13; 1 Jn.1:10; 2:2; Eph. 1:7.
- (7) **Murder.** Murder is the ultimate overt sin – Prov. 6:16-19. “*You shall not commit murder*” [Matt. 5:21]. See Ex. 20:13; Deut. 5:17.
  - (a) **Satan.** Satan “*was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth*” [Jn. 8:44]; 1 Jn. 3:12; Gen. 4:5.
  - (b) **Cain.** MAS motivated the first murder in @@@ HISTORY. Cain’s pride was hurt and up sprang hatred and @@@ JEALOUSY. Indeed, MAS precede all murders – Rom. 1:29; Gal. 5:21.
  - (c) **The Law.** The @@@ MOSAIC LAW prohibits murder – an unlawful killing [Ex. 20:13, *harag (murder)*; Deut. 5:17, *ratsach (murder)*]. The Hebrew word kill is *quatala (to kill)* or *qetal (to kill)* and is not prohibited. Lawful killing includes the enemy in war, the State’s use of capital punishment, and individual or collective self-defense.
  - (d) **Death Penalty.** Capital punishment is authorized for the State to punish murderers – Gen. 9:6; Num. 30-31; Rom. 13:4; Matt. 26:52.
- (8) **Mental Attitude Sin.** Of the seven worst sins listed in the @@@ BIBLE, six are linked to MAS [the only overt sin listed is murder]! Prov. 6:16-19.

### PROVERBS 6:16-19

There are six things which the LORD hates, yes, seven which are an abomination [*toebah (a disgusting thing)*] to Him: haughty [*rum (to rise up) – arrogance*] eyes, a lying tongue, and hands that shed innocent blood, a heart that devises wicked plans, feet that run rapidly to evil [*gossip*], a false witness *who* utters lies [*slander*], and one who spreads strife among brothers.

- (a) **Misery.** MAS cause others around you to be miserable – Prov. 21:19; 22:24; 25:24; 29:22; Amos 1:11.
- (b) **Hinders Growth.** MAS lead to reversionism – Eph. 4:31; Col. 3:8.

- (c) **Strongest.** @@@ JEALOUSY is the strongest of the MAS – Hebrew *qinah* (to burn up) – and had a whole Levitical offering devoted to it [Num. 5:11-13]. Other MAS include implacability, bitterness, and hatred. MAS also destroy @@@ LOVE – S.S. 8:6. See King Saul.
- (d) **Wreaks the Soul.** MAS can wreak the soul – Prov. 14:30; Job 4:2. MAS reflect negative [-N] volition and rejection of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – “*when the Jews saw the crowds, they were filled with jealousy and began contradicting the things spoken by Paul and were blaspheming*” [Acts 13:45]; Rom. 1:28-29; Acts 13:45. MAS also reject @@@ AUTHORITY and can split nations apart – Isa. 11:13.
- (e) **Jesus.** MAS motivated the Jewish religious leaders to plot to put Jesus of Nazareth on the @@@ CROSS – “*because of envy they had handed Him over*” [Matt. 27:18]; Mk. 15:10.
- (f) **Clusters.** MAS always travel in clusters and spawn many types of overt sins – Prov. 24:1-2. Anger is a strong element in chain sinning [Heb. 12:15] and is tantamount to “mental” murder [Matt. 5:21-22].

## MATTHEW 5:21-22

You have heard that the ancients were told, “You shall not commit murder” and “Whoever commits murder shall be liable to the court [*civil court*],” but I [*Jesus*] say to you that everyone who is angry with his brother shall be guilty before the court [*God’s judgment*], and whoever says to his brother, “You good-for-nothing [*rhaka* (a term of reproach)]” shall be guilty before the supreme court [*God’s Discipline on sins of the tongue*]; and whoever says, “You fool [*moros* (foolish; godless) – *unBelievers that denounce the Gospel as false*] shall be guilty enough to go into the fiery hell [*the Lake of Fire*].

- (9) **Sins of the Tongue.** SOTT are always a result of MAS in the soul – “*their throat is an open grave; they flatter with their tongue*” [Ps. 5:9]; Ps. 34:13.
  - (a) **High.** Of the seven worst sins listed in Prov. 6:16-19, three are SOTT.
  - (b) **Triple Play.** SOTT cause triple discipline: (1) self-induced misery to you the subject; (2) Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING; and (3) any discipline due to the object also goes to you – Matt. 7:1-3; Ps. 64:8!

## MATTHEW 7:1-3

Do not judge [*krino*] so that you will not be judged [*krino* – God provides Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING for unconfessed @@@ SIN]. For in the way you judge, you will be judged; and by your standard of measure [*metreo* (to measure out)], it will be measured to you [*the Believer gets a double portion of Divine Discipline Suffering*]. Why do you look at the speck [*karphos* (a twig)] that is in your brother's eye, but do not notice the log [*dokos* (a beam of timber)] that is in your own eye?

- (c) **Early Check Out.** SOTT can lead to an early death [Ps. 12:3; Jn. 5:16-17], but life is extended by avoiding SOTT [Ps. 34:12-13; 1 Pet. 3:10].
- (d) **God Protects.** God protects the Believer when the object of SOTT – “*you will be hidden from the scourge of the tongue*” [Job 5:19, 21].
- (e) **Troublemakers.** Known by their SOTT – Ps. 52:2; 2 Thess. 3:10-12.

## 2 THESSALONIANS 3:10-12

For even when we were with you [*Paul and his traveling seminary team*], we used to give you this order [*paraggello* (to command)]: if anyone is not willing to work [*ergazomai* (to labor; to do work)], then he is not to eat, either. For we hear that some among you [*Believers on negative [-N] volition*] are leading an undisciplined life, doing no work at all, but acting like busybodies [*periergazomai* (to bustle about uselessly)]. Now such persons we command and exhort [*parakaleo* (to address forcefully)] in the LORD Jesus Christ to work *get a job* in quiet fashion [*hesuchia* (quietness; does not meddle with the affairs of others) – *mind your own business*] and eat their own bread.

- (f) **Control.** Control and mastery over SOTT is a sign of the Believer's spiritual @@@ MATURITY – Js. 2:12-13; Col. 4:6; Eccl. 7:20-22.

## COLOSSIANS 4:6

Let your [*the Believer*] speech always be with grace [*charis*], *as though* seasoned [*artuo* (to prepare)] with salt [*halas* – *the Believer uses the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES*], so that you will know how you should respond [*apokrimomai* (to give an answer to a question)] to each person.

## JAMES 2:12-13

So speak and so act [**the Believer**] as those who are to be judged [*krino*] by *the* law [*nomos*] of liberty [*eleutheria* (the liberty to do as one pleases) – **the – the Law of Liberty in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE**]. For judgment *will be* merciless to one who has shown no mercy [*eleos* – the negative [-N] volition Believer that does not act in @@@ GRACE will be subject to the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH and forfeit @@@ REWARDS]; mercy triumphs [*katakauchaomai* (to exult over)] over judgment.

## ECCLESIASTES 7:20-22

Indeed, there is not a righteous [*tsaddiyq* (just; righteous) – human works of righteousness [-r]] man on earth who *continually* does [Divine] good [*tob*] and who never sins [*chata*]. Also, do not take seriously all words which are spoken [**the Believer must have a relaxed mental attitude @@@ GRACE orientation to life**], so that you will not hear your servant cursing [*qalal* (to be lightly esteemed; to make despicable)] you [**the grace oriented Believer will disregard their loose talk**]. For you also have realized [*yada* (to know)] that you likewise have many times cursed [*qalal*] others.

- (10) **Unlimited Atonement.** Jesus Christ suffered spiritual @@@ DEATH as a substitute for all human @@@ SIN in every single category under @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT – Gal. 3:22. *But see infra* (11).

## GALATIANS 3:22

But the Scripture [*graphe* (the writing) – the @@@ BIBLE] has shut up everyone under sin [*hamartia* – the Bible clearly states that man is a sinner with an @@@ OLD SIN NATURE and God is Perfect], so that the promise by faith [*pistis* – @@@ SALVATION by @@@ FAITH in Christ] in Jesus Christ might be given [*didomai*] to those who believe [*pisteuo* – saving faith].

- (11) **The Unpardonable Sin.** Also known as Blasphemy Against the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT, the unpardonable sin is solely related to the rejection of Christ as Savior which is tantamount to rejection of the Holy Spirit's mission of making the Gospel efficacious for @@@ SALVATION [Matt. 12:31-32; Lk. 12:10; Mk. 3:28-29; Jn. 3:19-21], hence blasphemy against the Holy Spirit who convicts “*of sin because they do not believe in Me*” [Jn. 16:8-9].

## MATTHEW 12:31-32

Therefore I [**Jesus Christ**] say to you, any sin [*hamartia*] and blasphemy [*blasphemia* (impious and reproachful speech injurious to divine majesty)] shall be forgiven [*aphiemi* (to send away)] people [**unBelievers**], but blasphemy against the [**Holy**] Spirit shall not be forgiven [*aphiemi*]. Whoever speaks a word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him; but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him [**the unpardonable @@@ SIN is rejection of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT's ministry of providing the Gospel**], either in this age [*aion*] or in the *age* to come.

- (12) **Rebound.** The Believer's personal sins in @@@ TIME are handled through the use of the @@@ REBOUND technique – 1 Jn. 1:9.
- (13) **Countering Sin.** Increased knowledge and application of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE blunts sin. *See* Ps. 119:11.

## PSALM 119:11

Your [**God**] word [*imrah* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] I have treasured [*tsaphan* (to hide or store up treasure)] in my heart [*leb* – the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT], that I may not sin [*chata* – the positive [+P] volition Believer understands @@@ SIN and the @@@ PLAN OF GOD] against You.

(14) **Human Volition and Sin.**

- (a) **Free Will Choices.** All sin, know or unknown, involves the function of the human volition – either positive [+P] or negative [-N]. The original sins of Adam and Eve came from negative [-N] volition in their souls. They had no @@@ OLD SIN NATURE, only volition. After their first sin, however, they immediately acquired the Old Sin Nature.
- (b) **Responsibility.** The @@@ OLD SIN NATURE never produces a sin in which the human volition was not involved.
- (c) **Ignorance is No Excuse.** Ignorance of a sin does not change the principle that a man commits a sin by an act of his own free will. The person wanted to do it and did it, e.g., Eve [Gen. 3:13; 1 Tim. 2:14].

## @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH

- (1) **Definition.** The Sin Unto Death [also known as Divine Discipline Unto Death] is a technical theological term to describe the imposition by God of a maximum amount of Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING to the Believer already in @@@ REVERSIONISM resulting in his physical @@@ DEATH – Jn. 15:1-8; 1 Jn. 5:16; Ps. 118:17-18; Ezk. 18:21-32. The Sin Unto Death process may take a number of years or may be immediate. See Eph. 4:17-18; Rev. 3:20.

## JOHN 15:1-2

I [Jesus Christ] am the true [*alethinos* (truthful; that which has the title and the real nature)] vine [*ampelos*], and My Father is the vinedresser [*georgos*]. Every branch [*klema* (a tender and flexible branch) – a Believer] in Me that does not bear [*phero* (to carry)] fruit [*karpos* (the fruit of trees or vines) – the negative [-N] Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM living in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], He takes away [by administering the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH]; and every branch that bears fruit [a Believer that is on positive [+P] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], He prunes it [*kathairo* (to prune trees and vines from useless shoots) – a Believer who is the recipient of Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing] so that it may bear [*phero*] more [*polus* (much)] fruit [the Believer reaches spiritual @@@ MATURITY and receives @@@ REWARDS].

## 1 JOHN 5:16

If anyone sees his brother [*adelphos* – a Believer] committing a sin [*hamartia*] not leading to death [*thanatos* – physical @@@ DEATH], he shall ask and God will for him give life [*zoe*] to those who commit sin [*hamartano*] not leading to death [*thanatos*]. There is a sin [*hamartia*] leading to death [*thanatos* – the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH for the Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM]; I [John] do not say that he should make request [@@@ PRAYER] for this.

- (2) **God Desires Rewards.** Under the @@@ PLAN OF GOD it is God's Divine Will for every Believer to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY and to receive fantastic @@@ REWARDS in @@@ TIME and @@@ ETERNITY, not to die the horrible Sin Unto Death – Eccl. 7:17-18; Jer. 10:23-24.



**JEREMIAH 10:23-24**

I know, O LORD, that a man's way is not in himself [**human viewpoint of @@@ GOOD**], nor is it in a man who walks to direct his steps. Correct me, O LORD, but with justice [*mishpat* (the act of deciding a case) – Divine @@@ **SUFFERING for Blessing**]; not with Your anger [*aph* – Divine Discipline Suffering], or you will bring me to nothing [**no @@@ MATURITY, no @@@ REWARDS – only @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH**].

**ECCLESIASTES 7:17-18**

Do not be excessively [*rabah*] wicked [*rasha* (to act wickedly) – stay out of the @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS**] and do not be a fool [*sakal* (foolish) – do not reject @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**]. Why should you [a Believer] die [*muth*] before your time [*eth* – the @@@ **SIN UNTO DEATH**]? It is good that you grasp one thing [**Bible Doctrine**] and also not let go of the other [living a long and fruitful life in @@@ **TIME** to reach @@@ **MATURITY** and receive @@@ **REWARDS**]; for the one who fears God [*yare* (to revere) – the Believer on positive [+P] volition] comes forth with both of them.

- (3) **Candidates.** Candidates for the Sin Unto Death are those Believers that were once on positive [+P] volition to @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** but then turned away from life in the @@@ **DIVINE DYNASPHERE** to live in the @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS** – Lk. 9:62; 2 Pet. 2:20-22; Num. 31:8-20; 1 Chron. 10:13-14; Rev. 3:15-16. Note: Under no circumstances can any Believer lose his @@@ **SALVATION** – 2 Pet. 2:1. See @@@ **ETERNAL SECURITY**.

**2 PETER 2:20**

For if, after they [a Believer] have escaped [*apopheugo* (to escape; flee from)] the defilements [*miasma* (moral foulness)] of the world [*kosmos* – he rejects the evil of the @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS**] by the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge) – the Believer moves towards spiritual @@@ **MATURITY** by learning @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**] of the LORD and Savior Jesus Christ [the @@@ **BIBLE** is “the mind of Christ”], they are again entangled [*empleko* (to weave)] in them and are overcome [the Believer turned to negative [-N] volition and entered into @@@ **REVERSIONISM** which put him back into the Cosmic Systems], the last state has become worse for them than the first [Loser Believer is now under the @@@ **SIN UNTO DEATH**].

## REVELATION 3:15-16

I [Jesus Christ] know your [Believers in Laodicea] deeds, that you are neither cold [*psuchros* – an unBeliever] nor hot [*zestos* (boiling hot) – a Believer on positive [+P] volition to the Word]; I wish [*ophelon*] that you were cold [the unBeliever can be given the Gospel] or hot [a positive [+P] volition Believer can be given @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]. So because you are lukewarm [*chliaros* (tepid condition) – a negative [-N] volition Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM], and neither hot nor cold, I will spit [*emeo*, (vomit)] you out of My mouth [Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING leading to the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH].

## LUKE 9:62

But Jesus said to him [the negative [-N] volition Believer], “No one, after putting his hand to the plow [*arotron* – a Believer that was once on positive [+P] volition to learning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] and looking back [*opiso* – a Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM], is fit [*euthetos* (useful)] for the kingdom of God [Loser Believers do not represent God on this earth].”

### (4) Case Histories. Selected case histories of the Sin Unto Death.

- (a) **Son and Mother.** The Believer engaged in the overt @@@ SIN of habitual incest with his biological mother – 1 Cor. 5:5-7. Satan’s demons were allowed to administer the discipline.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 5:5

I [Paul] have decided to deliver [*paradidomi* (to give into the hands of another)] such a one [a Believer having sexual relations with his own mother] to Satan for the destruction [*olethros*] of his flesh [*sarx* – the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH], so that his [human] spirit [*pneuma*] may be saved [*sozo* (to deliver)] in the day of the LORD Jesus [at the @@@ RAPTURE].

- (b) **Ananias and Sapphira.** For lying about giving the entire proceeds from a property sale to the Jerusalem Church. This was a demonstration of God’s protection of the early Church from mental attitude sins – Acts 5:1-10. The two had approbation lust and envied Barnabas who had sold his property and given all the funds to the Church – Acts 4:36-37.

- (c) **Hymenaeus and Alexander.** For perverting @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – 1 Tim. 1:19-20, 2 Tim. 2:17-18. Among other false teachings, the apostate Pastor/Teacher Hymenaeus claimed that the @@@ RAPTURE had already occurred. See @@@ RELIGION.

## 1 TIMOTHY 1:19-20

Keeping faith [*pistis* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] and a good conscience [*suneidesis* – applying Bible Doctrine], which some [Loser Believers] have rejected and suffered shipwreck in regard to their faith [*pistis* – a Loser Believer does not retain Bible Doctrine]. Among these are Hymenaeus and Alexander [in @@@ REVERSIONISM], whom I [Paul] have handed over to Satan [@@@ SIN UNTO DEATH], so that they will be taught [*paideuo* (to train children)] not to blaspheme [*blasphemeo* – pervert Bible Doctrine].

- (d) **King Saul.** For staying in @@@ REVERSIONISM – 1 Sam. 13:9-14; 28:19; 1 Chron. 10:13-14. King Saul committed suicide.

## 1 SAMUEL 28:19

Moreover the LORD will also give over Israel along with you [King Saul] into the hands of the Philistines, therefore tomorrow you and your sons [all were Believers] will be with me [the Prophet Samuel who was brought back from Paradise in @@@ HELL to speak to Saul]. Indeed, the LORD will give over the army of Israel into the hands of the Philistines!

- (e) **King Hezekiah.** For going into @@@ REVERSIONISM – Isa. 30:1-3; 31:1-2 [the @@@ SIN] and Isa. 38:1-6 [the recovery of Hezekiah].
- (f) **King David.** For “Operation Bathsheba” where King David later wrote about how he almost died the Sin Unto Death, but came back after @@@ REBOUND and then once again studying @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE on a consistent basis – 2 Sam. 11; 12:13; Ps. 30:1-10.

## 2 SAMUEL 12:13

Then David said to Nathan [the Prophet], “I have sinned [*chata*] against the LORD.” And Nathan said to David, “The LORD also has taken away [*abar* (to pass over)] your sin; you shall not die [*muth* – @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH].”

PSALM 30:2-3

O LORD my God, I [David] cried to You for help, and You healed me [after David's @@@ REBOUND]. O LORD, You have brought up my soul [nephesh] from Sheol [Sheol (designation for the abode of the dead) – David almost died the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH and as a Believer his @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT would have then gone to Paradise in @@@ HELL]; You have kept me alive that I would not go down to the pit [@@@ DEATH].

(g) **Hananiah.** For proclaiming lies as a false Prophet – Jer. 28:15-17.

JEREMIAH 28:16-17

Therefore thus says the LORD, “Behold I am about to remove you from the face of the earth [Hannah told the Jews to revolt against Babylon]. This year you are going to die [muth – physical @@@ DEATH], because you have counseled rebellion against the LORD.” So Hananiah the prophet died [the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH] in the same year in the seventh month.

(h) **Moses.** For not circumcising his eldest son – “*the Lord met him [Moses] and sought to put him to death*” [Ex. 4:24-26].

- (5) **Unconfessed Sin.** Unconfessed @@@ SIN over a prolonged period can culminate with the Sin Unto Death – see 1 Cor. 11:30-31. In such a case there are three categories of progressive Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING to include the final stage of the Sin Unto Death: (1) weakness in the mind/body; (2) illness in the mind/body; and (3) physical @@@ DEATH or @@@ SLEEP. Paul develops this pattern in his @@@ REBOUND exhortation to the mostly negative [-N] volition Believers in Corinth. See Eccl. 12:1-6; Ps. 32:3-5.

PSALM 32:3-5

When I [David] kept silent *about my sin* [no @@@ REBOUND], my body wasted away through my groaning all day long. For day and night Your hand [Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING] was heavy upon me; my vitality was drained away as with the fever heat of summer. Selah. I acknowledged my sin to You [Rebound], and my iniquity I did not hide; I said, “I will confess my transgressions to the LORD;” and You forgave the guilt of my sin. Selah.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 11:30-31

For this reason [*dia* (on account of)] many among you [Believers] are [1] weak [*asthenes* (weak; infirm; feeble) – physical/mental weakness is the warning stage of Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING] and [2] sick [*arrhostos* (without strength; sick) – physical illness under added Divine Discipline Suffering is the intensive stage], and [3] a number sleep [the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH where the Believer dies; @@@ SLEEP]. But if we judged [*diakrino* (to try) – evaluate self, use @@@ REBOUND] ourselves rightly, we would not be judged [*krino* – by God’s Divine Discipline Suffering].

- (6) **Solutions.** Those Believers under the Sin Unto Death [*see supra* (4)] must first @@@ REBOUND and then, like King David, immediately go on a crash course of consistently learning and relearning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE. King Solomon wrote about own his experiences in *Ecclesiastes*.
- (a) **Son and Mother.** The Believer under the Sin Unto Death for having sex with his mother in 1 Cor. 5:1-5, used @@@ REBOUND for the @@@ SIN and then wanted to learn @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE. When the Corinth Church refused him reentry, Paul ordered the legalists in Corinth to “*forgive and comfort*” [2 Cor. 2:1-11] and let him back in the Church. He was not killed off by the Sin Unto Death.
- (b) **King Hezekiah.** In Isa. 38:1-3, King Hezekiah recognized his status of @@@ SIN, used @@@ REBOUND, and returned to learning the Word. He was given another 15 years of @@@ LIFE.

## ISAIAH 38:1-3

In those days Hezekiah became mortally ill [*under the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH*]. And Isaiah the prophet the son of Amoz came to him and said to him, “Thus says the LORD, ‘Set your house in order, for you shall die and not live.’” Then Hezekiah turned his face to the wall and prayed to the LORD [@@@ REBOUND], and said, “Remember now, O LORD, I beseech You, how I have walked [*Hezekiah had achieved some level of spiritual @@@ MATURITY*] before You in truth and with a whole heart, and have done what is good in Your sight.” And Hezekiah wept bitterly [*gadol* (greatly) – @@@ EMOTION is not a requirement].



## @@@ SLEEP

- (1) **Definition.** The primary Greek word for sleep is *koimao*. Use of the word “sleep” in the @@@ BIBLE often refers to Christian physical @@@ DEATH – Ps. 13:3; Jn. 11:11-14; 1 Cor. 11:30; 15:6; 51-55; 1 Thess. 4:13-16; 5:1. When physical death occurs the Believer’s @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT goes to @@@ HEAVEN and his body remains to return “*to dust*” [Gen. 3:19]. The Believer is fully conscious and in great contentment waiting for the promised indestructible @@@ RESURRECTION body and eternal @@@ REWARDS, which he will get at the @@@ RAPTURE followed by the Judgment Seat of Christ. “*But now Christ has been raised from the dead, the firstfruits of those who are asleep*” [1 Cor. 15:20]. See @@@ LIFE.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 15:51-54

Behold, I [Paul] tell you a mystery; we [Believers] will not all sleep [*koimao* – physical @@@ DEATH], but we will all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet [*salpigx* – this trumpet closes out the Church Age at the @@@ RAPTURE]; for the trumpet will sound, and the dead [*nekros* (physical death) – Church Age Believers who have died] will be raised imperishable [*aphthartos* (immortal) – @@@ RESURRECTION bodies], and we [Believers then living at the Rapture] will be changed [*allasso* – all living Believers will get resurrection bodies]. For this perishable [*phthartos* – human body] must put on the imperishable, and this mortal [*thnetos* (liable to death)] must put on immortality. But when this perishable will have put on the imperishable, and this mortal will have put on immortality, then [at the Rapture] will come about the saying that is written, “Death [*thanatos* (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)] is swallowed up in victory [*nikos* (to utterly vanquish)].”

## JOHN 11:11-14

This He said, and after that He said to them, “Our friend Lazarus has fallen asleep [*koimao*]; but I go, so that I may awaken him [*exupnizo* (to wake up) – Jesus would reanimate Lazarus who had been dead for 4 days] out of sleep.” The disciples then said to Him, “LORD, if he has fallen asleep, he will recover.” Now Jesus had spoken of his death, but they thought that He was speaking of literal sleep. So Jesus then said to them plainly, “Lazarus is dead [*apothnesko* (the natural death of a man)].”



## 1 CORINTHIANS 15:6

After that [Jesus Christ risen from the dead first appeared to the disciples in His @@@ RESURRECTION body] He [Jesus Christ in His resurrected body] appeared [horao (to stare with the eyes; a panoramic view)] to more than 500 brethren [Believers in A.D. 30] at one time, most of whom remain [meno – Paul is writing this circa A.D. 55] until now, but some have fallen asleep [koimao (to sleep; to die)].

## 1 THESSALONIANS 4:13

But we [Paul and his traveling seminary team] do not want you [Believers] to be uninformed [agnoeo (to be ignorant)], brethren [adelphos], about those who are asleep [koimao – Church Age Believers that have died are always described as being in a state of @@@ SLEEP], so that you will not grieve [lupeo (to affect with sadness)] as do the rest who have no hope [elpis (confident expectation) – unBelievers]. For if we believe [pisteuo] that Jesus died [apothnesko (to be subject to eternal misery in hell)] and rose [anistemi (to rise up) – in His @@@ RESURRECTION body] again, even so God will bring with Him those who have fallen asleep in Jesus [the dead Church Age Believers in their resurrection bodies].

- (2) **Describes Reversionism.** The word sleep sometimes refers to the status quo of the negative [-N] volition **Loser** Believer in the state of @@@ REVERSIONISM. Also known as Operational @@@ DEATH, this **Loser** Believer is apathetic to or largely rejects Bible Doctrine and is warned that “*it is already the hour for you to awaken from sleep*” [Rom. 13:11]; Eph. 5:14-17; Isa. 51:17; 1 Thess. 5:5-7. See @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH.

## 1 THESSALONIANS 5:6-7

So then let us not sleep [katheudo – the @@@ SLEEP of Operational @@@ DEATH of the Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM] as others do [Loser Believers on negative [-N] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], but let us be alert [gregoreuo (to watch)] and sober [nepho (to be calm and collected)]. For those who sleep do their sleeping at night [nux], and those who get drunk [methusko (to intoxicate)] get drunk [methuo (to be drunken)] at night [nux – but positive [+P] volition Believers keep @@@ WALKING in the light of Bible Doctrine].

## EPHESIANS 5:14-17

For this reason it says, “Awake, sleeper [the Believer in Operational @@@ DEATH], and arise from the dead [*nekros* – Temporal Death of the Believer can be immediately cured by @@@ REBOUND], and Christ will shine on you.” Therefore be careful how you walk [*peripateo* – the Believer’s lifestyle in @@@ WALKING], not as unwise men [*asophos*] but as wise [apply @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], making the most of your time [*karios* – @@@ TIME is short in this life], because the days are evil [*poneros* – Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD and seeks to deceive the Believer as part of the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT]. So then do not be foolish [*aphron* (without reason)], but understand [*sunemi* (to bring together)] what the will [*thelema*] of the LORD is [@@@ DIVINE GUIDANCE in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD is for the Believer to reach @@@ MATURITY which glorifies God].

- (3) **Sin Unto Death.** Sleep and the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH – 1 Cor. 11:30.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 11:30

For this reason [*dia* (on account of)] many among you [Believers] are [1] weak [*asthenes* (weak; infirm; feeble) – physical/mental weakness is the warning stage of Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING] and [2] sick [*arrhostos* (without strength; sick) – physical illness under added Divine Discipline Suffering is the intensive stage], and [3] a number sleep [*koimao* (to die; to sleep) – @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH; @@@ SLEEP].

- (4) **Soul Sleep.** There is no such thing as “soul sleep.” When the Believer dies his @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT is fully conscious in @@@ HEAVEN – Rev. 21:4; 2 Cor. 12:2-4 [Paul in the Third Heaven]. See @@@ DEATH.

## REVELATION 21:4

And He [God] will wipe away [*exaleipho* (to anoint or wash in every part; to erase)] every tear [*dakru*] from their [the Believer] eyes; and [in @@@ HEAVEN] there will no longer be any death [*thanatos* (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)]; there will no longer be any mourning [*penthos*], or crying [*krauge*], or pain [*ponos* (great trouble)]; the first [*protos* (first in time)] things have passed away [*aperchomai* (to go away; depart)].

## @@@ SOTERIOLOGY

- (1) **Definition.** Soteriology is the theological term for the study of the associated doctrines of @@@ SALVATION and speaks to how the work of Jesus Christ on the cross removed/satisfied the barriers that separate Perfect [+R] God from imperfect [-r] man. There are several components of Soteriology.
  - (a) **Reconciliation.** There is now “*peace*” [Heb. 13:20] between Perfect [+R] God and the formerly imperfect [-r] man, who is now a Believer with God’s [+R] imputed to him at the point of @@@ SALVATION.
  - (b) **Redemption.** The Believer is bought with a price, the Atonement work of Christ. *See* Eph. 1:7; 1 Pet. 1:18-19; Col. 1:14, 20; Rev. 5:9.
  - (c) **Justification.** The Believer is fully justified/vindicated by God’s Righteousness [+R] imputed to his soul and spirit. *See* Rom. 5:9.
  - (d) **Sanctification.** The Believer has absolute positional acceptance. *See* Heb. 10:10; 13:12; Eph. 5:26; @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY.
  - (e) **Expiation.** God’s Perfect Justice is satisfied by the work of Christ on the cross. The Believer is “*washed ... in the blood*” [Rev. 1:5; 7:14].
  - (f) **Propitiation.** Jesus Christ paid the required price of spiritual @@@ DEATH for all human @@@ SIN. *See* Rom. 3:2-26
  - (g) **Heirship.** Believers are adult adopted sons – Rom. 8:16-17; Gal. 4:7.
- (2) **Barriers Removed.** There are four barriers that condemn mankind at birth.
  - (a) **Barrier One: Spiritual Death.** All humans are born without a human spirit and in a state of spiritual @@@ DEATH – Gen. 2:17; Eph. 2:1; Rom. 5:12; 6:23; 2 Cor. 5:14; 1 Cor. 15:22. Furthermore, God imputes Adam’s original @@@ SIN [a real imputation] to the genetically formed @@@ OLD SIN NATURE to all humans at birth, ensuring that no man can work for his own @@@ SALVATION. This barrier of spiritual death is removed by the substitutionary spiritual death of Christ [1 Pet. 2:24; 3:18; 2 Cor. 5:21], a judicial imputation by God the Father to Perfect Jesus Christ while on the Roman @@@ CROSS.

- (b) **Barrier Two: Personal Sin.** All humans commit personal @@@ SIN during their lives – Rom. 1:18-32; 3:9-23; Gal. 5:19-21; 1 Tim. 1:14-16. This barrier is removed by @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT, a judicial imputation by God to Perfect Jesus Christ on the cross.
- (c) **Barrier Three: The Curse of the Law.** The curse of the @@@ MOSAIC LAW barrier is removed by Redemption – Eph. 2:15; 1 Tim. 1:8-11; Rom. 3:9-23; 4:15; 5:20; 7:14; Gal. 3:10-11.
- (d) **Barrier Four: The Holiness of God.** The Perfect Holiness of God barrier is removed by Propitiation. God can now accept [save] anyone who believes in Jesus Christ because they now possess His Perfect Righteousness [+R] – Rom. 3:23; 1 Jn. 2:2. See @@@ TRINITY.
- (3) **Minus Side of Salvation.** While much of the doctrine of Soteriology speaks to the historical removal of the barriers between God and man by the @@@ SALVATION work of Perfect Jesus Christ on the @@@ CROSS, this is only the *minus* part of salvation. In other words, the @@@ GRACE work under the @@@ PLAN OF GOD to remove certain barriers only qualifies every human as a potential candidate for salvation – the full benefits of Soteriology are bestowed only on the person who believes in Jesus Christ by @@@ FAITH alone which then enters him immediately into the Kingdom of God. This is the fantastic @@@ GRACE *plus* side of salvation.
- (4) **Plus Side of Salvation.** The following baseline Divine work performed for those that respond to the Gospel and exhale @@@ FAITH [belief] in Christ.
- (a) **Regeneration.** God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT creates a human spirit for the new Believer so that God can impute His own eternal life to that Believer – Tit. 3:57; Rom. 6:23; 1 Jn. 5:11; Jn. 3:1-18; 17:2; 1 Pet. 1:23. See @@@ FORTY THINGS.
- (b) **Imputation [+R].** Due to the absolute insufficiency of man's [-r], God imputes His Perfect Righteousness [+R] to the Believer – Gen. 15:6; 2 Cor. 5:21; Rom. 3:22; 4:6; 1 Pet. 2:24; Jer. 23:6; Ps. 11:7; 1 Jn. 4:15; 1 Cor. 1:30; Phil. 3:9. This is an imputation made possible by the work of Jesus Christ on the @@@ CROSS. This justification element of @@@ SALVATION ensures that there is absolutely no compromise to the Perfection of God to accept the Believer into @@@ HEAVEN.

– RECONCILIATION –

- (1) **Definition.** The Greek word for reconciliation is *katallasso* (to reconcile those who are at variance; to transfer from one state to another). Reconciliation is directed towards imperfect [-r] man.
- (2) **Enemies of God.** All unBelievers are “*enemies*” [Rom. 5:10] of God from their physical birth and in Satan’s family. In order to be entered into the Royal Family of God as His children, reconciliation must be accomplished between Perfect [+R] God and imperfect [-r] man – Col. 1:21; Eph. 2:11-15. To God, all unBelievers are “*illegitimate children* [*nothos* (bastard)]” [Heb. 12:8].
- (3) **God Desires Reconciliation.** All members of the human race were selected by God to come into existence. Further, His Directive Will is that there should be reconciliation between Perfect God and imperfect man – 1 Tim. 2:4.
- (4) **Peace Offering.** In the Old Testament the concept of reconciliation was taught by the “Peace Offering” – Lev. 2:13; 7:11-38; 8:15. The coming future Messiah would bring the peace of reconciliation between Perfect God and imperfect man – Isa. 57:19-21; Acts 10:34-36. See @@@ MOSAIC LAW.
- (5) **Two Categories.** There are two categories of reconciliation: (1) for all mankind as a potential [@@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT]; and (2) for the Believer as a reality [@@@ SALVATION] – 2 Cor. 5:18-19; Col. 1:19-22; Rom. 5:8-11; Eph. 2:13-17. See @@@ FORTY THINGS.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:18-19

Now all *these* things are from God, who reconciled [*katallasso* (to reconcile those who are at variance)] us [*the Believer*] to Himself through [*dia* (by means of)] Christ [*work of Christ on the @@@ CROSS*] and gave us [*Paul and his traveling team of @@@ PASTOR/TEACHERs*] the ministry [*diakonia* (those who by the command of God proclaim and promote God among men)] of reconciliation [*katallage*], namely, that God was in Christ reconciling the world [*kosmos* – under @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT Christ died for all humans in the @@@ WORLD] to Himself, not counting [*logizomai* (to reckon; to make an account of)] their trespasses [*paraptoma* (sin)] against them, and He has committed [*tithemi* (to set forth)] to us the word [*logos*] of reconciliation [*katallage* – @@@ SOTERIOLOGY].



## COLOSSIANS 1:20

And through [*dia* (by means of)] Him [Jesus Christ] to reconcile [*apokatalasso* (to bring back a former state of harmony) – the barrier between God and man is removed under @@@ SOTERIOLOGY] all things to Himself, having made peace [*eirenopoieo* – between Perfect God and imperfect man] through [*dia* (by means of)] the blood [*amia* – the @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST] of His cross [*stauros* – @@@ CROSS]; through Him, *I say*, whether things on earth [*ge*] or things in heaven [*ouranos* – @@@ HEAVEN is currently open to both saved and fallen @@@ ANGELS].

## – REDEMPTION –

- (1) **Definition.** Redemption holds that all humans are born spiritually dead and must be redeemed out of this condition of slavery – *apolutrosis* (to purchase the freedom of a slave) [Rom. 3:4]; Jn. 8:31-36. Believers are purchased – “*I have found a ransom*” [Job 33:23-24] – from the slave market of @@@ SIN by the work of the LORD Jesus Christ. Redemption is directed towards sin.

## JOHN 8:34-36

Jesus answered them [the Jews that had believed in Jesus], “Truly [*amen* (of a truth)], truly, I say to you, everyone who commits sin is the slave of sin. The slave does not remain in the house forever [the unBeliever will suffer physical @@@ DEATH and go to @@@ HELL]; the son [Believer] does remain forever [@@@ HEAVEN]. So if the Son [Jesus Christ] makes you free [*eleutheroo* (to make free; to set a liberty) – from spiritual death and Hell], you will be free [*eleutheros* (freeborn)] indeed [*ontos* (in reality; truly)].”

## JOB 33:23-24

If there is an angel [*malak* – the LORD Jesus Christ] as mediator [*luts* – Jesus Christ is the only qualified mediator as He is true God and true humanity] for him [mankind], one out of a thousand [idiom for only one], to remind a man what is right [*yosher* (what is due)] for him [man owes God perfect Righteousness [+R]], then let him [God] be gracious to him [the Believer], and say, “Deliver him from going down to the pit [*shachath* – @@@ HELL], I have found [*matsa* (to secure)] a ransom [*kopher* (price of a life; ransom) – Jesus Christ paid the price on the @@@ CROSS].”



- (2) **Free a Slave.** Only a free man can buy or free a slave. The “free” Perfect man Jesus Christ, paid the full price for the freedom of all “slaves” [human beings] by His substitutionary spiritual @@@ DEATH for @@@ SIN while on the @@@ CROSS – Ps. 34:22; Gal. 3:13; 1 Pet. 1:18-19; Heb. 2:14; 9:12, 22. Since Adam in the Garden, Jesus was the only human brought into the @@@ WORLD free from sin and He remained absolutely Perfect in His humanity during all His life on earth. See @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION.

### GALATIANS 3:13

Christ redeemed [*exagorazo* (by payment of a price to recover from the power of another)] us [*Believers*] from the curse [*katara* (an execration; curse)] of the Law [*nomos* – the @@@ MOSAIC LAW demands Perfection], having become a curse [*katara*] for us—for it is written, “Cursed [*epikataratos* (accursed)] is everyone who hangs [*kremannumi* (to be suspended)] on a tree [*xulon* (wood; that made out of wood) – the prediction of where Christ’s work of @@@ SALVATION would occur, on a Roman @@@ CROSS].”

### HEBREWS 2:14

Therefore, since the children share in flesh and blood [*humans*], He Himself likewise also partook of the same [*the Son of God became a true human*], that through death [*thanatos* (death, with the implied idea of future misery in Hell – spiritual @@@ DEATH of Jesus Christ on the @@@ CROSS)] He might render powerless him who had the power of death, that is, the devil.

- (3) **In Suffering.** Redemption is a doctrine that can be applied by the Believer in times of personal pressure, testing, and @@@ SUFFERING – Job 19:25-26.

### JOB 19:25-26

As for me [*Job*], I know [*yada* (to learn to know)] that my Redeemer [*gaal* – the Savior who would come and pay the price for @@@ SALVATION] lives, and at the last [*acharyon* (later; subsequent time)] He will take His stand [*qumo* (to arise)] on the earth [*aphar* (dry earth) – the 1st Advent of Jesus Christ]. Even after my skin is destroyed [*physical @@@ DEATH*], yet from my flesh [*bawar* (of the body) – Job will have a @@@ RESURRECTION body] I shall see [*chazah* (to behold)] God [*elohim* – LORD Jesus Christ at the 2nd Advent].

- (4) **Results in Adoption.** Redemption results in an adult “*adoption as sons*” [Eph. 1:5] for all Believers by God – Gal. 4:4-6 [*uiothesia* (an adult son officially taken into the family)] and the bestowing of an eternal inheritance to these children of God. *See* Heb. 9:15.

#### GALATIANS 4:4

But when the fullness of the time [*chronos* (a period of time, long or short)] came, God sent forth [*exapostelo* (to send forth)] His Son [*Jesus Christ*], born of a woman, born under the Law, so that He might redeem [*exagorazo* (to buy back) – @@@ SOTERIOLOGY] those who were under the Law, that we might receive [*apolambano* (of what is due or promised)] the adoption as sons [*uihothesia* (an adult son officially taken into the family)].

- (5) **Redemption Rituals.** Redemption was communicated in the Old Testament rituals by shedding the blood of innocent animals which portrayed Christ’s sacrifice, “*without shedding of blood there is no forgiveness*” [Heb. 9:22].
- (6) **Blood of Christ.** The @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST is the purchase price for the Believer’s redemption – 1 Pet. 1:18-19; Eph. 1:7; Col. 1:14; 1 Jn. 1:7.

#### 1 PETER 1:18-19

Knowing that you were not redeemed [*lutroo* (to release on receipt of a ransom)] with perishable things like silver or gold from your futile [*mataios* (empty; devoid of force)] way of life [*anastrophe* – the evil of @@@ RELIGION cannot provide @@@ SALVATION] inherited from your forefathers, but with precious blood [*amia* – @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST via substitutionary spiritual @@@ DEATH], as of a lamb unblemished [*amomos* (faultless)] and spotless [*aspilos* – Jesus was Perfect in His humanity and thus qualified to go to the @@@ CROSS], the blood of Christ.

#### EPHESIANS 1:7

In Him [*Jesus Christ*] we [*Believers*] have redemption [*apolutrosis* (a releasing effected by payment of ransom)] through His blood [*aima* – @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST], the forgiveness [*aphesis* (release from bondage or imprisonment)] of our trespasses, according to the riches [*ploutos*] of His grace [*charis* – the @@@ GRACE of God provides @@@ SALVATION].

- (7) **Justification.** Redemption is the basis for justification – “*you have been bought with a price*” [1 Cor. 6:20]; Rom. 3:24; Ps. 34:22.

### PSALM 34:22

The LORD redeems [*padah* (to pay a ransom) – @@@ SOTERIOLOGY] the soul [*nephesh*] of His servants [Believers], and none of those who take refuge in Him will be condemned [*asham* (to be incriminated) – @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY is guaranteed].

- (8) **Atonement.** Redemption relates directly to the Atonement where Jesus Christ was the true human substitute for all @@@ SIN – 1 Pet. 3:18; 2 Cor. 5:21.

### – JUSTIFICATION –

- (1) **Definition.** The Believer is vindicated by receiving the imputation of God’s own Righteousness [+R] to his @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT at the exact point of @@@ SALVATION – Rom. 3:20-22; 4:1-5, 25; 5:1, 17; 8:29-30; 2 Cor. 5:21; Ps. 11:7; 1 Pet. 2:24. God then looks at the Believer’s [+R] and fully accepts him – “*having now been justified*” the Believer is “*saved from the wrath of God through Him*” [Rom. 5:9] – because what the Righteousness [+R] of God demands the Justice of God must always execute. In summary, God sees His own [+R] in the Believer and must accept it! See Gal. 2:16.

### ROMANS 3:20-22

Because by the works [*ergon*] of the Law [*nomos* – the @@@ MOSAIC LAW] no flesh [*sarx* – the unBeliever] will be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] in His [God] sight [God can only accept His Perfect Righteousness [+R]]; for through the Law comes the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of sin [*hamartia* – in terms of @@@ SALVATION, the Mosaic Law can only show that man is a sinner]. But now apart from the Law the righteousness [*dikaiosune* – the Perfect Righteousness [+R] of the @@@ TRINITY] of God has been manifested [*phaneroo* (to make manifest or visible)], being witnessed by the Law and the Prophets [they taught this @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], even the righteousness of God through [*dia* (by means of)] faith [*pistis*] in Jesus Christ for all those who believe [*pisteuo* – the Believer receives God’s Perfect [+R]]; for there is no distinction [*diastole* (difference) – Jews and Gentiles alike are saved by @@@ FAITH].

## GALATIANS 2:16

Nevertheless knowing [*heneka* (on account of)] that a man [*anthropos* (mankind)] is not justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – acceptable to God] by the works [*ergon*] of the Law [the @@@ MOSAIC LAW cannot provide God's Righteousness [+R]] but through [*dia* (by means of)] faith [*pistis* – saving @@@ FAITH] in Christ Jesus, even we have believed [*pisteuo*] in Christ Jesus, so that we may be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] by faith [*pistis* – as a result of saving faith the Believer receives the [+R] of God] in Christ and not by the works of the Law; since by the works of the Law no flesh [*sarx* – unBeliever] will be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)].

- (2) **Based on Grace.** Justification is based on @@@ GRACE – Rom. 3:24; Tit. 3:7. This is the Divine *plus* factor in the formula of @@@ SALVATION.

## TITUS 3:7

So that being justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – the Believer receives God's Righteousness [+R]] by His grace [*charis*] we would be made heirs [*kleronomos* (one who receives his allotted possession)] according to *the* hope [*elpis* (confidence)] of eternal [*aionios* (without beginning or end)] life.

- (3) **Belief in Christ.** Justification is only accomplished by belief in Jesus Christ – “*salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus*” [2 Tim. 3:15]; Matt. 11:19; Lk. 7:35. It is the result of the ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT.
- (4) **Instantaneous.** Justification occurs at the moment the Believer believes in Jesus Christ – “*justified by faith*” [Rom. 3:28]; Gal. 3:24; Rom. 5:1.

## GALATIANS 3:24

Therefore [*hoste* (so that)] the Law [*nomos* – the @@@ MOSAIC LAW] has become our tutor [*paidagogos*] to lead us to Christ, so that we may be justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – the Believer receives God's Righteousness [+R]] by faith [*pistis* – saving @@@ FAITH in Christ].

- (5) **Not by Mosaic Law.** Justification does not occur via keeping the Mosaic Law nor by any human “*deeds which we have done in righteousness*” [Tit. 3:5]. See Rom. 3:20, 27-30; Gal. 2:16; 2 Tim. 1:9; Eph. 2:8-9; Acts 15:11.

## ROMANS 3:27-28

Where then is [human] boasting? It is excluded. By what kind of law? Of works? No, but by a law of faith [*pistis*]. For we [Paul and his seminary team] maintain [*logizomai* (to calculate)] that a man is justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – the Believer receives God’s Righteousness [+R]] by faith [*pistis* – saving @@@ FAITH is the avenue to @@@ SALVATION] apart from works of the Law [@@@ MOSAIC LAW will not provide salvation].

- (6) **Christ Raised.** Jesus Christ was raised for our justification – Rom. 4:25.

## ROMANS 4:25

He [Jesus Christ] who was delivered over [*paradidomi* (to give into the hands of another)] because [*dia* (the grounds or reason by which something is or is not done)] of our transgressions [*paraptoma*], and was raised [*egeiro*] because [*dia*] of our justification [*dikaiosis* (the act of God declaring men free from guilt and acceptable to Him)].

## – SANCTIFICATION –

- (1) **Definition.** Sanctification is the Believer’s absolute position of acceptance by God. Sanctification in three concepts: (1) Positional Sanctification; (2) Experiential Sanctification; and (3) Ultimate Sanctification.
- (2) **Positional Sanctification.** PHASE I in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD starts when the unBeliever believes in the LORD Jesus Christ as Savior and becomes a Believer. Mechanics are via the dry @@@ BAPTISM of God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT – Eph. 4:4-5; 1 Cor. 12:13; Acts 11:15-17.

## EPHESIANS 4:4-5

There is one body [*soma* – all Believers are in @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST] and one [Holy] Spirit [@@@ HOLY SPIRIT is the agent of @@@ SALVATION], just as also you were called [*kaleo* (to utter with a loud voice)] in one [*heis*] hope [*elpis* (confidence)] of your calling; one LORD [*kurios* (God) – the LORD Jesus Christ the Savior], one faith [*pistis* – @@@ SALVATION by @@@ FAITH in Christ], one baptism [*baptisma* – the dry @@@ BAPTISM mechanics of the Holy Spirit in salvation].



- (a) **Stable.** Positional Sanctification in the @@@ TRINITY cannot be lost – “*to those who have been sanctified in Christ Jesus, saints*” [1 Cor. 1:2]; Rom. 8:38-39; 1 Cor. 1:30; 6:11. Positional Sanctification is the basis for the formation of the Royal Family of God – 2 Thess. 2:13.

## 2 THESSALONIANS 2:13

But we [Paul and his seminary team] should always give thanks to God for you, brethren beloved [*agapao (to love dearly)*] by the LORD, because God has chosen [*aihreomai (to take for oneself)*] you from the beginning [*arche – God knew who would believe*] for salvation [*soteria (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven*] through sanctification [*hagiasmos*] by the [Holy] Spirit and faith [*pistis – saving @@@ FAITH*] in the truth [*aletheia – the Gospel*].

- (b) **New Species.** Positional Sanctification makes every Believer a @@@ NEW SPECIES – 2 Cor. 5:17. See @@@ METAMORPHOSE.
- (c) **Equality.** Positional Sanctification provides for equal privilege and equal opportunity under Predestination and Election. All Believers can reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD.
- (d) **No Second Death.** Positional Sanctification protects the Believer from the second @@@ DEATH and the Great White Throne Judgment which will face all unBelievers only – Rom. 8:1; Jn. 3:18; 5:24.
- (e) **Eternal Life.** Positional Sanctification qualifies the Believer to have “*eternal life*” [Tit. 3:7] and to live with God forever and ever in the new @@@ HEAVEN – Tit. 3:7; Rom. 6:23; Jn. 17:2; 1 Jn. 5:11-12, 20.
- (f) **ID with Christ.** Positional Sanctification is the basis for Retroactive Positional Truth – the Believer is identified with Jesus Christ in His death and fully rejects human works. See Rom. 6:1-8; Col. 2:12; 3:3.
- (g) **All Believers Share.** (1) Destiny of Christ [Eph. 1:5]; (2) Sonship [2 Tim. 2:1; Gal. 3:26]; (3) Transference into the Kingdom [Col. 1:13]; (4) Heirship [Rom. 8:16-17]; (5) Sanctification [1 Cor. 1:2, 30]; (6) Kingship [2 Pet. 1:11]; (7) Priesthood [Heb. 10:10-14]; (8) Election [Eph. 1:4]; (9) Eternal Life [1 Jn. 5:11-12]; and (10) Perfect Righteousness [2 Cor. 5:21]. See @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST.



- (h) **Characteristics of Positional Sanctification.** It is not an @@@ EMOTION or experience. It is not progressive and can't be improved on as it is obtained in total at the second of @@@ SALVATION. No human merit is involved and it is eternal in nature. It is understood through learning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.
- (3) **Experiential Sanctification.** PHASE II in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD. The Believer's life from the point of @@@ SALVATION to his physical @@@ DEATH. The Believer is commanded to live inside the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE which requires that he stay in Fellowship with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT and then learn and apply @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.
- (4) **Ultimate Sanctification.** PHASE III in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD. The Believer at the point of the receipt of his @@@ RESURRECTION body and extending on out to all eternity. The @@@ OLD SIN NATURE is removed [1 Cor. 1:8; Gal. 5:5; Eph. 1:4; Rom. 8:28-29] and @@@ REWARDS are distributed to the **Winner** Believer at the @@@ JUDGMENT Seat of Christ.

– EXPIATION –

- (1) **Definition.** Expiation refers to the fact that the requirement of Perfect Righteousness [+R] from Perfect God is satisfied. Atonement has been made by Jesus Christ for all. Again, man owes God perfect Righteousness [+R] if he is to live with Perfect God – Col. 2:14; Ps. 22:6 [Jesus was the *tola* worm crushed for us]. This cannot be accomplished by @@@ RELIGION.
- (2) **Blood of Christ.** The @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST is the basis for @@@ REBOUND – Rev. 1:5; 1 Jn. 1:7, 9; Col. 2:14-15; Lev. 4 & 5; Ps. 22:1-6.

COLOSSIANS 2:14

Having canceled out [*exaleipho* (to wipe away)] the certificate of debt [*cheirographon* – sinful man [-r] owes perfection to a Perfect [+R] God] consisting of decrees [*dogma* – the @@@ MOSAIC LAW condemns mankind] against us [Perfect God can only condemn imperfect man], which was hostile to us; and He [Jesus] has taken it out of [*airo* (to bear away)] the way, having nailed it to [*proseloo* (to fasten with nails)] the cross [*stauros* – Jesus Christ took the judgment of @@@ SIN in His own body on the @@@ CROSS so that the Believer now only uses @@@ REBOUND for sin].

- (3) **Atonement Made by Christ.** The penalty of personal @@@ SIN was paid for in full by the LORD Jesus Christ. A lifetime of personal sins – past, present, and future – from each person was paid for by Perfect Jesus Christ on the @@@ CROSS. He was our substitute and had each Believer in mind.

– PROPITIATION –

- (1) **Definition.** God is satisfied – Propitiated – by the work of Jesus Christ who “*offered Himself without blemish to God*” [Heb. 9:14] on the @@@ CROSS. See Rom. 3:25-26; Col. 1:19-22; 1 Jn. 2:1-2; Eph. 1:7; Heb. 12:2. Again, this fact is appropriated by the unBeliever by @@@ FAITH in Christ and is the basis for the imputation of God’s Perfect Righteousness [+R], “*that we might become the righteousness of God in Him*” [2 Cor. 5:21]; Rom. 3:25-26; 4:6; 1 Pet. 2:24; Jer. 23:6; Ps. 11:7; 1 Jn. 4:15.

ROMANS 3:25-26

Whom God displayed publicly [Jesus on the @@@ CROSS in A.D. 30] as a propitiation [*hilasterion* (relating to appeasing)] in His blood [the @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST] through [*dia* (by means of)] faith [*pistis* – @@@ SALVATION faith]. This was to demonstrate His righteousness, because in the forbearance of God He passed over the sins previously committed [*proginomai* – all sins that occurred before the cross were held in abeyance]; for the demonstration [*endeixis* (proof)], I say, of His righteousness [*dikaiosune* – the Perfect @@@ PLAN OF GOD] at the present time, so that He would be just and the justifier [*dikaioo* (to render righteous)] of the one [the Believer who receives God’s Righteousness [+R]] who has faith in Jesus.

- (2) **Holiness Barrier.** The barrier of the Holiness of God is removed. What the Righteousness of God demands the Justice of God must execute. Now, with the imputation of God’s [+R] to the Believer at @@@ SALVATION the Justice portion of God’s Holiness can abundantly bless the Believer.
- (3) **Mercy Seat.** Propitiation was taught in the Old Testament via the annual sacrifice on the Mercy Seat lid of the ark – Ex. 25:17-22; 37:6-9. The ark itself held representations of sin – jar of manna, Aaron’s rod, tablet of Law [Heb. 9:4]. The animal blood sprinkled over the Mercy Seat signified the work of Jesus Christ on the cross to cover sin – Lev. 16:13-16. The two @@@ ANGELS on the lid portrayed the Justice and Righteousness of God.

---

– HEIRSHIP –

- (1) **Definition.** Heirship is based on “*the death of the one who made it*” [Heb. 9:16-17]. Christ’s spiritual death on the @@@ CROSS was undertaken for the Believer to inherit great blessings – Rom. 5:8; 1 Cor. 15:3-4. Christ is the heir of all things [Heb. 1:2, 4] and heirship is based on sonship. See Jn. 1:12; Rom. 8:16-17; Gal. 3:26-29; 4:6-7. Thus, since salvation qualifies every Believer for heirship [Col. 1:12; Rev. 21:7], all are guaranteed “*eternal life*” [Tit. 3:7; 1 Jn. 5:11-12] with @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY.

**GALATIANS 3:26-29**

For you are all sons [*uihos*] of God [*theos*] through faith [*pistis* – the means of @@@ SALVATION is by @@@ FAITH] in Christ Jesus. For all of you who were baptized [*baptizo*] into Christ [*the dry baptism of @@@ HOLY SPIRIT*] have clothed yourselves with Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek [*ethnos*], there is neither slave nor free man, there is neither male nor female; for you are all one in Christ Jesus. And if you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham’s descendants, heirs [*kleronomos* (one who receives his allotted portion by right of sonship)] according to promise [*epaggelia* (the act of promising a good) – salvation by @@@ GRACE].

**ROMANS 8:16-17**

The [*Holy*] Spirit [*pneuma*] Himself testifies [*summartureo* (to bear witness)] with our [*human*] spirit [*pneuma*] that we are children [*teknon*] of God, and if children, heirs [*kleronomos* (one who receives his allotted portion by right of sonship)] also, heirs of God and fellow heirs [*sugkleronomos*] with Christ, if indeed we suffer with Him [*sumpascho* (to feel pain together) – Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing to the positive [+P] volition Believer] so that we may also be glorified [*sundoxazo* (to glorify together)] with Him [*the Believer at spiritual @@@ MATURITY receives @@@ REWARDS*].

- (2) **Predestination and Election.** Heirship is directly related to Predestination and Election. See Eph. 1:11; Heb. 9:15. See @@@ PLAN OF GOD.
- (3) **Down Payment.** The Indwelling of @@@ HOLY SPIRIT – “*sealed in Him with the Holy Spirit of promise*” [Eph. 1:13-14] – guarantees a future.
-

## @@@ SOUL &amp; SPIRIT

## – THE HUMAN SOUL –

- (1) **Definition.** At birth God activates for each human being an immortal soul which is *immaterial*, yet real – “*O God, God of the spirits* [*ruach* (soul life)] *of all flesh*” [Num. 16:22]. The biological body which is *material* and real houses the invisible soul in the cranium. The mortal body will disintegrate into the natural elements at physical @@@ DEATH, but the soul will then go to a designated place [depending on whether or not the person was a Believer or an unBeliever] assigned by God – Isa. 42:5; Mk. 8:36; Lk. 9:25; 2 Pet. 1:13-15; 2 Cor. 5:8; Mic. 6:7; Ezk. 18:4; Job 33:4; Ps. 34:22. Note: God cares for animals but they lack eternal souls – “*compassion on Nineveh ... as well as many animals*” [Jon. 4:11]; “*I would surely have killed you just now, and let her live*” [Num. 22:33]; Matt. 10:28-29; Lev. 17:10-14.

## JOB 33:4

The Spirit of God has made me [*biological @@@ LIFE*], and the breath [*neshamah*] of the Almighty gives me life [*chayah* (to give life) – *human soul @@@ LIFE*].

## 2 PETER 1:13-15

I [*Peter*] consider it right, as long as I am in this *earthly* dwelling [*skenoma* (a tent; the dwelling place of the soul for the human body)], to stir you up by way of reminder [*hupomnesis*], knowing that the laying aside [*apothesis* (a putting off)] of my *earthly* dwelling [*skenoma*] is imminent [*achinos* (swift)], as also our LORD Jesus Christ has made clear to me. And I will also be diligent that at any time after my departure you [*Believer*] will be able to call these things [*@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE*] to mind [*mneme* (to remember a thing)].

## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:8

We [*Believers*] are of good courage, I [*Paul*] say, and prefer rather to be absent [*ekdemeo* (to go or live abroad)] from the body [*soma* – at physical @@@ DEATH the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT departs the body] and to be at home [*endemeo* (to be among one's own people)] with the LORD [*kurios* (God) – in the Third @@@ HEAVEN].

## ISAIAH 42:5

Thus says God the LORD, who created the heavens and stretched them out, who spread out the earth and its offspring, who gives breath [*neshamah*] to the people on it and spirit [*ruach* (soul life)] to those who walk in it.

- (2) **Activated at Birth.** The human soul, *psuche* in the Greek and *nephesh* in the Hebrew, is activated by God via “breathing” the “*breath of life*” [Gen. 2:7] at the point of physical birth into the viable fetus when it emerges from the mother’s womb. In the very first case, God *naphach* (to blow; to breathe) the *neshamah* (breath) of life into Adam’s biological body and he became a living *nephesh* (soul). See Eccl. 12:7; @@@ LIFE.

## GENESIS 2:7

Then the LORD God [*elohim* – Jesus Christ] formed [*yatsar* (to form something out of existing materials)] man of dust from the ground [*biological @@@ LIFE*], and breathed [*naphach* (to blow; to breathe)] into his nostrils the breath [*neshamah* (breath)] of life [*chay* (living) – here it is in the plural and should be translated (lives)]; and man became a living [*chay*] being [*nephesh* (soul) – Christ saves the human soul not the human physical body].

## ECCLESIASTES 12:7

Then [at physical @@@ DEATH] the dust [*aphar* – the elements of biological @@@ LIFE] will return to the earth as it was, and the spirit [*ruach* (soul life)] will return to God who gave [*nathan* (to bestow)] it.

- (3) **Shadow Image.** The essence of the soul is made in the *tselem* (shadow image) of God, emphasizing the fact that just as God has Sovereignty, so too God provided man with volitional sovereignty – Gen. 1:26-27; Isa. 43:7; Prov. 2:2.

## GENESIS 1:26-27

Then God [*elohim*], said, “Let Us [first person plural – members of the @@@ TRINITY in agreement] make [*asah* (to make something out of something)] man in Our [possessive determiner belonging to the speaker and one or more other people] image [*tselem* (shadow image; a thing that is a shadow of the reality; resemblance) – the human soul with its volition], according to Our

likeness [*demuth* (pattern; model)], and let them rule over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the sky and over the cattle and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth.” God created [*bara* (to make something out of nothing) – the human soul] man in His own image, in the image of God He created [*barah*] him; male and female He created them.

- (4) **Essence of the Soul.** The human soul has identifiable essence consisting of five main components which are interlocked together in a complex “wiring system,” housed in the cranium of the mortal body.

**I AM** – SELF-AWARENESS, CONSCIOUSNESS

**I FEEL** – APPRECIATOR, EMOTION

**I THINK** – MENTALITY

**I OUGHT** – MORAL REASONING, CONSCIENCE

**I WILL** – FREE WILL, VOLITION

– The Human Soul –

- (a) **Self-awareness.** All humans can realize their “name, rank, and serial number” and are cognizant of the fact that they are a unique being apart from all others in time and space – “*for his life is in him*” [Acts 20:10].
- (b) **Emotion.** The @@@ EMOTION exists as a part of the soul for appreciation and entertainment purposes. Feelings are not thinking but they can respond to the impressions in the mentality.
- (c) **Mentality.** Consisting of a conscious, a memory, and a subconscious.

**JOB 38:36**

Who has put wisdom in the innermost being [*tuchah*] or given understanding to the mind [*wekviy*]?



## PROVERBS 23:7

For as he thinks within himself, so he is [a person “is” what he thinks]. He says to you, “Eat and drink!” But his heart [*leb*] is not with you.

1. **Conscious Thinking.** The brain is called the *nous* (mind) where *gnosis* (knowledge) occurs – “*I will say to my soul, “Soul, you have many goods laid up for many years to come; take your ease”* [Lk. 12:19]; Job. 38:36. The thinking side of the brain where vocabulary and categorical concepts are developed is called the *kardia* (heart); the Hebrew equivalent is *leb* – Prov. 2:2, 10; 18:15. Both words are generally used for thinking. Sam. 16:7; Prov. 15:13-15; 17:22; 18:15; 19:1-2; 23:7; 27:19; Ps. 22:15; Job 38:36; Eph. 1:18. For the Believer, the right lobe of the brain is where Bible Doctrine usable *gnosis* is transformed into *epignosis* (full knowledge) in order to “*prepare your minds for action*” [1 Pet. 1:13]. See @@@ OPERATION Z.
2. **Frame of Reference.** Linked to the heart, the memory center stores thoughts in the mentality – [Lk. 2:19; Lam. 3:20-24; Ps. 119:6. In @@@ OPERATION Z, this is the place where *epignosis* (full knowledge) is stored for the Believer – Prov. 4:4; 1 Cor. 2:9.

## PROVERBS 2:2

Make your ear attentive [*the volition*] to wisdom [*chokmah*], incline your heart [*leb*] to understanding [*tabun* (the faculty of understanding)].

3. **The Subconscious.** The subconscious is the compartment for the storage of impressions that don’t exist in the conscious mind. It is the place of dreams. Also, things that the conscious mind can’t or won’t deal with are dumped into the subconscious.
- (d) **Conscience.** This is the place for determining moral right from moral wrong via norms and standards that are acquired in life [Prov. 27:19; Job 38:20; 1 Tim. 1:19-20; Rom. 7:15; Dan. 1:8; 2 Cor. 5:11]; it becomes operational at some point in early childhood – Isa. 7:3, 15-17. The conscience is termed *suneidesis* (to know with) in the Greek.

## 1 TIMOTHY 1:19-20

Keeping faith [*pistis* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] and a good conscience [*suneidesis* (the soul as distinguishing between what is morally good and bad) – applying Bible Doctrine], which some [Loser Believers] have rejected [*apotheomai* (to thrust away)] and suffered shipwreck [*nauageo*] in regard to their faith [*pistis* – the Loser Believer does not retain Bible Doctrine]. Among these are Hymenaeus and Alexander [in @@@ REVERSIONISM], whom I [Paul] have handed over [*paradidomi* (to give into the hands)] to Satan [@@@ SIN UNTO DEATH], so that they will be taught [*paideuo* (to train children)] not to blaspheme [*blasphemeo* (to defame)].

## ISAIAH 7:16

For before the boy [Shear-Jashub, the young son of Isaiah] will know *enough* to refuse evil and choose good [the conscience and the operation of volition], the land whose two kings you dread will be forsaken [before Shear-Jashub would be old enough to know the difference between right from wrong both the Northern Kingdom of Israel and the Kingdom of Syria would be destroyed by the Assyrians].

1. **Convicts of Sin.** The conscience convicts of @@@ SIN – “*when He comes, will convict the world concerning sin and righteousness and judgment*” [Jn. 16:8]; Rom. 2:15; 13:5.

## ROMANS 7:15

For what I [Paul] am doing [*katergazomai* (something on the inside working out, to produce)], I do not understand [Paul wants to stay in Fellowship with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT and not commit personal @@@ SIN]; for I am not practicing [*prasso*] what I *would* like to *do*, but I am doing [*poieo* – succumbing to the temptation of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE to @@@ SIN] the very thing I hate [*miseo* – due to the influence of the Old Sin Nature].

2. **Norms.** The conscience sets norms for serving God – Heb. 9:14 [it opposes the dead works of human good]; 2 Tim. 1:3; Rom. 1:9; 9:1; 1 Tim. 1:5, 19; 3:9. A conscience loaded with @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE is the basis for enduring unfairness without defending self – 1 Pet. 2:18-19; 3:16; Rom. 2:15.

## ROMANS 2:15

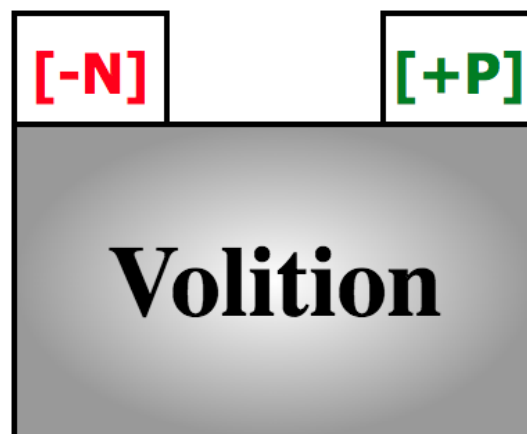
In that they show the work of the Law written in their hearts [*kardia*], their conscience [*suneidesis*] bearing witness and their thoughts alternately accusing or else defending them.

3. **@@@ HAPPINESS in Complying With the Conscience.** *See* 2 Cor. 1:12; Prov. 15:13-15; Acts 24:16.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 1:12

For our [Paul's team] proud confidence [*kauchesis* – **@@@ HAPPINESS**] is this: the testimony of our conscience [*suneidesis* (the soul as distinguishing between what is morally good and bad)], that in holiness and godly sincerity, not in fleshly [*sarkikos*] wisdom [*sophia* – human viewpoint in the **@@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS**] but in the grace of God, we have conducted ourselves in the world [*kosmos* – **@@@ WORLD**], and especially toward you.

4. **Legalism.** False norms in the conscience produce legalism. *See* 1 Cor. 8:7; Prov. 18:12; 1 Tim. 4:1-2 [destroys the conscience].
- (e) **Volition.** With its Positive [**+P**] and Negative [**-N**] poles [by analogy, a car battery], the **Volition**, or free will, is the key factor in human existence. Under the concept of sovereignty of choice and **@@@ FREEDOM**, the individual's positive [**+P**] volition determines his **@@@ SALVATION** and his growth to **@@@ MATURITY**.



– Human Free Will –

*“I have set the LORD continually before me; because He is at my right hand, I will not be shaken”* [Ps. 16:8]; Lk. 13:24; Mk. 6:6; Acts 3:23; Jn. 5:39-40; 7:17; 10:27; Ps. 119:20, 30-32; Jos. 24:15; Rev. 22:17; Deut. 1:43; Prov. 21:2, 10; 8:17; Matt. 7:7-8; 23:37; Isa. 65:12; Jer. 32:33; Js. 4:8; Ph. 15.

## JOSHUA 24:15

If it is disagreeable in your sight to serve the LORD, choose for yourselves today whom you will serve: whether the gods which your fathers served which were beyond the River [to worship the idols of Egypt and other concepts of @@@ RELIGION], or the gods of the Amorites in whose land you are living; but as for me [Joshua] and my house, we will serve the LORD.

## PHILEMON 14

But without your consent [volitional decisions from the free will] I [Paul] did not want to do anything, so that your goodness would not be, in effect, by compulsion but of your own free will.

## MATTHEW 7:7-8

Ask, and it will be given to you [positive [+P] volition]; seek [zeteo (to seek in order to find) – positive [+P] volition], and you will find; knock [krouo (to knock at a door) – positive [+P] volition], and it will be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives, and he who seeks finds, and to him who knocks it will be opened [God provides the opportunity for @@@ SALVATION to all and the opportunity to reach @@@ MATURITY to all Believers].

## PROVERBS 8:17

I [God] love those who love me [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]; and those who diligently seek [shachar (to look earnestly) – the Believer with positive [+P] volition decisions from the free will] me will find me.”

## PSALM 119:20

My soul [nephesh] is crushed with longing [taabah (positive desire) – positive [+P] volition] after Your ordinances at all times.

**JEREMIAH 33:3**

Call [*qara* (to call out) – positive [+P] volition] to Me [God] and I will answer you, and I will tell [*nagad* (to be conspicuous; to make know)] great [*gadol* (large in magnitude and extent)] and mighty things [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], which you do not know.

**JOHN 7:17**

If anyone is willing [*thelo* – positive [+P] volition] to do His [God's] will, he will know of the teaching [*didache* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], whether it is of God or *whether* I [Jesus Christ] speak from Myself.

**JAMES 4:8**

Draw near to God [positive [+P] volition] and He will draw near to you. Cleanse your hands, you sinners [use @@@ REBOUND]; and purify your hearts [seek @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], you double-minded [*dipsuchos* – the negative [-N] volition Believer in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS].

**JOHN 10:27**

My [Jesus] sheep [*probation* – the Believer on positive [+P] volition] hear My voice [Winner Believer responds to @@@ GRACE], and I know them, and they follow [positive [+P] volition will to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] Me.

**MARK 6:6**

And He [Jesus from His humanity] wondered [*thaumazo* (to be astonished; to wonder) – what person would reject God's @@@ SALVATION?] at their unbelief [*apistia* (unbelief) – these negative [-N] volition unBelievers rejected the Gospel]. And He was going around the villages teaching.

**JOHN 5:39-40**

You [religious unBelievers] search the Scriptures because you think that in them you have eternal life; it is these that testify [*martureo*] about Me [Jesus Christ provides @@@ SALVATION]; and you are unwilling [negative [-N] volition] to come to Me so that you may have life [*zoe* – eternal life].

## DEUTERONOMY 1:43

So I [Moses] spoke to you [the Jewish people], but you would not listen [negative [-N] volition from the free will]. Instead you rebelled against the command of the LORD, and acted presumptuously [zud (to deal arrogantly)] and went up into the hill country [where they were defeated with great loss].

## LUKE 13:34

O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, *the city* that kills the prophets and stones those sent to her! How often I [Jesus Christ] wanted [God's Directive Will to save them] to gather your children together, just as a hen *gathers* her brood under her wings, and you would not *have it* [negative [-N] volition from the free will]!

## JEREMIAH 32:33

They [majority of the people in Judah] have turned *their* back [oreph – they are on negative [-N] volition] to Me [God], and not *their* face [paniym – they are not on positive [+P] volition]; though *I* taught them, teaching again and again, they would not listen and receive instruction [God sent many teachers to proclaim @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE to include the Prophet Jeremiah].

## ISAIAH 65:12

I [God] will destine [manah (to assign)] you [apostate Jews who reject @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] for the sword [Divine Discipline], and all of you will bow down to the slaughter. Because I called, but you did not answer [negative [-N] volition]; I spoke, but you did not hear [shama (to hear; to obey)]. And you did evil in My sight and chose [bachar – negative [-N] volition] that in which I did not delight [chaphets (to desire) – they chose life in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS].

## REVELATION 22:17

The [Holy] Spirit and the bride say, “Come.” And let the one who hears say, “Come.” And let the one who is thirsty [dipsao (to be thirsty) – on positive [+P] volition in their soul] come; let the one who wishes [thelo (to will)] take the water [hudor – the @@@ WATER is the Gospel of @@@ SALVATION] of life without cost [dorea (a gift) – @@@ GRACE].



- (5) **Temptation to Sin.** The soul is influenced to commit @@@ SIN from two general sources: (1) the environment acting on the volition; and (2) the inherent flaws in the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE.
- (a) **Environmental.** Personal volitional choices for or against various environmental temptations – Rom. 1:22-24; Mic. 7:3; Lk. 15:28.

### MICAH 7:3

Concerning evil, both hands do it well. The prince asks, also the judge, for a bribe, and a great man speaks the desire of his soul [*nephesh* – negative [-N] volition from the free will]; so they weave it together.

### LUKE 15:28

But he [the older brother of the “Prodigal Son” parable] became angry and was not willing [*thelo* – negative [-N] volition] to go in [his father had thrown a welcome home feast for the younger son]; and his father [God the Father in the parable] came out and began pleading [God desires that all Believers stay out of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS] with him.

- (b) **Old Sin Nature.** Inherent flaws emanating from the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE [OSN] – Rom. 5:12; 7:15-25; Ps. 51:5. Not only is human biological @@@ LIFE in the womb contaminated by the OSN at conception [from the male’s 23 chromosomes], but Adam’s original @@@ SIN is also imputed by God to the OSN at birth. While it is not a sin to be tempted, it is the human volition that determines whether or not to sin and the subsequent impact on the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE. See Job 21:25; Prov. 21:10; Zech. 11:8; Ps. 10:6, 13; 55:21.

### PROVERBS 21:10

The soul [*nephesh*] of the wicked desires [negative [-N] volition decisions from the free will] evil; his neighbor finds no favor in his eyes.

- (6) **Volitional Battleground.** Thinking is the battleground for control of the soul and where Satan attacks – Gen. 4:7; Matt. 10:28; Rom. 12:2; 1 Pet. 2:11. The Believer either thinks the Divine viewpoint or he thinks Satan’s viewpoint. See @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS; @@@ GOOD.

## GENESIS 4:7

If you [God speaking to Cain] do well, will not *your countenance* be lifted up? And if you do not do well, sin is crouching at the door; and its desire [*teshuqah* (desire, longing, craving)] is for you, but you must master [*marshal* (to rule) – use positive [+P] volition to refuse the temptations from the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] it.

## ROMANS 12:2

And [Believer] do not be conformed [*suschematizo* (to conform one's self to another's pattern)] to this world [*aion* (period of time) – Satan's @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], but be transformed [*metamorphoo* – the Believer is expected to reject the Cosmic Systems and transform himself to the status of spiritual @@@ MATURITY] by the renewing [*anakainosis* (a renewal; complete change for the better to another form)] of your mind [*nous* – transformation of the positive [+P] volition Believer's thinking requires maximum @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT], so that you may prove [*dokimazo* (to test; to prove)] what the will of God is [the Believer is commanded to reach maturity], that which is good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] and acceptable [*euarestos* (well pleasing)] and perfect [*teleios* (to make complete)].

- (7) **Soul Breathing.** The Winner Believer's soul is equated to lungs designed to take in @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE [the inhale] and to then respond to God [the exhale] – Ps. 42:1.

## PSALM 42:1

As the deer pants [*arag* (to long for)] for the water brooks, so my soul [*nephesh*] pants [*arag* – positive [+P] volition Believer desiring to know God] for You, O God.

- (8) **Emotion.** The thinking *kardia* (heart) is meant to control the @@@ EMOTION – 2 Cor. 6:11-12. The emotion is supposed to be the responder and appreciator to things in the mentality, not the leader. However, if the emotion dominates over the mentality the Believer cannot grow to spiritual @@@ MATURITY. See Jer. 17:10; 20:12; Rev. 2:23; Ps. 26:1-2; Deut. 29:4; Isa. 13:7-8.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 6:11-12

Our [Paul and his traveling seminary team] mouth has spoken freely to you [they taught many @@@ BIBLE classes], O Corinthians, our heart [*kardia*] is opened wide. You are not restrained [*stenochoreo* (to be in a narrow place) – from learning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] by us, but you are restrained in your own affections [*splagchnon* – negative @@@ EMOTION].

- (9) **Misery.** The soul is the place of misery when scar tissue grows from the Believer's negative [-N] volitional decisions towards learning and applying @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – “*my soul cleaves to the dust; revive me according to Your word*” [Ps. 119:25]; Job 21:25; Ps. 6:1-3; 10:6; 106:15; 119:28, 81; Jer. 17:5, 9; 29:19; *Ecclesiastes*. See @@@ REVERSIONISM.

## PSALM 6:1-3

O LORD, do not rebuke [*yakach* (to judge, reprove)] me in Your anger, nor chasten me in Your wrath [Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING to the Believer]. Be gracious to me, O LORD, for I *am* pining away; heal me, O LORD, for my bones are dismayed [after @@@ REBOUND the suffering is converted to Suffering for Blessing to advance to @@@ MATURITY]. And my soul [*nephesh*] is greatly dismayed; but You O LORD—how long?

## JOB 21:25

While another dies with a bitter soul [*nephesh* – self induces misery because of negative [-N] volition], never even tasting *anything* good.

## JEREMIAH 17:5

Thus says the LORD, “Cursed is the man who trusts [*batach* (to have confidence in)] in mankind [to solve his @@@ PROBLEMS] and makes flesh [the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE and human solutions washed in @@@ GOOD] his strength, and whose heart [*leb*] turns away from the LORD [negative [-N] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE].”

- (10) **Capacity to Love.** The soul is the area for the capacity to @@@ LOVE – 1 Sam. 18:1; 1 Pet. 1:22. Capacity to love rests in positive [+P] volition thinking, not in @@@ EMOTION. Emotion can respond to true love.

- (11) **Departs the Body.** At physical death the soul departs from the mortal body – Phil. 1:21-25; 2 Cor. 5:8; Job 27:8; Ps. 16:10; Lk. 12:19-21. For the Believer the human @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT await a @@@ RESURRECTION body. For the unBeliever the human soul resides in a compartment of @@@ HELL pending the Great White Throne Judgment and subsequent placement in the Lake of Fire. “*Do not fear those who kill the body but are unable to kill the soul; but rather fear Him (God) who is able to destroy both soul and body in hell*” [Matt. 10:28]. See @@@ JUDGMENT.

### JOB 27:8

For what is the hope [*tiqvah* (hope; expectation)] of the godless [*the unBeliever*] when he is cut off [*batsa* (to cut off; to finish)] – *physical @@@ DEATH*], when God requires [*shalah*] his life [*nephesh* (soul)]?

### 2 CORINTHIANS 5:8

We [*Believers*] are of good courage, I [*Paul*] say, and prefer rather to be absent [*ekdemeo* (to go or live abroad)] from the body [*at physical @@@ DEATH the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT departs the body*] and to be at home [*endemeo* (to be among one’s own people)] with the LORD [*in @@@ HEAVEN*].

- (12) **Soul Only is Saved.** Only the soul is saved for the Believer, not his human physical body – Ps. 19:7; 34:22; 71:23; Mk. 8:36-37; Heb. 10:39; 1 Pet. 1:9. The mortal body disintegrates into the environment following @@@ DEATH. Believers will get a new supernatural @@@ RESURRECTION body which will house their @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT forever and ever. See @@@ SOTERIOLOGY; @@@ RAPTURE.

### PSALM 34:22

The LORD redeems [*padah* (to pay a ransom)] the soul [*nephesh*] of His servants [*Believers*], and none of those who take refuge in Him will be condemned [*asham* (to be incriminated) – *@@@ ETERNAL SECURITY*].

### PSALM 71:23

My lips will shout for joy when I sing praises to You; and my soul [*nephesh*], which You have redeemed [*padah* (to pay a ransom)].

– THE HUMAN SPIRIT –

- (1) **Definition.** The human spirit, Hebrew *ruach* and Greek *pneuma*, is created by the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT at @@@ SALVATION and is the possession of the Believer only – Jn. 3:4-8; 1 Cor. 2:11-12; 1 Thess. 5:23; Zech. 12:1; Rom. 8:16-17. At the moment of @@@ FAITH in Jesus Christ the human spirit attaches permanently to the new Believer's human soul. The human spirit allows the Believer to now comprehend spiritual phenomena – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – and grow to spiritual @@@ MATURITY.

**ROMANS 8:16-17**

The [Holy] Spirit [*pneuma*] Himself testifies [*summartureo* (to bear witness)] with our [human] spirit [*pneuma*] that we are children [*teknon*] of God, and if children, heirs [*kleronomos* (one who receives his allotted portion by right of sonship)] also, heirs of God and fellow heirs [*sugkleronomos*] with Christ, if indeed we suffer with Him [*sumpascho* (to feel pain together) – Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing to the positive [+P] volition Believer] so that we may also be glorified [*sundoxazo* (to glorify together)] with Him [the Believer at spiritual @@@ MATURITY receives @@@ REWARDS].

**1 CORINTHIANS 2:11**

For who among men [the human race] knows the *thoughts* of a man [a Believer] except the spirit [*pneuma*] of the man which is in him [only the Believer has a human spirit]? Even so the *thoughts* of God no one knows except the Spirit of God [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT provides the thoughts of the @@@ TRINITY in the @@@ BIBLE to the Believer].

- (a) **Eternal Life.** In all @@@ DISPENSATIONS, God imputes His eternal life to the human spirit at salvation – Jn. 3:5-8; Rom. 8:10; 2 Tim. 4:22; 1 Jn. 5:20; 1 Cor. 6:17. See @@@ FORTY THINGS.

**JOHN 3:5-7**

Jesus answered [Nicodemus], “Truly [*amen* (a point of truth)], truly, I say to you, unless one is born [*gennao* (to be born)] of water [*hudor* – the @@@ WATER of the Gospel] and the Spirit [*pneuma* – the @@@ SALVATION ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] he cannot enter into [*eiserchomai* (to

come in or go out)] the kingdom of God. That which is born of flesh [*sarx*] is flesh [*sarx* – the unBeliever is born in spiritual @@@ DEATH with an @@@ OLD SIN NATURE], and that which is born of the [Holy] Spirit [*pneuma*] is spirit [*pneuma* – the Believer receives a human spirit]. Do not be amazed [*thaumazo* (to wonder at)] that I [Jesus Christ] said to you, ‘You must [*dei* (it is necessary)] be born [*gennao*] again [*anōthen* (of things which come from heaven)].’”

- (b) **Comprehend.** The human spirit is necessary for the Believer to comprehend Bible Doctrine – Rom. 8:16; 1 Cor. 2:11-16; Eph. 4:17-18. See @@@ OPERATION Z. Note: UnBelievers can comprehend the utility and truth of the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 2:10-13

For to us [the Believer] God revealed *them* through the Spirit [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT]; for the Spirit searches [*ereunao* (to examine)] all things, even the depths of God. For who among men knows [*heneka* (on account of)] the *thoughts* of a man expect the [human] spirit [*pneuma*] of the man [the Believer] which is in him? Even so the *thoughts* of God no one knows [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] except the [Holy] Spirit of God. Now we have received [*lambano* (to claim; to take by the hand)], not the spirit [*pneuma* (the disposition or influence which fills and governs the soul of any one) – the general thinking of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS] of the world [*kosmos* – Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD], but the [Holy] Spirit [*pneuma*] who is from God, so that we may know [*heneka* (on account of)] the things freely given to us by God, which things we [Paul and his team] also speak [*laleo* – the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER communicating @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], not in words taught [*didaktos* (instructed by one)] by human wisdom [*sophia* – the viewpoint of human @@@ GOOD and @@@ RELIGION], but in those taught [*didaktos* (to teach)] by the [Holy] Spirit, combining [*sugkrino* (to join together fitly)] spiritual [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit)] *thoughts* with spiritual [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit)] *words* [only a human spirit understands spiritual concepts].

- (c) **Foolishness to the UnBeliever.** The unBeliever has no human spirit and although he can hear or read the words of the @@@ BIBLE as academic *gnosis* (knowledge) they are complete “*foolishness*” [1 Cor. 2:14-16] to him and are rejected – Eph. 4:17-18.



## 1 CORINTHIANS 2:14-16

But a natural [*psuchikos* (soulish) – the unBeliever has a soul but no human spirit] man [*anthropos* (mankind)] does not accept [*dechomai* (to take with the hand)] the things of the Spirit [*pneuma*] of God [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT is the author of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], for they are foolishness [*moria*] to him; and he cannot understand [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] them, because [*hoti* (on account of)] they are spiritually [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit) – understanding Bible Doctrine requires a human spirit] appraised [*anakrino* (to examine; to investigate; to evaluate)]. But he who is spiritual [*pneumatikos* (relating to the human spirit) – the Believer has a human spirit and here is in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit] appraises all things, yet he himself is appraised by no one [the Law of Liberty in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE]. For who has known [*ginosko* (to learn to know)] the mind [*nous* (the mind, comprising alike the faculties of perceiving and understanding)] of the LORD [*kurios* (God) – the thinking of Jesus Christ is Bible Doctrine], that he [any given person] will instruct [*sumbibadzo* (to cause to coalesce)] Him [God]? But we [Paul and his traveling seminary] have [*echo* (to have and to hold)] the mind of Christ [these @@@ PASTOR/TEACHERs knew Bible Doctrine and were ready to teach it].

## EPHESIANS 4:17-18

So this I [Paul] say, and affirm together with the LORD, that you [Believers] walk [*peripateo* (a lifestyle)] no longer just as the Gentiles [*ethnos* – the unBelievers] also walk [in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], in the futility [*mataiotes* (devoid of truth)] of their mind [*nous*], being darkened [*skotoo* (blackout)] in their understanding [the unBeliever cannot understand @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE as they have no human spirit], excluded [*apallotrio* (to be shut out from intimacy) – the unBeliever is not in the family of God] from the life of God [the unBeliever cannot enter the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE] because of the ignorance [*agnoia* (lack of knowledge) – no desire in their negative [-N] volition] that is in them, because of the hardness [*porosis* (the covering with a callus) – those humans on negative [-N] volition] of their heart [*kardia* – the soul of the unBeliever].

- (2) **Soul and Spirit.** The @@@ BIBLE clearly distinguishes between the human soul [which all humans possess] and the human spirit [which only Believers possess]. See Heb. 4:12; Lk. 1:46-47; 1 Cor. 2:11-14.

## HEBREWS 4:12

For the word of God [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] is living [*zao* (true life)] and active [*energes* (powerful)] and sharper than any two-edged sword [*machaira* (short Roman sword)], and piercing as far as the division [*merismos* (separation)] of soul [*psuche*] and spirit [*pneuma* – the human spirit of the Believer], of both joints and marrow, and able to judge the thoughts [*enthumesis*] and intentions [*ennoia*] of the heart [*kardia*].

- (a) **Trichotomous.** A Believer in his mortal body is a trichotomous [three part] being with a: (1) human soul; (2) human spirit; and (3) physical body – 1 Thess. 5:23; Zech. 12:1; Phm. 25; Matt. 26:41; Heb. 4:12; Tit. 3:5; Jn. 3:3-6; Job 32:8; Prov. 20:27; Eph. 4:23-24. His soul and spirit will remain united forever and ultimately will dwell in a resurrection body. See @@@ RESURECTION.

## 1 THESSALONIANS 5:23

Now may the God of peace Himself sanctify [*hagiazō* (to purify internally by the renewing of the soul) – God's desire for the Believer to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY] you entirely; and may your spirit [*pneuma* – the human spirit] and soul [*psuche*] and body [*soma*] be preserved complete, without blame [*reaching maturity*] at the coming of our LORD Jesus Christ [at the @@@ RAPTURE the living Believers will get a @@@ RESURRECTION body].

- (b) **Dichotomous.** An unBeliever is a dichotomous [two part] being with a soul and a physical body only – 1 Cor. 2:11-14; Jude 19.
- (c) **Adam.** Adam, created by God with a body, soul, and spirit, went from a trichotomous being [Gen. 2:7, “*breath of lives*”] to a dichotomous being [spiritual @@@ DEATH at the point of the original @@@ SIN caused the loss of his human spirit]. Without a human spirit Adam had no relationship with God – Gen. 2:16-17; 3:7-10. However, when Adam believed in the Gospel by @@@ FAITH in the coming Messiah [Christ as “seed of the woman”] per Gen. 3:15, he then went back to a trichotomous being; he regained his human spirit [but also acquired an @@@ OLD SIN NATURE]. The same occurred with Eve.
-

## @@@ SUFFERING

- (1) **Definition.** General causes of suffering and @@@ PROBLEMS in life for all humans – Believers and unBelievers [1 Cor. 10:13] – emanate from one of four categories: (1) Physical; (2) People; (3) System; or (4) Thought. Examples of suffering include: loss of health [Job 2:4]; administration of justice; natural disasters, privation; gossip; violence; violation of @@@ PRIVACY; social matters such as being lonely, bored, rejected, or ostracized by friends, family, or spouse; and mental attitude @@@ SINS, which produce hatred, @@@ JEALOUSY, bitterness, and implacability.
- (2) **Impacts the Believer.** For the Believer, suffering never leaves one the same – either a very bitter **Loser** Believer or a smarter, grateful, and content **Winner** Believer. See Phil. 3:10-16.

### PHILIPPIANS 3:10-14

That I [Paul] may know Him [the mind of Jesus Christ] and the power of His resurrection [*anastasis* – the power that raised Christ from @@@ DEATH is available to all Believers] and the fellowship of His sufferings [*pathema* – the categories of Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing], being conformed to His death; in order that I may attain to the resurrection from the dead [@@@ RESURRECTION body and eternal @@@ REWARDS]. Not that I have already obtained it [*lambano* (to lay hold of) – the highest level of spiritual @@@ MATURITY] or have already become perfect [*teleioo*], but I press on [*dioko* (to run swiftly in order to catch a thing)] so that I may lay hold of that for which also I was laid hold of by Christ Jesus. Brethren, I do not regard myself as having laid hold of it yet; but one thing I do: forgetting [*epilanthanomai* (forgetting; no longer caring for; given over to oblivion)] what lies behind [Paul's past failures were dealt with by @@@ REBOUND] and reaching forward to what lies ahead [*emprosthen* (in the sight of)], I press on [*dioko* – in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE] toward the goal [*skopos* (a distance mark looked at)] for the prize [*brabeion* (the award to the victor in the games) – eternal @@@ REWARDS] of the upward call [*klesis* (invitation)] of God in Christ Jesus [the @@@ PLAN OF GOD desires the best and highest for all Believers].

- (3) **Categories of Suffering.** Some categories of suffering are different for Believers and unBelievers, but others are the same.

- (a) **Suffering in @@@ TIME** – both Believer and unBeliever.
- (b) **Suffering in Eternity.**
  - 1. **UnBeliever.** The separation from God in the “*Lake of Fire*” will never end – Rev. 20:12-15. See @@@ HELL.
  - 2. **Believer.** There is no suffering in @@@ HEAVEN – Rev. 21:4.

## REVELATION 21:4

And He [God] will wipe away [*exaleipho* (to anoint or wash in every part; to erase)] every tear from their [the Believer] eyes; and [in @@@ HEAVEN] there will no longer be *any* death [*thanatos* (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)]; there will no longer be *any* mourning, or crying, or pain [*ponos* (great trouble)]; the first [*protos* (first in time)] things have passed away [*aperchomai* (to go away; depart)].

## – CHRISTIAN DIVINE DISCIPLINE SUFFERING –

### (1) **Self-Induced Misery Suffering.**

- (a) **Law of Volitional Responsibility.** A man will “reap what he sows.” Accordingly, “*sow the wind*” and “*reap the whirlwind*” [Hos. 8:7]; Gal. 6:7. Note: This general concept also applies to the unBeliever in his life choices. In short, you do it to yourself.

## HOSEA 8:7

For they [Israel] sow the wind and they reap the whirlwind [*self-induced and Divine Discipline @@@SUFFERING*]. The standing grain has no heads; it yields no grain. Should it yield, strangers would swallow it up.

- (b) **Bad Thinking.** Most all Christian Suffering results from the Believer’s own wrong thoughts, decisions, and actions. In short, the Believer rejects the @@@ AUTHORITY of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in his life to show him the way and substitutes the thinking of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS and human @@@ GOOD – Gal. 5:7.

## GALATIANS 5:7

You [**Believers in Galatia**] were running [*trecho* (of those who run in a race course) – **@@@ RUNNING**] well [*they were advancing in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE*]; who hindered [*egkopto* (to impede one's course by cutting off his way)] you from obeying the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – by implication these Believers hindered themselves by getting into the **@@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS**]?

- (c) **Violation of the Laws of the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.** This absolutely guarantees suffering to individuals, families, and nations. See **@@@ PIVOT**. Note: This fact also applies for the unBeliever.

(2) **Divine Discipline Suffering.**

- (a) **To Retool.** God in His **@@@ GRACE** will employ **Divine Discipline Suffering** in progressive stages to get the negative [**-N**] volition Believer to reorient to the **@@@ PLAN OF GOD** – Heb. 12:5-13; Rev. 3:16, 19-20; Job 5:17-18; Ps. 7:12-16; 30:5; 119:67; Nah. 1:3.

## HEBREWS 12:6, 10-11

For those whom the LORD loves [*agapao* (to love dearly) – all Believers fall under this **@@@ LOVE** because they possess His Righteousness [**+R**]] He disciplines [*paideuo* (of a father punishing a son) – Divine Discipline **@@@ SUFFERING**], and He scourges [*mastigoo* (to flog with a whip)] every son whom He receives [*paradechomai* (to acknowledge as one's own)] ... but He *disciplines us* for *our* good, so that we may share His holiness [**advance to spiritual @@@ MATURITY**]. All discipline for the moment seems not to be joyful, but sorrowful; yet to those who have been trained [*gumnazo*] by it, afterwards it yields the peaceful fruit of righteousness [*dikaiosune*].

## JOB 5:17-18

Behold, how happy is the man whom God reproves [**Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING**], so do not despise the discipline [*musar* (chastening; correction)] of the Almighty. For He inflicts pain, and gives relief; He wounds, and His hands *also* heal [**the purpose of Divine Discipline Suffering is to get the Believer oriented back to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE**].

PSALM 7:12-16

If a man does not repent [@@@ REBOUND], He will sharpen His sword; He has bent His bow and made it ready [Divine Discipline Suffering]. He has also prepared for Himself deadly weapons; He makes His arrows fiery shafts. Behold, he travails [*chabal*] with wickedness, and he conceives mischief and brings forth falsehood. He has dug a pit and hollowed it out, and has fallen into the hole which he made. His mischief will return upon his own head, and his violence will descend upon his own pate [*godgod (crown of the head)*].

PSALM 30:5

For His anger [*aph (wrath)* – Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING] is but for a moment, His favor [*ratson (goodwill)*] is for a lifetime [God wants all Believers to reach @@@ MATURITY]; weeping may last for the night, but a shout of joy [*rinnah (praise in proclamation)*] comes in the morning.

NAHUM 1:3

The LORD is slow [Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING] to anger and great in power, and the LORD will by no means leave *the guilty* unpunished. In whirlwind and storm is His way, and clouds are the dust beneath His feet.

- (b) **Positive Testimony.** Because **Divine Discipline Suffering** seeks to return the Believer back to the @@@ PLAN OF GOD the ultimate testimony of all **Winner** Believers will be Ps. 119:67 and Ps. 119:71.

PSALM 119:67

Before I [Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM] was afflicted [Divine Discipline Suffering] I went astray [*shagag* – the Believer rejected Bible Doctrine], but now [*attah (at this time)*] I keep [*shamar (to guard; to watch; to keep)*] Your word [the Believer returns to Bible Doctrine].

PSALM 119:71

It is good for me that I was afflicted [*anah* – warning Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING], that I may learn Your statutes [*choq (a prescribed task)* – the full realm of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE].



- (c) **Stages of Divine Discipline Suffering.** The stages are progressive in degree of discomfort to alert the Believer to turn course to the Word.
1. **Warning Divine Discipline Suffering Stage.** To alert the Believer that he must orient himself back to the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE – Rev. 3:20; 1 Cor. 11:30-31.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 11:30

For this reason many among you [Believers] are [1] weak [*asthenes* (weak; infirm; feeble) – physical/mental weakness is the warning stage of Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING] and [2] sick [*arrhostos* (without strength; sick) – intensive stage of Divine Suffering], and [3] a number sleep [*koimao* (to die; to sleep) – @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH where the Believer dies].

### REVELATION 3:20

Behold, I [Jesus Christ] stand at the door [*thura* – the Believer's volition] and knock [the @@@ SUFFERING of warning Divine Discipline]; if [Third Class Condition] anyone hears [*akouo* (to consider what is or has been said)] My voice and opens the door [positive [+P] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], I will come in to him [the Believer] and will dine [*deipneo* (to have supper) – Fellowship with Jesus Christ] with him, and he with Me.

2. **Intensive Divine Discipline Suffering Stage.** Involves greater levels of suffering to include dramatic levels of physical or mental illness in order to get the Believer to realize the worthlessness of living without God and living in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS – Ps. 88:1-18; Rev. 3:19; 1 Cor. 11:30; Lam. 3:1-3. God allowed an “*evil spirit*” [1 Sam. 18:10; 19:9] to torment King Saul's thinking as he sought to murder David.

### REVELATION 3:19

Those whom I [God] love [*phileo* (personal love) – all Believers], I reprove [*elegcho* (to correct)] and discipline [*paideuo* (a father punishing his son)]; therefore be zealous [*zeloo* (to burn with zeal; to be heated or to boil) – be on positive [+P] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] and repent [*metanoeo* (change the mind) – get out of the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS].

## LAMENTATIONS 3:1-3

I [Jeremiah] am the man who has seen affliction [intensive Divine Discipline Suffering] because of the rod [*shebet* (club, of a shepherd's implement)] of His [God] wrath. He has driven me and made me walk in darkness and not in light. Surely against me He has turned His hand repeatedly all the day.

## PSALM 88:7-8

Your wrath has rested upon me [Heman the Ezrahite], and You have afflicted me with all your waves [*mishbar* (breakers) – intensive Divine Discipline Suffering]. Shelah. You have removed my acquaintances far from me; You have made me an object of loathing to them; I am shut up and cannot go out.

3. **Dying Divine Discipline Suffering Stage.** This final stage of suffering is termed the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH where God marks the **Loser** Believer for painful physical death with only a limited window to recover – 1 Jn. 5:16; 1 Cor. 11:30.

## PROVERBS 15:10

Grievous punishment is for him who forsakes the way [Loser Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM]; He who hates reproof [Loser Believer who will not respond to God] will die [the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH].

4. **The Solution.** 1 Cor. 11:30 [*supra*], covers all three progressive stages of **Divine Discipline Suffering** to the Believer and in 1 Cor. 11:31-32, the solution is provided – evaluate self, keep close accounts, and immediately @@@ REBOUND or “*your sin will find you out*” [Num. 32:23]. See Eph. 4:17-18.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 11:31-32

But if we [Believers] judged [*diakrino* (make a distinction; judge)] ourselves rightly [constantly evaluate known @@@ SINS and use @@@ REBOUND], we would not be judged [*krino* – Divine Discipline Suffering]. But when we are judged, we are disciplined [*paideuo* (of a father punishing his son)] by the LORD, so that we will not be condemned along with the world [*kosmos* – God uses Divine Discipline to correct and motivate the Believer not condemn him].

– CHRISTIAN DIVINE SUFFERING FOR BLESSING –

- (1) **Designed For Blessing.** All Divine Suffering is designed to bless the Believer – 1 Pet. 1:6-8; 4:14; 5:8-9; Ps. 6:1-3; 30:5; 119:67. While **Divine Discipline Suffering** seeks to return the negative [-N] volition Believer to the @@@ PLAN OF GOD, **Divine Suffering for Blessing** – also called *testing* – pushes the positive [+P] Believer forward to maturity so he can be entered as a subject matter expert witness in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.

**1 PETER 5:8-9**

Be of sober *spirit*, be on the alert [*gregoreuo* (to give strict attention)]. Your adversary [*antidikos* (an opponent in a lawsuit) – in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT], the devil, prowls around like a roaring [*orumai* – Satan uses @@@ FEAR as a tool of attack] lion, seeking someone to devour [*katapino* (to swallow up; to destroy) – Satan wants all Believers in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS]. But resist him, firm in *your* faith [*pistis* – apply @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], knowing that the same experiences of suffering [*pathema* – Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing to the positive [+P] volition Believer] are being accomplished by your brethren who are in the world [*kosmos* – Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD but he cannot stop the positive [+P] volition Believer from reaching @@@ MATURITY].

**1 PETER 1:6-8**

In this you [Believers] greatly rejoice, even though now for a little while [*oligos* (a short time)], if necessary [*dei* (it is necessary)], you have been distressed by various trials [*peirasmos* (putting to proof) – Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing], so that the proof of your faith [*pistis* – testing the retained @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], *being* more precious than gold [*chrusion*] which is perishable [*apollui* – but Bible Doctrine remains], even though tested [*dokimazo* (to test)] by fire [*pur* – Suffering for Blessing so the positive [+P] volition Believer reaches @@@ MATURITY], may be found to result in praise and glory [*doxa* – @@@ REWARDS at the Judgment Seat of Christ] and honor at the revelation [*apokalupsis* (manifestation) – at the @@@ RAPTURE] of Jesus Christ; and though you have not seen Him, you love [*apapao* (to love dearly)] Him [the ability to @@@ LOVE Jesus is via Bible Doctrine], and though you do not see Him now, but believe in Him, you greatly rejoice with joy inexpressible and full of glory.

- (2) **Divine Testing.** In **Divine Suffering for Blessing**, God never sends the Believer more testing than he can bear, and with the **Divine Suffering for Blessing** [testing] God always provides the way out – the Believer need only apply the @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE that he has already retained in his @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT. See 1 Cor. 10:12-13; Js. 1:12.

### 1 CORINTHIANS 10:12-13

Therefore let him who thinks [*dokeo* (to be of opinion)] he stands [**the Believer using human viewpoint**] take heed that he does not fall [*pipto* (to descend from a higher place to a lower place)]. No temptation [*peirasmós* (a test; an experiment; a putting to proof by trial) – @@@ SUFFERING] has overtaken [*lambano* (to grab)] you [**the Believer**] but such as is common to man [*anthropinos* (applied to things belonging to mankind)]; and God is faithful [*pistos*], who will not allow you to be tempted [*peirazo* (tested) – **Divine Suffering for Blessing to the positive [+P] volition Believer**] beyond what you are able [*dunamai* – the test will not exceed the Believer's level of spiritual @@@ MATURITY], but with the temptation [*peirasmós*] will provide [*poieo* (to make)] the way of escape [*ekbasis* (the way out; an egress)] also [**the Believer must apply the applicable @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES to the test**], so that you will be able to endure it [*hupophero* (to bear by being under; to undergo; to bear patiently) – pass the test and receive @@@ REWARDS].

### JAMES 1:12

Blessed is the man [**positive [+P] volition Believer**] who perseveres under trial [*peirasmós* – **Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing**]; for once he has been approved [*dokimos* (acceptable; pleasing) – God approves the Believer who reaches @@@ MATURITY], he will receive [*lambano* (to take with the hand)] the crown [*stephanos* (a wreath given as a prize)] of life [**eternal @@@ REWARDS**] which *the LORD* has promised to those who love [*agapao* (to love dearly)] Him [**the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches maturity loves the LORD**].

- (3) **Divine Assets.** **Divine Suffering for Blessing** makes the positive [+P] Believer rely on Divine assets – 2 Cor. 12:7. In 2 Cor. 12:1-10, God allowed a demon to torment Paul. Paul used the wrong solutions at first, to include @@@ PRAYER, but then applied @@@ GRACE – 2 Cor. 12:1-8.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 12:1-8

:1-4

“*glory*” – *kauchaomai* (to boast with confidence, not arrogance).

“*out of body*” – *exots*. This is an autobiography of Paul’s stoning in A.D. 43, in Lystra [14 years earlier] recorded in Acts 14:19-20. Whether Paul was dead or alive, he was in the Third @@@ HEAVEN. This experience was a huge source of potential pride and a hindrance to his reaching the top level of spiritual @@@ MATURITY.

:6-8

“*foolish*” – *aphron* (a non-thinker). Paul will not boast in the experience.

“*exalting myself*” – *huperaiomai* (arrogance through pride).

“*thorn*” – *skolops* (anything that is pointed). This pain was extreme.

“*messenger*” – *aggelos* (an angel). A demon. See @@@ DEMONISM.

“*torment*” – *kolaphizo* (to punch with the fist).

“*implored the Lord three times*” – Paul at first used the wrong approach.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 12:9-10

And He has said to me [Paul], “My grace is sufficient [*arkeo* (to be possessed of unfailing strength)] for you, for power [*dunamis* – living inside the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE] is perfected [*reaching @@@ MATURITY*] in weakness [*Divine Suffering for Blessing*].” Most gladly, therefore, I will rather boast about my weaknesses, so that the power of Christ may dwell [*episkenoo* (to fix a tent)] in me. Therefore I am well content with weaknesses, with insults, with distresses, with persecutions, with difficulties, for Christ’s sake; for when I am weak [*under testing*], then I am strong [*dunatos* – using the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES].

## 2 CORINTHIANS 4:16-18

Therefore we do not lose heart, but though our outer man [*mortality*] is decaying, yet our inner man [*spiritual growth to maturity*] is being renewed day by day. For momentary light [*elafros* (light in weight)] affliction [*thilpsis* – Divine Suffering for Blessing] is producing for us an eternal weight [*baros* (heaviness)] of glory [*Rewards*] far beyond all comparison, while we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen; for the things which are seen are temporal but the things which are not seen are eternal.



## (4) Specific Purposes.

- (a) **Glorify God.** **Divine Suffering for Blessing** allows the positive [+P] volition **Winner** Believer to glorify God during the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT by reaching @@@ MATURITY under the Plan of God. Because God is worthy of the Believer's total personal love, thinking, and respect, to think about God the Believer needs to reach maturity by the intake of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE that is then *tested* by **Divine Suffering for Blessing** – “*knowing that tribulation brings about perseverance*” [Rom. 5:3]. See Js. 1:2-4; 1 Pet. 2:18-20; 4:12-14; Jn. 15:1-8; Rom. 8:16-17; Lk. 15:20-21; Heb. 5:8; Phil. 2:8; Col. 3:22-24. See *infra* (6) – those entered as subject matter expert witness exhibits!

## JAMES 1:2-4

Consider it all joy [@@@ HAPPINESS], my brethren [Believer], when you encounter [*peripipto* (to fall into as to be encompassed)] various trials [*peirasmos* (testing) – undeserved Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing results in reaching spiritual @@@ MATURITY], knowing that the testing [*dokimion* (to prove)] of your faith [*pistis* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in the Believer's @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT] produces endurance [*hupomone* (constancy)]. And let endurance have *its* perfect [*teleios* (brought to its end)] result, so that you may be perfect and complete [*holokleros* (complete in all its parts)], lacking in nothing [at the status of maturity].

## 1 PETER 4:12-14

Beloved [*agapetos* – fellow Believers], do not be surprised [*xenizo* (to surprise or astonish by the strangeness and novelty of a thing)] at the fiery ordeal [*purosis* (testing)] among you, which comes upon you for your testing [*peirasmos* – Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing to the positive [+P] volition Believer], as though some strange thing were happening to you; but to the degree that you share the sufferings of Christ, keep on rejoicing, so that also at the revelation [*apokalupsis* (manifestation)] of His glory [*doxa* – at the @@@ RAPTURE followed by the Judgment Seat of Christ for @@@ REWARDS] you may rejoice with exultation. If you are reviled for the name of Christ [the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS hate @@@ GRACE], you are blessed, because the Spirit [*pneuma* – the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] of glory and of God rests on you.



## JOHN 15:1-8

I [Jesus Christ] am the true [*alethinos* (truthful; that which has the title and the real nature)] vine [*ampelos*], and My Father is the vinedresser [*georgos*]. Every branch [*klema* (a tender and flexible branch) – a Believer] in Me that does not bear [*phero* (to carry)] fruit [*karpos* (the fruit of trees or vines) – the negative [-N] volition Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM living in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], He takes away [by administering the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH]; and every branch that bears fruit [the positive [+P] volition Believer to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], He prunes it [*kathairo* (to prune trees and vines from useless shoots) – a Believer who is the recipient of Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing] so that it may bear [*phero*] more [*polus* (much)] fruit [the Believer reaches spiritual @@@ MATURITY and receives @@@ REWARDS]. You [Believers] are already clean [*katharos* (purified by fire; clean; pure) – all Believers have @@@ SALVATION] because of the word [*logos* – the Gospel] which I have spoken to you. Abide [*meno* (remain)] in Me, and I in you [the Believer @@@ WALKING in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE]. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself unless it abides in the vine, so neither can you unless you abide in Me [the Believer must take in Bible Doctrine]. I am the vine, you are the branches; he who abides in Me and I in him [positive [+P] volition to Bible Doctrine], he bears much fruit [Divine Good and Rewards], for apart from Me you can do nothing. If anyone does not abide [*meno*] in Me, he is thrown [*ballo*] away [*eko* (out)] as a branch and dries up [*xeraino*]; and they gather them, and cast them into the fire [*pur*] and they are burned [*kaio* – the Loser Believer on negative [-N] volition to Bible Doctrine dies the Sin Unto Death]. If you abide in Me, and My words [*rhema* (that which is or has been uttered by a living voice)] abide in you [Bible Doctrine], ask whatever you wish, and it will be done for you [@@@ PRAYER]. My Father is glorified [*doxazo*] by this, that you bear much fruit [in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT], and so prove to be My disciples [*mathetes*].

- (b) **Illustrate a Point of Bible Doctrine.** Hosea, a Prophet to the Northern Kingdom of Israel circa 720 B.C., was commanded by God to marry a prostitute and to care for her and the children she gave birth to, even though Hosea knew that they were not his offspring. This revealed the negative [-N] volition of the Jews in the Northern Kingdom called Israel and God's extreme grace faithfulness and forbearance to them despite their consistent rejection of Him at every turn. See Hosea.

- (c) **Witness. Divine Suffering** to witness to unBelievers about Christ – *“keep your behavior excellent among the Gentiles ... that they may glorify God in the day of visitation”* [1 Pet. 2:12]. See 1 Cor. 2 & 3.
- (d) **Growing Believers. Divine Suffering for Blessing** to be able to help other less advanced Believers in their spiritual life – 2 Cor. 1:3-5.
- (e) **Love God. Divine Suffering for Blessing** so the Believer can @@@ LOVE God apart from the things that He gives him and to manifest the *“fruit”* [Col. 1:10] of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT – *“suffer hardship ... as a good soldier”* [2 Tim. 2:3]. See 2 Cor. 4:8-11; Rom. 8:16-17.

### ROMANS 8:16-17

The [Holy] Spirit [*pneuma*] Himself testifies [*summartureo* (to bear witness)] with our [human] spirit [*pneuma*] that we are children of God, and if children, heirs [*kleronomos* (one who receives his allotted portion by right of sonship)] also, heirs of God and fellow heirs with Christ, if indeed we suffer with *Him* [*sumpascho* (to feel pain together) – Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing] so that we may also be glorified [*sundoxazo* (to glorify together)] with *Him* [the mature Believer receives @@@ REWARDS].

- (5) **Thieme's Growth Stages.** R. B. Thieme Jr., developed a teaching tool consisting of basic growth stages to @@@ MATURITY by means of **Divine Suffering for Blessing**.
  - (a) **Spiritual Self-Esteem + Providential Preventive Suffering = Spiritual Autonomy.** The Believer's self-esteem is not derived from self but from knowing that he has a unique relationship with God. SSE is far superior to human self-esteem.
  - (b) **Spiritual Autonomy + Momentum Testing = Spiritual Maturity** [various levels]. The Believer will face totally helpless situations in life, instances where the roof falls in. These are grand moments that the Believer prepares for and anticipates. How the Believer handles these great opportunities for his spiritual growth will depend entirely on the @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in his @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT and his positive [+P] volition to employ the relevant Bible Doctrine he has retained to the test[s]. See @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE.

- (6) **Subject Matter Expert Evidence Testing.** The highest level of **Divine Suffering for Blessing** is “evidence testing,” designed to bring the Believer to **Super Spiritual Maturity** as a **subject matter expert witness** exhibit in the Angelic Conflict, e.g., Antipas “*My witness, My faithful one*” [Rev. 2:13]; “*so great a cloud of witnesses*” [Heb. 12:1]; Acts 1:8; Rom. 8:36.
- (a) **High Level.** Bring Believer to the highest level of Spiritual Maturity. Spiritual Maturity + Evidence Testing = **Super Spiritual Maturity**.
  - (b) **Examine.** Satan cross examines [tests] the subject matter expert witness presented by God – Zech. 3:1-2; Job 1:6-12; Matt. 4:1-11.
  - (c) **Types.** Expert witness testing can come in one of two forms.
    - 1. **Relationship with the Plan of God Test.** Illustration of Jesus Christ who passed a three-part test as recorded in Matt. 4:1-11. “*Then Jesus was led up by the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted by the devil.*” His subsequent maximum testings were unique events far beyond those faced by any Believer.
      - a. **Jesus’ Relationship With the Holy Spirit** – Matt. 4:1-4. Jesus was tempted to use His own Deity – “*command that these stones become bread.*” Jesus countered with Bible Doctrine. He was extremely hungry but only employed @@@ **MIRACLES** to announce His 1st Advent as the Messiah, not to feed all the people in the world. Jesus rejected human @@@ **GOOD** as His mission was not to bring “equality” to the world, but to provide salvation.
      - b. **Jesus’ Relationship With Bible Doctrine** – Matt. 4:5-7. Satan tempted the humanity of Christ by a false application of Bible Doctrine regarding God’s angelic protection. Jesus correctly responded that the Believer must always follow God’s will.
      - c. **Jesus’ Relationship With the Plan of God** – Matt. 4:8-10. Satan attempted to get Jesus Christ to bypass the @@@ **CROSS** and go directly to the glory of the Crown. See Operation @@@ **FOOTSTOOL**.

2. **Relationship with Life Test.** Illustrated by Job’s three-part test which God allowed Satan to administer – “*Then the LORD said to Satan, “Behold, all that he has is in your power, only do not put forth your hand on him”*” [Job 1:12]. (1) **Loss of Prosperity Test** [Job 1] – Job passed; (2) **Loss of Health Test** [Job 2:1-10] – Job passed; and (3) **People Test** [Job 2:11- 42:5] – Job flunked this mental attitude test several times until passing it in Job 42:5.
- (7) **Overview.** (1) The mind of the LORD Jesus Christ [1 Cor. 2:16] is formed in the Believer at SSE – Gal. 4:19. (2) Christ is at home in the heart at SA – Eph. 3:16-17. (3) Christ is exalted in the body at SM – Phil. 1:20-21; 3:12-14. (4) Christ is glorified to the maximum at SSM – 2 Tim. 4:7-8.

START	WEAKNESS	STRENGTH
Spiritual Self-esteem	Providential Preventative Suffering	Spiritual Autonomy
Spiritual Autonomy	Momentum Testing Suffering	Spiritual Maturity
Spiritual Maturity	Evidence Testing Suffering	Super Spiritual Maturity
	SSE + PPS = SA	
	SA + MTS = SM	
	SM + ETS = SSM	

– Thieme Testing Chart –

- (8) **Two Learning Methods.** Every Believer learns something about God via:
- (a) **Hard Way.** The “School of Hard Knocks” where he experiences the consequences of his bad decisions and **Divine Discipline Suffering**.

- (b) **Easy Way.** The “University of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE” for the **Winner** Believer who anticipates **Divine Suffering for Blessing**.

- |    |                          |       |                  |
|----|--------------------------|-------|------------------|
| 1. | Childhood                | _____ | Freshman         |
| 2. | Spiritual Self-Esteem    | _____ | Sophomore        |
| 3. | Spiritual Autonomy       | _____ | Junior           |
| 4. | Spiritual Maturity       | _____ | Senior           |
| 5. | Super Spiritual Maturity | _____ | Graduate Student |

– University of Bible Doctrine –

(9) **Solutions to Suffering.**

- (a) **Negative [-N] Solutions.** The Believer in the Cosmic Systems.
- (b) **Positive [+P] Solutions.** The Believer uses the @@@ **PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES** to include: (1) @@@ **REBOUND** [1 Jn. 1:9]; (2) @@@ **FAITH/Rest** technique; (3) Hope; and (4) *agape* impersonal @@@ **LOVE** [1 Cor. 13:11-13]. In short, the Believer employs the appropriate @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** to the testing.
- (10) **Pastor/Teacher Suffering.** The @@@ **PASTOR/TEACHER** gets **Divine Suffering for Blessing** to stay focused on @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** – 2 Cor. 12:9-10. He also gets extra **Divine Discipline Suffering** when he strays from his mission. *See* 2 Tim. 2:9-10, 12; Js. 3:1; 2 Cor. 5:11.
- (11) **Never Complain or Explain.** In all types of Divine Suffering – for correction or for blessing – the Believer should “never complain and never explain.” He should @@@ **REBOUND** and “keep his mouth shut.” *See* Col. 1:10-11.

## @@@ THANKSGIVING

- (1) **Definition.** Thanksgiving is the act of rendering gratitude to God for His matchless @@@ GRACE and unfathomable mercy [grace in action] – 2 Cor. 9:15; Rev. 7:12. Thanksgiving can be internal or a public acknowledgment celebration in which the goodness and graciousness of God are extolled – 1 Chron. 16:7-36; 2 Cor. 9:15.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 9:15

Thanks [*charis* – @@@ GRACE] be to God for His indescribable [*anekdiegetos*] gift [*dorea* (a gift without cost) – Jesus Christ who provided @@@ SALVATION]!

## REVELATION 7:12

“Saying, Amen, [*amen* (to believe)] blessing [*eulogia* (praise)] and glory and wisdom [*sophia* (broad and full of intelligence)] and thanksgiving [*eucharistia*] and honor and power [*dunamis* (inherent power)] and might, *be* to our God forever and ever. Amen.”

- (2) **Normal Attitude.** Thanksgiving should be the standard mental attitude of the **Winner** Believer as part of the Royal Family of God – “*Give thanks to Him, bless His name*” [Ps. 100:1]; Eph. 5:20; Jn. 6:11; 1 Thess. 5:18; Col. 3:17.

## 1 THESSALONIANS 5:18

In everything [*pas*] give thanks [*eucharisteo* (to be grateful) – the positive [+P] volition Believer gives thanks for Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing]; for this is God’s will [*thelema*] for you in Christ Jesus [to reach @@@ MATURITY and receive @@@ REWARDS].

## COLOSSIANS 3:17

Whatever you [the positive [+P] volition Believer] do in word [*logos*] or deed [*ergon*], *do* all in the name of the LORD Jesus, giving thanks [*eucharisteo* – @@@ THANKSGIVING] through [*dia* (by means of)] Him to God the Father [God the Father made the @@@ PLAN OF GOD to provide @@@ SALVATION and growth in spiritual @@@ MATURITY].



- (3) **Providing Capacity.** While people can always engage in @@@ EMOTION without thought, it is impossible to fulfill the Biblical commands to be thankful to God apart from @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE resident in the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT – Col. 2:7; 3:15; Ps. 100:3-5. Thus, thanksgiving increases with spiritual @@@ MATURITY.

### COLOSSIANS 3:15

Let the peace [*eirene* (a state of tranquility) – Believer moving to @@@ MATURITY] of Christ rule [*brabeuo* (to be an umpire)] in your [the Believer] hearts [*kardia*], to which indeed you were called [*kaleo* (to invite)] in one body; and be thankful [*eucharistos* – @@@ THANKSGIVING].

### PSALM 100:4-5

Enter His gates [the place where @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE was taught by the Prophets] with thanksgiving and His courts with praise. Give thanks to Him, bless His name. For the LORD is good; His lovingkindness is everlasting and His faithfulness to all generations [the @@@ PLAN OF GOD].

### COLOSSIANS 2:7

Having been firmly rooted [*rhizoo* (to strengthen with roots)] and now being built up [Believer growing to spiritual @@@ MATURITY] in Him [Jesus Christ] and established [*bebaioo* (to make firm)] in your faith [*pistis* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], just as you were instructed [*didasko* – teaching by the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER], and overflowing with gratitude [*eucharistia* – @@@ THANKSGIVING].

- (4) **Priestly Function.** As a Royal Priest in the Church Age the Believer reflects thanksgiving as a normal part of his mission – Ps. 107:22; 116:17; Amos 4:5.

### PSALM 107:22

Let them also offer sacrifices of thanksgiving, and tell of His works with joyful singing.

- (5) **God's Glorification.** Thanksgiving relates to God's glorification. See 2 Cor. 9:10-11; Dan. 2 :23; Jn. 11:41-42; Rom. 1:8; Phil. 1:3; 2 Tim. 1:2.

## JOHN 11:41-42

So they removed the stone [**the tomb of Lazarus**]. Then Jesus raised His eyes, and said, “Father, I thank [**eucharisteo (to give thanks)**] You that You have heard [**akouo**] Me. I knew that You always hear Me; but because of the people standing around I said it [**Jesus commanded Lazarus back to life and to come out of the tomb**], so that they may believe [**pisteuo**] that You sent Me.”

- (6) **Giving of Money.** The expression of thanksgiving to God can include the @@@ GIVING of @@@ MONEY or other material things.
- (7) **Thanksgiving For Others.** Others are thankful for the visible impact made by the positive [**+P**] volition Believer – “***I thank my God in all remembrance of you***” [Phil. 1:3]; 1 Thess. 3:9; 2 Thess. 2:13.
- (8) **Thanksgiving in Prayer.** Since God has a Perfect plan for each Believer to reach @@@ MATURITY, the Believer is thankful for all things that come his way in prosperity or in @@@ SUFFERING. “***If we have food and covering, with these we shall be content***” [1 Tim. 6:8]; Phil. 4:6; Col. 4:2.

## PHILIPPIANS 4:6

Be anxious [**merimnao (to be troubled with cares)**] for nothing, but in everything by prayer [**@@@ PRAYER**] and supplication [**deesis (prayer request)**] with thanksgiving [**eucharistia – @@@ THANKSGIVING**] let your [**the positive [+P] volition Believer**] requests be made known to God.

## COLOSSIANS 4:2-3

Devote yourselves [**Believers in Colossae**] to prayer, keeping alert in it with *an attitude* of thanksgiving; praying at the same time for us [**Paul and his traveling seminary team**] as well, that God will open up to us a door for the word, so that we may speak forth the mystery [**musterion – @@@ MYSTERY**] of Christ, for which I have also been imprisoned; that I may make it clear in the way I ought to speak.

- (9) **Thanksgiving in Food.** Food is to be eaten by the Believer with thanksgiving through @@@ PRAYER. The food is sanctified – 1 Tim. 4:3-5.

## @@@ THEOPHANY

- (1) **Definition.** Theophany refers to those appearances of Jesus Christ in the Old Testament before His incarnation. He appeared as a man, as a phenomenon of nature, and as the Angel of the LORD – *malak Jehovah*.
- (2) **God's Name.** The Hebrew Tetragrammaton [four letters] – **JHWH** – stands for the sacred name of God. Adding supposed vowels, it is translated as either *Jehovah* or *Yahweh* (the self-existing one). The Jews would not pronounce the letters in reverence to Perfect God. Instead, they would either substitute *adonay* (LORD) in the singular or simply translate *Jehovah* as LORD, Deut. 6:4.

### DEUTERONOMY 6:4

Hear O Israel! The LORD [*Jehovah* – in the singular, Jesus Christ as God] is our God [*elohim* – in the plural, referring to all the @@@ TRINITY].

- (3) **Jesus Christ is God.** Jesus Christ is called *Jehovah* – Isa. 6:3; 9:6-7; 40:3; Jer. 23:5-6; Zech. 12:10.

### ISAIAH 40:3

A voice is calling, “Clear the way for the LORD [*Jehovah*] in the wilderness; make smooth in the desert a highway for our God [*elohim*].”

- (4) **Angel of Jehovah.** The Angel of *Jehovah* is identified as being equivalent to *Jehovah* – Gen. 16:7-13; 22:11-18; 31:11-13; 32:24-32; 48:15-16; Hos. 12:4; Ex. 3:2-6 [cf. Acts 7:30-35]; 13:21; 14:19; Jdg. 6:11-23; 13:9-20.

### EXODUS 3:2-5

The angel [*malak*] of the LORD [*Jehovah*] appeared to him [*Moses*] in a blazing fire from the midst of a bush; and he looked, and behold, the bush was burning with fire, yet the bush was not consumed. So Moses said, “I must turn aside now and see this marvelous sight, why the bush is not burned up.” When the LORD saw that he turned aside to look, God [*elohim*] called to him from the midst of the bush and said, “Moses, Moses!” And he said, “Here I am.” Then He said, “Do not come near here; remove your sandals from your feet, for the place on which you are standing is holy [*qodesh*] ground.”

- (5) **Distinct.** The Angel of *Jehovah* is distinct from *Jehovah* God the Father or *Jehovah* God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT as the first and third persons in the @@@ TRINITY – Gen. 24:7, 40; Ex. 23:20-24; 32:34; Num. 20:16; Isa. 63:9; 1 Chron. 21:15-18; Zech. 1:9-13. Therefore, by process of elimination, Jesus Christ, as the only remaining member of the Trinity, is the Angel of *Jehovah*. See *infra* (6).

## NUMBERS 20:16

But when we [the Jews in Egyptian slavery] cried out to the LORD [*Jehovah – God the Father*], He heard our voice and sent an angel [*malak – Jesus Christ as a member of the @@@ TRINITY*] and brought us out from Egypt; now behold, we are at Kadesh, a town on the edge of your territory.

## ZECHARIAH 1:9-11

Then I [The Prophet Zechariah's vision] said, "My lord [*adon (lord; master) – this refers to one of the communicating @@@ ANGELS*], what are these?" And the angel who was speaking to me said to me, "I will show you what these are." And the man who was standing among the myrtle trees [*Jesus Christ in a @@@ THEOPHANY*] answered and said, "These are whom the LORD [*Jehovah (the self-existing one) – the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT member of the @@@ TRINITY*] has sent to patrol [*halak*] the earth." So they answered the angel [*malak*] of the LORD [*Jehovah (the self-existing one) – Jesus Christ as a member of the Trinity*] who was standing among the myrtle trees and said, "We have patrolled the earth, and behold, all the earth is peaceful and quiet." Then the angel [*malak*] of the LORD [*Jehovah*] said, "O LORD [*Jehovah*] of hosts [*tsaba (armies) – Jesus Christ as a member of the Trinity*], how long will You have no compassion for Jerusalem and the cities of Judah, with which You have been indignant these seventy years?" The LORD [*Jehovah – Jesus Christ as a member of the Trinity*] answered the angel [*malak*] who was speaking with me [*Zechariah*] with gracious words, comforting words.

- (6) **Angel of Jehovah is Christ.** The Angel of *Jehovah* is the 2nd person of the @@@ TRINITY per *supra* (5). The 2nd person of the Trinity is visible God in the New Testament – Jn. 1:18; 6:46; 1 Tim. 6:16; 1 Jn. 4:12. Since the Father and Holy Spirit cannot be seen, the Angel of *Jehovah* is the LORD Jesus Christ as a Theophany – Ex. 33:20; Jdg. 13:22.

**JOHN 6:46**

Not that anyone has seen [*horao* (to see with the eyes)] the Father [*pater*], expect the One who is from God [*Jesus Christ*]; He has seen the Father.

- (a) **Incarnation.** The Angel of *Jehovah* never appears after the incarnation and both the Angel of *Jehovah* and Jesus Christ are sent by the Father.
- (b) **Redeemer.** The Angel of *Jehovah* is the Redeemer – Job 33:23-24.

**JOB 33:23-24**

If there is an angel [*malak* – Jesus Christ] as mediator [*luts* – Jesus Christ is the only qualified mediator as He is true God and true humanity] for him [*mankind*], one out of a thousand [*idiom for only one*], to remind a man what is right [*yosher* (what is due)] for him [*man owes God perfect Righteousness [+R]*], then let him [*God*] be gracious to him [*the Believer*], and say, “Deliver him from going down to the pit [*shachath* – @@@ HELL], I have found [*matsa* (to secure)] a ransom [*kopher* (price of a life; ransom) – under @@@ SOTERIOLOGY Christ paid the price on the @@@ CROSS].”

- (7) **Appearances of Jesus Christ.** Theophany appearances by Jesus Christ to: (1) Abraham as a man [Gen. 18:1-33]; (2) Joshua as a man, the LORD is the real Commander of the Jewish Army [Jos. 5:13-15]; (3) Exodus Jews as the Cloud of the LORD [Ex. 40:38]; (4) Exodus Jews as the Pillar of the LORD [Ex. 14:19]; (5) Moses as the burning bush [Ex. 3:2; Acts 7:30]; (6) Balaam as an angel [Num. 22:22]; (7) Jacob as a man, displaced Jacob’s hip [Gen. 32:24-32]; (8) Moses and the Elders as a man [Ex. 24:9-11]; (9) Ezekiel as a man [Ezk. 1:23-28]; (10) Daniel’s friends and Daniel as a man [Dan. 3:18-25; 10:5-6]; and (11) Jews as the Shekinah Glory [Ex. 25:17-22; Lev. 16:2, 13].

**DANIEL 10:5-6**

I [*Daniel*] lifted my eyes and looked, and behold, there was a certain man [*iysh* – Jesus Christ] dressed in linen, whose waist was girded with a belt of pure gold of Uphaz. His body also was like beryl [*tarshiysh* (a precious gem)], his face had the appearance of lightning [*baraq* (gleaming; flashes)], his eyes were like flaming torches, his arms and feet like the gleam of polished bronze, and the sound of his words like the sound of a tumult [*hamon* (roar)].

## JOSHUA 5:13-15

Now it came about when Joshua [general of the Jewish army] was by Jericho, that he lifted up his eyes and looked, and behold, a man [*iysh* – Jesus Christ], was standing opposite him with his sword drawn in his hand, and Joshua went to him and said to him, “Are you for us or for our adversaries?” He said, “No; rather I indeed come now *as* captain [*sar* (commanding general)] of the host [*tsaba* (army of angelic beings)] of the LORD [*Jehovah*].” And Joshua fell on his face to the earth, and bowed down, and said to him, “What has my lord [*adonay* (title spoken in place of *Jehovah*)] to say to his servant?” The captain of the LORD’s [*Jehovah*] host [*tsaba*] said to Joshua, “Remove your sandals from your feet, for the place where you are standing is holy [*qodesh* (separated apart as sacred) – God is Perfect].” And Joshua did so.

## EXODUS 25:17-22

You [Hebrews] shall make a mercy seat of pure gold, two and a half cubits long and one and a half cubits wide. You shall make two cherubim [*kreub* (an angelic being)] of gold, make them of hammered work at the two ends of the mercy seat. Make one cherub at one end and one cherub at the other end; you shall make the cherubim *of one piece* with the mercy seat at its two ends. The cherubim shall have *their* wings spread upward, covering the mercy seat with their wings and facing one another; the faces of the cherubim are to be *turned* toward the mercy seat. You shall put the mercy seat on top of the ark, and in the ark you shall put the testimony which I will give to you. There I [Jesus Christ] will meet with you; and from above the mercy seat, from between the two cherubim which are upon the ark of the testimony, I will speak to you about all that I will give you in commandment [*tsavah*] for the sons of Israel.

- (8) **The God of Israel.** The LORD Jesus Christ is the God of Israel. *See* Ps. 138:2; Lk. 1:68; Isa. 12:2; 43:11; 45:15; Deut. 6:4-5.

## DEUTERONOMY 6:4-5

Hear [*shama*], O Israel! The LORD [*Jehovah*] is our God [*elohim*], the LORD [*Jehovah*] is one [*echad* (one of a kind) – Jesus Christ is the unique person of the universe]! You shall love the LORD [*Jehovah*] your God with all your heart [*lebab*] and with all your soul [*nephesh*] and with all your might [*meod*].

---



## @@@ TIME

- (1) **Definition.** God created “time” and measures it out in human @@@ HISTORY into segments called @@@ DISPENSATIONS – Acts 1:7-8.

### ACTS 1:7-8

He [**Jesus Christ**] said to them [**His disciples**], “It is not for you to know times [*chronos* (periods)] or epochs [*karios* (a measure of time)] which the Father [*pater* – **God the Father**] has fixed [*tithemi* (to set)] by His own authority [*exousia* (power of choice)]; but you will receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you [**the day of Pentecost begins the Church Age**]; and you shall be My witnesses [*martus* – @@@ **WITNESSING**] both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and even to the remotest part of the earth.”

- (2) **Arrival of the Messiah.** In the Perfect @@@ PLAN OF GOD the promised God/Man in @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION came into the @@@ WORLD and went to the @@@ CROSS in order to provide @@@ SALVATION for all those positive [+P] volition humans that respond to @@@ GRACE throughout all @@@ DISPENSATIONS. The “*man Jesus Christ, who gave himself as a ransom for all, the testimony given at the proper time*” [1 Tim. 2:5-6]. See Gal. 4:4-5; 1 Tim. 2:6. Heb. 10:5-7; Acts 2:23.

### ACTS 2:23

This Man [**Jesus Christ**], delivered over by the predetermined plan [*boule* (to purpose)] and foreknowledge of God [**the @@@ PLAN OF GOD**], you [**religious Jewish leadership desired to murder Jesus**] nailed to a cross [*stauros*] by the hands of godless men [*anomos* (unlawful wicked) – **unBelievers**] and put *Him* to death [*anairo* (physical death by murder)].

### GALATIANS 4:4

But when the fullness [*pleroma*] of the time [*chronos* (a period of time, long or short)] came, God sent forth [*exapostelo* (to send forth)] His Son [**Jesus Christ**], born of a woman, born under the Law, so that He might redeem [*exagorazo* (to buy back) – @@@ **SOTERIOLOGY**] those who were under the Law, that we might receive [*apolambano* (what is due or promised)] the adoption as sons [*uihothesia* (an adult son officially taken into the family)].

## HEBREWS 10:5-7

Therefore, when He [Jesus Christ] comes into the world [*kosmos*], He says, “Sacrifice and offering You [God the Father] have not desired [*thelo* (to take delight in; to desire) – the rituals of the @@@ MOSAIC LAW are teaching tools and cannot provide @@@ SALVATION], but a body [*soma*] You [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT] have prepared [*katartizo* (to equip; to arrange)] for Me [Jesus]; in whole burnt offerings and *sacrifices* for sin You have taken no pleasure. Then I said, ‘Behold, I [Jesus Christ] have come [*heko* (to arrive)] (in the scroll of the book it is written of Me) [all the Old Testament prophecies about Jesus Christ] to do your will [*thelema* (what one determines shall be done) – to die on the @@@ CROSS], O God [God the Father].”

## 1 TIMOTHY 2:6

Who gave Himself [Jesus Christ] as a ransom for all [@@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT], the testimony *given* at the proper time [*karios* – God’s timing is always perfect].

- (3) **Salvation Time.** In the Perfect @@@ PLAN OF GOD all those positive [+P] volition humans are given the Gospel of @@@ SALVATION at the exact proper time, some early in their life and others later. “*Who saved us and called us ... to His own purpose ... from all eternity*” [2 Tim. 1:9]. “*For He says, “At the acceptable time I listened to you, and on the day of salvation I helped you”*” [2 Cor. 6:2]. See 2 Pet. 3:7-9; Gal. 4:4-7.

## 2 PETER 3:7-9

But by His word the present heavens and earth are being reserved for fire [*pur* (burning up by fire)], kept for the day of judgment [*krisis* (a decision given in a trial)] and destruction of ungodly [*asebes*] men [the unBeliever at the Great White Throne @@@ JUDGMENT]. But do not let this one *fact* escape your notice, beloved, that with the LORD one day is like a thousand years, and a thousand years like one day. The LORD is not slow about His promise [*epaggelia* (announcement)], as some count slowness, but is patient toward you, not wishing for any to perish [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely) – in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD His will is that all should receive @@@ SALVATION] but for all [unBelievers] to come to repentance [*metanoia* (to change the mind) – about Christ and receive salvation].

- (3) **The Believer's Time.** In eternity past God ordained a set number of days for each Believer before their physical @@@ DEATH – Ps. 139:16; 39:5.

### PSALM 139:16

Your eyes [God] have seen my unformed substance [*golem (embryo; fetus)*]; and in Your book [*the Divine Decrees in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD*] were all written the days that were ordained [*yatsar (to form)*] *for me*, when as yet there was not one of them.

- (4) **Segmented Time.** God's timing is segmented into fixed categories of normal living and as the Believer grows older he must learn to move on from one category to the other as part of the @@@ PLAN OF GOD – Eccl. 3:1-8.

### ECCLESIASTES 3:1-8

There is an appointed time [*zeman (a set time)*] for everything. And there is a time [*eth*] for every event under heaven. A time [*eth*] to give birth and a time to die; a time to plant and a time to uproot what is planted. A time to kill [*harag*] and a time to heal; a time to tear down and a time to build up. A time to weep and a time to laugh; a time to mourn and a time to dance. A time to throw stones and a time to gather stones; a time to embrace and a time to shun embracing. A time to search and a time to give up as lost; a time to keep and a time to throw away. A time to tear apart and a time to sew together; a time to be silent and a time to speak. A time to love and a time to hate; a time for war and a time for peace.

- (5) **Time and Grace.** Time is a logistical @@@ GRACE provision for all Believers, but is specifically oriented around the positive [+P] volition Believer as he advances to @@@ MATURITY – Lam. 3:20-24; Js. 4:13-14.

### JAMES 4:13-14

Come now, you who say, "Today or tomorrow we will go to such and such a city, and spend a year there and engage in business and make a profit." Yet you do not know what your life will be like tomorrow. You are *just* a vapor [*atmis*] that appears for a little while and then vanishes away [*aphanizo (to snatch out of sight)*] – given the shortness of @@@ LIFE the Believer must advance to spiritual @@@ MATURITY with alacrity].\*

\* However, this verse does not apply to the positive [+P] volition Believer – he has fantastic @@@ REWARDS and impact as part of the @@@ PIVOT and as a subject matter expert witness in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.

(6) **Timing is Everything.**

- (a) **Purpose.** For each Believer, God has a specific plan and purpose for their participation in the Angelic Conflict. Thus, His timing is perfect while the Believer's timing is not – Eccl. 3:1; 7:17; 1 Pet. 4:2.

**1 PETER 4:2**

So as to live the rest of the time [*chronos* (either a short or long period of time)] in the flesh [*sarx* – the human body] no longer for the lusts [*epithumia*] of men [those in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], but for the will [*thelema*] of God [to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY].

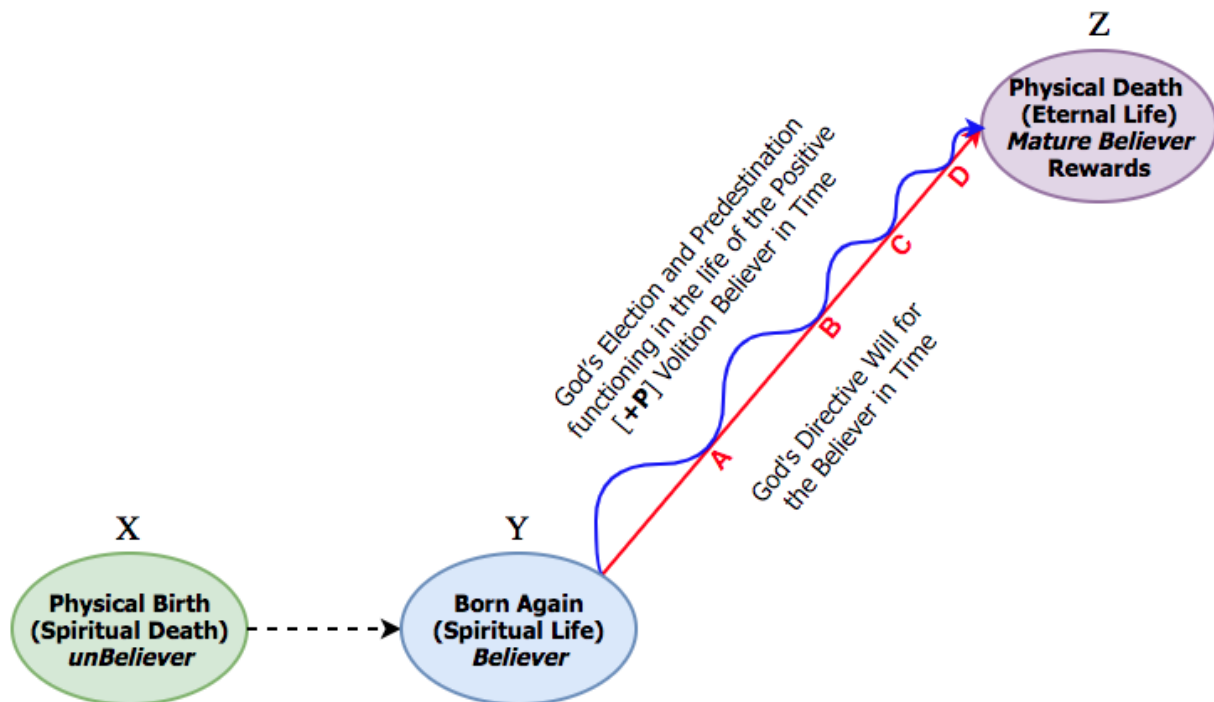
- (b) **Luck.** Since God's ultimate Sovereign desire is for the Believer to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY there is no such thing as "luck." God will promote and use the positive [+P] volition Believer in His own perfect timing – 1 Pet. 5:5-7; Js. 4:14.

**1 PETER 5:6-7**

Therefore humble yourselves [the positive [+P] volition Believer] under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt [*hupsoo* (to lift up; to promote to the very summit of opulence and prosperity)] you at the proper time [*kairos* (due measure of time) – use @@@ FAITH/Rest to wait on the LORD], casting all your anxiety [*merimna* (worries)] on Him, because He cares [*melo*] for you.

**HEBREWS 5:12**

For though by this time you [Loser Believers] ought to be teachers [*didaskalos* – given the quantity and quality of @@@ BIBLE teaching they should have reached @@@ MATURITY], you have need again for someone [a prepared @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER] to teach [*didasko*] you the elementary principles [*stoicheion*] of the oracles [*logion* (the words or utterances of God) – the basics of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] of God, and you have come to need milk [*gala*] and not solid food [*trophe* – advanced Bible Doctrine].



– Tracking The Positive [+P] Volition **Winner** Believer –

- (c) **Big Picture.** The Believer should always keep the big picture in mind and rely on God for perfect timing – 2 Tim. 4:6-8.

## 2 TIMOTHY 4:6-8

For I [Paul] am already being poured out as a drink offering, and the time of my departure has come [the Roman's would execute him soon]. I have fought [agonizomai (to enter a contest in the games)] the good [kalos (beautiful to look at)] fight [agon (the place of contest) – in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT], I have finished the course [dromos (the course of life) – Paul had reached the high ground of spiritual @@@ MATURITY], I have kept [tereo (to attend to carefully)] the faith [pistis – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]; in the future there is laid up [apokeimai (to be laid away)] for me the crown [stephanos (a wreath of garland given as a prize to victors in the public games)] of righteousness, which the LORD, the righteous Judge, will award to me on that day [hemera – Paul's @@@ REWARDS at the Judgment Seat of Christ]; and not only to me, but also to all who have loved [agapao (to love dearly)] His appearing [epiphaneia – all Believers who reach maturity].

- (d) **Bad Timing.** The Believer getting into the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS is always bad timing. Priorities must always put @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE first, not the cares of the @@@ WORLD to include even normal concerns in business or logistics – Js. 4:13-14.
- (e) **Wait on the LORD's Timing.** See the case of Joseph who was unjustly accused of rape and wrongfully thrown into an Egyptian prison where he at first relied on the LORD to sustain him, but later failed to wait on God's perfect timing to get him out of jail – Gen. 40; Prov. 3:5-6.

### PROVERBS 3:5-6

Trust [*batach*] in the LORD [*Jehovah*] with all your heart and do not lean [*shaan* (trust in)] on your own understanding [*biynah* (discernment)]. In all your ways acknowledge [*yada* (to learn to know)] Him, and He will make your paths [*orach* (path; road)] straight [@@@ DIVINE GUIDANCE].

- (7) **Day by Day.** God gives the Believer a day and then another day and so on in order that @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE can be taken “*into our inner man ... day by day*” [2 Cor. 4:16], each and every day – Ps. 25:5; 90:12; 119:97; Prov. 23:17; 2 Cor. 4:16; Rom. 14:5-7; Matt. 4:4; Js. 1:21; 4:13-15.

### PSALM 25:5

Lead me [*Winner Believer*] in Your truth and teach [*lamad* (to be trained)] me, for You are the God of my salvation [*yesha* – the @@@ PLAN OF GOD]; for You I wait [*qavah* (to wait or look eagerly for)] all the day.

### PSALM 90:12

So teach [*yada* (to learn to know)] us to number our days [*mindful of the shortness of life, the Winner Believer prioritizes*], that we may present [*bo* (to come with)] to You [*God*] a heart [*lebab*] of wisdom [*chokmah* – the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches spiritual @@@ MATURITY].

- (8) **Shortened Days.** Time is lost to the negative [-N] volition Believer through Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING – Ps. 89:49; 90:9; 102:3, 23-24. The @@@ SIN of arrogance destroys and shortens the use of days for the negative [-N] volition **Loser** Believer – Js. 4:13-14; Prov. 27:1; 1 Jn. 2:9-11; Heb. 3:13.



## HEBREWS 3:13

But encourage one another day after day, as long as it is *still* called “Today [*semeron* (this very day)],” so that none of you [**Believer**] will be hardened [turn against @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**] by the deceitfulness [*apate* (deception)] of sin [*hamartia* – the works of the @@@ **OLD SIN NATURE**].

- (9) **Long Days.** Consistently taking in @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** and growing to @@@ **MATURITY** results in length of days for the **Winner** Believer – Prov. 3:1-2; 10:27; 13-17; Eph. 6:2; Ex. 20:12; Ps. 34:11-14; Eccl. 7:17-18.

## PROVERBS 10:27

The fear [*yirah* (respect)] of the LORD prolongs [*yasaph* (to add; to increase)] life [*yom* (days) – the life of the Believer on positive [+P] volition to @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**], but the years [*shaneh*] of the wicked will be shortened.

## PSALM 34:12-14

Who is the man who desires life and loves *length of* days that he may see good [@@@ **REWARDS**]? Keep your tongue from evil [@@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS**] and your lips from speaking deceit [use @@@ **REBOUND**]. Depart from evil and do good [*tob* – **Divine Good**]; seek peace and pursue it.

## ECCLESIASTES 7:17-18

Do not be excessively wicked [*rasha* – stay out of the @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS**] and do not be a fool [*sakal* – do not reject @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**]. Why should you [a Believer] die [*muth*] before your time [*eth* – the @@@ **SIN UNTO DEATH**]? It is good that you grasp one thing [Bible Doctrine] and also not let go of the other [living a long and fruitful life to @@@ **MATURITY** and receive @@@ **REWARDS**]; for the one who fears God [*yare* (to revere) – **Winner Believer**] comes forth with both of them.

- (10) **Buy Back Time.** The **Winner** Believer organizes and prioritizes his time by wisely redeeming [buying back] time through learning and applying @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** – Js. 4:3-17; Ps. 90:12, 14; Eph. 5:15-18; 1 Pet. 1:6, 17; 1 Cor. 7:29-31; Matt. 6:34; Rev. 3:18. See Heb. 5:12-14, describing a **Loser** Believer saved for a long time but without knowledge of Bible Doctrine.

## REVELATION 3:18

I [Jesus Christ] advise [*sumbouleuo* (to give counsel)] you [the Church at Laodicea] to buy from Me gold [*chrusion* (gold which lies embedded in the earth) – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE is gold in the earth] refined [*puroo* (to burn with fire)] by fire [*pur* – the job of the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER is to take the ore, refine it into gold coins, and give it to the congregation as their spiritual @@@ MONEY] so that you may become rich [*pluteo* (to be affluent in resources) – the Believer can now reach @@@ MATURITY], and white garments so that you may clothe yourself [with fantastic @@@ REWARDS], and *that* the shame of your nakedness will not be revealed [*phaneroo* (to make manifest or visible) – at the Judgment Seat of Christ the Believer will not be ashamed of his rewards]; and eye salve to anoint your eyes so that you may see [the Believer only sees God through Bible Doctrine].

## EPHESIANS 5:15-18

Therefore be careful how you walk [*peripateo* – the Believer's lifestyle in @@@ WALKING], not as unwise men but as wise [apply @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], making the most of your time [*karios*], because the days are evil [*poneros* – Satan seeks to deceive the Believer as part of the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT]. So then do not be foolish [*aphron* (without reason)], but understand what the will of the LORD is [the @@@ PLAN OF GOD is for the Believer to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY which glorifies God]. And do not get drunk [*methusko* (to intoxicate)] with wine, for that is dissipation [*asotia* (a dissolute life) – self-induced @@@ SUFFERING], but be filled [*pleroo* (to make full)] with the Spirit [stay in Fellowship with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT by @@@ REBOUND].

- (11) **Never Hurry Time.** The Winner Believer fits into God's timing per Jn. 15:16, by means of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE in his soul. He does not worry. He knows that God will provide an @@@ OPEN DOOR at the right time for all things in his life – "*Delight yourself in the LORD; and He will give you the desires of your heart*" [Ps. 37:4] Matt. 6:27; Isa. 50:4.

## MATTHEW 6:27

And who of you by being worried [*merimnao* (to be anxious)] can add a *single* hour [*pechus* (a cubit)] to his life [*helikia* (term or length of life)]?

## ISAIAH 50:4

The LORD God has given Me [**Jesus**] the tongue of disciples, that I may know [*yada* (to learn to know)] how to sustain [*uth*] the weary one with a word [*dabar* (speaking)]. He awakens *Me* morning by morning, He awakens My ear to listen as a disciple.

- (12) **Seek the LORD.** Seek @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** while there is still time. Life is short and with old age comes the breakdown of the faculties for thinking and retaining the Word – Isa. 55:6; 1 Pet. 1:24-25. Indeed, at physical @@@ **DEATH**, the opportunity for advancement in the @@@ **CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE** ends. Eternal @@@ **REWARDS** are based on the Believer’s decisions to grow up spiritually in his lifetime.

## ISAIAH 55:6

Seek [*darash* (to seek with care)] the LORD while He may be found [*matsa*]; call upon [*qara* (to call unto)] Him while He is near [*qarob* (near of time)].

## 1 PETER 1:24-25

For, “All flesh [*sarx* – all humanity] is like grass, and all its glory [*doxa*] like the flower of grass. The grass withers, and the flower falls off, but the word [*logos*] of the LORD [@@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**] endures [*meno* (to remain)] forever [*aion* (eternity)].” And this is the word which was preached [*eugangelizo* (to bring good news)] to you.

- (13) **Suffering in Time.** God can only demonstrate His @@@ **GRACE** via @@@ **SUFFERING** for Blessing for the **Winner** Believer to reach spiritual @@@ **MATURITY** in this short lifetime – 2 Cor. 12:7-10; Ps. 102:1-3.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 12:9

And He has said to me [**Paul**], “My grace [*charis* – the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD** to reach spiritual @@@ **MATURITY**] is sufficient [*arkeo* (to be possessed of unfailing strength)] for you, for power [*dunamis*] is perfected [*teleo* (to bring to a close; to complete)] in weakness [*astheneia* – Divine @@@ **SUFFERING** for Blessing].”

---

## @@@ TRINITY

- (1) **Definition.** The Trinity refers to the three co-equal, co-eternal Divine Persons of the Godhead – God is one in essence but three in personality. When the essence or attributes of the Godhead are the subject then God is referred to as “*one*” – Gal. 3:20; Js. 2:19; Jn. 10:30; Ex. 20:3; Deut. 6:4; 1 Tim. 2:5-6; Matt. 22:37. When one or more of the Divine Persons are the subject, then the Godhead is revealed as three distinct “persons” – God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit. *See* 2 Cor. 13:14; Matt. 28:19.

### 2 CORINTHIANS 13:14

The grace of the LORD Jesus Christ, and the love [*agape* (to love dearly)] of God [*God the Father*], and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit, be with you [*Believers in Corinth*] all.

### MATTHEW 28:19

Go therefore and make disciples [*matheteuo*] of all the nations, baptizing [*baptizo* – the identification of Believers with the @@@ PLAN OF GOD] them in the name of the Father [*pater*] and the Son [*uihos*] and the Holy Spirit.

### (2) World Views of Existence.

- (a) **Polytheism.** There is a plurality of “gods” such as found in Greek mythology or Hinduism.
- (b) **Pantheism.** God and the universe are one. This “god” has no personality or attributes.
- (c) **Evolution.** (1) *Theistic* Evolution says God created original materials but “evolution” [chance, mutation, and natural selection] is the primary method of development. (2) *Atheistic* Evolution holds that matter is eternal and self-developing through chance and that there is no God.
- (d) **Materialism.** A belief that denies the existence of God and contends that matter is eternal and life is simply a byproduct. Communism adheres to this idea, *but see* the scientific *Anthropic Principle* which affirms that the complexity of the universe and life demands a Creator.

- (e) **Idealism.** The human mind is the only rational entity in existence and material things are merely impressions. There is simply no answer in terms of a God, or as to why He may or may not exist.
- (f) **Positivism.** Accepts nothing that can't be proven by human evidence through rationalism or empiricism.
- (g) **Monotheism.** A belief in only a single “god” in person/essence. Islam is the largest movement of this @@@ RELIGION.
- (h) **Deism.** God created but then completely abandoned His creation and has no further contact or connection.
- (i) **Biblical Theism.** In the @@@ PLAN OF GOD, God created everything in existence and holds all things together. He also controls @@@ HISTORY and reveals Himself to mankind – Ps. 14:1; 100:3.

### PSALM 100:3

Know [*yada* (to learn to know)] that the LORD Himself is God; it is He who made [*awah* (to make; to fashion)] us, and not we ourselves; *we are* His people [*Believers*] and the sheep of His pasture.

### PSALM 14:1

The fool [*nabal* – the unBeliever atheist] has said in his heart [*leb*], “There is no God.” They are corrupt [*shachath* (to pervert)], they have committed abominable [*taab*] deeds; there is no one who does good [*tob* – Divine Good].

- (3) **Hide the Ball.** God does not “hide the ball.” While human reason can comprehend that a supernatural and supreme being must exist, human intellect cannot understand the person or essence of God – Rom. 1:18-25. Therefore, over all time God has revealed his Perfect character and nature to humans on positive [+P] volition through a variety of means. Tragically, however, most of humanity superimpose their own ideas set in @@@ RELIGION and human @@@ GOOD on the God of reality revealed in Scripture and have absolutely no desire to know about their Creator – Isa. 55:8-9. “*The creature*” [Rom. 1:25] that they actually worship is the narcissist Satan, the ruler of the @@@ WORLD. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS; @@@ HEATHENISM.

## ROMANS 1:18-25

For the wrath [*orge* – God’s attitude towards the unBeliever] of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness [*asebeia* (unBelievers)] and unrighteousness of men who suppress [*katecho* (to hold back; detain)] the truth [*aletheia* – rejecting the @@@ PLAN OF GOD] in unrighteousness, because that which is known [*gnostos* (noteworthy)] about God is evident [*phaneros* (apparent)] within them; for God made it evident to them. For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes [*aoratos* (unseen)], His eternal [*aidios*] power and divine nature, have been clearly seen, being understood [*noieo* (to perceive with the mind)] through what has been made, so that they are without excuse [*anapologetos* (without a defense)]. For even though they knew God, they did not honor Him as God or give thanks, but they became futile [*mataioo* (to make empty)] in their speculations [*dialogismos* (a man deliberating with himself)], and their foolish [*asunetos* (without understanding)] heart was darkened [*skotizo* (deprived of light) – those with negative [-N] volition in their souls]. Professing [*phasko* (to allege)] to be wise [*sophos* (skilled; an expert) – by means of human @@@ GOOD], they became fools [*moraine* (to be foolish)], and exchanged the glory of the incorruptible [*aphthartos*] God for an image in the form of corruptible man and of birds and four-footed animals and crawling creatures [making up their own ideas about God from the influences of @@@ RELIGION]. Therefore God gave them over in the lusts [*epithumia* (cravings)] of their hearts [*kardia* – the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE controls them] to impurity [*akatharsia* (uncleanness in a moral sense)], so that their bodies would be dishonored [*atimazo* (shamefully)] among them. For they exchanged the truth of God for a lie [*pseudos* (an intentional falsehood)], and worshiped and served [*latreuo* (to serve for hire)] the creature [*ktisis*] rather than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen.

## ISAIAH 55:8-9

“For My [God] thoughts [*machashabah* (thought; plan; purpose) – the essence of the @@@ TRINITY] are not your [mankind] thoughts [of human @@@ GOOD], nor are your ways [the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS and @@@ RELIGION] My ways [the @@@ PLAN OF GOD to provide @@@ SALVATION],” declares the LORD. “For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are My ways higher [*gabahh* (to be exalted)] than your ways and My thoughts than your thoughts.”



- (4) **God Reveals Himself in the Bible.** Through the @@@ BIBLE and @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE God reveals all that the positive [+P] volition Winner Believer can comprehend about Him in this mortal body – Ps. 139:6.

### PSALM 139:6

*Such* knowledge [*daath* (perception; knowledge) – about God] is too wonderful [*piliy* (incomprehensible)] for me [the positive [+P] volition Believer]; it is *too* high, I cannot attain to it [only what God reveals].

- (5) **Analogy of Light – Trinity.** Every single ray of light is pure white and yet it contains all three primary colors [red, blue, and yellow]. The color that an object appears is that light which is reflected. The @@@ BIBLE often uses light as an illustration of the Trinity – 1 Jn. 1:5; Jn. 8:12; 9:19-21; 1 Tim. 6:16. Thus, light is one substance but it is composed of three properties, a perfect analogy to the Trinity: (1) actinic, short wavelengths that are neither seen nor felt, e.g., x-rays, represent God the Father; (2) aluminiferous, wavelengths that are seen and felt, represent God the Son; and (3) calorific, wavelengths not seen but felt, e.g., heat, represent God the Holy Spirit.

### 1 TIMOTHY 6:16

Who [the @@@ TRINITY] alone possesses [*echo* (to have and to hold)] immortality [*athanasia* (undying immortality)] and dwells in unapproachable [*aprositos*] light [*phos* – the @@@ TRINITY is absolute Perfection], whom no man has seen or can see [God the Father]. To Him [as the author of the @@@ PLAN OF GOD] be honor and eternal [*aionios* (without beginning or end)] dominion [*kratos* (strength; power)]! Amen.

- (6) **Light and Darkness.** The @@@ BIBLE also uses Light and Darkness to contrast the Perfect essence of the Trinity [Light] with all else which is imperfect [Darkness] – Jn. 3:19-21; 8:12; Isa. 9:2; 59:9-10; Ps. 97:11.

### ISAIAH 9:2

The people who walk [*halak* (a lifestyle)] in darkness [the unBelievers in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS] will see a great [*gabdol*] light [or (the light of day) – Jesus Christ at the 1st Advent]; those who live in a dark land [Judea at the time of Christ was apostate], the light will shine on them.

## JOHN 3:19-21

This is the judgment [*krisis* (at a trial)], that the Light [*phos* – Jesus Christ the God/man in @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION] has come into the world [*kosmos* – Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD], and men [*anthropos* (mankind) – unBelievers] loved [*agapao* (to be well pleased with; to love dearly)] the darkness [*skotos* (of night darkness)] rather than the Light [*phos* – Jesus Christ], for their deeds [*ergon*] were evil [*poneros* (of a bad nature) – the unBeliever with his own righteousness [-r] is in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS and is attracted only to human @@@ GOOD]. For everyone who does [*prasso* (to practice)] evil [*phaulos* (worthlessness; wickedness)] hates [*miseo* (to detest)] the Light [the unBeliever loves @@@ RELIGION and hates @@@ GRACE], and does not come to the Light for fear that his deeds will be exposed [*elegcho* (to refute, generally with shame) – the human works of the unBeliever are not acceptable to God]. But he [the Believer saved by @@@ FAITH and possessing the Righteousness [+R] of God] who practices [*poieo* (to produce)] the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – the Believer on positive [+P] volition to learning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] comes to the Light, so that his deeds [*ergon* – Divine Good production] may be manifested [*phaneroo* (to make visible)] as having been wrought [*ergazomai* (to work out)] in God.

## ISAIAH 59:9-10

Therefore justice [*mishpat*] is far from us, and righteousness [*tsedaqah*] does not overtake us [the Jews of the Southern Kingdom of Judah]; we hope for light [*or* (light of day)], but behold, darkness [*choshek*], for brightness, but we walk in gloom [*aphelah* (darkness) – the negative [-N] volition Believer @@@ WALKING in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS]. We grope along the wall like blind men, we grope like those who have no eyes; we stumble at midday as in the twilight, among those who are vigorous *we are* like dead men [without @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE to light the way there is only darkness].

- (7) **Plural Words for God.** The Hebrew word *elohim* is translated “God” in the Old Testament, but it actually is a plural masculine noun and means “**Gods**” [with the *im* ending], indicating the Trinity. In addition, the Trinity is referenced in Gen. 1:26-27; 3:22; 11:7, with plural nouns and verbs used in referring to the three Persons of the Godhead speaking in agreement on various topics of discussion.

## GENESIS 1:26-27

Then God [*elohim*], said, “Let Us [first person plural – all three members of the @@@ TRINITY are in agreement] make [*asah* (to make something out of something) – this indicates the creation of a personality] man [*adam* (mankind)] in Our [possessive determiner belonging to the speaker and one or more other people] image [*tselem* (shadow image; a thing that is a shadow of the reality; resemblance) – the shadow image is the human soul], according to Our likeness [*demuth* (pattern; model)], and let them rule over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the sky and over the cattle and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth.” God created [*barah* (to make something out of nothing) – this always refers to the human soul] man in His own image [*tselem* (shadow image; a thing that is a shadow of the reality)], in the image [*tselem*] of God He created [*barah* (to make something out of nothing)] him; male and female He created [*barah*] them.

- (8) **Tetragrammaton.** The term Tetragrammaton stands for the four letters – *yud, hey, vav, hey* [YHVH or JHWH] – that the Hebrews used for the sacred name of God [vowel points are added for *Yehovah*] in the singular – Ex. 3:14; 6:3 [translated as *Yahweh* or *Jehovah*]. It means the “*self-existing one*.” The Jews would not pronounce the name in a display of reverence and instead employed the term *adonay* (LORD). The exact Greek equivalent to the Hebrew *adonay* (LORD) is *kurios* (LORD). See @@@ THEOPHANY.
- (9) **Scriptures for the Trinity.** See 1 Jn. 5:7; 2 Cor. 13:14; Matt. 28:19; Isa. 6:3, 8; 48:16; Gen. 1:26; 3:22; 1 Pet. 1:2; Jn. 14:16-17, 26; 15:26; Tit. 3:4-6; Rev. 1:4-6; 1 Cor. 12:4-6; Eph. 4:4-6; Acts 2:23; 10:28;
- (a) **God the Father and the God the Son** – Ps. 2:7; Jn. 10:30; Eph. 1:17.
  - (b) **God the Son and God the Holy Spirit** – Tit. 3:5-6; 2 Tim. 1:13-14; Acts 16:6-7; Rom. 8:9; 1 Cor. 6:11; Matt. 3:16.
  - (c) **God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit** – Matt. 28:19; 2 Cor. 13:14; Eph. 2:18; Heb. 9:14; 1 Pet. 1:2; Jn. 15:26.
- (10) **Holy Spirit is God.** The 3rd Person of the Trinity is God the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT. See Acts 5:3-4; 1 Cor. 3:16; 2 Cor. 3:17; Ps. 143:10; Gen. 1:2; Isa. 6:8-9; cf. Acts 28:25; Isa. 63:10; Jer. 31:31-34; cf. Heb. 10:15-17.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 3:16

Do you [Believer] not know that you are a temple of God and *that* the Spirit of God [@@@ HOLY SPIRIT] dwells [*oikeo* (to dwell inside)] in you?

- (11) **Visible Member.** The 2nd Person of the Trinity, Jesus Christ, is the only visible member of the Trinity – Jn. 1:1-5, 14-18; 6:46; 8:12; 12:45; 14:9; 20:28-29; Col. 1:19; 2:9; 1 Tim. 6:16; 1 Jn. 4:12; Heb. 1:3-4. Except for Jesus Christ no living human has ever seen the Father or the Holy Spirit.

## HEBREWS 1:3

And He [Jesus Christ] is the radiance [*apaugasma* (reflected brightness)] of His glory [*doxa* – all three members of the @@@ TRINITY share the same essence] and the exact representation of His nature [*hupostasis* (the thing put under; substructure) – in @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION Jesus Christ is still God], and upholds all things by the word [*rhema* (that which has been uttered by a living voice)] of His power. When He had made purification [*katharismos* (a cleansing from sins)] of sins [*hamartia* – @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT], He sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on high [Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL].

## JOHN 1:1-5

In the beginning [*arche*] was the Word [*logos* – Jesus Christ], and the Word was with God [*theos*], and the Word was God. He [Jesus Christ] was in the beginning with God [Jesus Christ in the @@@ TRINITY]. All things came into being [*ginomai* (to come into existence)] through [*dia* (by means of)] Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being. In Him was life [*zoe*], and the life was the Light [*phos*] of men [the only means of @@@ SALVATION]. The Light [*phos* – the @@@ PLAN OF GOD] shines in the darkness [*skotia* (darkness due to want of light) – the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], and the darkness did not comprehend [*katalambano* (to lay hold of with the mind) – negative [-N] volition to @@@ GRACE] it.

- (12) **Context Determines.** In most cases it is clear which member of the Trinity is being referenced in a particular @@@ BIBLE passage. In other instances, however, the context of the passage will determine which member of the Trinity is being referenced, e.g., Jesus Christ in Rom. 10:13 and Joel 2:32.

- (13) **Language of Accommodation.** The @@@ BIBLE uses anthropopathisms [human emotions and thoughts] and anthropomorphisms [human attributes] to relate God in language of accommodation to assist in understanding His attitude or action – Num. 23:6; Gen. 6:6; Ex. 32:14; Jdg. 2:18; 1 Sam. 15:35; Ps. 90:13; Jer. 15:6; Amos 7:3, 6; Mal. 1:1-3; Prov. 15:3; Rev. 2:1; Heb. 8:9.

### MALACHI 1:3

But I [God] have hated [*wane (to hate)*] Esau [*Esau was not a Believer and did not have God's Righteousness [+R]*], and I have made his mountains a desolation and *appointed* his inheritance for the jackals of the wilderness.

### PROVERBS 15:3

The eyes [*ayin (physical eye)*] of the LORD are in every place, watching the evil [*ra – unBelievers*] and the good [*tob – Believers*].

- (14) **Church Age Indwelling.** In the Church Age @@@ MYSTERY each member of the Trinity Indwells the body of the Believer: (1) God the Father [Jn. 14:23; Eph. 4:6; 2 Jn. 9]; (2) God the Son [Jn. 14:20; 17:22-23; Rom. 8:10; 2 Cor. 13:5; Gal. 2:20; 1 Jn. 2:24; Col. 1:27]; and (3) God the Holy Spirit [Rom. 8:11; 1 Cor. 3:16; 6:19-20; 2 Cor. 6:16].
- (15) **Role in Salvation.** Each member of the Trinity has a different function in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD for @@@ SALVATION.
- (a) **Father.** The Father Planned the Salvation mechanics – Matt. 26:39; Jn. 4:34; 5:17; 6:29; 12:44; 1 Cor. 8:6; Eph. 3:11. His title of “God the Father” refers to and reflects His part in the Plan of God.

### EPHESIANS 3:11

*This was* in accordance with the eternal [*aion (eternity)*] purpose [*prosthesis (setting forth of a thing)*] which He [God the Father] carried out [*poieo (to produce)*] in Christ Jesus our LORD.

- (b) **Son.** The Son of God executed the Salvation mechanics – Matt. 26:39; Jn. 4:34; 5:17, 30; 1 Pet. 2:24; 3:18; Rom. 5:8; Heb. 10:7. His title “God the Son” emphasizes His subordination to the Plan of God.



## 1 PETER 2:24

And He Himself [Jesus Christ] bore [anaaphero (to carry; to lift up one's self)] our sins [hamartia] in His body [soma – @@@ SIN bearing took place in the humanity of Jesus] on the cross [xulon (that which is made of wood) – Christ suffered spiritual @@@ DEATH while on the @@@ CROSS], so that we [all Believers] might die to [apogenomenos (to be removed from)] sin [hamartia – the influence of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE is broken] and live to righteousness [dikaiosune – the positive [+P] volition Believer living inside the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE]; for by His wounds [molops (wound that trickles with blood) – the substitutionary spiritual death of Jesus Christ which occurred while He was still alive on the cross] you were healed [iaomai (to cure; to bring about salvation) – @@@ SALVATION was provided].

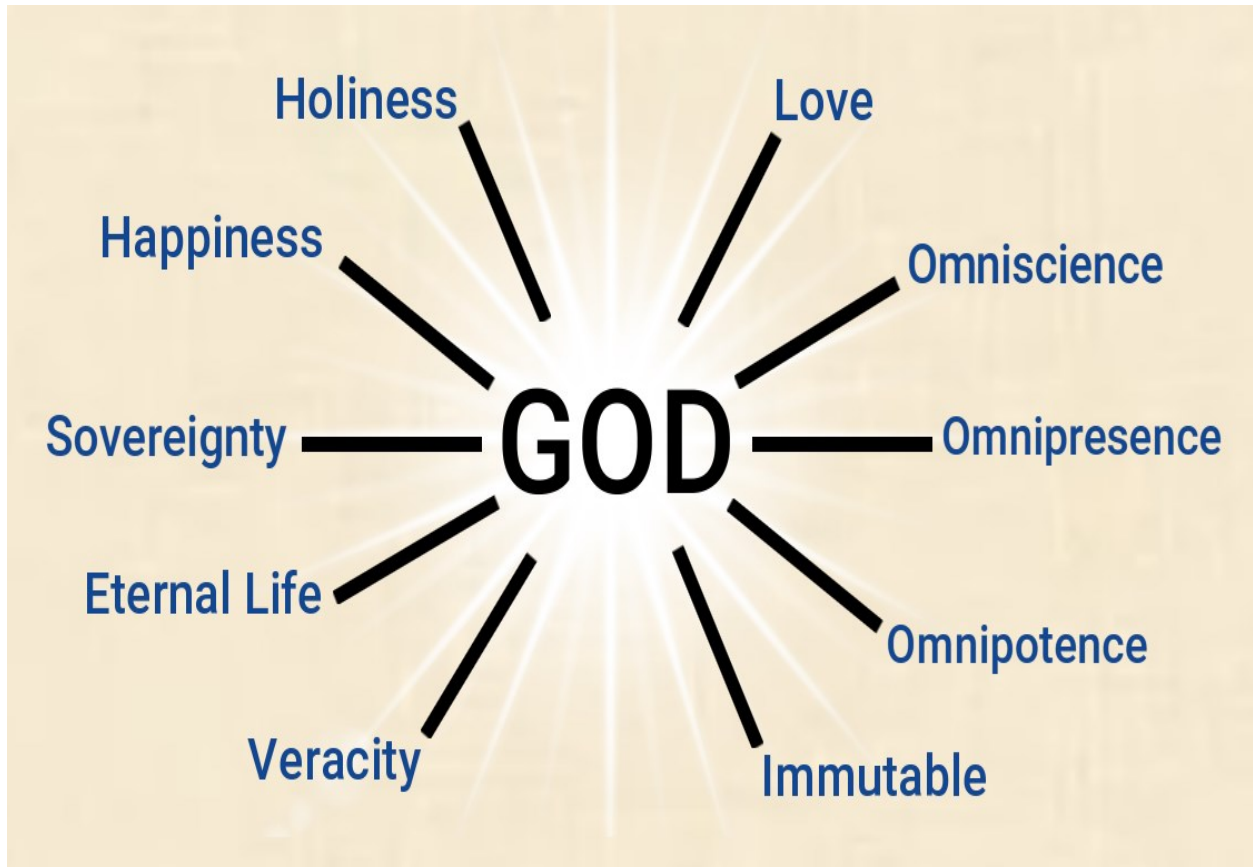
- (c) **Holy Spirit.** The Holy Spirit spreads the information about the Salvation mechanics to mankind – Jn. 3:4-8; 16:8-11. His title “God the Holy Spirit” reflects His mission in the Plan of God to get the message of the Gospel to all those that are on positive [+P] volition for obtaining union with their Creator. See @@@ HEATHENISM.

## JOHN 3:5-6

Jesus answered [Nicodemus], “Truly [amen (a point of truth)], truly, I say to you, unless one is born [gennao (to be born)] of water [hudor – the @@@ WATER of the Gospel] and the Spirit [pneuma – the @@@ SALVATION ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT to save the unBeliever] he cannot enter into [eiserchomai (to come in or go out)] the kingdom of God. That which is born of flesh [sarx] is flesh [the unBeliever], and that which is born of the [Holy] Spirit [pneuma] is spirit [pneuma – the Believer's human spirit given at the point of salvation].”

- (16) **Ten Divine Attributes.** The @@@ BIBLE reveals that the essence of God has ten distinct attributes which each member of the Trinity possesses exactly alike and cannot be compromised. For example, God's love: “*For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him shall not perish, but have eternal life*” [Jn. 3:16]. In turn, the Greek word *doxza* (glory) almost always refers to the complete essence of the Trinity – “*For all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God*” [Rom. 3:23].





– The Ten Attributes of the Trinity –

– SOVEREIGNTY –

- (1) **Self Determining Being.** God is the Supreme Being of everything and has complete Sovereignty in all His thinking and actions. He “*upholds all things by the word of His power*” [Heb. 1:3]; Deut. 4:39; Ps. 83:18; Isa. 17:24; 45:5-6; 2 Chron. 20:6; Jn. 1:1-3; Col. 1:15-16; Heb. 8-9; Rom. 9:13-17.
- (2) **King of Heaven and Earth.** God is the absolute ruler of everything, seen and unseen. “*Even from eternity I am He, and there is none who can deliver out of My hand; I act and who can reverse it?*” [Isa. 43:13]. “*But He does according to His will in the host of heaven and among the inhabitants of the earth and no one can ward off his hand*” [Dan. 4:35]; Ps. 8:1; 47:2; 50:10-12; 93:1; Matt. 6:13; Heb. 8:1; Rev. 4:2-3; 17:14; 19:13-17; 1 Tim. 6:15-16; Isa. 40:14-15; Jn. 5:17.

## ISAIAH 40:14-15

With whom did He [God] consult [yaats] and *who* gave Him understanding [biyn (to discern)]? And *who* taught [lamad (to teach; to learn)] Him in the path of justice [mishpat – God is absolute Justice] and taught Him knowledge and informed Him of the way of understanding? Behold, the nations are like a drop from a bucket, and are regarded as a speck of dust on the scales; behold, He lifts up the islands like fine dust.

## PSALM 8:1

O LORD, our LORD, how majestic is Your name in all the earth [erets], who have displayed Your splendor [hod (honor)] above the heavens [shamayim]!

- (3) **God is Infinite.** God created @@@ TIME and has no beginning or ending – “*I am the Alpha and the Omega*” [Rev. 1:8]; Acts 5:39; Ps. 147:5.

## PSALM 147:5

Great is our LORD and abundant [rab (great)] in strength [koach (power)]; His understanding [tabun (intelligence; the faculty of understanding)] is infinite [mispar (innumerable)].

- (4) **God is Self-Determining.** See Isa. 46:10; 55:11; Jer. 30:24; Acts 1:7-8; Lam. 3:33; Ps. 115:3; 135:6; Job 9:12; Dan. 4:35; Prov. 21:1; Ezk. 20:3; Heb. 6:17-20; Rom. 9:8-17; 1 Cor. 12:11 [the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT].

## JOB 9:12

Were He [God] to snatch away [chathaph (to take away)], who could restrain [shub (to turn back)] Him? Who could say to Him, “What are you doing [awah (to do)]?”

## EZEKIEL 20:3

“Son of man [the Prophet Ezekiel receiving a vision], speak to the elders of Israel and say to them, ‘Thus says the LORD [adonoy (Lord)] God [Jehovah (the self-existing One)]’, “Do you come to inquire of Me? As I live,” declares the LORD God, “I will not be inquired of by you.”

## ROMANS 9:8-17

That is, it is not the children of the flesh [*sarx* – **unBelievers**] who are children of God, but the children of the promise [*epaggeelia* (the act of promising a good or blessing) – **@@@ SALVATION** by **@@@ FAITH** in the coming Christ] are regarded as descendants. For this is the word of promise: “At this time I will come, and Sarah shall have a son.” And not only this, but there was Rebekah also, when she had conceived *twins* by one man, our father Isaac; for though *the twins* were not yet born and had not done [*prasso* (to practice)] anything good or bad [*phaulos* (wicked)], so that God’s purpose [*prosthesis* (setting forth a thing)] according to *His* choice [*ekloge* (the act of picking out; choosing)] would stand, not because of works [*ergon* – **salvation cannot be obtained by human works of @@@ RELIGION**] but because of Him who calls [*kaleo* – the salvation ministry of the **@@@ HOLY SPIRIT** calls from eternity past all humans that go on positive **[+P]** volition towards God in their soul], it was said to her, “The older will serve the younger.” Just as it is written, “Jacob I loved [*agapao* (to love dearly) – because Jacob believed in the coming Messiah for **@@@ SALVATION** and received God’s Righteousness **[+R]** he was under God’s personal **@@@ LOVE**], but Esau I hated [*miseo* (to detest) – Esau rejected salvation].” What shall we say then? There is no injustice [*adikia* (unrighteousness of heart or life)] with God, is there? May it never be! For He says to Moses, “I will have mercy [*eleeo* (grace in action)] on whom I have mercy, and I will have compassion [*oikteiro*] on whom I have compassion [**God saves all humans on positive **[+P]** volition**].” So that it *does* not *depend* on the man who wills [*thelo* (to have in mind) – **human works for salvation**] or the man who runs [*trecho* – **human works for salvation**], but on God who has mercy [*eleeo* – **@@@ GRACE** in action to all who would accept the free gift of salvation set out from eternity past]. For the Scripture says to Pharaoh, “For this very purpose I raised you up, to demonstrate My power in you, and that My name might be proclaimed throughout the whole earth.”

## ISAIAH 55:11

So will My word [*dabar* – **@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE**] be which goes forth from My mouth; it will not return to Me empty [*reyqam* (in an empty condition)], without accomplishing what I desire [*chaphets* (to delight in) – the **@@@ PLAN OF GOD**], and without succeeding [*tsalach* (to advance; to prosper)] *in the matter* for which I sent it.

## ACTS 1:7-8

He [Jesus] said to them [His disciples], “It is not for you to know times [chronos (periods)] or epochs [karios (a measure of time)] which the Father [pater – God the Father] has fixed [tithemi (to set)] by His own authority [exousia (power of choice)]; but you will receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you [the day of Pentecost when the Church Age began]; and you shall be My witnesses [martus – @@@ WITNESSING] both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and even to the remotest part of the earth.”

## – HOLINESS –

- (1) **Righteousness and Justice.** God’s **Righteousness** [+R] + God’s **Justice** = God’s **Holiness**. “*Yet You are Holy*” [Ps. 22:3]; “*You shall be Holy, for I am Holy*” [1 Pet. 1:6; Lev. 19:2]. See Ps. 47:8 cf. 89:14, 35; 97:2; Amos 5:7; 6:12; Isa. 28:17; 30:18. The two golden cherubs placed on top of the Ark, with their faces turned toward one another looking down at the center of the mercy seat represented the **Righteousness** and **Justice** of God. Kept in the Holy of Holies, the Ark was made of acacia wood [representing the humanity of Christ] and covered in pure gold [representing the Deity of Christ]. Inside the Ark were three items representing @@@ SIN – the tablets of the law, Aaron’s rod, and a pot of manna [Heb. 9:4]. The animal blood from the sacrifice on the Day of Atonement was sprinkled on the mercy seat lid by the High Priest. The ritual spoke of the work of the coming Messiah on the @@@ CROSS covering human sin and satisfying the Perfect **Righteousness** and **Justice** of the Trinity – Ex. 25:9-10; Lev. 16-17.

## ISAIAH 28:17

I [God] will make justice [mishpat] the measuring line [qav (measuring-line)] and righteousness [tsedaqah (justification; righteousness as vindicated)] the level [mishqelet (leveling tool)]; then hail will sweep away the refuge of lies [of human @@@ GOOD] and the waters will overflow the secret place.

## PSALM 89:35

Once I [God] have sworn [shaba] by My holiness [qodesh – His Righteousness and Justice constitute His Holiness]; I will not lie [about the Davidic Covenant] to David.

## PSALM 89:14

Righteousness [*tsedeq* (what is right) – God is Perfect] and justice [*mishpat* (sentence, decision of judgment)] are the foundation [*amkon* (fixed or established place)] of Your [God] throne [*kisse* (seat of honor)]; lovingkindness [*chesed* (mercy)] and truth [*emeth* (faithfulness; truth)] go before [*paniym*] You.

## ISAIAH 30:18

Therefore the LORD longs to be gracious [*chanan* (to be gracious)] to you, and therefore He waits on high to have compassion [*racham* (to love deeply; to have mercy)] on you. For the LORD is a God of justice [*mishpat* (the act of deciding a case)]; how blessed [*esher*] are all those who long [*chakah* (to wait)] for Him [all unBeliever humans on positive [+P] volition will be saved and all Believers on positive [+P] volition will reach @@@ MATURITY].

- (2) **Absolute Righteousness [+R].** “*For the LORD is righteousness, He loves righteousness*” [Ps. 11:7]; 1 Sam. 2:2; Lev. 19:2; Ps. 33:5; 111:9; 116:5; Ex. 9:27; 2 Chron. 12:6; Ezra 9:15; Rom. 10:2-4; Rev. 3:7; 4:8; 6:10; 1 Pet. 1:16.

## ROMANS 10:2-4

For I [Paul] testify about them [various Gentiles] that they have a zeal [*zelos* (excitement of mind)] for God [they are deeply into @@@ RELIGION], but not in accordance with knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge) – they have no @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]. For not knowing about God’s righteousness [*dikaiosune* – the Perfect nature of the @@@ TRINITY] and seeking to establish their own [@@@ SALVATION by human works], they did not subject [*hupotasso*] themselves to the righteousness [*dikaiosune*] of God [the @@@ PLAN OF GOD for salvation]. For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness [*dikaiosune* – the Believer receives God’s Righteousness [+R]] to everyone who believes [*pisteuo* – salvation by @@@ GRACE provides @@@ FORTY THINGS to include the [+R] of God].

- (3) **Absolute Divine Good.** God can only produce Divine Good because “*in Him there is no darkness at all*” [1 Jn. 1:5]; Ps. 25:8; 34:8; 86:5; 119:68; Lk. 18:19; Matt. 19:16-17; Mk. 10:18. “*No one is good except God alone*” [Mk. 10:18]. *Holy and awesome is His name*” [Ps. 111:9]. See @@@ GOOD.



- (4) **His Holiness is Perfect.** “*He sits on His holy throne*” [Ps. 47:9]. “*Which one of you convicts me of sin?*” [Jn. 8:46]; Jer. 23:6; Rom. 1:17; 10:3; Deut. 32:4; Ps. 9:7; 11:7; 97:6; 111:3; Jn. 17:25; 1 Jn. 2:29; Matt. 5:48.

#### MATTHEW 5:48

Therefore you [all humans] are to be perfect [*teleios* – by receiving His Perfect Righteousness [+R]], as your heavenly Father is perfect [*teleios*].

#### DEUTERONOMY 32:4

The Rock [*tsur* (giant boulder) – Jesus Christ the Savior]! His work is perfect [*tamiym* (complete; whole) – Jesus’ @@@ SALVATION work on the @@@ CROSS], for all His [God the Father under the @@@ PLAN OF GOD] ways are just [*mishpat* (right)]; a God of faithfulness and without injustice [*evel* (iniquity; injustice) – under @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT God desires all humans to be saved], righteous [*tsaddiyq* (just; righteousness) – the Righteousness [+R] of God is uncompromising] and upright [*yashar* (straight) – God is Perfect in all His ways] is He.

- (5) **Righteous in Actions.** “*As for God, His way is blameless*” [2 Sam. 22:31]; Deut. 32:4; 2 Sam. 22:31; Ps. 119:137; 145:17; Dan. 9:14; Rev. 19:2, 11.
- (6) **Righteousness Given to Believers.** God’s own Righteousness [+R] is given to all Believers at the point of @@@ SALVATION – Rom. 1:16-17; 3:22; 4:6; 10:4, 9-10; Gen. 15:6; Phil. 3:9; 2 Cor. 5:21; 2 Chron. 19:7; Matt. 5:48.

#### ROMANS 10:4

For Christ is the end of the law [*nomos*] for righteousness [*dikaiosune* – the Believer receives God’s Righteousness [+R]] to everyone who believes [*pisteuo* – @@@ SALVATION by @@@ GRACE provides @@@ FORTY THINGS to include the critical [+R] of God].

#### ROMANS 4:6

Just as David also speaks of the blessing on the man to whom God credits righteousness [*dikaiosune* – God’s Righteousness [+R]] apart from [*choris* (without any)] works [*ergon* – human works of @@@ RELIGION].



## PHILIPPIANS 3:9

And [Paul] may be found in Him [Christ], not having a [self] righteousness [dikaiosune – human righteousness [-r]] of my own derived from *the* Law [nomos – @@@ MOSAIC LAW], but that which is through [dia (by means of)] faith [pistis – saving @@@ FAITH] in Christ, the righteousness [dikaiosune] which comes from God [God's Righteousness [+R] imputed to the Believer] on the basis of faith [pistis – the [+R] is imputed to the Believer at the point of saving faith].

## ROMANS 3:22

Even *the* righteousness [dikaiosune – God's Perfect Righteousness [+R] is imputed to the Believer's @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT at @@@ SALVATION] of God through faith [pistis – saving @@@ FAITH] in Jesus Christ for all those who believe [pisteuo]; for there is no distinction [diastole (difference)].

## GENESIS 15:6

Then he [Abram] believed [aman] in the LORD [yehovah (the self-existing one) – Jesus Christ]; and He reckoned [chashab (to credit; to impute)] it to him as righteousness [tsedaqah (righteousness as vindicated) – Abraham received God's Righteousness [+R] which made him acceptable to God].

## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:21

He [God the Father] made Him [Jesus Christ] who knew no sin [hamartia – Jesus never committed a @@@ SIN and had no @@@ OLD SIN NATURE] to be sin [He took the judgment for all sin while on the cross] on our behalf [huper (as a substitute for)], so that we might become the righteousness [dikaiosune – God's Perfect Righteousness [+R] is imputed to the Believer making him acceptable for @@@ SALVATION] of God in Him.

- (7) **God is Fair.** See 2 Chron. 19:7; Deut. 32:4; Job 37:23; Ps. 19:9; 50:6; 58:11; 89:14; Isa. 45:21; Jer. 50:7; Rom. 2:11; Heb. 10:30-31; 12:23; Acts 10:34.

## ROMANS 2:11

For there is no partiality [time (valuing by which the price is fixed)] with God.

## 2 CHRONICLES 19:7

Now then let the fear [*pachad* (terror; dread)] of the LORD be upon you; be very careful what you do, for the LORD our God will have no part in unrighteousness [*evel*] or partiality or the taking of a bribe.

- (8) **Justice is Our Point of Contact.** For the Believer, God's Justice is his point of contact not God's: (1) Love – religious groups that stress @@@ EMOTION center primarily on human @@@ GOOD; (2) Sovereignty – religious groups that focus on “healings” and so-called @@@ MIRACLES; or (3) Omniscience – the fatalism of hyper-Calvinism focuses on the inevitability of human choice and denies the functioning of human free-will.
- (9) **Justice Blesses or Curses.** What the Righteousness [+R] of God demands the Justice of God will perform/execute, for blessing or for cursing – Jn. 3:17-21; Rom. 5:9; Gal. 4:24-25. See @@@ OVERVIEW.

## JOHN 3:17-18

For God did not send [*apostello* – at the 1st Advent of Christ] the Son into the world to judge [*krino*] the world [*kosmos* – the @@@ WORLD here refers to all unBelievers], but that the world might be saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – all humans have equal opportunity to enter into the Kingdom of Heaven] through Him [the work of Christ on the @@@ CROSS]. He who believes [*pisteuo* – by @@@ FAITH] in Him [Jesus Christ] is not judged [*krino* – only the unBeliever is judged at the Great White Throne Judgment and sent to the Lake of Fire]; he who does not believe has been judged [*krino*] already, because he has not believed in the name [*onoma*] of the only begotten [*monogenes* (single of its kind; uniquely born)] Son of God [the unBeliever is unacceptable to the Justice of God because he does not possess the Righteousness [+R] of God].

– LOVE –

- (1) **Absolute Love.** The fantastic integrity of His *agape* impersonal @@@ LOVE to the unBeliever motivated His actions to make and then offer a free @@@ SALVATION plan to save all mankind and bring them into the Kingdom of Heaven. Then, for Believers, God's personal love provides equal opportunity for fantastic @@@ REWARDS both during life and on into the eternal state, forever and ever. See 1 Jn. 4:8-10, 16; Rom. 5:8-10; Jn. 3:16.

- (2) **Expressed in Grace.** God's *agape impersonal love* towards mankind is expressed in His @@@ GRACE – Rom. 5:8-10; Jn. 3:16; 1 Jn. 2:15; 3:1.

### JOHN 3:16

For God so loved [*agapao* – impersonal @@@ LOVE] the world [*kosmos* – the @@@ WORLD of all mankind], that He gave His only begotten [*monogenes* (single of its kind; uniquely born)] Son [Jesus Christ], that whoever believes [*pisteuo* – @@@ FAITH in Christ for @@@ SALVATION] in Him shall not perish [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely; to utterly destroy) – separation from God in @@@ HELL], but have eternal [*aonios* (without beginning and end)] life [*zoe*].

### ROMANS 5:8-10

But God demonstrates [*sunistao* (to put together by way of composition; to show; to prove)] His own love [*agape* – impersonal @@@ LOVE] toward us, in that while we were yet sinners [*hamartolos* – the unBeliever under spiritual @@@ DEATH], Christ died [*apothnesko* (of violent death; of eternal death; to be subject to eternal misery in hell) – spiritual death] for us [the Believer]. Much more [*polus mallon* (much more; it stands to greater reason)] then, having now been justified [*dikaioo* (to render righteous) – the Believer has the Righteousness [+R] of God] by His blood [*aima* – the @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST], we shall be saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of Heaven] from the wrath [*orge*] of God through [*dia* (by means of)] Him [Jesus Christ]. For if while we were enemies [*echthros* – as unBelievers prior to @@@ SALVATION] we were reconciled [*katallasso* (to receive one into favor)] to God through [*dia* (by means of)] the death [*thanatos* (death with the implied idea of future misery in hell)] of His Son, much more, having been reconciled [*katallasso* – the Believer receives God's [+R]], we shall be saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – to deliver to the status of a @@@ RESURRECTION body and the potential @@@ REWARDS for the positive [+P] volition Believer who reaches spiritual @@@ MATURITY] by His life.

- (3) **Personal Love.** Believers cannot be separated from God's **personal love** – Rom. 5:8-10; 8:38-39. God has a maximum personal love for *all* Believers because they all have His Righteousness [+R] and for no other reason. Thus, God loves all Believers exactly the same regardless of their spiritual growth.

– ETERNAL LIFE –

- (1) **Absolute Existence.** There never was a time when God did not exist. God made @@@ TIME. See Ex. 3:14; Deut. 32:40; Job 36:26; Isa. 43:10, 13; Lam. 5:19; Ps. 92:8; 93:2; Jn. 17:3; 1 Jn. 5:20; Heb. 7:3; 13:8; Rev. 1:8; 22:13.

PSALM 93:2

Your [God] throne is established from of old; You are from everlasting [*olam* (forever; eternity)].

ISAIAH 43:10

“You are My witnesses [*ed* (a witness that provides testimony) – the Believer in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT],” declares the LORD, “And My servant whom I have chosen [*bachar* (to elect) – Jesus Christ], so that you may know [*yada* (to learn to know)] and believe [*aman*] Me and understand [*biyn* (to perceive; to understand)] that I am He. Before Me there was no God formed [*yatsar*], and there will be none after Me [*Satan’s desire to be God*].”

- (2) **Jesus Christ.** Jesus Christ is eternal life. See Jn. 1:1-3, 30; 8:57-58.

JOHN 8:57-58

So the Jews said to Him [Jesus Christ], “You are not yet fifty years old, and have You seen Abraham?” Jesus said to them, “Truly [*amen* (of a truth)], truly, I say to you, before Abraham was born [*ginomai* (to come into existence)], I am [*eimi* (to be)].”

- (3) **Believers Have Eternal Life.** All Believers receive God’s Eternal Life at salvation – 1 Jn. 5:11-12; Rom. 6:23; Jn. 3:16, 24, 36; 6:47; 8:12; 11:25-26. “*The free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our LORD*” [Rom. 6:23].

1 JOHN 5:11-12

And the testimony is this, that God has given us [all Believers] eternal [*aionios* (without beginning and end)] life [*zoe*], and this life is in His Son [Jesus Christ]. He who has the Son has the life; he who does not have the Son of God does not have the life.

## – OMNISCIENCE –

- (1) **Infinite in Wisdom.** See 1 Sam. 16:7; Ps. 44:21-22; 50:11; 1 Jn. 3:20; Rom. 11:33; Jer. 17:10; 51:15; Matt. 6:8; Prov. 3:19; 5:21; Rev. 19:12.

**REVELATION 19:12**

His [**Jesus Christ**] eyes *are* a flame of fire, and on His head *are* many diadems [**diadema (kingly ornament for the head)**]; and He has a name written *on Him* which no one knows except Himself [**God's infinity wisdom**].

- (2) **All Knowing.** See Eccl. 3:11; 1 Sam. 2:3; Heb. 4:13; Ezk. 11:5; Matt. 10:29-30; Ps. 139:1-6, 12; 147:4; Job 26:6; 31:4; 34:21; 37:16; 42:2; Zech. 4:10; Jn. 16:30; 21:17; Lk. 12:7. He knows the end from the beginning – Isa. 41:26; 42:9; 43:9; 46:10; 65:24; Acts 2:23; 15:18; 1 Pet. 1:2; Prov. 17:3; Jn. 6:24; Matt. 11:20-24; Ps. 90:2; 103:17; Heb. 4:13; Jer. 1:5. Jesus Christ knew all things – Matt. 9:4; Jn. 2:24; 21:6-7. Holy Spirit – 1 Cor. 2:10-11; Acts 5:3-4.

**ECCLESIASTES 3:11**

He [**God**] has made everything appropriate [**yapheh (beautiful)**] in its time. He has also set eternity in their heart, yet so that man will not find out [**metsa**] the work which God has done from the beginning even to the end.

**ISAIAH 42:9**

Behold, the former things [**rishon (former of time)**] – **God's Directive Decrees in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD** have come to pass, now I [**God**] declare new things; before they spring forth I proclaim [**shama**] *them* to you.

**ISAIAH 65:24**

It will also come to pass that before they [**the positive [+P] volition Believer**] call, I [**God**] will answer; and while they are still speaking, I will hear.

**LUKE 12:7**

Indeed [**Jesus Christ speaking**], the very hairs of your head [**all Believers**] are all numbered. Do not fear; you are more valuable than many sparrows.

**JEREMIAH 1:5**

Before I formed you [**Jeremiah**] in the womb [*beten* (belly; womb)] I knew you [**God in His Omniscience knew all about Jeremiah in eternity past**], and before you were born I consecrated [*qadash* (to set apart)] you [**Jeremiah, a positive [+P] volition Believer was selected to be a Prophet to Judah**].

**HEBREWS 4:13**

And there is no creature hidden [*aphanes* (not manifested)] from His [**God**] sight [*enopion* (in the presence of)], but all things are open and laid bare to the eyes of Him with whom we have to do [**all humans must account to God**].

**JOHN 2:24**

But Jesus, on His part, was not entrusting [*pisteuo* (to have confidence)] Himself to them [**Jews who responded to His message**], for He knew all men [**nature of man is under the power of the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE**].

**– OMNIPRESENCE –**

- (1) **God is Everywhere.** See Jer. 23:24; Jn. 14:23; Acts 17:24; 1 Kng. 8:27; Isa. 66:1; Deut. 4:39; Prov. 15:3; Ps. 139:7-12.

**1 KINGS 8:27**

But will God indeed dwell on the earth? Behold, heaven [*shamayim*] and the highest heaven [*shamayim*], cannot contain [*kul* (to measure; to contain)] You, how much less this house [**Jewish Temple**] which I [**Solomon**] have built!

**ACTS 17:24**

The God who made the world and all things in it, since He is LORD of heaven and earth [*ge*], does not dwell [*katoikeo*] in temples made with hands.

- (2) **Deity Not Reduced.** Deity cannot be reduced to one point or have anything to do with @@@ SIN except to condemn it – 1 Pet. 2:24; Isa. 53:6.
- (3) **Holy Spirit.** He is everywhere – Ps. 139:7; Acts 5:3-4; 2 Chron. 16:9.



– OMNIPOTENCE –

- (1) **All Powerful.** God can do anything compatible with His essence – Gen. 18:14; Ps. 24:8; 74:13; 93:1-2; 147:5; Isa. 40:26; 50:2; Jer. 27:5; 32:19, 27; Job 26:7; 42:2; Rom. 19:6; Gen. 17:1; 18:14; Rev. 4:8; 2 Chron. 16:9; 25:8; 1 Jn. 5:14-15; Deut. 32:39. God cannot be complicated by human absurdity.

**GENESIS 18:14**

Is anything too difficult [*pala (to be beyond one's power)*] for the LORD? At the appointed time I will return to you [*Abraham*], at this time next year, and Sarah will have a son.

**PSALM 93:1**

The LORD reigns [*malak (to be king)*], He is clothed with majesty; the LORD has clothed and girded Himself with strength [*oz*]; indeed, the world [*tebel*] is firmly established, it will not be moved [*mot (to be overthrown)*].

**DEUTERONOMY 32:39**

See now that I [*God*], I am He, and there is no god besides Me; it is I who put to death and give life. I have wounded and it is I who heal, and there is no one who can deliver from My hand.

- (2) **Upholds All Things.** Jesus Christ holds all things together. See 1 Chron. 29:11-12; Ps. 33:9; Rom. 13:1; Heb. 1:3; Col. 1:16-17; Jn. 1:1-3; Rev. 1:8.

**JOHN 1:2-3**

He [*Jesus Christ*] was in the beginning with God. All things came into being [*ginomai (to come into existence)*] through Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being. In Him was life [*zoe*], and the life was the Light [*phos – the only way of @@@ SALVATION is through @@@ FAITH in Jesus Christ*] of men. The Light shines in the darkness [*skotia (darkness due to want of light) – metaphor used for ignorance of Divine things and love for the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS*], and the darkness [*negative [-N] volition in the unBeliever*] did not comprehend it [*katalambano (to lay hold of with the mind; to seize upon)*].

- (3) **Holy Spirit is All Powerful.** *See* Gen. 1:2; Lk. 1:35; Acts 1:8.
- (4) **Ensures His Promises.** Omnipotence ensures the absolute fulfillment of all God's promises. *See* Isa. 43:13; Matt. 19:26; Mk. 10:27; Lk. 1:37; 2 Cor. 4:7; 2 Pet. 1:3; 1 Jn. 2:25; Tit. 1:2; Phil. 3:10; 1 Cor. 1:24; Rom. 1:16-17; 4:21.
- (5) **For Believers.** The same power that raised Jesus Christ from the dead is available to every Believer – Jn. 3:16. All precedence for the Church Age is taken from Jesus who lived in the @@@ **DIVINE DYNASPHERE** – Eph. 3:20; Col. 1:10-11; 2 Thess. 1:11; 1 Cor. 1:17-18; 2:5; 1 Pet. 1:5; Phil. 4:13.

### PHILIPPIANS 4:13

I can do all things through Him [Jesus Christ] who strengthens [endunamoo (to receive strength) – the power of God available to the Believer] me.

### COLOSSIANS 1:10-11

So that you will walk in a manner worthy of the LORD, to please *Him* in all respects, bearing fruit [@@@ **REWARDS**] in every good [*agathos* – Divine Good] work and increasing [*auxano* (to cause to grow)] in the knowledge [*epignosis* – @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**] of God; strengthened with all power, according to His glorious might, for the attaining of all steadfastness [*hupomone* – reaching maturity] and patience [*makrothumia* – using the @@@ **PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES**]; joyously [*chara* (gladness)].

### – VERACITY –

- (1) **Absolute Truth.** God is Truth! “*He could swear by no one greater, He swore by Himself*” [Heb. 6:13]. “*All the paths of the LORD are lovingkindness and truth*” [Ps. 25:10]; Deut. 32:4; 33:4; 86:15; 119:160; Rev. 3:14; 15:3; 19:11; 21:5; Dan. 4:37; 2 Sam. 7:28; Jn. 14:6; 17:17; Eph. 1:13; Jer. 42:5; Num. 23:19.

### NUMBERS 23:19

God is not a man, that He should lie [*kazab*], nor a son of man, that He should repent [*nacham* (to be sorry)]; has He said, and will He not do it? Or has He spoken, and will He not make it good?

- (2) **God Cannot Lie.** See Heb. 6:18; Tit. 1:2; Ezk. 20:9-22; Jer. 49:13.

### TITUS 1:2

In the hope [*elpis* (confidence) – Hope I of the @@@ **PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES**] of eternal [*aionios*] life [*zoe*], which God, who cannot lie [*pseudomai* (to speak deliberate falsehoods)], promised [*egaggello*] long ages ago.

### HEBREWS 6:18

So that by two unchangeable [*ametathetos* (unalterable)] things [God's essence in the @@@ **TRINITY** and His word] in which it is impossible [*adunatos* (unable to be done)] for God to lie [*pseudomai* (to speak deliberate falsehoods)], we who have taken refuge [those who have believed in Christ for @@@ **SALVATION**] would have strong encouragement [*paraklesis*] to take hold of the hope [*elpis* (confidence) – Hope I of the @@@ **PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES**] set before us [@@@ **ETERNAL SECURITY**].

### JEREMIAH 49:13

“For I [God] have sworn [*shaba*] by Myself,” declares the LORD, “that Bozrah will become an object of horror, a reproach, a ruin and a curse; and all its cities will become perpetual ruins.”

- (3) **His Word First.** God puts His word above His name. See Ps. 138:2.

### PSALM 138:2

I will bow down toward Your holy temple and give thanks to Your [God] name for Your lovingkindness [*chesed* (mercy)] and Your truth; for You have magnified [*gadal* (to make powerful)] Your word [*imrah* (utterance) – @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**] according [*al* (above; over)] to all Your name.

– **IMMUTABLE** –

- (1) **God is Static.** God does not change in any respect whatsoever, either as revealed in the Old Testament or in the New Testament – Isa. 40:28; Ps. 102:26-27; Mal. 3:6; Heb. 1:10-12; 13:8; Js. 1:17; Rev. 19:11. See *infra* (5).

## HEBREWS 1:12

And like a mantel You will roll them up; like a garment they will also be changed [God will destroy the old universe and create a new one]. But You are the same, and Your years will not come to an end [*ekleipo (to cease)*].

- (2) **Unchangeable Word.** God's Word is unchangeable. See Ps. 119:89; 138:2; 148:6; Jn. 10:35; Isa. 40:8; 1 Pet. 1:24-25; Heb. 7-21; Rom. 2:11.

## HEBREWS 7:21

For they indeed became priests without an oath, but He [God] with an oath through the One who said to Him, "The LORD has sworn and will not change His mind [*metamellomai*], 'you are a priest forever.'"

## 1 PETER 1:25

"But the word [*logos*] of the LORD [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] endures [*meno (to remain)*] forever [*aion (eternity)*]." And this is the word which was preached [*eugangelizo (to bring good news)*] to you.

- (3) **Faithful in Promises.** See Isa. 55:10-11; Num. 23:19; 1 Kng. 8:56; 2 Cor. 1:20; Tit. 1:2; Heb. 10:23; 11:11; Deut. 7:9; 1 Jn. 2:25. For example, God is faithful to forgive – 1 Jn. 1:9; Ps. 32:5; 51:4; 86:5.

## 1 JOHN 1:9

If [Third Class Condition – maybe the Believer will or maybe he won't] we confess [*homologeo (to declare oneself guilty; to name or cite as in a court case)*] our sins [*hamartia – the known @@@ SIN*], He [God the Father] is faithful [*pistos – God does the same thing every time*] and righteous [*dikaios – on the basis of the Believer having the Righteousness [+R] of God*] to forgive [*aphiemi*] us our [known] sins and to cleanse [*katharizo*] us from all unrighteousness [*adikia – unknown sin as well as decontamination from human @@@ GOOD*].

- (4) **Salvation and Testing.** God "*is a faithful Creator in doing what is right*" [1 Pet. 4:19]. In keeping the Believer saved [2 Tim. 2:12-13; 1 Cor. 1:9; 1 Thess. 5:24] and to deliver the Believer through testing [1 Cor. 10:12-13].

**1 CORINTHIANS 10:13**

No temptation has overtaken you [**the Believer**] but such as is common to man; and God is faithful [*pistos*], who will not allow you to be tempted [*peirazo* (tested) – Divine Suffering for Blessing to the positive **[+P] volition Believer**] beyond what you are able [*dunamai* – the test will not exceed the Believer's level of **@@@ MATURITY**], but with the temptation [*peirasmos* (a putting to proof by trial)] will provide [*poieo* (to make)] the way of escape [*ekbasis* (the way out; an egress)] also [**the Believer must apply the applicable @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES to the test**], so that you will be able to endure it [*hupophero* (to bear by being under; to undergo; to bear patiently) – pass the test and receive **@@@ REWARDS**].

- (5) **Jesus Christ is the Same.** The LORD Jesus Christ is the same forever – Heb. 13:8. This is true of all members of the Trinity. The God of the “Old Testament” is exactly the same as the God of the “New Testament.”

**HEBREWS 13:8**

Jesus Christ *is* the same [*autos*] yesterday [*chthes*] and today [*semeron* (this very day)] and forever [*aion* (eternity)].

**– HAPPINESS –**

- (1) **Perfect Happiness.** There never was a time when God was not happy and nothing can make God “unhappy.” See **@@@ HAPPINESS**
- (2) **Sharing God's Happiness.** The mature Believer can share the very Happiness **[+H]** of God – “*the joy of the LORD*” [Neh. 8:10]; Ps. 16:11; 31:7; 43:4. “*These things I (Jesus Christ) have spoken to you so that My joy may be in you, and that your joy may be full*” [Jn. 15:11]. “*According to the glorious gospel of the blessed (makarios (happiness)) God*” [1 Tim. 1:11].

**PSALM 16:11**

You [**God**] will make known [*yada*] to me [**the positive [+P] volition Believer**] the path of life; in Your presence is fullness of joy; in Your right hand there are pleasures forever [*netsach* (everlasting; perpetuity)].

---

## @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST

- (1) **Definition.** All Church Age Believers have a fixed and permanent position in Jesus Christ – 2 Cor. 5:17; Eph. 1:3-6; 2:5-6; Rom. 6:5. The Believer's old position in life from his birth, "*in Adam all die*" [1 Cor. 15:22], is now replaced with his new position in Union with Christ where the Believer shares the: (1) Destiny of Christ [Eph. 1:5]; (2) Sonship [2 Tim. 2:1; Gal. 3:26]; (3) Transference into the Kingdom [Col. 1:13]; (4) Heirship [Rom. 8:16-17]; (5) Sanctification [1 Cor. 1:2, 30]; (6) Kingship [2 Pet. 1:11]; (7) Priesthood [Heb. 10:10-14]; (8) Election [Eph. 1:4-5]; (9) Eternal Life [1 Jn. 5:11-12]; and (10) Perfect Righteousness [+R] [2 Cor. 5:21]. See @@@ FORTY THINGS.

## ROMANS 6:5

For if we have become united [*sumphutos* (born together with)] with Him [@@@ UNION WITH CHRIST] in the likeness [*homoion* (something made in the likeness of something)] of His [Jesus Christ] death [*thanatos*], certainly we shall also be *in the likeness* of His resurrection [*anastasis* – the Believer receives a @@@ RESURRECTION body].

## EPHESIANS 2:6

And raised us [Believers] up with Him [@@@ UNION WITH CHRIST], and seated us [*sugkathizo* (to cause to sit down together)] with Him in the heavenly [*epouranios* (existing in heaven – the Third @@@ HEAVEN)] places in Christ Jesus.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:17

Therefore if anyone is in Christ, *he is* a new creature [*ktisis*]; the old [*archaios* (that which has been from the beginning) – the enslavement to the @@@ OLD SIN NATURE and spiritual @@@ DEATH] things passed away [*parerchomai* (to lose power over)]; behold, new things [*kainos* (a new unprecedented thing) – the @@@ FORTY THINGS given the Believer at @@@ SALVATION] have come.

- (2) **Dry Baptism.** The @@@ HOLY SPIRIT “baptizes” each Believer as part of the @@@ MYSTERY of the Church Age into Union with Christ – Eph. 4:4-5; 1 Cor. 11:25; 12:13; Gal. 3:27. See @@@ BAPTISM.



## EPHESIANS 4:4-5

*There is one body [soma – all Believers are in @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST] and one [Holy] Spirit, just as also you were called [kaleo (to utter with a loud voice)] in one hope [elpis (confidence)] of your calling; one LORD [kurios (God) – Jesus Christ the Savior], one faith [pistis – @@@ SALVATION by @@@ FAITH in Christ], one baptism [baptisma – the dry @@@ BAPTISM mechanics of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT at salvation].*

## 1 CORINTHIANS 11:25

In the same way *He [Jesus] took the cup [poterion – @@@ CUP] also after supper, saying, “This cup is the new covenant [diatheke (a compact) – the Church Age @@@ MYSTERY of @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST] in My blood [aima – the @@@ BLOOD OF CHRIST]; do this, as often as you drink it, in remembrance [anamnesis (recollection)] of Me.”*

- (a) **Predicted.** Jesus predicted this dry baptism – “*not many days from now*” [Acts 1:5]; Jn. 14:20; Matt. 16:15. It started off the Church Age in spectacular “grand opening” demonstrations of short termed supernatural acts – Acts 11:15-17. *See @@@ GIFTS.*
- (b) **Positional Truth.** The @@@ HOLY SPIRIT’s dry baptism is the basis for Current Positional Truth [Eph. 1:3-6; Col. 3:1] when the Believer is entered into Union with Christ.

## EPHESIANS 1:5-6

He predestined [*proorizo (a predetermined plan)*] us [*God’s provisions also included getting the Winner Believers to maturity*] to adoption [*uihothesia (adult adoption)*] as sons through Jesus Christ to Himself [*@@@ UNION WITH CHRIST*], according to the kind intention of His will, to the praise of the glory of His grace, which He freely bestowed on us in the Beloved.

- (3) **Christ and the Church.** Synonyms for Jesus Christ and the Church.

- (a) **Last Adam/New Creation** – Gal. 6:15; 1 Cor. 15:45-47; 2 Cor. 5:17.
- (b) **Head/Body** – Eph. 1:22-23; 2:16; 4:4-5; 5:23; Col. 1:18, 24; 2:19.

- (c) **Great Shepherd/Sheep** – Jn. 10:27-28; 1 Pet. 5:4; Heb. 13:20; Rev. 5:6; 7:17; 13:20; Ps. 23:1. See @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER.
- (d) **True Vine/Branch** – Jn. 15:1-11. The vine [Christ] supports the branch [Believer] and Bible Doctrine flows into the branch from the vine so the positive [+P] Believer can produce “*fruit*” [Gal. 5:22].
- (e) **Cornerstone/Stones in Building** – Matt. 16:18; Eph. 2:19-22; 1 Pet. 2:4-8 [Peter liked this analogy]. See @@@ CORNERSTONE.

## MATTHEW 16:18

I [Jesus] also say to you that you are Peter [*petros* (little rock chip)], and upon this rock [*petra* (gigantic rock) – Jesus Christ is the foundation @@@ CORNERSTONE of @@@ SALVATION, the Church, and all Believers] I will build My church [*ekklesia*]; and the gates [*pule* (likened to a vast prison)] of Hades will not overpower [*katischuo* (to prevail)] it.

## EPHESIANS 2:19-22

So then you are no longer strangers [*xenos* (a foreigner)] and aliens [*paroikos*], [the Believer is no longer an unBeliever] but you are fellow citizens [*sumpolites* (possessing the same citizenship)] with the saints [*hagios* (separated ones)], and are of God’s household [*oikeios* (belonging to a house) – @@@ UNION WITH CHRIST], having been built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets [proclaimed the Gospel to save], Christ Jesus Himself being the corner stone [*akrogoniaios* (placed on an extreme corner)], in whom the whole building, being fitted together, is growing into a holy temple in the LORD, in whom you also are being built together into a dwelling of God in the Spirit [@@@ HOLY SPIRIT’s ministry in the positive [+P] volition Believer reaching @@@ MATURITY].

- (f) **High Priest/Royal Priest** – Heb. 7:25; 10:10-14; Rev. 1:6; 1 Pet. 2:5.
- (g) **Groom/Bride** – 2 Cor. 11:2; Eph. 5:25-32; Rev. 19:6-8; 22:17.
- (h) **King/Royal Family of God** – Eph. 1:22-23; Col. 2:10; Rom. 8:17; Rev. 17:14; 19:16.

## @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT

- (1) **Definition.** Under the concept of “unlimited atonement” Jesus Christ provided an absolute equal opportunity for all humans to be saved by suffering substitutionary spiritual @@@ DEATH, bearing in His own body on the @@@ CROSS the just punishment of sins – past, present, and future – of every human who ever lived. Thus, *anyone* who desires to be saved will be given the Gospel and be saved! See @@@ HEATHENISM.
- (2) **God’s Directive Will.** God desires that all humans should be saved. “*For the Son of Man did not come to destroy men’s lives, but to save them*” [Lk. 9:56] See Matt. 22:14; 1 Tim. 2:3-4; 2 Pet. 3:9; Tit. 2:11; Lk. 2:10-11.

### 1 TIMOTHY 2:3-4

This is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Savior [*soter* (the one who provides eternal deliverance into the Kingdom of God)], who desires [*thelo* (to intend)] all men [*anthropos* (mankind) – God’s will is that the unBeliever receives @@@ SALVATION] to be saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – enter into the Kingdom of Heaven] and to come to the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of the truth [*aletheia* – once saved, God’s will is for the Believer to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY].

### 2 PETER 3:9

The LORD is not slow [*braduno* (to delay; to tarry)] about His promise [*egaggelia* (the act of promising) – the @@@ RAPTURE will occur at some point], as some count slowness, but is patient [*makrothumeo* (to persevere patiently)] toward you, not wishing [*boulomai* (to will deliberately)] for any to perish [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely) – the will of God is for all humans to be saved and none go to @@@ HELL] but for all to come to repentance [*metanoia* (a change of mind) – reject @@@ RELIGION and accept God’s @@@ SALVATION].

### MATTHEW 22:14

For many are called [*kletos* (to invite to a banquet) – the @@@ SALVATION ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT], but few are chosen [*eklektos* – most humans reject @@@ SALVATION by @@@ GRACE].

- (3) **Penalty of Sin.** The penalty of @@@ SIN is spiritual @@@ DEATH – separation from God. In Gen. 2:17, Adam and the woman [later named Eve] were told that the day they disobeyed God and committed the first @@@ SIN that “*dying* [spiritual death] *you will die* [physical death].” The Hebrew word *muth* is repeated twice in Gen. 2:17, to indicate that the consequences of the first death, *spiritual death*, would eventually result in *physical death*. See Rom. 5:12; 6:23; 1 Cor. 15:21-22. Since then, all subsequent people, with the single exception of the humanity of Jesus Christ, have been born spiritually dead with an @@@ OLD SIN NATURE making it impossible for any person to obtain @@@ SALVATION by human works – 2 Cor. 5:14.
- (4) **Bible Verses.** Per unlimited atonement Jesus Christ died for all the @@@ SINS of the entire human race – Believers and unBelievers – Jn. 1:29; 3:16; 12:32; Heb. 1:2-4, 2:9; 9:26; 10:10; 1 Tim. 2:3-6; 4:10; Gal. 1:4; Rev. 5:9; 1 Jn. 2:2; 1 Pet. 2:24; 3:18; 2 Pet. 2:1; 2 Cor. 5:14-15; Eph. 1:7; Rom. 5:8-10.

### JOHN 3:16

For God so loved [*agapao* – impersonal @@@ LOVE] the world [*kosmos* – the @@@ WORLD of all mankind], that He gave His only begotten [*monogenes* (single of its kind; uniquely born)] Son [Jesus Christ], that whoever believes [*pisteuo* – @@@ FAITH in Christ for @@@ SALVATION] in Him shall not perish [*apollumi* (to put out of the way entirely; to utterly destroy) – separation from God in @@@ HELL], but have eternal [*aonios* (without beginning and end)] life [*zoe*].

### JOHN 12:32

And I [Jesus], if I am lifted up [*hupsoo* (to lift up on high)] from the earth [*ge* – He was on the Roman @@@ CROSS when He bore all @@@ SIN], will draw all men [*pas* (individually)] to Myself [because of @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT all humans are candidates for @@@ SALVATION].

### 1 TIMOTHY 2:6

Who gave Himself [Jesus Christ] as a ransom [*antilutron* (what is given in exchange as the price of redemption)] for all [*pas* – @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT], the testimony [*marturion*] given at the proper [*idios*] time [*karios*].

## HEBREWS 2:9

But we do see Him [**Jesus Christ**] who was made for a little while lower than the angels [*aggelos*], namely, Jesus, because of the suffering [*pathema* (extreme suffering)] of death [*thanatos* (with the implied idea of future misery in hell) – spiritual @@@ **DEATH**] crowned with glory [*doxa*] and honor, so that by the grace [*charis*] of God He might taste [*geuomai* – the @@@ **CUP** of the @@@ **SIN** of the @@@ **WORLD**] death [*thanatos* – spiritual @@@ **DEATH**] for everyone [*pas* – @@@ **UNLIMITED ATONEMENT**].

## HEBREWS 10:10

By this will [the @@@ **PLAN OF GOD** specifically designed to save humans] we [Believers] have been sanctified [*hagiazō* (to separate from profane things) – all Believers are in @@@ **UNION WITH CHRIST**] through [*dia* (by means of)] the offering [*prosphora* (the act of offering)] of the body [*soma* – all @@@ **SIN** was imputed to the humanity of Christ in His body while on the Roman @@@ **CROSS**] of Jesus Christ once for all [*ephapax* (once for all) – under @@@ **UNLIMITED ATONEMENT** Christ provided the opportunity for @@@ **SALVATION** to all humans].

## HEBREWS 9:26

Otherwise, He [**Jesus Christ**] would have needed to suffer often since the foundation of the world; but now once at the consummation of the ages [**Christ came at the right moment to bear @@@ **SIN** once and for all**] He has been manifested to put away sin [@@@ **UNLIMITED ATONEMENT**] by the sacrifice [*thusia* (a victim sacrificed)] of Himself [Jesus Christ's work in @@@ **SOTERIOLOGY** was sufficient and need never be repeated].

## REVELATION 5:9

And they [senior @@@ **ANGELS**] sang a new song, saying, “Worthy are You [**Jesus Christ**] to take the book and to break its seals; for You were slain [*sphazo* (to put to death by violence) – Christ died to provide @@@ **SALVATION**], and purchased [*agorazo* (to do business in the market place) – under @@@ **SOTERIOLOGY** God is satisfied with the work of Christ on the @@@ **CROSS**] for God with Your blood [*aima* – @@@ **BLOOD OF CHRIST**] men from every tribe and tongue and people and nation.”

## GALATIANS 1:4

Who gave [*didomi*] Himself [*Jesus Christ*] for our sins [*hamartia* – Christ bore all human @@@ SIN on the @@@ CROSS] so that He might rescue [*exaireo* (to pluck out)] us [all humans who respond to @@@ GRACE] from this present [*enistemi*] evil [*poneros* (wicked)] age [*aion* – Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD], according to the will [*thelema* – the @@@ PLAN OF GOD to provide @@@ SALVATION] of our God and Father.

## 1 TIMOTHY 2:3-4

This is good [*kalos*] and acceptable [*apodektos* (accepted)] in the sight of God [*theos*] our Savior [*soter* (the one who provides eternal deliverance into the Kingdom of God)], who desires [*thelo* (to intend)] all men [*anthropos* (mankind) – God’s will is that the unBeliever receives @@@ SALVATION] to be saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – enter into the Kingdom of Heaven] and to come to the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – once saved, God’s will is for the Believer to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY].

## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:14-15

For the love [*agape* (to love dearly)] of Christ controls us [Believers], having concluded [*krino* (to be of opinion)] this, that one [Christ] died [*apothnesko* (of a violent death; of eternal death; to be subject to eternal misery in hell) – spiritual @@@ DEATH] for all [*pas*], therefore all died [*apothnesko* – spiritual death at birth]; and He died [*apothnesko*] for all [@@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT], so that they who live [Believers] might no longer live for themselves [Believers are to live the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE], but for Him who died [*apothnesko*] and rose again [@@@ RESURRECTION] on their behalf.

## JOHN 1:29

The next day he [John the Baptist] saw Jesus coming to him and said, “Behold, the Lamb of God who takes away [*airo* (to move from its place)] the sin [*hamartia* – spiritual @@@ DEATH and @@@ SIN] of the world [*kosmos* – Christ provided @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT for all humans to give everyone equal opportunity for @@@ SALVATION]!



## HEBREWS 1:3-4

And He [Jesus Christ] is the radiance of His glory [*doxa* – all three members of the @@@ TRINITY share the same essence] and the exact representation of His nature [*hupostasis* (the thing put under; substructure) – in @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION Jesus Christ is still God], and upholds all things by the word of His power. When He had made purification [*katharismos* (a cleansing from sins) – the work of Christ on the @@@ CROSS] of sins [@@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT], He sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on high [Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL], having become as much better than the angels [superior @@@ RESURRECTION body], as He has inherited a more excellent name than they.

## 1 JOHN 2:2

And He Himself [Jesus Christ] is the propitiation [*hilasmos* (an appeasing)] for our sins [*hamartia* – all personal @@@ SIN of the Believer]; and not for ours only, but also for *those* of the whole [*holos* (completely)] world [*kosmos* – under @@@ UNLIMITED ATONEMENT Christ bore all human sin].

- (5) **At the Great White Throne.** Because Jesus Christ died for all @@@ SIN, the unBeliever's sins are not the basis for his indictment and final trial at the Great White Throne @@@ JUDGMENT of Rev. 20:11-15. Per double jeopardy, sin is never mentioned. In fact, the Divine indictment is that the unBeliever does not have God's Righteousness [+R] and the unBeliever's personal righteousness [-r] consisting of accumulated human works of @@@ GOOD are absolutely insufficient to allow for an eternal relationship. By dying on the @@@ CROSS Jesus alone now holds "*the keys of death and of Hades*" [Rev. 1:18] but the unBeliever rejected Him and @@@ GRACE.

## REVELATION 20:14-15

Then death [*Thanatos* – spiritual @@@ DEATH] and Hades were thrown [*ballo*] into the lake [*limne* (a lake)] of fire [*pur* (burning)]. This is the second [*deuteros*] death [*thanatos*], the lake of fire [eternal separation from God in the Lake of Fire]. And if anyone's name was not found written [*grapho*] in the book [*biblos*] of life [*zoe* – the unBeliever has been blotted out of the Book of Life], he was thrown [*ballo*] into the lake of fire.

## @@@ WALKING

- (1) **Definition.** The concept of “walking” refers to the general lifestyle of an individual. The primary Greek words are *peripateo*, *poreuomai*, and *stoicheo* (to march in ranks). For the Believer, walking should describe the positive [+P] volition Believer living in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD – Jer. 10:23-24.

## JEREMIAH 10:23-24

I know, O LORD, that a man’s way is not in himself [human viewpoint of @@@ GOOD], nor is it in a man who walks to direct his steps. Correct me, O LORD, but with justice [*mishpat* (the act of deciding a case) – Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing]; not with Your anger [Divine Discipline], or you will bring me to nothing [no @@@ MATURITY, no @@@ REWARDS – only the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH].

- (2) **Rebound.** The actual mechanics of walking requires energy and balance in motion, where after a step forward the balance is quickly recovered by a next step in a particular direction, and so on. This is an analogy to the Believer operating in the Devil’s @@@ WORLD during the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT and using @@@ REBOUND on a regular basis in order to keep in balance. At a minimum, this means the Believer constantly ensures that he is Filled with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT – Eph. 5:15-18; Js. 4:13-15.

## EPHESIANS 5:15-18

Therefore be careful how you walk [*peripateo* – the Believer’s lifestyle in @@@ WALKING], not as unwise men but as wise [apply @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], making the most of your time [*karios* – @@@ TIME is short in this life], because the days are evil [*poneros* – Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD and seeks to deceive the Believer as part of the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT]. So then do not be foolish [*aphron* (without reason)], but understand [*sunieimi* (to bring together)] what the will of the LORD is [@@@ DIVINE GUIDANCE in the @@@ PLAN OF GOD is for the Believer to reach spiritual @@@ MATURITY which glorifies God]. And do not get drunk [*methusko* (to intoxicate)] with wine, for that is dissipation [*asotia* (a dissolute life) – self-induced @@@ SUFFERING], but be filled [*pleroo* (to make full)] with the Spirit [stay in Fellowship with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT by @@@ REBOUND].

- (3) **Light the Way.** The **Winner** Believer understands that he is now guided in his thinking by the Light of God and “sees” all things about him by means of @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**, having been liberated from the dark thinking of the @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS**. He walks in a relaxed and orderly pace, letting life come to him – Eph. 5:8; Isa. 50:10; Jn. 8:12.

### EPHESIANS 5:8

For you [**Believer**] were formerly darkness [*skotos* – the **unBeliever** is in the @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS**], but now you are Light [*phos*] in the LORD; walk [*peripateo* – the Believer @@@ **WALKING** in the @@@ **DIVINE DYNASPHERE**] as children of Light.

### JOHN 8:12

Then Jesus again spoke to them, saying, “I [**Jesus**] am the Light [*phos*] of the world [*kosmos* – only Jesus Christ provides @@@ **SALVATION**]; he who follows [*akoloutheo* (to follow one who precedes)] Me will not walk [*peripateo* (a lifestyle)] in the darkness [*skotia*], but will have the Light of life [*zoe* – @@@ **SALVATION** and @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**].”

### ISAIAH 50:10

Who is among you that fears [*yare* (respect)] the LORD, that obeys the voice of His servant [**Isaiah**], that walks in darkness and has no light? Let him trust in the name of the LORD and rely on his God [@@@ **FAITH/Rest**].

- (4) **Bible Doctrine.** To navigate this @@@ **WORLD** the Believer must have the spiritual power of being Filled with the Holy Spirit and the spiritual power of @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE** resident in his @@@ **SOUL & SPIRIT** so that: “*Your ears will hear a word behind you, “This is the way, walk in it,” whenever you turn to the right or to the left*” [Isa. 30:21]; Ps. 143:8.

### PSALM 143:8

Let me hear Your [**God**] lovingkindness [*chesed* – @@@ **GRACE** in action] in the morning; for I trust [*batach* (to have confidence)] in You; teach [*yada*] me the way in which I should walk; for to You I lift up my soul [*nephesh* – positive [+P] volition to learn @@@ **BIBLE DOCTRINE**].

(5) **Three Spheres of Walking in God's Path.**

- (a) **Walking in the Holy Spirit.** Staying in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit by Rebound. *See* Gal. 5:16-17; 6:16; Rom. 8:1-4; Eph. 5:2, 18.

**GALATIANS 5:16-17**

But I [Paul] say, walk [*peripateo* (lifestyle) – @@@ WALKING] by the [Holy] Spirit [*pneuma* – stay in Fellowship by @@@ REBOUND], and you [Believer] will not carry out the desire [*epithumia* (lust)] of the flesh [*sarx* – @@@ OLD SIN NATURE]. For the flesh sets its desire against the [Holy] Spirit, and the [Holy] Spirit against the flesh; for these are in opposition to one another, so that you may not do the things that you please [*thelo* (to intend; to desire) – the Believer rejects the influences of the Old Sin Nature].

**ROMANS 8:1-4**

Therefore there is now no condemnation [*katakrima* (a damnatory sentence)] for those who are in Christ Jesus [@@@ UNION WITH CHRIST]. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has set you free [ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT in salvation] from the law [*nomos* – legal standard] of sin and of death [*thanatos* (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)]. For what the Law [@@@ MOSAIC LAW] could not do, weak as it was through the flesh [*sarx*], God *did*: sending His own Son in the likeness [*homoioima* (resemblance)] of sinful flesh and *as an offering* for sin, He condemned [*katakrino* (to give judgment against)] sin in the flesh, so that the requirement of the Law [Mosaic Law] might be fulfilled in us, who do not walk [*peripateo*] according to the flesh [the Old Sin Nature] but according to the Spirit [the Believer @@@ WALKING in Fellowship with the Holy Spirit].

- (b) **Walking in Faith/Rest.** The Winner Believer uses @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE and ignores/rejects what he sees and hears from the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS. *See* 2 Cor. 4:18; 5:7.

**2 CORINTHIANS 4:18**

While we look not at the things which are seen [@@@ COSMOS], but at the things which are not seen; for the things which are seen are temporal but the things which are not seen are eternal [@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE].

- (c) **Walking in Bible Doctrine.** The **Winner** Believer walks wisely by **@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE** which is his absolute Light to see how and where he is going – 1 Jn. 1:7; Jn. 3:19-21; Eph. 5:15; 1 Thess. 4:1; Col. 1:10; 2:6; Ps. 1:1-2. *See @@@ DIVINE GUIDANCE.*
- (6) **Christian Way of Life.** Walking used for the function of the mature positive **[+P]** volition **Winner** Believer executing the **@@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE** and learning **@@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE** – “*prepare your minds for action*” [1 Pet. 1:13]; 1 Jn. 1:7; Rom. 6:4; Eph. 2:10; 4:11; Phil. 3:17.

### PHILIPPIANS 3:17

Brethren [*adelphos* – fellow Believers], join in following my [Paul] example, and observe those who walk [*peripateo* (lifestyle)] according to the pattern you have in us [Paul and his traveling seminary team].

### EPHESIANS 2:10

For we [Believers in **@@@ UNION WITH CHRIST**] are His workmanship [*poiema* (that which has been made)], created [*kitzo* (to make habitable)] in Christ Jesus for good [*agathos* (good of intrinsic value) – Divine Good] works [*ergon*], which God prepared beforehand [*proetoimazo* (to prepare before) – in the **@@@ PLAN OF GOD** He made provisions to bless all Believers with **@@@ REWARDS**] so that we would walk [*peripateo* (lifestyle)] in them.

- (7) **The Divine Dynasphere.** Staying in God’s system by walking in the **@@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE: GATE 1** [1 Thess. 2:12; 1 Jn. 1:7; 2:6; Rom. 6:4]; **GATE 2** [2 Cor. 5:7; Col. 2:6]; **GATE 3** [Eph. 4:1-2]; **GATE 4** [3 Jn. 4; Col. 1:9-10; 4:5-6]; **GATES 5-6** [Eph. 5:1-2; Acts 9:31]; and **GATE 7** [Rom. 13:13-14; Jn. 8:12].
- (8) **Winner Believer.** Walking describes the standard lifestyle of the **Winner** Believer who sees God with eyes in the **@@@ SOUL & SPIRIT**: (1) “*walk by faith, not by sight*” [2 Cor. 5:7]; (2) “*walk in newness of life*” [Rom. 6:4]; (3) “*walk in a manner worthy of the calling*” [Eph. 4:1]; (4) “*walk in a manner worthy of the LORD*” [Col. 1:10-11]; (5) “*walk properly as in the day*” [Rom. 13:13]; (6) “*walk in Him*” [Col. 2:6]; (7) “*created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God prepared beforehand so that we would walk in them*” [Eph. 2:10]; and (8) “*walk in the Light*” [1 Jn. 1:7; Eph. 5:8].



## COLOSSIANS 1:10-11

So that you will walk [*peripateo* (lifestyle) – the Believer @@@ WALKING in the lifestyle of the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE in @@@ TIME] in a manner worthy of the LORD, to please *Him* in all respects, bearing fruit [*karpophoreo* – reaching spiritual @@@ MATURITY which results in @@@ REWARDS] in every good [*agathos* – Divine Good] work and increasing [*auxano* (to cause to grow)] in the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge) – learning the full realm of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] of God; strengthened with all power, according to His glorious might, for the attaining of all steadfastness [*hupomone* (endurance; constancy) – reaching maturity requires constant positive [+P] volition decisions] and patience [*makrothumia* – using the @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES]; joyously [*chara* (gladness) – maintaining @@@ HAPPINESS].

- (9) **Old Testament.** The Hebrew word *halak* (walking) with God was rooted in the @@@ FAITH/Rest technique. See Gen. 5:22; Ezra 5:6-7; 11:12-20; Ps. 1:1-2; 81:13; 89:41; 119:1; Isa. 30:21; 33:15. Per Mic. 6:8 – “*walk humbly with your God*” – was also a title for the mature Winner Believer.

## MICAH 6:8

He has told you, O man, what is good [*tob*]; and what does the LORD require [*darash*] of you but to do justice [*mishpat* (deciding a case correctly) – learning and applying @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], to love [*ahab*] kindness, and to walk [*halak* (lifestyle)] humbly [*tsana* (respect for authority)] with your God.

## ISAIAH 30:21

Your ears will hear a word [the positive [+P] volition Believer hears @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] behind you, “This is the way, walk [*halak*] in it,” whenever you turn to the right or to the left.

## GENESIS 5:22

Then Enoch walked [*halak*] with God [Enoch was a Believer at @@@ MATURITY] three hundred years after he became the father of Methuselah, and he had *other* sons and daughters.



**PSALM 119:1**

How blessed are those whose way is blameless [the Believer on positive [+P] volition to the Word], who walk [*halak*] in the law [*torah*] of the LORD.

**PSALM 1:1-2**

How blessed is the man who does not walk [*halak*] in the counsel of the wicked, nor stand in the path of sinners, nor sit in the seat of scoffers!

- (10) **Describes Reversionism.** Walking used to describe **Loser** Believers in @@@ REVERSIONISM who walk in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS – Phil. 3:18-19; Jn. 11:10; 1 Cor. 3:3; 2 Thess. 3:6; Eph. 4:17-18; Jer. 2:5; 23:17.

**PHILIPPIANS 3:18-19**

For many walk [*peripateo* (a lifestyle) – the @@@ WALKING of the Loser Believer in @@@ REVERSIONISM], of whom I [Paul] often told you, and now tell you even weeping, *that they are* enemies of the cross of Christ, whose end is destruction [*apoleia* – they will die the @@@ SIN UNTO DEATH], whose god is *their* appetite and *whose* glory [*doxa* – the Loser Believer glories in human @@@ GOOD] is in their shame, who set their minds [*phroneo*] on earthly things [they are firmly in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS].

**2 THESSALONIANS 3:6**

Now we [Paul and his traveling seminary] command you, brethren [*adelphos* – the Believer], in the name of our LORD Jesus Christ, that you keep away from every brother [*adelphos* – the Loser Believer on negative [-N] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] who leads [*peripateo* (a lifestyle)] an unruly [*ataktos* (out of ranks; disorderly)] life [*peripateo* (a lifestyle)] and not according to the tradition [the Bible Doctrine] which you received from us.

**JEREMIAH 2:5**

Thus says the LORD, “What injustice did your fathers find in Me [God gave them the Promised Land], that they went far from Me and walked [*halak* (to go; to walk)] after emptiness [*hebel* (vapor; vanity; futility) – the Jews rejected God] and became empty [the result of @@@ REVERSIONISM].”

## JEREMIAH 23:17

They keep saying [the false Jewish prophets regarding the threat of attack by the Chaldeans] to those who despise [*naats* (to spurn; abhor; despise)] Me [all the Jews on negative [-N] volition], the LORD has said, “You will have peace”; and as for everyone who walks in the stubbornness of his own heart, they say, “Calamity will not come upon you [the nation was obliterated in 586 B.C.]”

- (11) **Describes the UnBeliever.** Walking is also used to describe the unBeliever’s lifestyle. He is blind and walks in the “*darkness*” [Isa. 9:2]; Eph. 2:2; 4:17-18; Col. 3:7; 1 Pet. 4:3; 2 Pet. 2:10; Jd. 16, 18; 1 Cor. 3:3; Matt. 15:14.

## ISAIAH 9:2

The people who walk [*halak* (a lifestyle)] in darkness [the unBelievers in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS] will see a great [*gabdol*] light [*or* (the light of day) – Jesus Christ at the 1st Advent]; those who live in a dark land [Judea at the time of Christ was apostate], the light will shine on them.

## MATTHEW 15:14

Let them [Jesus speaking of the Pharisees] alone; they are blind [*tuphlos* – unBelievers in spiritual @@@ DEATH] guides [*hodegoss* (a leader of the way)] of the blind [the unBeliever on negative [-N] volition]. And if a blind man guides a blind man, both will fall into a pit [*bothunos* – @@@ HELL].

## EPHESIANS 4:17-18

So this I [Paul] say, and affirm together with the LORD, that you [Believers] walk [*peripateo* (a lifestyle) – @@@ WALKING] no longer just as the Gentiles [*ethnos* – the unBelievers] also walk [@@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS], in the futility [*mataiotes* (devoid of truth)] of their mind, being darkened [*skotoo* (blackout)] in their understanding [*dianoia* – the unBeliever cannot understand @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], excluded [*apallotrio* (to be shut out from intimacy) – the unBeliever is not in the family of God] from the life of God because of the ignorance [*agnoia* (lack of knowledge) – no desire in their negative [-N] volition for the @@@ TRINITY] that is in them, because of the hardness [*porosis* – humans on negative [-N] volition] of their heart.

---

## @@@ WAR

- (1) **Definition.** War is the use of physical violence between one or more groups of people, usually between nations. The lawful use of violence in self-defense embodies the principle of protection of the nation from exterior threats by hostile nations/peoples and is a valid and often commanded concept throughout the @@@ BIBLE.
- (2) **War and History.** Warfare is a legitimate part of human @@@ HISTORY to protect the national entity and maintain the @@@ FREEDOM principles in the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS – Eccl. 3:8; Num. 21:14. Armies either defend freedom or destroy it, which means that the side that wins the war will determine much of the subsequent events. Thus, the concept of war in self-defense is moral even though immoral acts will occur in war.

### NUMBERS 21:14

Therefore it is said in the Book of the Wars of the LORD, “Waheb in Suphah, and the wadis of the Arnon.”

- (3) **Millennium.** War will always exist in human history [Matt. 24:6; Mk. 13:7; Lk. 21:9; Eccl. 3:8; Num. 21:14], but not in the Millennium, “*And they will hammer their swords into plowshares*” [Isa. 2:4; Mic. 4:3]. Note: Crime will still occur in the Millennium. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.

### MATTHEW 24:6

You [**Jesus speaking**] will be hearing of wars [*polemos* – hot @@@ WARs] and rumors of wars [**cold @@@ WARs**]. See that you are not frightened, for *those things* must take place, but *that* is not yet the end [**the 2nd Advent**].

- (4) **For Adults.** Combat in warfare is primarily for adult males – Num. 1:3; 26:2. Temporary exceptions for certain males are stated in Deut. 24:5.

### DEUTERONOMY 24:5

When a man takes a new wife, he shall not go out with the army nor be charged with any duty; he shall be free at home one year and shall give happiness [*samach*] to his wife whom he has taken.

- (5) **Goal of War.** The goal of war is to destroy the enemy – Jos. 11:23; 14:15; Ps. 46:8-11; Isa. 37:26; 2 Kng. 19:35; 1 Chron. 5:19-22; Lk. 13:31-32.

### JOSHUA 11:23

So Joshua took [by warfare] the whole land, according to all that the LORD had spoken to Moses, and Joshua gave it for an inheritance to Israel according to their divisions by their tribes. Thus the land had rest from war.

### ISAIAH 37:26

Have you not heard? Long ago I [God] did it, from ancient times I planned it. Now I have brought it to pass, that you should turn fortified cities into ruinous heaps.

- (6) **Law of War.** The Mosaic law sets out a detailed law of war codex. *See* Deut. 20:1-19.
- (7) **Refuse War.** In some cases, it is a @@@ SIN not to go to war – Num. 32:5-23, 32. The Biblical roster of many Old Testament **Winner** Believers is associated with their winning military victories – Heb. 11:32-34.

### NUMBERS 32:20-21, 23

So Moses said to them [the Hebrews], “If you will do this [fight], if you will arm yourselves before the LORD for the war, and all of you armed men cross over the Jordan before the LORD until He has driven His enemies out from before Him. But if you will not do so [go to war], behold, you have sinned against the LORD, and be sure your sin will find you out.”

- (8) **Train for War.** Going to war demands training and a mental attitude of moral and battle courage. Simply putting on a uniform does not a soldier make – Deut. 20; Num. 31:3-5; Jdg. 3:2; Lk. 14:31. Nevertheless, as Believers prepare for war through solid military training, the “*victory belongs to the LORD*” [Prov. 21:31]; Lev. 26:7-9; 2 Sam. 22:35; Ps. 18:34; 27:3-4; 144:1.

### PROVERBS 21:31

The horse is prepared for the day of battle, but victory belongs to the LORD.

**PSALM 144:1**

Blessed be the LORD, my rock [Jesus Christ the @@@ CORNERSTONE], who trains my hands for war, *and* my fingers for battle.

**LEVITICUS 26:7-9**

But you [the Hebrews] will chase your enemies and they will fall before you by the sword; five of you will chase a hundred, and a hundred of you will chase ten thousand, and your enemies will fall before you by the sword. So I [God] turn toward you and make you fruitful and multiply you, and I will confirm My covenant with you.

- (8) **Peace Propaganda.** Peace propaganda to disarm the military is used to destroy a nation from within while the enemy plots to attack. “*New gods were chosen; then war was in the gates. Not a shield or a spear was seen among forty thousand in Israel*” [Jdg. 5:8]; Jer. 6:14; Mic. 3:5-7; Ezk. 13:10.

**JEREMIAH 6:14**

They [apostate religious leaders of Judah] have healed the brokenness of My people superficially, saying, “Peace [*shalom*], peace,” but there is no peace.

**MICAH 3:5**

Thus says the LORD concerning the prophets who lead my people astray; when they have *something* to bite with their teeth [reason to war], they cry, “Peace,” but against him who puts nothing in their mouths they declare holy war.

- (9) **Evil Plots War.** Plotting aggressive warfare is in the heart of evil men. “*Rescue me, O LORD, from evil men; preserve me from violent men who devise evil things in their hearts; they continually stir up wars*” [Ps. 140:1-2]; Ps. 55:20-23; 68:30; 120:6-7; 140:1-2.
- (10) **Military Leadership.** Importance of good leadership – Prov. 20:18; 24:1-6.

**PROVERBS 20:18**

Prepare plans by consultation, and make war by wise guidance.

- (11) **Believer Protected.** See Job 38:21-23; Zech. 2:5; Rev. 7:3; Ps. 91:1-7; Isa. 54:17. This also applies to the Believer who puts on the full armor of God in the ongoing unseen @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT – Eph. 6:10-19.

### ISAIAH 54:17

“No weapon that is formed against you will prosper; and every tongue that accuses you in judgment you will condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the LORD, and their vindication is from Me,” declares the LORD.

- (12) **Anti-War Misnomer.** The classic misnomer in Matt. 26:52, supposedly in support of abolishing or condemning war, actually applies to the lawful capital punishment of the convicted criminal not the abolition of war. For example, Peter had no legal right or @@@ AUTHORITY to use illegal violence against an agent of the State executing an arrest warrant against Jesus, even though the warrant was false. In such a case, the accused must assert his innocence in court. See Gen. 9:6. See @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS.

### MATTHEW 26:52

Then Jesus said to him [Peter], “Put your sword [*machaira*] back into its place; for all those who take up the sword [for illegal violence] shall perish [*apollumi* (to declare that one must be put to death) – physical @@@ DEATH] by the sword [capital punishment under the @@@ DIVINE INSTITUTIONS].”

- (13) **Commander of the Armies.** Described in the Old Testament as the “*LORD of Hosts*” [*tsaba* (armies of angels)] Jesus Christ is the ultimate Commander of the Jewish Army [Isa. 6:5; Ezk. 1:10; Jos. 5:13-15; 6:2; Zech. 12:5].

### ISAIAH 6:5

Then I [Isaiah] said, “Woe is me, for I am ruined! Because I am a man of unclean lips, and I live among a people of unclean lips; for my eyes have seen the King, the LORD of hosts [*tsaba* (armies of angelic beings)].”

- (14) **Record for Killing.** Jesus Christ holds the Old Testament record for killing the enemy in the shortest time span – 185,000 Assyrians in 701 B.C., outside Jerusalem [2 Kng. 9:35]. Jesus Christ will hold the all-time record for killing at His 2nd Advent – Isa. 63:1-6; Rev. 19:11-18; Zech. 14:1-21; Ezk. 39:1-29.



## ISAIAH 63:1-3

Who is this who comes from Edom [Christ in a @@@ RESURRECTION body at the 2nd Advent], with garments of glowing colors from Bozrah, this One who is majestic in His apparel, marching in the greatness of His strength? “It is I [Jesus Christ] who speak in righteousness, mighty to save [yasha (to deliver)].” Why is Your apparel red, and Your garments like the one who treads in the wine press? “I have trodden the wine trough alone, and from the peoples there was no man with Me. I also trod them [unBelievers at the 2nd Advent] in My anger and trampled them in My wrath; and their lifeblood [netsach] is sprinkled on My garments, and I stained all My raiment.”

## REVELATION 19:11-16

And I [John] saw heaven opened, and behold, a white horse, and He [Jesus Christ at the 2nd Advent] who sat on it *is* called Faithful and True, and in righteousness He judges [krino] and wages war [polemeo]. His eyes *are* a flame of fire, and on His head *are* many diadems; and He has a name written *on Him* which no one knows except Himself. *He is* clothed with a robe dipped in blood, and His name is called The Word of God. And the armies which are in heaven, clothed in fine linen, white *and* clean, were following Him on white horses [Believers in resurrection bodies and angels]. From His mouth comes a sharp sword, so that with it He may strike down the nations [ethnos], and He will rule them with a rod of iron [the Millennium]; and He treads the wine press of the fierce wrath of God, the Almighty. And on His robe and on His thigh He has a name written, “King of Kings, and LORD of LORDS.”

- (15) **Personal Suffering.** Warfare can serve as a form of personal discipline for negative [-N] volition Believers under the concept of Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING. “*The battle went heavily against Saul, and the archers hit him; and he was badly wounded by the archers*” [1 Sam. 31:3].
- (16) **National Suffering.** Defeat in warfare can be used as a form of national Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING for the Client nation in @@@ REVERSIONISM. “*Your men will fall by the sword and your mighty ones in battle and her gates will lament and mourn, and deserted she will sit on the ground*” [Isa. 3:16-26]; 2 Chron. 16:9; Jer. 4:19-31; Lev. 26:30-33. See @@@ PIVOT.
-

## @@@ WATER

- (1) **Definition.** Other than its literal use water is portrayed in three significant ways in the @@@ BIBLE to illustrate: (1) @@@ GRACE; (2) @@@ SALVATION; and (3) @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.
- (2) **Water and Grace.** Water illustrates the concept of God's @@@ GRACE as anyone can drink – good people, bad people, etc. *See* Isa. 55:1; Rev. 22:17.

### ISAIAH 55:1

Ho! Every one who thirsts [positive [+P] volition], come to the waters [*mayim* – of @@@ SALVATION]; and you who have no money come, buy and eat. Come, buy wine and milk without money and without cost.

- (3) **Water and Salvation.** Water portrays the truth of @@@ SALVATION. *See* Isa. 55:1; Rev. 22:17; Jer. 2:13; 17:13; Jn. 4:10-14; 6:35; 1 Cor. 6:11; Eph. 5:26. Water reflects the work of the Holy Spirit in the salvation process – Jn. 3:5-7; 7:37; 14:16-17, 26; 16:12-14; Tit. 3:5; Ex. 17:6.

### EXODUS 17:6

“Behold, I [Jesus Christ] will stand before you there on the rock [*tsur* (giant bolder)] at Horeb; and you [Moses] shall strike the rock [Christ will be struck for all @@@ SIN], and water [*mayim*] will come out of it, that the people may drink [and recall the doctrine of salvation plus God's logistical @@@ GRACE provisions].” And Moses did so in the sight of the elders of Israel.

### REVELATION 22:17

The [Holy] Spirit and the bride say, “Come.” And let the one who hears say, “Come.” And let the one who is thirsty [positive [+P] volition] come; let the one who wishes take the water [Gospel] of life without cost [*dorea* (a gift)].

### JOHN 4:14

But whoever drinks of the water that I [Jesus Christ] will give him shall never thirst; but the water [@@@ SALVATION] that I will give him will become to him a well of water springing up to eternal [*aionios* (without end)] life.

**JOHN 3:5**

Jesus answered [**Nicodemus**], “Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born [*gennao (to be born)*] of water [*hudor* – @@@ **WATER** of the Gospel] and the Spirit [@@@ **SALVATION** ministry of the @@@ **HOLY SPIRIT**] he cannot enter into [*eiserchomai (to come in or go out)*] the kingdom of God.”

**1 CORINTHIANS 6:11**

Such were some of you [**as unBelievers**]; but you were washed [*apolouo (to wash fully)* – @@@ **SALVATION**], but you were sanctified, but you were justified [*dikaioo (to render righteous)* – **Believer receives the [+R] of God**] in the name of the LORD Jesus Christ and in the [**Holy**] Spirit of our God.

**EPHESIANS 5:26**

So that He [**Jesus Christ**] might sanctify her [**the Church**], having cleansed [*katharizo*] her by the washing [*loutron (a bath)*] of water [*hudor*] with the word [*rhema* – the Gospel of @@@ **SALVATION**].

- (4) **Water and Bible Doctrine.** Water portrays the truth of providing Bible Doctrine via the ministry of the @@@ **HOLY SPIRIT** – “*rivers of living water*” [Jn. 7:38]. See 1 Cor. 3:6-8; Jer. 2:13; 1 Jn. 5:6, 8.

**1 CORINTHIANS 3:6-7**

I planted [**Paul gave the Gospel**], Apollos watered [**taught @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE**], but God was causing the growth. So then neither the one who plants nor the one who waters is anything, but God who causes the growth.

**JEREMIAH 2:13**

“For My people [**Jews**] have committed two evils: They have forsaken Me, The fountain of living [*chay*] waters [**for @@@ SALVATION and @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE**], to hew for themselves cisterns, Broken cisterns [**@@@ RELIGION and of human @@@ GOOD**] that can hold no water.”

- (5) **The Flood.** In the great flood, water judged the unBeliever and the Nephilim [half human and half angel] – Gen. 7:14-25; Job 26:5; Rev. 20:13.

**JOB 26:5**

The departed spirits [the demons that had sex with human women] tremble under the waters and their inhabitants [the Nephilim]. Naked is Sheol [@@@ HELL] before Him, and Abaddon [a senior officer demon] has no covering.

**REVELATION 20:13**

And the sea gave up the dead which were in it [the Nephilim killed by the Great Flood and now in @@@ HELL], and death [*thanatos* (death with the implied idea of future misery in Hell)] and Hades gave up the dead which were in them [all the unBeliever humans in Torments]; and they were judged, every one of them according to their deeds [*ergon* – the indictment at the Great White Throne @@@ JUDGMENT lists the good deeds of the unBeliever].

- (6) **Exodus Test.** Water was used as a testing tool for the Exodus Hebrews. As with all their tests, they flunked the “no water” test – Ex. 15:22-27..

**EXODUS 15:22-24**

Then Moses led Israel from the Red Sea, and they went out into the wilderness of Shur; and they went three days in the wilderness and found no water. When they came to Marah, they could not drink the waters of Marah, for they were bitter [*marah*]; therefore it was named Marah. So the people grumbled [*lun* (to complain; to murmur)] at Moses, saying, “What shall we drink?”

- (7) **Water in Rebound.** Regular feet washing with water is used to portray the Believer’s need to @@@ REBOUND often. See Jn. 13:10.

**JOHN 13:10**

Jesus said to him [Peter], “He who has bathed [*louo* (complete bath of the whole person) – the Believer is saved only once by @@@ FAITH in Christ and needs not take another “bath”] needs only to wash his feet [*nipto* – the Believer will use @@@ REBOUND many times in life to wash up], but is completely [*holos*] clean [*katharos* (purified by fire) – the Believer has @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY]; and you are clean [Peter was already a Believer], but not all of you [Judas was an unBeliever who never took the “bath”].”

---

## @@@ WEEPING

- (1) **Definition.** Weeping of tears comes from @@@ EMOTION responding to things in the mentality and can express sorrow or joy. It can be good or bad.
- (2) **Weeping of Grief.** See Jn. 11:33-37; 1 Thess. 3:13.

### JOHN 11:33-37

When Jesus therefore saw her [**Mary**] weeping [*klaio (to mourn; to weep)*], and the Jews who came with her *also* weeping, He was deeply moved in spirit [*pneuma*] and was troubled [*tarasso (to agitate)*], and said, “Where have you laid him [**Lazarus**]?” They said to Him, “LORD, come and see.” Jesus wept [*dakruo (to shed tears)* – legitimate @@@ EMOTION]. So the Jews were saying, “See how He loved [*phileo (personal love)*] him!” But some of them said, “Could not this man, who opened the eyes of the blind man, have kept this man also from dying [*apothnesko*]?”

- (3) **Weeping of Regret.** See 2 Sam. 18:33; 19:1-4. King David treated his son Absalom in legalism. In 2 Sam. 14:23-28, David only gave a half forgiveness to Absalom who had killed Amnon for the rape of Tamar – 2 Sam. 13:32.

### 2 SAMUEL 18:33

The king [**David**] was deeply moved and went up to the chamber over the gate and wept [*bakah (to weep bitterly)*]. And thus he said as he walked, “O my son Absalom, my son, my son Absalom! Would I had died [*muth*] instead of you, O Absalom, my son, my son!”

- (4) **Weeping and Legalism.** See Ezra 3:12-13.

### EZRA 3:12-13

Yet many of the priests and Levites and heads of fathers' *households*, the old men who had seen the first temple, wept [*bakah*] with a loud voice when the foundation of this house [**the Second Temple**] was laid before their eyes, while many shouted aloud for joy, so that the people could not distinguish the sound of the shout of joy from the sound of the weeping of the people, for the people shouted with a loud shout, and the sound was heard far away.

- (5) **Weeping of Testing.** The weeping of Divine @@@ SUFFERING for Blessing to the Believer. “*Jesus wept*” [Jn. 11:35] for the suffering of his friend Lazarus. See Ps. 30:5; 1 Thess. 4:13-18.

### PSALM 30:5

For His [God's] anger [Divine Discipline @@@ SUFFERING] is but for a moment, His favor [*ratson* (goodwill)] is for a lifetime [God wants all Believers to reach @@@ MATURITY]; weeping may last for the night, but a shout of joy [*rinnah* (praise in proclamation)] comes in the morning.

- (6) **Rejection of Christ.** The weeping of the unBeliever who rejects Jesus Christ as Savior – Heb. 12:17 [Esau].

### HEBREWS 12:17

For you know that even afterwards, when he [Esau the unBeliever] desired to inherit the blessing, he was rejected, for he found no place for repentance [*metanoia* (a change of mind)], though he sought for it with tears [*dakru*].

- (7) **Patriotic Weeping.** A patriot weeps for the nation – Jer. 9:1; Isa. 22:3-4; Lam. 1:15-16. Jesus wept for Jerusalem seeing massive negative [-N] volition in the Jews and the looming A.D. 70, destruction of the city – Lk. 19:41-44.

### JEREMIAH 9:1

Oh that my [Jeremiah] head were waters and my eyes a fountain of tears, that I might weep [*bakah*] day and night for the slain [*chahal* – Jeremiah witnessed the destruction of Judah in 586 B.C. by Chaldea] of the daughter of my people!

- (8) **Torments.** Weeping of unBelievers going to @@@ HELL – Matt. 8:11-12; 22:13; 24:51; 25:30; Lk. 13:28.

### MATTHEW 8:12

But the sons of the kingdom [Jews who are unBelievers and yet have all the advantages] will be cast out into the outer darkness [*skotos* – the Lake of Fire]; in that place [*elei* (a location)] there will be weeping [*klauthmos* (lamentation)] and gnashing of teeth [*brugmos* (utter despair)].



- (9) **Weeping in Heaven.** There will be no more weeping in sorrow in @@@ HEAVEN – Rev. 21:4; Isa. 30:19. See Operation @@@ FOOTSTOOL.

#### REVELATION 21:4

And He [God] will wipe away [*exaleipho* (to anoint or wash in every part; to erase)] every tear [*dakru*] from their [the Believer] eyes; and [in @@@ HEAVEN] there will no longer be any death [*thanatos* (with the implied idea of future misery in hell)]; there will no longer be any mourning [*penthos*], or crying [*krauge*], or pain [*ponos* (great trouble)]; the first [*protos* (first in time)] things have passed away [*aperchomai* (to go away; depart)].

- (10) **Jesus' Blood.** In the Garden of Gethsemane Jesus Christ expelled sweat like drops of blood as He contemplated the looming spiritual @@@ DEATH that awaited Him on the @@@ CROSS [Ps. 22:1] – Lk. 22:42-44.

#### LUKE 22:42-44

Saying, “Father, [*pater* – Jesus speaking from His humanity to God the Father] if You are willing [*boulomai* (to will deliberately)], remove [*paraphero*] this cup [*poterion* – the @@@ CUP containing the @@@ SIN of all mankind] from Me [Jesus]; yet not My will, but Yours be done [the @@@ PLAN OF GOD for @@@ SALVATION].” Now an angel [*aggelos*] from heaven [*ouranos*] appeared to Him, strengthening Him. And being in agony [*agonia* (of severe mental struggles)] He was praying very fervently; and His sweat [*hidros*] became like drops [*thrombos* (a large thick drop)] of blood [*aima*], falling down upon the ground.

- (11) **Loser Believer.** The weeping of the negative [-N] Believer in frustration over the consequences of his unbelief in @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – “*the people* (Hebrews) *wept that night*” [Num. 14:1]; Joel 1:5-6; Js. 1:5-6.
- (12) **Against Reversionism.** Paul had tears over some Believers he had personally taught but were now in @@@ REVERSIONISM – “*and now tell you even weeping, that they are enemies of the cross of Christ*” [Phil. 3:18-19].
- (13) **Historical Disasters.** Weeping of those caught up in historical troubles – “*my tears have been my food day and night*” [Ps. 42:3]; 1 Sam. 30:4.
-

## @@@ WITNESSING

- (1) **Definition.** The Believer fulfilling his mission of giving the message of @@@ SALVATION to the unBeliever – the Gospel *euaggelion* (good news). This is a command to all Believers in Jesus Christ to conduct personal evangelism and is apart from those who have the spiritual gift of mass evangelism. See 2 Cor. 5:18-20; 1 Thess. 1:4-9. See @@@ GIFTS.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:18-19

Now all *these* things are from God, who reconciled us [positive [+P] volition Believers responding to the Gospel] to Himself through Christ and gave us the ministry of reconciliation, namely, that God was in Christ reconciling [*katallasso*] the world to Himself, not counting their trespasses [*paraptoma* – @@@ SIN is no longer an issue] against them, and He has committed to us the word of reconciliation [@@@ WITNESSING to the unBeliever].

## 1 THESSALONIANS 1:5-6

For our [Paul and his team] gospel [*euaggelion* (good news)] did not come to you [positive [+P] volition Believers in Thessalonica] in word [*logos*] only, but also in power [*dunamis*] and in the Holy Spirit [@@@ HOLY SPIRIT's ministry of @@@ SALVATION] and with full conviction [*plerophoria* (full assurance)]; just as you know what kind of men we proved to be among you for your sake. You also become imitators [*mimetes*] of us and of the LORD, having received the word in much tribulation [@@@ WITNESSING] with the joy [*chara*] of the Holy Spirit.

- (2) **Executive Officer.** The @@@ HOLY SPIRIT is the executive officer in @@@ SALVATION – Jn. 3:6; 16:8-11; 1 Cor. 2:4-5; 13-14; Tit. 3:5. It is the job of the Holy Spirit to get the Gospel to all who want to be saved. Thus, it is only the Believer's privilege to be allowed to participate in this function of giving the Gospel as opportunity arises. See @@@ HEATHENISM.
- (3) **Bible Doctrine.** @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE is the absolute norm and standard for truth and the sole weapon of witnessing, not human programs or phony gimmicks – “*God has made Him both LORD and Christ – this Jesus*” [Acts 36]; 2 Pet. 1:12-21; Rom. 1:16; 1 Cor. 1:18. The @@@ BIBLE is the absolute source of the Gospel – Lk. 16:28-31; 1 Cor. 15:3-4; 2 Tim. 2:8.

- (a) **Mind of Christ.** The Gospel is the very mind of the LORD Jesus Christ – “*the mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16]; Jn. 6:39-40.
- (b) **The Gospel is Divine Power** – “*Christ the power of God and the wisdom of God*” [1 Cor. 1:24]; Heb. 4:2; Acts 4:33; Phil. 3:10.

## HEBREWS 4:2

For indeed we [Believers] have had good news preached [*euangelizo – the Gospel of @@@ SALVATION*] to us, just as they [unBelievers] also; but the word [*logos – the Gospel*] they heard [*akoe*] did not profit [*opheleo (to be advantageous; to benefit)*] them, because it was not united [*sugkerannumi (to mix together)*] by faith [*pistis – the unBeliever hearer of the Gospel did not believe it via @@@ FAITH*] in those who heard.

- (c) **Never Void.** The Gospel never returns void [Isa. 55:11; Col. 1:6] and endures forever and ever into all eternity [Lk. 21:33; 1 Pet. 1:3, 23-25].
- (4) **Personal Responsibility.** Witnessing is the responsibility of every individual born again Believer – Acts 1:7-8; Eph. 6:15-20; 2 Tim. 4:5. The Believer should not argue with the unBeliever, it is simply presenting the information. Just as pointing a loaded gun at someone requires no dissertation on the weapon, so too the Gospel. The Believer that enters into a debate about various aspects of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE or @@@ HISTORY may very well win the debate but not the soul.

## ACTS 1:8

“But you [*Jesus’ disciples*] will receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you [*the day of Pentecost when the Church Age began*]; and you shall be My witnesses [*martus – Jesus Christ commands them to engage in @@@ WITNESSING*] both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and even to the remotest part of the earth.”

- (a) **Witness of the Life.** Witnessing can involve the “witness of the life” – “*you are a letter of Christ*” [2 Cor. 3:3]; 6:3; Col. 3:17; 1 Pet. 3:1-2. The unBeliever sees the mature Believer’s execution of the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE in various situations of prosperity or adversity and is interested in learning more.

## 1 PETER 3:1-2

In the same way, you [the positive [+P] volition Believer] wives, be submissive [*hupotasso* (obey; to be subordinate to) – under the @@@ AUTHORITY] to your own husbands so that even if any of them [the husband is a Loser Believer on negative [-N] volition or perhaps an unBeliever] are disobedient [*apeitheo* (not to allow one's self to be persuaded; to refuse or withhold belief)] to the word [*logos* – negative [-N] volition to @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], they may be won [*kerdaino*] without a word by the behavior [*anastrophe* (manner of life) – the use of impersonal @@@ LOVE] of their wives, as they observe your chaste [*hagnos* (pure from carnality)] and respectful [*phobos*] behavior [*anastrophe* – the witness of the life in the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE].

(b) **Witness of the Lips to the UnBeliever.** See 2 Cor. 5:14-21; 6:2.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 6:2

For He [@@@ HOLY SPIRIT] says, “At the acceptable time [God's timing is perfect] I [God the Holy Spirit] listened to you [the unBeliever on positive [+P] volition], and on the day of salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – @@@ SALVATION] I helped you [the Holy Spirit ensures Gospel hearing].” Behold, now is “the acceptable time,” behold, now is “the day of salvation.”

(5) **Basic Requirements.** To witness, the Believer must be Filled with the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT [Acts 1:8] and understand the basic Gospel message of the substitutionary @@@ DEATH of Jesus Christ on the @@@ CROSS to save all humans [Isa. 53:9; Eph. 2:14-17; 1 Pet. 2:24; 2 Tim. 2:8]. The Believer who witnesses must also fully understand the assurance of @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY – Rom. 6:23; 8:38-39; 11:29; 1 Pet. 1:3-5; Jn. 3:18, 36.

(6) **Make the Issue Clear.** The primary concept in @@@ WITNESSING is to make the issue clear.

(a) **Never Add to the Gospel.** False addendums like feeling sorry, stopping certain sin, joining a Church, or repenting of sin, is nonsense.

(b) **Give the UnBeliever the Issue of the Gospel – Jesus Christ.** Stay away from legalistic false issues. See Eph. 2:8-9; 1 Cor. 15:3-4.

## 1 CORINTHIANS 15:3-4

For I [Paul] delivered to you [*paradidomi* (to give into the hands of another)] as of first importance [*protos*] what I also received [*paralambano*], that Christ died [*apothenesko* (to be subject to the eternal misery of hell)] for our sins [*hamartia* – spiritual @@@ DEATH] according [*kata* (according to a norm or standard)] to the Scriptures [*graphe*], and that He was buried [*thapto* (to inter)], and that He was raised [*egeiro* (to arouse from the sleep of death)] on the third day according to the Scriptures.

- (c) **Decision.** Never force a decision from the unBeliever, this is the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT's job. Give the correct information and politely get out of the way. At most, one might ask: "*What do you think about the Gospel information you have heard?*" See Matt. 22:42.

## MATTHEW 22:42

"What do you think [*dokeo* (to be of opinion)] about the Christ, whose son is He?" They [Pharisees] said to Him [Jesus Christ], "*The son of David.*"

- (7) **Guide for Witnessing.** A dissertation and guide for the Believer on the topic of witnessing is found at 1 Thess. 2:1-16.
  - (a) **False Issues.** The Believer must not get involved in false issues, e.g., @@@ CIRCUMCISION – Acts 15:1-24; Gal. 5:6.
  - (b) **Alone.** The Believer should deal with the individual alone if possible – Jn. 3:1-21 [Nicodemus]; Jn. 4:7-26 [Samaritan woman].
  - (c) **Debate.** Do not debate with the unBeliever – 2 Tim. 2:24-25. Even if he wins the argument, so what? The issue is belief in Christ.
  - (d) **Quota.** The Believer must avoid the concept that he must witness to X number of people daily. See @@@ OPEN DOOR.
  - (e) **Attitude.** Motivation to witness must come from the right mental attitude of the Believer – Rom. 1:14-16.
  - (f) **Brag.** Never brag about witnessing experiences.

- (8) **Fisher of Men.** The analogy of “fishing” in witnessing – “*fishers of men*” [Matt. 4:19].
- (a) **Desire.** Must have a desire to fish – Prov. 10:24.
  - (b) **Equipment.** Must have the proper equipment to go fishing. The proper understanding of the correct @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE.
  - (c) **Location.** Must go where the fish [unBelievers] are located.
  - (d) **Bait.** Must know the right bait for each type of fish. Some unBelievers will respond to different approaches than others.
  - (e) **Stay Out of Sight.** This means to never make an issue out of self or other false matters such as dress, personal tastes, habits, good deeds, or personal @@@ SIN – 1 Cor. 9:9-23.
  - (f) **Patience.** Must be patient. If getting negative signals from the hearer then cut the presentation off and wait to see if a more opportune time might develop – Matt. 10:14.
- (9) **Principle of Prayer.** The Believer should pray for an opportunity to witness per the @@@ OPEN DOOR – “*my heart’s desire and my prayer to God for them is for their salvation*” [Rom. 10:1]; Col. 4:3; Eph. 6:19. See @@@ PRAYER.

## EPHESIANS 6:19

And *pray* on my [Paul] behalf, that utterance may be given to me [an @@@ OPEN DOOR opportunity] in the opening [anoixis] of my mouth, to make known [gnorizo (to become known)] with boldness [parrhesia (freedom in speaking)] the mystery [musterion – @@@ MYSTERY] of the gospel [euaggelion].

- (10) **Effectual Witnessing.** Effectual witnessing belongs to the mature Believer – Prov. 11:30; 14:5; Dan. 12:3. See @@@ MATURITY. The baby Believer must learn basic @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE *before* he moves out to witness, otherwise he will invariably muddy up the water with false issues.
-



## @@@ WORDS

- (1) **epignosis**. The @@@ PLAN OF GOD is for the Believer to have complete *epignosis* (full knowledge) of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE – “*increasing in the knowledge (epignosis) of God*” [Col. 1:9] to reach @@@ MATURITY. The use of the word *epignosis* stems from the fact that it surpasses the general Greek word for basic *gnosis* (knowledge). See 1 Tim. 2:4; Eph. 3:17-19.

### 1 TIMOTHY 2:4

Who [God] desires all men [*anthropos* (mankind) – the unBeliever] to be saved [*sozo* – @@@ SALVATION into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN] and to come to the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of the truth [*aletheia* (what is true in any matter under consideration) – the Believer who takes in @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE and reaches @@@ MATURITY].

- (a) **Real Knowledge**. In the early Church the various philosophies and religions had a false system of salvation based on a “knowledge” of rituals and works, or *gnosis*; they were called “gnostics.” The Gnostics also denied the humanity of Jesus Christ. Gnostics called the Christians *pistis* (faith) and denigrated Believers because Christians rejected human @@@ GOOD works. The word *epignosis* shows that Christian knowledge is far superior as it rests totally in the full revelation of God’s Bible Doctrine – “*abound more and more in real knowledge (epignosis) and all discernment*” [Phil. 1:9].
- (b) **Full Knowledge**. A prepared @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER diligently teaches @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE so that hearers can get *epignosis* [Tit. 1:1], the material used to build the @@@ EDIFICATION COMPLEX OF THE SOUL in the @@@ SOUL & SPIRIT of the positive [+P] Believer per @@@ OPERATION Z.

### TITUS 1:1

Paul, a bond-servant [*doulos* (slave)] of God and an apostle of Jesus Christ, for the faith [*pistis* – the teaching and writing of @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE of those chosen of God and the knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of the truth [*aletheia* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] which is according to godliness [*eusebeia* (respect for God) – reaching @@@ MATURITY].

- (c) **The Negative [-N] Volition Believer.** Living in the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS, he fails to acquire *epignosis* – 2 Tim. 2:23-26; 3:2-7.
- (d) **Wisdom.** Only *epignosis* is used in @@@ PROBLEM SOLVING DEVICES – Eph. 1:7; Phm. 6; Col. 2:2-3. The words *sophia* (wisdom) and *sunesis* (wisdom) refer to the application of *epignosis* to life.
- (e) **Rewards.** Only *epignosis* leads the Believer to @@@ REWARDS – 2 Pet. 1:2-3; Phil. 1:9; 2 Pet. 1:8; 3:18; Col. 1:9-11.

## 2 PETER 1:3

Seeing that His divine power has granted to us [Believers] everything pertaining to life and godliness [*eusebeia* – reaching spiritual @@@ MATURITY], through the true knowledge [*epignosis* (full knowledge)] of Him who called [*kaleo*] us by His own glory and excellence.

- (2) *eusebia* & *teleios*. These two words stand for the goal of the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE to reach maturity [2 Pet. 1:3; Phil. 1:6; Matt. 5:48; Tit. 1:1; 1 Tim. 6:6; 2 Pet. 3:11] and for the Believer to live inside the @@@ DIVINE DYNASPHERE [1 Tim 4:8]. The enemies of *eusebia* (godliness) and *teleios* (perfect) include moral degenerates – 2 Tim. 3:2-5.

## MATTHEW 5:48

Therefore you are to be perfect [*teleios* (perfect) – reaching spiritual @@@ MATURITY], as your heavenly Father is perfect.

- (3) *pistis*. See @@@ FAITH.
- (4) *sozo*. The noun *sozo* (to deliver) and the verb *soterion* mean to deliver the subject from one point to another point, i.e., from point A to point B. This word is found over 100 times in the New Testament alone. Depending on the context, it is used to indicate one of the following concepts: (1) God delivering the unBeliever to eternal @@@ SALVATION; (2) God delivering the baby Believer to adult spiritual @@@ MATURITY; or (3) God delivering the Believer from @@@ PROBLEMS.
  - (a) @@@ SALVATION *sozo* – Tit. 3:5.

## TITUS 3:5

He [God] saved [*sozo* (to deliver) – into the Kingdom of @@@ HEAVEN] us [Believers], not on the basis of [our] deeds [*chrestotes* (moral goodness) – human @@@ GOOD] which we have done in righteousness [*diakaiosune* – human righteousness [-r]], but according [*kata* (according to a norm or standard)] to His mercy [*eleos* – @@@ GRACE in action], by the washing [*loutron* (a bath)] of regeneration [*paliggenesia* (a new birth)] and renewing [*anakainosis* (a complete change for the better)] by the Holy Spirit [the ministry of the @@@ HOLY SPIRIT in @@@ SALVATION].

(b) @@@ MATURITY *sozo* – Phil. 2:12-13.

## PHILIPPIANS 2:12-13

So then, my beloved [Paul writing to Believers], just as you have always obeyed [*hupakouo* (to obey commands) – positive [+P] volition Believers desiring @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE], not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out [*katergazomai* (to do that from which something results)] your salvation [*soteria* (to deliver) – to deliver self from an adolescent Believer to a mature Believer] with fear [*phobos* (respect) – the highest respect for Bible Doctrine and the @@@ PASTOR/TEACHER] and trembling; for it is God who is at work in you, both to will and to work for His good pleasure [through Predestination and Election God has made it possible for the positive [+P] volition Believer to reach @@@ MATURITY].

(c) Both @@@ SALVATION and @@@ MATURITY *sozo* – Jn. 10:9.

## JOHN 10:9

I am [Jesus Christ] the door [*thura*]; if anyone enters [*eiserchomai* (to go in or come out)] through [*dia* (by means of)] Me [believes in Christ for @@@ SALVATION], he will be saved [*sozo* – enter into the Kingdom of God, @@@ ETERNAL SECURITY], and will go in and out [@@@ WALKING the @@@ CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE] and find pasture [*nome* – learn @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE to reach @@@ MATURITY].

(5) *metanoeo*. See @@@ REPENT.

---

## @@@ WORLD

- (1) **Definition.** There are two primary Greek words used in the New Testament for the physical earth. The Greek word *ge* (physical world) and *kosmos* (world). However, the word *kosmos* is also regularly employed to represent an evil system of thinking under the direct influence of Satan and @@@ DEMONISM called the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS. See Rev. 2:24.
- (2) **Creation, Chaos, Restoration.** The original earth was created perfect by God at some point in the unknown past – Isa. 45:18; Gen. 1:1. The @@@ BIBLE is not a science book and gives few details on the mechanics or time frame of creation. The major point is that God did it!

## ISAIAH 45:18

For thus says the LORD, who created the heavens (He is the God who formed the earth [*erets* (the land; the earth)] and made it, He established it *and* did not create it a waste place [*tohu* (formless; empty)], *but* formed it to be inhabited), “I am the LORD, and there is none else [God creates and sustains the world].”

- (a) **Original World.** Jesus Christ personally made the original earth in the unknown distant past – Gen. 1:1; Isa. 45:18; Jn. 1:3; Col. 1:16; Heb. 1:2-3; Job 26:7. He also now holds it all together – Jn. 5:17; Col. 1:17.
- (b) **Ice.** As a result of Satan’s revolt, the earth became frozen in an ice pack and void of all significant life forms – Gen. 1:1-2; 2 Pet. 3:5-6.
- (c) **Restoration.** God the Holy Spirit began the restoration process for life on the earth, called the “*six days*” [*yom*], of restoration – Gen. 1:1-2.
- (d) **Eden.** At some later point in time a special portion of the earth [Garden of Eden] was given to Adam to live in and rule over – Gen. 1:26-28.
- (e) **Rulership.** Adam lost his rulership by his one @@@ SIN – Gen. 3:6. Satan took rulership from Adam and now rules over all the earth – Jn. 12:31; 14:30; 16:11; Eph. 2:2. @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT.
- (f) **New Universe.** An entirely new universe and earth will be created at the end of the Millennium – Rev. 21; 2 Pet. 3:7, 10-12; Isa. 34:4.

- (3) **Impacted by Sin.** Original creation saw the earth perfect. “*He ... did not create it a waste place*” [Isa. 45:18], but with the fall of Satan the world and nature were negatively altered by @@@ SIN and now collectively “*groans*” [Rom. 8:22] under the consequences of angelic sin. Later in time, when mankind sinned, nature was again impacted in a negative manner – Gen. 3:17-19; Rom. 8:18-22. Only at the Millennium will nature once again be restored to its intended state – Gen. 1:1-2. See @@@ DISPENSATIONS.

### GENESIS 1:1-2

In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth [*erets* – this action took place in the unknown past and consisted of a perfect universe and earth]. The earth was [*became*] formless [*tohu*] and void [*bohu (waste)*], and darkness was over [*al (covered)*] the surface of the deep [*tehom (deep waters)*] – as a consequence of the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT, the earth was corrupted and suffered negatively to the point of being frozen in an icepack for an unknown period of time], and the [Holy] Spirit of God was moving over the surface of the waters [*mahyim* – God next restored the earth in the “six” days of restoration of life to the planet].

### ROMANS 8:19-22

For the anxious longing of the creation [*the natural @@@ WORLD*] waits eagerly for the revealing of the sons of God [*Believers in their @@@ RESURRECTION bodies will accompany Christ at His 2nd Advent*]. For the creation was subjected to futility [*mataiotes (depravity)*] – due to the impact of demon and human @@@ SIN, not willingly, but because of Him who subjected it [*the permissive will of God allowed this to occur in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT*], in hope that the creation itself also will be set free [*perfect environment will exist in the Millennium*] from its slavery to corruption into the freedom of the glory of the children of God. For we know that the whole creation [*ktisis (of individual things created)*] groans [*sustenazo (to groan together)*] and suffers the pains of childbirth together until now.

- (4) **Satan Rules the World.** Since the fall of Adam, Satan is the ruler of the entire *kosmos* particularly in the context of pushing out the evil thought pattern of human @@@ GOOD and @@@ RELIGION – “*the whole world lies in the power of the evil one*” [1 Jn. 5:19]; Jn. 12:31; 14:30; 16:11; 2 Cor. 4:4; Lk. 4:5-7; Eph. 2:2; Job 1:6-8. See @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS.

## JOHN 14:30

I [Jesus] will not speak much more with you, for the ruler [archon – Satan] of the world [kosmos] is coming, and he has nothing in Me.

## JOB 1:6-8

Now there was a day when the sons of God [@@@ ANGELS] came to present themselves before the LORD [in Heaven], and Satan also came among them. The LORD said to Satan, “From where do you come?” Then Satan answered the LORD and said, “From roaming about on the earth and walking around [halak (to traverse)] on it [Satan emphasizes that he is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD, going wherever he pleases on the earth].” The LORD said to Satan, “Have you considered My servant Job [God calls Job to Satan’s attention as part of the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT]? For there is no one like him on the earth, a blameless and upright man, fearing God and turning away from evil [Job was a subject matter expert witness exhibit].”

## 2 CORINTHIANS 4:4

In whose case the god of this world [Satan] has blinded the minds [noema (a mental perception)] of the unbelieving [apistos – the unBeliever on negative [-N] volition] so that they might not see the light of the gospel [euangelion] of the glory of Christ, who is the image [eikon (exact likeness)] of God.

**COSMIC I – Arrogance, Self-Centered.** This was Satan’s original attitude of pride at his revolt against God starting the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT. In turn, the carnal Believer is a slave to self and the Old Sin Nature when in this sphere of the kosmos – 2 Tim. 3:2-6; 1 Pet. 2:11; Eph. 2:3.

**COSMIC II – Hatred of Bible Doctrine.** This is Satan’s policy and attitude now; he is still the most arrogant of creatures. The Believer in this sphere of the kosmos is a slave to evil – 1 Jn. 3:8; 2 Tim. 3:7-8. See @@@ RELIGION.

- (5) **Citizenship of the World.** Spiritual @@@ DEATH and sin are the basis of citizenship for all humans when born into the Devil’s world and his “*domain of darkness*” [Col. 1:13]. “*For the wages of sin is death (spiritual death), but the free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our LORD*” [Rom. 5:12]; Jn. 1:29; 3:16; Rom. 5:12; 6:23; Gal. 4:3-5.



- (6) **God Controls History.** While Satan has filled the world with his “*doctrines of demons*” [1 Tim. 4:1], propaganda of human @@@ GOOD, and @@@ RELIGION, God has total control of @@@ HISTORY. See Rev. 12:9.
- (7) **Reconciled the World.** Jesus Christ is the only “*Savior of all men*” [1 Tim. 4:10] and has reconciled the world to Himself so that @@@ SALVATION is open to anyone in the world – Jn. 1:29-30; 3:19-21; 4:42; 6:33; 11:25-27; 12:32; Lk. 2:10-11; 1 Jn. 4:14; 1 Tim. 1:1.5. Accordingly, one of the LORD Jesus Christ’s eternal titles is the “*Light of the World*” [Jn. 8:12]; 9:5; 12:35-36; 2 Cor. 5:18-19. “*Behold the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world*” [Jn. 1:29]. See @@@ HYPOSTATIC UNION.

## JOHN 8:12

Then Jesus again spoke to them, saying, “I [Jesus] am the Light [*phos*] of the world [*kosmos* – only Jesus Christ provides @@@ SALVATION]; he who follows [*akoloutheo* (to follow one who precedes)] Me will not walk [*peripateo* (a lifestyle)] in the darkness [*skotia*], but will have the Light of life [*zoe* – @@@ SALVATION and @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE].”

## JOHN 3:19-21

This is the judgment, that the Light [Jesus Christ] has come into the world [*kosmos*], and men [unBelievers] loved [*agapao* (to be well pleased with; to love dearly)] the darkness rather than the Light, for their deeds were evil [the unBeliever is attracted only to human @@@ GOOD]. For everyone who does evil hates the Light, and does not come to the Light for fear that his deeds will be exposed [*elegcho* (to refute, generally with shame) – the human works of the unBeliever are not acceptable to God]. But he [the Believer saved by @@@ FAITH and possessing the Righteousness [+R] of God] who practices [*poieo* (to produce)] the truth [*aletheia* – the Believer on positive [+P] volition to learning @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE] comes to the Light, so that his deeds [Divine Good production] may be manifested [*phaneroo* (to make visible)] as having been wrought [*ergazomai* (to work out)] in God.

## 1 TIMOTHY 1:15

It is a trustworthy statement, deserving full acceptance, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, among whom I [Paul] am foremost *of all*.

## 2 CORINTHIANS 5:19

Namely, that God was in Christ reconciling the world [*kosmos* – under @@@ **UNLIMITED ATONEMENT** Christ died spiritual @@@ **DEATH** for all humans] to Himself, not counting their trespasses against them, and He has committed to us the word of reconciliation [@@@ **SOTERIOLOGY**].

## JOHN 11:26-27

“And everyone who lives and believes in Me will never die. Do you believe this?” She [Martha] said to Him [Jesus], “Yes, LORD [*kurios* (God)]; I have believed [*pisteuo*] that You are the Christ [*Christos*], the Son of God, even He who comes into the world [*kosmos* – @@@ **WORLD**].”

- (8) **Jesus Christ Overcame.** “*I have overcome the world*” [Jn. 16:33]. Jesus Christ overcame the *kosmos*, so that now in @@@ **UNION WITH CHRIST** Believers can also overcome Satan’s thinking and thwart the power of the @@@ **OLD SIN NATURE** over their lives. See Jn. 16:11; 1 Jn. 4:4; 5:4-5.

## 1 JOHN 4:4

You are from God, little children [Believers], and have overcome them; because greater is He who is in you [the @@@ **TRINITY**] than he [Satan and @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS**] who is in the world [*kosmos*].

## JOHN 16:11

And concerning judgment, because the ruler of this world [*kosmos* – Satan] has been judged [*krino* – Christ won the victory on the @@@ **CROSS**].

- (9) **Whitewashing the Devil’s World.** Believers must reject the human/demonic viewpoint of the *kosmos*. Living in the @@@ **COSMIC SYSTEMS** and performing deeds of human @@@ **GOOD** to “improve” some aspect of concern is “whitewashing” the Devil’s world – 1 Jn. 2:15-16; Rom. 12:1-2; 1 Cor. 5:9-10. Humans cannot make a perfect environment and even if they could it would not solve the @@@ **SALVATION** issue. While Believers should be model citizens, possessing and thinking “*the mind of Christ*” [1 Cor. 2:16] is the only key to overcoming the *kosmos* – Prov. 23:7; Phil. 2:5; 4:7; 2 Tim. 1:7; 1 Cor. 2:16; 2 Cor. 5:1, 6, 8; 10:4-5; 2 Thess. 2:2.

- (10) **Seeking the World's Approval.** Reject friendship with the *kosmos* – Js. 4:4; 1 Jn. 2:15-17. “*Do not love the world nor the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him*” [1 Jn. 2:15]. It is not what the Believer does that makes him *worldly*, it is what he thinks! “*No one can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will be devoted to one and despise the other*” [Matt. 6:24].

#### JAMES 4:4

You adulteresses [*moichalis* – negative Believers], do you not know that friendship with the world [*kosmos*] is hostility toward God? Therefore whoever wishes to be a friend of the world makes himself an enemy of God.

- (11) **The World Hates.** Because Believers are strangers of the *kosmos* and citizens of @@@ HEAVEN the world hates them – Ps. 119:1; Jn. 17:14-16.

#### JOHN 17:14-15

I [Jesus Christ] have given them Your word [*logos* – @@@ BIBLE DOCTRINE]; and the world [*kosmos* – the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS] has hated them [positive [+P] volition Believers], because they are not of the world [*kosmos*], even as I am not of the world [*kosmos*]. I do not ask You [God the Father] to take them out of the world [*kosmos* – positive [+P] volition Believers have a role to play in the @@@ ANGELIC CONFLICT], but to keep them from the evil one [Satan's Cosmic Systems].

- (12) **Satan's End.** Satan loses rulership of the earth at the 2nd Advent of Christ, but Believers will go on and on in @@@ HEAVEN – 1 Jn. 2:17; Jn. 12:31.

#### JOHN 12:31

Now judgment is upon this world [*kosmos*]; now the ruler of this world [*kosmos* – Satan is the ruler of the @@@ WORLD] will be cast out [*ekballo*].

#### 1 JOHN 2:17

The world [*kosmos* – @@@ WORLD] is passing away, and *also* its lusts [*alazoneia* (empty braggart talk) – the @@@ COSMIC SYSTEMS]; but the one who does the will [*thelema*] of God [@@@ SALVATION] lives forever.